



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

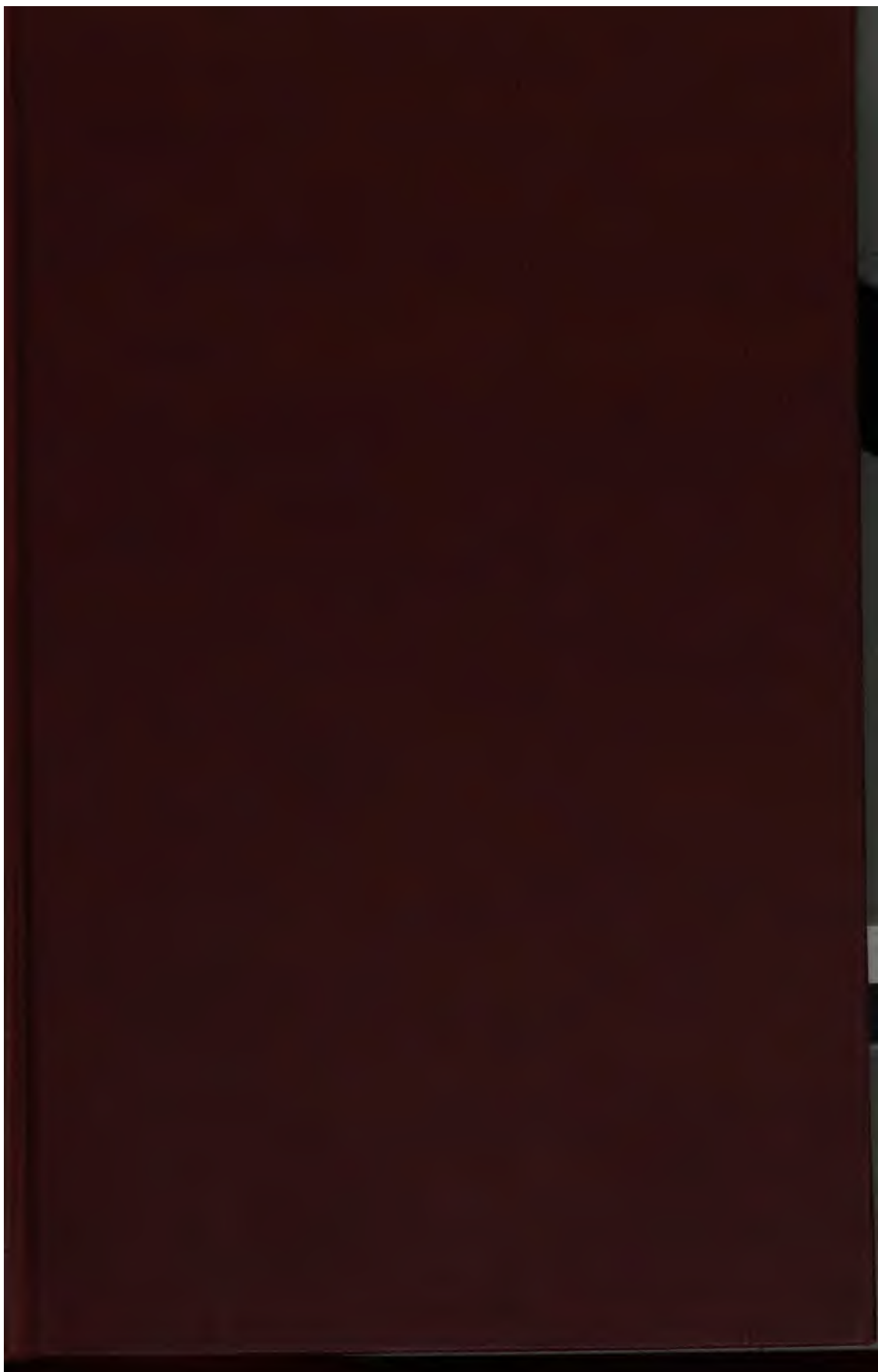
Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>



155,12



HARVARD
COLLEGE
LIBRARY

THE
POPE'S SUPREMACY.

BY ISAAC BARROW, D. D.

THIS POINT OF THE POPE'S SUPREMACY IS NOT ONLY AN INDEFENSIBLE, BUT AN
IMPUDENT CAUSE.

TILLOTSON.

TO WHICH ARE ADDED

A SYPOPSIS OF THE TREATISE;
compiled by Thomas Smart Hughes;

AND

TWO COMPLETE INDEXES.

Published by John Tillotson, alp. of Cant.

.C NEW YORK:
JOHN C. RIKER, 129 FULTON STREET.

1845.

C4155.12

NOV 7 1878

By exchange of duplicates.



6234
5191
11

TO THE READER.

THIS excellent and elaborate Treatise of the Pope's Supremacy, the learned Author of it, upon his death-bed, gave me particular permission to publish. Whosoever shall carefully peruse this Treatise will find, that this point of the Pope's Supremacy, upon which Bellarmine hath the confidence to say the whole of Christianity depends, is not only an indefensible, but an impudent cause. Nothing could have kept it so long from becoming ridiculous in the judgment of mankind, but its being so strongly supported by worldly interest. For there is not one tolerable argument for it; and there are a thousand invincible reasons against it. There is neither from scripture, nor reason, nor antiquity, any evidence of it. The past and present state of Christendom with the histories and records of all ages, are a perpetual demonstration against it. There is no other ground for it in the whole world, but that for a long time it hath been boldly asserted, and without reason stiffly contended for by the POPE'S JANIZARIES. With as much colour and evidence of truth any one might maintain, that the Grand Sultan of right is, and for many ages hath been acknowledged sovereign of the whole world, as that the Pontiff of Rome is of right, and in all ages from the beginning of Christianity, hath been owned to be the monarch and head of the universal Christian Churches.

J. TILLOTSON.

CONTENTS.

	PAGE
Introduction.	1
Suppositions upon which is maintained the Pope's Supremacy.	23
Supposition I. Peter had a primacy over the Apostles.	23
" II. Peter's Primacy, with its rights and prerogatives, was not personal, but derivable to its Successors.	63
" III. Peter was Bishop of Rome.	67
" IV. Peter continued Bishop of Rome after his translation, and was so at his decease.	72
" V. The Bishop of Rome, according to God's institution, and by original right thence derived, should have a universal Supremacy and Jurisdiction over the Christian Church.	77
" VI. Roman Bishops continually from Peter's time have enjoyed and exercised their sovereign power.	154
" VII. The Papal power is indefectible and unalterable.	227
Synopsis of the Treatise of the Pope's Supremacy.	244
Index of Texts of Scripture.	259
Index of Topics.	263

INTRODUCTION
OF THE
POPE'S SUPREMACY.

§ I. THE Roman party doth much glory in unity and certainty of doctrine, as things peculiar to them, and which no other men have any means to attain: yet about divers matters of notable consideration, in what they agree, or of what they are certain, it is hard to descry.

They pretend it very needful that controversies should be decided, and that they have a special knack of doing it: yet do many controversies of great weight and consequence stick on their hands unresolved, many points rest in great doubt and debate among them.

The *νόμοι δόξαι* of the Roman sect (concerning doctrine, practice, laws, and customs of discipline, rites, and ceremonies) are of divers sorts, or built on divers grounds. 1. Some established by (pretended) general synods. 2. Some founded on decrees of popes. 3. Some entertained as upon tradition, custom, common agreement. 4. Some which their eminent divines or schoolmen do commonly embrace. 5. Some prevailing by the favour of the Roman court, and its zealous dependents.

Hence it is very difficult to know wherein their religion consisteth: for those grounds divers times seem to clash, and accordingly their divines (some building on these, some on others) disagree.

This being so in many points of importance, is so particularly in this.

For instance, the head of their church (as they call it) is, one would think, a

subject about which they should thoroughly consent, and which they, by this time, should have cleared from all disputes; so that (so far as their decisive faculty goeth) we might be assured wherein his authority consisteth, and how far it doth extend; seeing the resolution of that point so nearly toucheth the heart of religion, the faith and practice of all Christians, the good of the church, and peace of the world; seeing that no one question (perhaps not all questions together) hath created so many tragical disturbances in Christendom, as that concerning the bounds of papal authority.*

This disagreement of the Roman doctors about the nature and extent of papal authority is a shrewd prejudice against it. If a man should sue for a piece of land, and his advocates (the notabest could be had, and well paid) could not find where it lieth, how it is butted and bounded, from whom it was conveyed to him, one would be very apt to suspect his title. If God had instituted such an office, it is highly probable we might satisfactorily know what the nature and use of it were: the patents and charters for it would declare it.

Yet for resolution in this great case we are left to seek; they not having either the will, or the courage, or the

* *Agitur de summa rei Christianæ.—Bell. Praef. de Rom. Pont.* Upon this one point the very sum and substance of Christianity depends.

power, to determine it. This insuperable problem hath baffled all their infallible methods of deciding controversies; their traditions blundering, their synods clashing, their divines wrangling endlessly about what kind of thing the pope is, and what power he rightly may claim.

"There is" (saith a great divine among them) "so much controversy about the plenitude of ecclesiastical power, and to what things it may extend itself, that few things in that matter are secure."* —

This is a plain argument of the impotency of the pope's power in judging and deciding controversies, or of his cause in this matter; that he cannot define a point so nearly concerning him, and which he so much desireth an agreement in; that he cannot settle his own claim out of doubt; that all his authority cannot secure itself from contest.

So indeed it is, that no spells can allay some spirits; and where interests are irreconcilable, opinions will be so.

Some points are so tough and so touchy, that nobody dare meddle with them, fearing that their resolution will fail of success and submission. Hence even the anathematizing definers of Trent (the boldest undertakers to decide controversies that ever were) did wave this point; the legates of the pope being enjoined "to advertise, That they should not for any cause whatever come to dispute about the pope's authority."†

It was indeed wisely done of them to decline this question, their authority not being strong enough to bear the weight of a decision in favour of the Roman see (against which they could do nothing), according to its pretences; as appeareth by one clear instance. For whereas that council took upon it incidentally to enact, that any prince should be excommunicate, and deprived of the dominion of any city or place, where he should permit a duel to be fought; the prelates of France in the Convention of Orders, anno 1595

did declare against that decree, as infringing their king's authority.*

It was therefore advisedly done, not to meddle with so ticklish a point. But in the mean time their policy seemeth greater than their charity; which might have inclined them not to leave the world in darkness and doubt, and unresolved in a point of so main importance (as indeed they did in others of no small consequence, disputed among their divines with obstinate heat, viz. the divine right of bishops, the necessity of residence, the immaculate conception, &c.)

The opinions therefore among them concerning the pope's authority, as they have been, so they are, and in likelihood may continue, very different.

§ II. There are among them those who ascribe to the pope an universal, absolute, and boundless empire over all persons indifferently, and in all matters; conferred and settled on him by Divine immutable sanction: so that all men, of whatever degree, are obliged in conscience to believe whatever he doth authoritatively dictate, and to obey whatever he doth prescribe. So that if princes themselves do refuse obedience to his will, he may excommunicate them, cashier them, depose them, extirpate them. If he chargeth us to hold no communion with our prince, to renounce our allegiance to him, to abandon, oppose, and persecute him, even to death, we may without scruple, we must in duty obey. If he doth interdict whole nations from the exercise of God's worship and service, they must comply therein. So that, according to their conceits, he is in effect sovereign lord of all the world; and superior, even in temporal or civil matters, unto all kings and princes.

It is notorious, that many canonists (if not most) and many divines of that party do maintain this doctrine; affirming, that all the power of Christ (*the Lord of lords, and King of kings*, to whom all power in heaven and earth doth appertain) is

* Tanta est inter doctores controversia de plenitudine ecclesiasticæ potestatis, et ad quæ se extendat, ut pauca sint in ea materia secura — *Almain. de Auct. Eccl.* cap. 3.

† — di avvertire, Che non si venga mai per qual causa si sia alla disputa dell' autorità di papa. — *Council. Trid.* lib. ii. p. 159.

* Hic articulus est contra auctoritatem regis, qui non potest privari, suo dominio temporali, respectu cujus nullum superiorem recognoscit. — *Bochel.* l. v. tit. 20, c. 45. This article is against the authority of the king, who cannot be deprived of his temporal dominion, wherein he acknowledges no superior.

imparted to the pope, as to his vicegerent.*

This is the doctrine which almost 400 years ago Augustinus Triumphus, † in his *egregious work* concerning ecclesiastical power, did teach; attributing to the pope *an incomprehensible and infinite power*; "because great is the Lord, and great is his power, and of his greatness there is no end."

This is the doctrine which the leading theologues of their sect, their angelical doctor, doth affirm, both directly, saying, that "in the pope is the top of both powers;" and by plain consequence, asserting, that "when any one is denounced excommunicate for apostacy, his subjects are immediately freed from his dominion, and their oath of allegiance to him." ‡

This the same Thomas (or an author passing under his name, in his book touching *The Rule of Princes*) doth teach, affirming, that the pope, "as supreme king of all the world, may impose taxes on all Christians, and destroy towns and castles for the preservation of Christianity." ||

* Prima sententia est, summum pontificem jure divino habere plenissimam potestatem in universum orbem terrarum, tam in rebus ecclesiasticis quam civilibus. Ita docent Aug. Triumphus, Alvarus Pelagius, Panormitanus, Hostiensis, Silvester, et alii non pauci.—*Bell.* v. 1. The first opinion is, that the pope hath a most full power over the whole world, both in ecclesiastical and civil affairs. This is the doctrine of Aug. Triumphus, &c. and of many others.

† Scripsit egregiam summam de potestate ecclesiæ.—*Bell. de Script.* an. 1301. Error est, non credere pontificem Rom. universalis ecclesiæ pastorem, Petri successorem, et Christi vicarium, supra temporalia et spiritualia universalem non habere primatum; in quem quandoque multi labuntur, dictæ potestatis ignorantia; quæ cum sit infinita, eo quod *magnus est Dominus, et magna virtus ejus, et magnitudinis ejus non est finis*, omnis creatus intellectus in ejus perscrutatione invenitur deficere. *Aug. Triumph. de Potest. Eccl. in præf. ad P. Joh. XXII.*

‡ Thomas in fine Secun. Sentent. dicit in papa esse apicem utriusque potestatis.—*Bell.* v. 1. Quum quis per sententiam denunciatur propter apostasiam excommunicatus, ipso facto ejus subditi a dominio, et juramento fidelitatis ejus liberati sunt.—*Th.* ii. Secund. qu. 12. art. 2.

|| S. Thomas (in lib. iii. *de Regim. Princ.* cap. 10, 19,) affirmat summum pontificem jure divino habere spirituales et temporales potestates, ut supremum totius mundi regem, adeo

This (as Cardinal Zabarell near 300 years ago telleth us) is the doctrine "which, for a long time, those who would please popes did persuade them, that they could do all things, whatever they pleased; yea, and things unlawful; and so could do more than God."*

According to this doctrine then current at Rome, in the last Lateran great synod, under the pope's nose and in his ear, one bishop styled him, *prince of the world*; † another orator called him, *king of kings, and monarch of the earth*; ‡ another great prelate said of him, that *he had all power above all powers both of heaven and earth.* || And the same roused up Pope Leo X. in these brave terms: "Snatch up therefore the two-edged sword of divine power, committed to thee; and enjoin, commaned, and charge, that an universal peace and alliance be made among Christians for at least ten years; and to that bind kings in the fetters of the great King, and constrain nobles by the iron manacles of censures: for to thee is given all power in heaven and in earth." §

This is the doctrine which Baronius, with a Roman confidence, doth so often assert and drive forward, saying, that "there can be no doubt of it, but that the civil principality is subject to the sacerdotal:" ¶ and, that "God hath made the po-

ut etiam tales omnibus Christianis possit imponere, et civitates ac castra destruere pro conservatione Christianitatis.—*Bell.* v. 5.

* Quæ jura sunt notanda, quia male considerata sunt per multos assentatores, qui voluerunt placere pontificibus, per multa retro tempora, et usque ad hodierna suaserunt eis, quod omnia possent; et sic quod facerent quicquid liberet, etiam illicita, et sic plus quam Deus.—*Zab. de Schism.*

† Orbis princeps.—*Episc. Spal.* sess. i. p. 24.

‡ Regum rex, et orbis terrarum monarcha.—*Del. Rio*, sess. viii. p. 87.

|| —Virum, in quo erat potestas supra omnes potestates, tam cæli, quam terræ.—*Episc. Patrac.* sess. x. p. 132.

§ Arripe ergo gladium divinæ potestatis, tibi creditum, bis acutum; et jube, impera, manda, ut pax universalis et coligatio per decennium inter Christianos ad minus fiat; et reges ad id in compedibus magni regis liga, et nobiles in manicis ferreis censurarum constringe: quoniam tibi data est omnis potestas in celo et in terra.—*Ibid.* p. 133.

¶ Politicum principatum sacerdotali esse subjectum nulla potest esse dubitatio.—*Ann.* 57, § 23.

litical government subject to the dominion of the spiritual church.”*

§ III. From that doctrine the opinion in effect doth not differ, which Bellarmine voucheth for the common opinion of catholics, that “by reason of the spiritual power, the pope, at least indirectly, hath a supreme power even in temporal matters.”†

This opinion, so common, doth not, I say, in effect and practical consideration, anywise differ from the former; but only in words devised to shun envy, and veil the impudence of the other assertion: for the qualifications, *by reason of the spiritual power*, and, *at least indirectly*, are but notional, insignificant, and illusive, in regard to practice: it importing not, if he hath in his keeping a sovereign power, upon what account, or in what formality he doth employ it; seeing that every matter is easily referrible to a spiritual account; seeing he is sole judge upon what account he doth act; seeing experience sheweth, that he will spiritualize all his interests, and upon any occasion exercise that pretended authority; seeing it little mattereth, if he may strike princes, whether he doth it by a downright blow, or slantingly.

§ IV. That such an universal and absolute power hath been claimed by divers popes, successively for many ages, is apparent from their most solemn declarations and notorious practices; whereof (beginning from later times, and rising upwards toward the source of this doctrine) we shall represent some.

The bull of Pope Sixtus V. (An. 1585) against the *two sons of wrath*, Henry, king of Navarre, and the prince of Conde, beginneth thus: “The authority given to St. Peter and his successors, by the immense power of the eternal King, excels all the powers of earthly kings and princes—It passes uncontrollable sentence upon them all—And if it find any of them resisting God’s ordinance, it takes more severe vengeance

* Politicum imperium subiecit spiritualis ecclesiæ dominio.—*Ibid.* § 53.

† Tertia sententia media et catholicorum communis, pontificem ut pontificem non habere directe et immediate ullam temporalem potestatem, sed solum spiritualem, tamen ratione spiritualis habere saltem indirecte potestatem quandam, eamque summam, in temporalibus.—*Bell.* v. 1.

of them, casting them down from their thrones, though never so puissant, and tumbling them down to the lowest parts of the earth, as the ministers of aspiring Lucifer.” And then he proceeds to thunder against them, “We deprive them and their posterity for ever of their dominions and kingdoms;”* and accordingly he depriveth those princes of their kingdoms and dominions, absolveth their subjects from their oaths of allegiance, and forbiddeth them to pay any obedience to them. “By the authority of these presents, we do absolve and set free all persons, as well jointly as severally, from any such oath, and from all duty whatsoever in regard of dominion, fealty, and obedience; and do charge and forbid all and every of them, that they do not dare to obey them, or any of their admonitions, laws and commands.”†

Pope Pius V. (An. 1570) one of the holiest popes of the last stamp, who hardly hath escaped canonization until now,‡ beginning his bull against our Queen Elizabeth in these words: “He that reigneth on high, to whom is given all power in heaven and in earth, hath committed the one holy catholic and apostolic church out of which there is no salvation, to one alone on earth, namely, to Peter, prince of the apostles, and to the Roman pontiff, successor of Peter, to be governed with a plenitude of power: this one he hath constituted prince over all nations, and all kingdoms, that he might pluck up, destroy,

* Ab immensa æterni Regis potentia B. Petro ejusque successoribus tradita auctoritas omnes terrenorum regum et principum supereminet potestates—Inconcuſsa profert in omnes judicia—Et si quos ordinationi Dei resistentes invenit, severiore hos vindicta ulciscitur, et, quamvis potentiores, de solio dejiciens, veluti superbientis Luciferi ministros, ad infima terræ deturbatos prosternit—. Dominiis, regnis, &c. nos illos illorumque posteros privamus in perpetuum—.

† A juramento hujusmodi, ac omni prorsus domini, fidelitatis et obsequii debito, illos omnes tam univēse quam singulatim auctoritate præsentium absolvimus et liberamus; præcipimusque et interdiciamus eis univēsis et singularis, ne illis eorumque monitis, legibus et mandatis audeant obedire.—*Bulla Sixti V. contra Hen. Navarr. R. &c.*

‡ Pius V.—Quem mirum est in albo sanctorum nondum relatū esse.—*Briet. Chr.* anno 1572.

dissipate, ruinate, plant, and build."*— And in the same bull he declares, that "he thereby deprives the queen of her pretended right to the kingdom, and of all dominion, dignity, and privilege, whatsoever; and absolves all the nobles, subjects, and people of the kingdom, and whoever else have sworn to her, from their oath, and all duty whatsoever, in regard of dominion, fidelity, and, obedience." †

Pope Clement VI. (An. 1346) did pretend to depose the Emperor Lewis IV.

Pope Clement V. in the great synod of Vienna (An. 1311) declared the emperor subject to him, or standing obliged to him by a proper oath of fealty. ‡

Pope Boniface VIII. (An. 1294) hath a decree extant in the canon law running thus: "We declare, say, define, pronounce it to be of necessity to salvation, for every human creature to be subject to the Roman pontiff." || The which subjection, according to his intent, reacheth all matters; for he there challengeth a double sword, and asserteth to himself jurisdiction over all temporal authorities; for "one sword," saith he, "must be under another, and the temporal authority must be subject to the spiritual power;—whence, if the earthly power doth go astray, it must be judged by the spiritual power." § The which aphorism he prov-

* *Regnans in excelsis, cui data est omnis in cælo et in terra potestas, unam sanctam, catholicam et apostolicam ecclesiam, extra quam nulla est salus, uni soli in terris, videlicet apostolorum principi Petro, Petrique successori Romano pontifici, in potestatis plenitudine tradidit gubernandam: hunc unum super omnes gentes et omnia regna principem constituit, qui evellat, destruat, dissipet, disperdat, plantet, et ædificet.—P. Pius V. in Bull. contra R. Eliz. (Camb. Hist. anno 1570.)*

† Ipsam prætenso egni jure, nec non omni quocunque dominio, dignitate privilegioque privamus; et iterum proceres, subditos, &c.—*Ibid.*

‡ Apostolica auctoritate de fratrum nostro- rum consilio declaramus, illa juramenta prædicta fidelitatis existere et censeri debere.—*Clem. lib. ii. tit. 9. Vide Conc. Vienn. p. 909.*

|| Subesse Romano pontifici omni humanæ creaturæ declaramus, dicimus, definimus, et pronunciamus omnino esse de necessitate salutis.—*Extraw. com. lib. i. tit. 8, cap. 1.*

§ Oportet gladium esse sub gladio, et temporalem auctoritatem spirituali subjeci potestati.—*Ibid.* Ergo si deviat terrena potestas, judicabitur a potestate spirituali.—*Ibid.*

eth by scriptures admirably expounded to that purpose.

This definition might pass for a rant of that boisterous pope ("a man above measure ambitious and arrogant,"*) vented in his passion against king Philip of France, if it had not the advantage (of a greater than which no papal decree is capable) of being expressly confirmed by one of their general councils; for "We" (saith Pope Leo X. in his bull read and passed in the Lateran council) "do renew and approve that holy constitution, with approbation of the present holy council." † Accordingly Melch. Canus saith, that "the Lateran council did renew and approve that extravagant" (indeed extravagant) "constitution:" ‡ and Baronius saith of it, that "all do assent to it, so that none dissenteth, who doth not by discord fall from the church." ||

The truth is, Pope Boniface did not invent that proposition, but borrowed it from the school; for Thomas Aquinas, in his work against the Greeks, pretendeth to shew, that "it is of necessity to salvation to be subject to the Roman pontiff." § The which scholastical aphorism Pope Boniface turned into law, and applied to his purpose of exercising domination over princes; offering, in virtue of it, to deprive King Philip of his kingdom.

The appendix to Mart. Pol. saith of Pope Boniface VIII. "Regem se regum, mundi monarcham, unicum in spiritualibus et temporalibus dominum promulgavit;" that "he openly declared himself to be king of kings, monarch of the world, and sole lord and governor both in spirituals and temporals."

Before him, Pope Innocent IV. (An. 1245) did hold and exemplify the same notion; declaring the Emperor Frederick II. *his vassal, and denouncing, in his general council of Lyons, a sentence of*

* Vir super modum ambitiosus et arrogans.—(*Binus in Vita Bonif. VIII.*)

† Constitutionem ipsam, sacro præsentis concilio approbante, innovamus et approbamus.—*Concil. Lateran. sess. xi. p. 153.*

‡ Quam extravagantem renovavit et approbavit concilium Lateranense sub Leone X.—*Canus. loc. vi. 4.*

|| Hæc Bonifacius, cui assentiuntur omnes, ut nullus discrepet, nisi qui dissidio ab ecclesia excidit.—*Baron. anno 1053, § 14.*

§ Ostenditur etiam quod subesse Romano pontifici sit de necessitate salutis.—(*Thom. in Opusc. contra Græcos.*)

deprivation against him in these terms : "We having about the foregoing and many other his wicked miscarriges had before a careful deliberation with our brethren and the holy council, seeing that we, although unworthy, do hold the place of Jesus Christ on earth, and that it was said unto us in the person of St. Peter the apostle, Whatever thou shalt bind on earth,—the said prince (who hath rendered himself unworthy of empire and kingdoms, and of all honour and dignity, and who for his iniquities is cast away by God, that he should not reign or command, being bound by his sins and cast away, and deprived by the Lord of all honour and dignity) do shew, denounce, and accordingly by sentence deprive; absolving all who are held bound by oath of allegiance from such oath forever; by apostolical authority firmly prohibiting, that no man henceforth do obey or regard him as emperor or king; and decreeing, that whoever shall hereafter yield advice, or aid, or favour to him as emperor or king, shall immediately lie under the band of excommunication."*

Before him, Pope Innocent the Third (that *true wonder of the world, and changer of the age*†) did affirm "the pontifical authority so much to exceed the royal power, as the sun doth the moon;"‡ and applieth to the former that of the prophet Jeremiah: *Ecce, constitui te super gentes et regna*;—"See, I have set thee over the nations and over the kingdoms, to root out, and to pull down, and to destroy and to throw down,"^a &c.

Of this power that pope made experiment, by deposing the Emperor Otho IV.; "whom," saith Nauclerus, "as rebellious to the apostolical see, he first did strike with an anathema; then him persevering in his obstinacy did in a council of prelates, held at Rome, pronounce deposed from empire."||

* Nos itaque super præmissis, &c.—*P. Innoc. IV. in Conc. Lugd.* Matt. Paris (anno 1253) saith, he deemed kings *mancipia papæ*.

† Vere stupor mundi, et immutator seculi.—*Matt. Par.* anno 1217.

‡ Ut quanta est inter solem et lunam tanta inter pontifices et reges differentia cognoscatur.—*P. Innoc. III. in Decret. Greg.* lib. i. tit. 33, cap. 6.

|| Imperatorem—ut rebellem sedi apostolicæ et inobedientem anathemate primum, deinde in pertinacia perseverantem, in concilio præsumpta
^a Jer. i. 10.

The which authority was avowed by that great council under this pope (the which, according to the men of Trent, did represent or constitute the church), wherein it was ordained, that if a "temporal lord, being required and admonished by the church, should neglect to purge his territory from heretical filth, he should by the metropolitan and the other com-provincial bishops be noosed in the band of excommunication; and that if he should slight to make satisfaction within a year, it should be signified to the pope, that he might from that time denounce the subjects absolved from their fealty to him, and expose the territory to be seized on by Catholics,"* &c.

Before that, Pope Paschal II. (An. 1099) deprived Henry IV. and excited enemies to persecute him; telling them, that they could not "offer a more acceptable sacrifice to God, than by impugning him, who endeavoured to take the kingdom from God's church."†

Before him (An. 1088), Pope Urban II. (called Turban by some in his age) did preach this doctrine, recommended to us in the decrees, that "subjects are by no authority constrained to pay the fidelity which they have sworn to a Christian prince, who opposeth God and his saints, or violateth their precepts."‡ An instance whereof we have in his granting a privilege to the canons of Tours; "which," saith he, "if any emperor, king, prince, &c. shall wilfully attempt to thwart, let him be deprived of the dignity of his honour and power."||

lum, quod Romæ tum Innocentius celebrabat, ab imperio depositum percussit et pronuncia-vit.—*Naucl.* anno 1212.

* Neque enim per. Lateranense concilium ecclesia statuit, &c.—*Syn. Trid.* sess. xiv. cap. 5. Si vero dominus temporalis requisitus et monitus.—*Conc. Later.* cap. 3, in *Decret. Greg.* lib. v. tit. 7, cap. 13.

† Nam in hac non tantum parte, sed ubique, cum poteris, Henricum, hæreticorum caput, et ejus fautores pro viribus persequaris. Nullum profecto gratius Deo sacrificium, quam si eum impugnes, qui se contra Deum erexit, qui ecclesiæ regnum auferre conatur.—*P. Pasch. Ep. vii. ad Rob. Fland. Com.*

‡ Fidelitatem enim quam Christiano principi jurarunt, Deo ejusque sanctis adversanti, eorumque præcepta, nulla cohibentur auctoritate persolvere.—*Caus. xv. qu. 7, cap. 5.*

|| Si quis imperator, rex, princeps—contra hanc constitutionem venire tentaverit—potestatis honorisque sui dignitate careat.—*P. Urb. II. Ep. 12.*

But the great apostle (if not author) of this confounding doctrine was Pope Gregory VII. (a man of a bold spirit and fiery temper, inured even before his entry on that See to bear sway, and drive on daring projects; possessed with resolution to use the advantages of his place and time in pushing forward the papal interest to the utmost), who did *lift up his voice like a trumpet*, kindling wars and seditions thereby over Christendom. His dictates and practices are well known, being iterated in his own epistles, and in the Roman councils under him, extant:* yet it may be worth the while to hear him swagger in his own language.

“For the dignity and defence of God’s holy church, in the name of Almighty God, the Father, Son, and Holy Ghost, I depose from imperial and royal administration, King Henry, son of Henry sometime Emperor, who too boldly and rashly hath laid hands on thy church; and I absolve all Christians subject to the empire from that oath whereby they were wont to plight their faith unto true kings: for it is right that he should be deprived of dignity, who doth endeavour to diminish the majesty of the church.†

“Go to, therefore, most holy princes of the apostles, and what I said, by interposing your authority, confirm; that all men may now at length understand, if ye can bind and loose in heaven, that ye also can upon earth take away and give empires, kingdoms, and whatsoever mortals can have: for if ye can judge things belonging unto God, what is to be deemed concerning these inferior and profane things? And if it is your part to judge angels, who govern proud princes, what becometh it you to do toward their servants? Let kings now, and all secular

princes, learn by this man’s example, what ye can do in heaven, and in what esteem ye are with God; and let them henceforth fear to slight the commands of holy church: but put forth suddenly this judgment, that all men may understand, that not casually, but by your means, this son of iniquity doth fall from his kingdom.”*

So did that pope, not unadvisedly in heat or passion, but out of settled judgment, upon cool deliberation, express himself in his synods at Rome.

This pope is indeed by many held the inventor and broacher of this strange doctrine; and even those, who about his age did oppose it, did express themselves of this mind, calling it “the novel tradition, schism, heresy of Hildebrand.”†

“Pope Hildebrand” (saith the church of Liege, in their answer to the epistle to Pope Paschal) “is author of this new schism, and first did raise the priest’s lance against the royal diadem.—Who first did girt himself, and by his example other popes, with the sword of war against the emperors.”‡

“This only novelty,” saith Sigebert, “not to say heresy, had not yet sprang up in the world, that the priests of him who saith to the king, Apostate,” and who maketh hypocrites to reign for the sins of the people, should teach the people that they owe no subjection to bad kings; and although they have sworn allegiance to the king, they yet owe him none, and that they who take part against the king may not be said to be perjured; yea, that he who shall obey the king may be held excommunicate; he that shall oppose the king, may be absolved from the crime of injustice and perjury.”||

* *Vide ejus dictata apud Bin. post, lib. 2; Ep. 17.; iv. 2; viii. 21, et passim; i. 58; ii. 5, 12, 13, 18, 32; iii. 10; iv. 1, 2, 3, 7, 22.*

† *Hac itaque fiducia fretus, pro dignitate et tutela ecclesie sue sancte, Omnipotentis Dei nomine, Patris, Filii, et Spiritus Sancti, Henricum regem, Henrici quondam imperatoris filium, qui audacter nimium et temerarie in ecclesiam tuam manus injecit, imperatoria administratione regiaque dejicio; et Christianos omnes imperio subjectos juramento illo absolvo, quo fidem veris regibus prestare consueverunt: dignum enim est, ut in honore careat, qui majestatem ecclesie imminuere causatur.—Plat. in Greg. VII. et tom. 7, Conc. Rom. iii. apud Bin. p. 484.*

* *Agite, igitur, apostolorum sanctissimi principes, et quod dixi.—Plat. in Greg. VII. Conc. Rom. vii. apud Bin. tom. vii. p. 491.*

† *Quod ex novella traditione Hildebrandus.—Ecl. Leod. upud Bin. tom. vii. p. 521.*

‡ *Hildebrandus P. author est hujus novelli schismatis, et primus levavit sacerdotalem lanceam contra diadema regni.—Ibid. p. 522. Qui primus se et suo exemplo alios pontifices, contra imp. accinxit gladio belli.—Ibid. p. 523.*

|| *Hac sola novitas, ne dicam hæresis, nondum in mundo emerferat, ut sacerdotes illius qui dicit regi, apostata, et qui regnare facit hypocritas propter peccata populi, doceant populum, quod malis regibus nullam debeant subjectionem, et licet ei sacramentum fidelitatis*

† *Job xxxiv. 18, 30.*

Indeed certain it is, that this man did in most downright strains hold the doctrine, and most smartly apply it to practice; yet did he disclaim the invention or introduction of it; professing that he followed the notions and examples of his predecessors, divers of which he allegeth in defence of his proceedings. "We," saith he, "holding the statutes of our holy predecessors, do by apostolical authority absolve those from their oath who are obliged by fealty or sacrament to excommunicate persons, and by all means prohibit that they observe fealty to them.*"

And so it is, that (although for many successions before Pope Hildebrand the popes were not in condition or capacity to take so much upon them; there having been a row of persons intruded into that See, void of virtue, and of small authority, most of them very beasts, who depended upon the favour of princes for their admittance, confirmation, or support in the place; yet) we may find some popes before him, who had a great spice of those imperious conceits, and upon occasion made very bold with princes, assuming power over them, and darting menaces against them. For

Pope Leo IX. telleth us, that Constantine M. "did think it very unbecoming, that they should be subject to an earthly empire whom the Divine Majesty had set over an heavenly:"† and surely he was of his author's mind, whom he alleged; although indeed this pope may be supposed to speak this and other sayings to that purpose, by suggestion of Hildebrand, by whom he was much governed.

Pope Stephanus VI. told the Emperor Basilius, that "he ought to be subject with all veneration to the Roman church."‡

fecerint, nullam, tamen fidelitatem debeant; nec perjuri dicantur, qui contra regem senserint; imo, qui regi paruerit pro excommunicato habeatur; qui contra regem fecerit, a noxa injustitiæ et perjurii absolvatur.—*Sigeb. Chron.* anno 1088.

* Nos, sanctorum prædecessorum statuta tenentes, eos qui excommunicatis fidelitate aut sacramento constricti sunt, apostolica auctoritate a sacramento absolvimus, et ne eis fidelitatem observent omnibus modis prohibemus.—*Greg. VII. Ep.* viii. 21; *Caus.* xv. qu. 7, cap. 4.

† Valde indignum fore arbitratus, terreno imperio subdi, quos Divina Majestas præfecit cælesti.—*P. Teo. IX. Ep.* 1 cap. 12.

‡ Plat. in Vita Leon. IX. Quis te seduxit,

Pope John VIII. (or IX.) did pretend obedience due to him from princes (*An. 873*); and in default thereof threatened to excommunicate them.*

Pope Nicholas I. (*An. 858*) cast many imperious sayings and threats at King Lotharius; these among others: "We do therefore by apostolical authority, under obstestation of the divine judgment, enjoin to thee, that in Triers and Colen thou shouldest not suffer any bishop to be chosen, before a report be made to our apostleship."† (Was not this *satis pro imperio*?) And again, "That being compelled thou mayest be able to repent, know, that very soon thou shalt be struck with the ecclesiastical sword; so that thou mayest be afraid any more to commit such things in God's holy church."‡

And this he suggesteth for right doctrine, that subjection is not due to bad princes; perverting the apostle's words to that purpose: "Be subject to the king as excelling, that is," saith he, "in virtues, not in vices:"|| whereas the apostle meaneth eminency in power.

Pope Gregory VII. doth also allege Pope Zachary, "who," saith he, "did depose the king of the Franks, and did absolve all the French from the oath of fidelity which they had taken unto him, not so much for his iniquities, as because he was unfit for such a power."§

This indeed was a notable act of jurisdiction, if Pope Gregory's word may be

ut pontificem œcumenicum scommatibus lacerases, et S. Romanam ecclesiam maledictis incesseres, cui cum omni veneratione subditus esse debes?—*Steph. VI. Ep.* i. *Baron.* anno 885, § 11.

* — cuncti venire per inobedientiam neglexistis.—*Joh. VIII. Ep.* 119; deinceps excommunicamus omnes, &c.—*Ibid.*

† Idcirco apostolica autoritate, sub Divini judicii obstestatione, injungimus tibi, ut in Trevirensi urbe et in Agrippina Colonia nullum eligi patiaris, antequam relatum super hoc nostro apostolatui fiat.—*Grat. Dist.* lxiii. cap. 4.

‡ Ut saltem compulsus respicere valeas, noveris, te citissime mucrone ecclesiastico ferendum; ita ut ulterius talia in S. Dei ecclesia perpetrare formides.—*P. Nic. I. Ep.* 64.

|| Regi quasi præcellenti, virtutibus scilicet, non vitiis, subditi estote.—*P. Nic. I. Ep.* 4, *App.* p. 626.

§ Alius item Rom. pontifex, Zacharias scilicet, regem Francorum, non tam pro suis iniquitatibus, quam pro eo quod tantæ potestati erat inutilis, deposuit—omnesque Francigenas a juramento fidelitatis quod illi —. *Decret. ii. part. Caus.* xv. q. 6.

taken for matter of fact; but divers maintain that pope Zachary did only concur with the rebellious deposers of King Chilperick in way of advice or approbation, not by authority.

It was pretty briskly said of Pope Adrian I. (An. 772), "We do by general decree constitute, that whatever king, or bishop, or potentate, shall hereafter believe, or permit, that the censure of the Roman pontiffs may be violated in any case, he shall be an execrable anathema, and shall be guilty before God, as a betrayer of the Catholic faith."*

"Constitutions against the canons and decrees of the bishops of Rome, or against good manners, are of no moment."†

Before that, Pope Gregory II. (An. 730), because the Eastern emperor did cross the worship of images, did withdraw subjection from him, and did thrust his authority out of Italy. "He" (saith Baronius), "did effectually cause both the Romans and Italians to recede from obedience to the emperor."‡

This was an act in truth of rebellion against the emperor, in pretence of jurisdiction over him; for how otherwise could he justify or colour the fact? "So," as Baronius reflecteth, "he did leave to posterity a worthy example" (forsooth), "that heretical princes should not be suffered to reign in the church of Christ, if, being warned, they were found pertinacious in error."||

And no wonder he then was so bold, seeing the pope had obtained so much respect in those parts of the world, that (as he told the Emperor Leo Isaurus) "all the kingdoms of the west did hold St.

* *Generali decreto constituimus, ut exsecrandum anathema sit, et veluti prævaricator catholicæ fidei semper apud Deum reus existat, quicumque regum, seu episcoporum, vel potentum, deinceps Romanorum pontificum censuram in quocunque crediderit, vel permisit violandam.—P. Had. I. Capit. apud Grat. Caus. xxv. qu. 1, cap. 11.*

† *Constitutiones contra canones et decreta præsulum Romanorum, vel bonos mores, nullius sunt momenti.—Distinct. x. cap. 4.*

‡ *Tum Romanos tum Italos ad ejus obedientiam recedere penitus fecit.—Baron. anno 730, § 4.*

|| *Sic dignum posteris reliquit exemplum, ne in ecclesia Christi regnare sinerentur hæretici principes, si sæpe moniti, in errore persistere obstinato animo invenirentur.—Baron. ibid.*

Peter as an earthly god:"* of which he might be able to seduce some to uphold him in his rebellious practices.

This is the highest source, as I take it, to which this extravagant doctrine can be driven. For that single passage of Pope Felix III., though much ancients, will not amount to it. "It is certain, that, in causes relating to God, it is the safest course for you, that according to his institution, ye endeavour to submit the will of the king to the priests,"† &c.

For while the emperor did retain any considerable authority in Italy, the popes were better advised than to vent such notions; and while they themselves did retain any measure of pious or prudent modesty, they were not disposed to it. And we may observe divers popes near that time in word and practice thwarting that practice. For instance,

Pope Gelasius, a vehement stickler for papal authority, doth say to the Emperor Anastasius, "I, as being a Roman born, do love, worship, reverence thee as the Roman prince."‡ And he saith, that "the prelates of religion (knowing the empire conferred on him by Divine Providence) did obey his laws."|| And elsewhere he discourseth, that "Christ had distinguished by their proper acts and dignities the officers of ecclesiastical and civil power,"§ that one should not meddle with the other; so disclaiming temporal power due to himself, being content to screw up his spiritual authority.

After him, as is well known, Pope Gregory I. (as became a pious and good man) did avow the emperor for "his lord, by God's gift superior to all men, to whom he was subject, whom he in

* *Ὁν αἱ πᾶσαι βασιλεῖαι τῆς δύσεως ὡς θεὸν ἐπιγέρον ἔχουσι.—Greg. II. Epist. i. Bin. tom. v. p. 508.*

† *Certum est, rebus vestris hoc esse salutare, ut, cum de causis Dei agitur, juxta ipsius constitutionem, regiam voluntatem sacerdotibus Christi studeatis sublere, non præferre.—&c.—P. Felix. III. (anno 483), Dist. x. cap. 3.*

‡ *Te, sicut Romanus natus, Romanum principem amo, colo, suspicio.—P. Gelas. I. Epist. 8 (ad Anast. Imp.)*

|| *—cognoscentes imperium tibi superna dispositione collatum, legibus tuis quoque parent religionis antistites.—P. Gelas. I. Epist. 8, (ad Anast. Imp.)*

§ *Christus, dispensatione magna temperans, sic actionibus propriis dignitatibusque distinctis officia potestatis utriusque discrevit, &c.*

duty was bound to obey ;”* and supposed it a high presumption for any one to “set himself above the honour of the empire,”† by assuming the title of universal bishop.

After him, Pope Agatho (An. 680), in the acts of the sixth general council, doth call the Emperor Constantine Pogonatus *his lord*; doth avow “himself, together with all presidents of the churches, servants to the emperor;”‡ doth say, that his see and his synod were subject to him, and did owe obedience to him.

Presently after him, Pope Leo II. who confirmed that general synod, doth call the emperor “the prototype son of the church;”|| and acknowledgeth the body of priests to be servants “(meanest servants) of his royal nobleness.”§

After him, Pope Constantine (An. 709) (the immediate predecessor of Pope Gregory II.), when the emperor did command him to come to Constantinople, “the most holy man,” saith Anastasius in his Life, “did obey the imperial commands.”¶

Yea, Pope Gregory II. himself, before his defection (when perhaps the circumstances of time did not animate him thereto), did, in his epistle to Leo Isaurus, acknowledge him as emperor to be “the head of Christians,”** and himself consequently subject to him.

This Gregory therefore may be reputed the father of that doctrine, which, being fostered by his successors, was by Pope Gregory VII. brought up to its robust pitch and stature.

* Ad hoc potestas Dominorum meorum pietati cœlesti data est super omnes homines.

Ego indignus famulus vester—

Ego quidem jussio subjectus.

P. Greg. I. Ep. ii. 26.

† Qui honori quoque imperii vestri se per privatum vocabulum superponit.—Ep. iv. 32.

‡ Δεσπότης καὶ τέκνα.—Act. Syn. vi. p. 53. ἡμεῖς δοῦλοι τοῦ βασιλέως, p. 304. ἡμετέρα δουλεία, p. 32. τῶν ἐκκλησιῶν πρόεδροι οἱ δοῦλοι τοῦ χριστιανικωτάτου ἡμῶν κράτους, p. 94. δουλικὸς ἡμῶν καὶ ἡμᾶς θρόνος, p. 64. ἔνεκεν ὑπακοῆς, ἣς ὀφείλομεν, pp. 33, 34.

|| Πρωτότυπον ἐκκλησίας τέκνον.—Act. Syn. vi. p. 303.

§ Ἡ βασιλικὴ εὐγένεια τοῖς ἐσχάτοις ἑαυτῆς δοῦλοις συγκατέβαινε.—Ibid. p. 304.

¶ Misit imp. ad Constantinum P. sacram, per quam jussit eum ad regiam ascendere urbem; qui sanctiss. vir jussis imperialibus obtemperans.—Anast. in Vit. P. Const.

** Ὡς βασιλεὺς καὶ κεφαλὴ τῶν Χριστιανῶν.—P. Greg. II. ad Leon. Is. Ep. i. (p. 592.)

I know, Pope Gregory VII. to countenance him, doth allege Pope Innocent I. excommunicating the Emperor Arcadius for his proceedings against St. Chrysostom: and the writers of St. Chrysostom's Life, with others of the like age and credit, do back him therein.^d But seeing the historians who lived in St. Chrysostom's own time, and who write very carefully about him, do not mention any such thing; seeing that, being the first act in the kind, must have been very notable, and have made a great noise; seeing that story doth not suit with the tenor of proceedings, reported by those most credible historians, in that case; seeing that fact doth no ways sort to the condition and way of those times; that report cannot be true, and it must be number'd among the many fabulous narrations, devised by some wanton Greeks, to set out the life of that excellent personage.

The same pope doth also allege St. Gregory M. denouncing excommunication and *deprivation of honour to all kings, bishops, judges, &c.* who should violate the privilege granted to the monastery of St. Medard.* But this (as are many such privileges) is a rank forgery, unworthily imposed on Pope Gregory (that prudent, meek, and holy man), much to his wrong and disgrace: which I will not be at trouble to confute, having shewed St. Gregory to have been of another judgment and temper, than to behave himself thus towards princes; and seeing that task is abundantly discharged by that very learned man, Monsieur Launoy.^e

Indeed (upon this occasion to digress a little farther), it doth not seem to have been the opinion of the ancient popes, that they might excommunicate their sovereign princes: for if they might, why did they forbear to exercise that power, when there was greatest reason, and great temptation for it?

* Siquis autem regum, antistitum, judicum, vel quarumcumque secularium personarum, hujus apostolicæ auctoritatis, et nostræ præceptionis decreta violaverit—cujuscunque dignitatis vel sublimitatis sit, honore suo privetur.—Gr. M. Post. Et. xxxviii. lib. 2.

^d Greg. VII. Ep. viii. 2; Baron an 407, § 23.
^e Greg. Alex. Vit. Chrys. cap. 68; Anon. Vit. Chrys. cap. 39; Socrates, Sozomen, Theodoret, Palladius.

^e Epist. pars vii.

Why did not Pope Julius or Pope Liberius excommunicate Constantius, the great favourer of the Arians, against whom Athanasius, St. Hilary, and Lucifer Calar. do so earnestly inveigh, calling him heretic, antichrist, and what not? How did Julian himself escape the censure of Pope Liberius? Why did not Pope Damasus thunder against Valens, that fierce persecutor of Catholics? Why did not Damasus censure the Empress Justina, the patroness of Arianism? Why did not Pope Siricius censure Theodosius I. for that bloody fact, for which St. Ambrose denied him the communion? How was it that Pope Leo I. (that stout and high pope) had not the heart to correct Theodosius Junior in this way, who was the supporter of his adversary Dioscorus, and the obstinate protinate protector of the second Ephesine council, which that pope so much detested? Why did not that pope rather compel that emperor to reason by censures, than supplicate him by tears? How did so many popes connive at Theodoric and other princes professing Arianism at their door? Wherefore did not Pope Simplicius or Pope Felix thus punish the Emperor Zeno, the supplanter of the synod of Chalcedon, for which they had so much zeal? Why did neither Pope Felix, nor Pope Gelasius, nor Pope Symmachus, nor Pope Hormisdas, excommunicate the Emperor Anastasius (yea, did not so much, Pope Gelasius saith, as "touch his name,"*) for countenancing the oriental bishops in their schism, and refractory noncompliance with the papal authority? Those popes did indeed clash with that emperor, but they expressly deny that they did condemn him with others whom he did favour. "We," saith Pope Symmachus, "did not excommunicate thee, O emperor, but Acacius.—If you mingle yourself, you are not excommunicated by us, but by yourself." And, "If the emperor pleaseth to join himself with those condemned," saith Pope Gelasius, "it cannot be imputed to us."†

* Quid sibi vult autem, quod dixerit imperator a nobis se in religione damnatum, cum super hac parte decessor meus non solum minime nomen ejus attigerit?—*P. Gelas. I. Epist. 4.*

† Nos te non excommunicavimus, imperator, sed Acacium.—Si temisces, non a nobis, sed a

Wherefore Baronius doth ill, in affirming Pope Symmachus to have anathematized Anastasius:† whereas that pope plainly denied that he had excommunicated him, yea, denied it even in those words which are cited to prove it, being rightly read:* for they are corruptly written in Baronius and Binius; *ego* (which hath no sense, or one contradictory to his former assertion) being put for *nego*, which is good sense, and agreeable to what he and the other popes do affirm in relation to that matter.

Why do we not read that any pope formally did excommunicate, though divers did zealously contradict and oppose, the princes who did reject images?

In fine, a noble bishop above 500 years ago did say, "I read and read again the records of the Roman kings and emperors, and I nowhere find that any of them before this was excommunicated or deprived of his kingdom by the Roman Pontiff."‡

Surely therefore the ancient popes did either not know their power, or were very negligent of their duty.

Such have been the doctrine and behaviour of popes in reference to their power.

§ V. This doctrine of the pope's universal power over all persons in all matters may reasonably be supposed the sentiment of all popes continually for a long time, even for more than 500 years unto this present day. For,

1. If this doctrine be false, it implieth no slight error, but one of a very high nature and most dangerous consequence; which involveth great arrogance and iniquity, which tendeth to work enormous wrongs and grievous mischiefs: whence,

te ipso excommunicatus es.—*P. Symmachus I. Ep. 7.* Si isti placet se miscere damnatis, nobis non potest imputari.—*P. Gelas. I. Ep. 4.*

* Dicis quod, mecum conspirante senatu, excommunicaverim te. Ista quidem ego (nego), sed rationabiliter factum a decessoribus meis sine dubio subsequor.—*P. Sym. Ep. 7.* You say, that I excommunicated you by the joint consent of the senate. This I deny: but I undoubtedly follow what was with good reason done by my predecessors.

† Lego et relego Romanorum regum et imperatorum gesta, et nusquam invenio quenquam eorum ante hunc a Romano pontifice excommunicatum, vel regno privatum.—*Otho Frising. Chron. lib. vi. cap. 35.*

‡ Baron. an. 503, § 17.

if any pope should conceive it false, he were bound openly, to disclaim, to condemn, to refute it; lest the authority of his predecessors, and his connivance, should induce others into it, or settle them in it; as it is (in regard to Pope Honorius) charged upon Pope Leo II. "who did not, as it became the apostolical authority, extinguish the flame of heretical doctrine beginning, but did by neglecting cherish it."* In such a case a pope must not be silent: for, "No small danger," saith Pope Gelasius, "lieth upon popes in being silent about what agreeth to the service of God:"† and "If," saith Pope Paschal, "a pope by his silence doth suffer the church to be polluted with the gall of bitterness and root of impiety, he should nowise be excusable before the eternal Judge:"‡ and "Error," saith Pope Felix III., "which is not resisted (by those in eminent office), is approved; and truth which is not defended, is oppressed:"|| and, "He is not free from suspicion of a close society in mischief, who ceaseth to obviate it:"§ and, "We," saith Pope Gregory I., "do greatly offend, if we do hold our peace at things that are to be corrected."¶ But all popes since the time specified have either openly declared for this doctrine, or have been silent, and so have avowed it by tacit consent.

2. Any pope disapproving that tenent were bound to renounce communion with those that hold and profess it; or at least to check and discountenance it. But on the contrary they have suffered it to be maintained in their presence and audience; and have hugged that sort of men with especial favour, as their most

* — cum Honorio, qui flammam hæretici dogmatis non, at decuit apostolicam auctoritatem, incipientem extinxit, sed negligendo confovit.—*P. Leo II. Ep. 2.*

† Non leve discrimen incumbit pontificibus siluisse pro divinitatis cultu quod congruit.—*P. Gelas. I. Ep. 8, (ad Anastas. Imp.)*

‡ Si vero nostro silentio pateremur ecclesiam felle amaritudinis et impietatis radice pollui, qua ratione possemus apud æternum Judicem excusari?—*P. Paschal. II. Ep. 3, (ad Anselm. Cant.)*

|| Error cui non resistitur, approbatur; et veritas quæ minime defensatur, opprimitur.—*P. Felix III. Ep. 1. (ad Acacium.)*

§ Non caret scrupulo societatis occultæ, qui evidenter facinori desinit obviare.—*Id. Ibid.*

¶ Si ea quæ nobis corrigenda sunt tacemus, valde delinquimus.—*P. Greg. I. Ep. ii. 37.*

affectionate and sure friends: they have suspected, discountenanced, and frowned on those who have showed dislike of it.

Those men indeed who vouch this doctrine, may reasonably be deemed to do it as accomplices with the popes, on purpose to gratify and curry favour with them, in hopes of obtaining reward and preferment of them for it.*

3. The chief authors and most zealous abettors of these notions (popes, synods, doctors of the school) have continually passed for most authentic masters of divinity, and have retained greatest authority in the church governed and guided by the pope.

4. The decrees containing them do stand in their canon law, and in their collections of synods, without any caution or mark of dislike; which is a sufficient indication of their constant adherence to this doctrine.

5. The common style of the papal edicts or bulls doth import their sense; which is imperious, in regard to all persons without exception: "Let no man" (say they) "presume to infringe this our will and command," &c.

6. Popes of all tempers and qualifications (even those who have passed for the most wise and moderate among them) have been ready to practise according to those principles, when occasion did invite, and circumstances of things did permit; interdicting princes, absolving subjects from their allegiance, raising or encouraging insurrections; as appeareth by their transactions not long since against our princes, and those of France; which shews the very See imbued with those notions.

7. They do oblige all bishops most solemnly to avow this doctrine, and to engage themselves to practice according to it. For in the oath prescribed to all bishops they are required to avow, that "they will observe the apostolical commands with all their power, and cause them to be observed by others;"† that "they will aid and defend the Roman papacy and the royalties of

* Οὐ μόνον αὐτὰ ποιοῦσιν, ἀλλὰ καὶ συνευδοκοῦσι τοῖς πράσσουσιν.—*Rom. i. 32.* They not only do the same, but have pleasure in them that do them.

† Mandata apostolica totis viribus observabo, et ab aliis observari faciam.

St. Peter against every man;”* that “they will to their power persecute and impungn heretics, schismatics, and rebels to the pope or his successors,”† without any exception; which was, I suppose, chiefly meant against their own prince (if occasion should be); together with divers other points, importing their acknowledgment and abetting the pope’s universal domination.

These horrible oaths of bishops to the pope do seem to have issued from the same shop with the high Hildebrandine dictates: for the oath in the Decretals is ascribed to Pope Gregory (I suppose Gregory VII.) And in the sixth Roman synod under Gregory VII. there is an oath of like tenor, exacted from the bishop of Aquileia; perhaps occasionally, which in pursuance of that example might be extended to all.*

And that before that time such oaths were not imposed doth appear from hence; that when Pope Paschal II. did require them from some great bishops (the bishop of Palermo, and the archbishop of Poland), they did wonder and boggle at it, as an uncouth novelty; nor doth the pope, in favour of his demand, allege any ancient precedent, but only proposeth some odd reasons for it.^b “You have signified unto me, most dear brother, that the king and his nobles did exceedingly wonder, that an oath with such a condition should be every where offered you by my commissioners, and that you should take that oath, which I had written, and they tendered to you.”‡

§ VI. All Romanists, in consistence with their principles, do seem obliged to hold this opinion concerning the pope’s universal power. For, seeing many of their standing masters and judges of controversies have so expressly from their

* Papatum Romanum et regalia S. Petri adiutor eis ero ad retinendum et defendendum contra omnem hominem.

† Hæreticos, schismaticos, et rebelles eidem Domino nostro vel successoribus prædictis pro posse persequar et impugnabo.

‡ Significasti, frater charissime, regem et regni majores admiratione permotos, quod passim tibi ab apocriariis nostris tali conditione oblatum fuerit, si sacramentum, quod a nobis scriptum detulerant, jurares.—*P. Pasch. II. Ep. 6.*

† Greg. Decret. lib. ii. tit. 24, cap. 4; Concil. Rom. vi. apud Bin. p. 489.

^b Decret. Greg. lib. i. tit. 6, cap. 4.

chair declared and defined it; all the row for many ages consenting to it and countenancing it; not one of them having signified any dissent or dislike of it; and considering that, if in anything they may require or deserve belief, it is in this point; for in what are they more skilful and credible than about the nature of their own office? “What,” saith Bellarmine wisely, “may they be conceived to know better than the authority of their own See?”* Seeing it hath been approved by their most great and famous councils, which they hold universal, and which their adored synod of Trent doth allege for such (the Laterane under Pope Innocent III. that of Lyons under Pope Innocent IV. the other Laterane under Pope Leo X.); seeing it hath been current among their divines of greatest vogue and authority, the great masters of their school; seeing by so large a consent and concurrence, during so long a time, it may pretend (much better than divers other points of great importance) to be confirmed by tradition or prescription; why should it not be admitted for a doctrine of the holy Roman church, *the mother and mistress of all churches*? How can they who disavow this notion be true sons of that mother, or faithful scholars of that mistress? How can they acknowledge any authority in their church to be infallible, or certain, or obliging to assent?

How can they admit the pope for authentic judge of controversies, or master of Christian doctrine, or in any point credible, who hath in so great a matter erred so foully, and seduced the Christian world; whom they desert in a point of so great consideration and influence on practice; whom they, by virtue of their dissent from him in this opinion, may often be obliged to oppose in his proceedings?

How can they deny, that bad doctrines might creep in, and obtain sway in the church, by the interest of the pope and his clients?

How can they charge novelty or herodoxy on those who refuse some dictates of popes, of papal councils, of scholastic divines, which stand upon no better

* Ipsis præcipue debet esse nota suæ sedis autoritas.—*Bell. iv. 3.*

grounds than those on which this doctrine standeth?

Why hath no synod, of the many which have been held in all parts of Christendom, clearly disclaimed this opinion; but all have let it slip, or have seemed by silence to approve it?

Yea, how can the concord and unity of that church well consist with a dissent from this doctrine? For,

No man apprehending it false, seemeth capable with good conscience to hold communion with those who profess it; for, upon supposition of its falsehood, the pope and his chief adherents are the teachers and abettors of the highest violation of divine commands, and most enormous sins; of usurpation, tyranny, imposture, perjury, rebellion, murder, rapine, and all the villainies complicated in the practical influence of this doctrine.

It seemeth clear as the sun, that, if this doctrine be an error, it is one of the most pernicious heresies that ever was vented; involving the highest impiety, and producing the greatest mischief. For if he that should teach adultery, incest, simony, theft, murder, or the like crimes, to be lawful, would be a heretic; how much more would he be such that should recommend perjury, rebellion, regicide (things inducing wars, confusions, slaughters, desolations, all sorts of injustice and mischief), as duties!

How then can any man safely hold communion with such persons? May we not say with Pope Symmachus, that "to communicate with such is to consent with them?" with Pope Gelasius, that "it is worse than ignorance of the truth to communicate with the enemies of truth?" and, that "he who communicateth with such an heresy is worthily judged to be removed from our society?"*

§ VII. Yet so loose and slippery are the principles of the party which is jumbled in adherence to the pope, that divers will not allow us to take this tenet of infinite power to be a doctrine of their church; for divers in that communion do not assent to it.

* An communicare non est consentire cum talibus?—*P. Sym. I. Ep. 7.* Quasi non sit deterius, et non ignorasse veritatem, et tamen communicasse cum veritatis inimicis.—*P. Gelas. I Ep. 1.* Cuicumque hæresis communicans merito iudicaretur a nostra societate removendus.—*Id. ibid. Vide Ep. xiii. p. 642.*

For there is a sort of heretics (as Bellarmine and Baronius call them) skulking everywhere in the bosom of their church, all about Christendom, and in some places stalking with open face, who restrain "the pope's authority so far, as not to allow him any power over sovereign princes in temporal affairs; much less any power of depriving them of their kingdoms and principalities."*

"They are all branded for heretics, who take from the church of Rome, and the See of St. Peter, one of the two swords, and allow only the spiritual." This heresy Baronius hath nominated the "heresy of the politics."†

This heresy a great nation, otherwise sticking to the Roman communion, doth stiffly maintain, not enduring the papal sovereignty over princes in temporals to be preached in it.

There were many persons, yea, synods, who did oppose Pope Hildebrand in the birth of his doctrine, condemning it for a pernicious novelty, and branding it with the name of heresy; as we before shewed.

Since the Hildebrandine age there have been in every nation (yea, in Italy itself) divers historians, divines, and lawyers, who have in elaborate tracts maintained the royal sovereignty against the pontifical.

This sort of heretics are now so much increased, that the Hildebrandine doctrine is commonly exploded. Which, by the way, sheweth, that the Roman party is no less than others subject to change its sentiments; opinions among them gaining and losing vogue, according to circumstances of time and contingencies of things.

§ VIII. Neither are the adherents to the Roman church more agreed concerning the extent of the pope's authority even in spiritual matters.

* *Altera non tam sententia quam hæresis duo docet primo, pontificem ut pontificem ex jure divino nullam habere temporalem potestatem, nec posse ullo modo imperare principibus secularibus, nedum eos regnis et principatu privare. — Bell. V. 1*

† *Hæresis errore notantur omnes qui ab ecclesia Rom. cathedra Petri e duobus alterum gladium auferunt, nec nisi spiritualem concedunt. — Baron. anno 1053, § 14. Hæresis Politicorum, Baron. an. 1073, § 13.*

¹ *Otto Frising. Sigbert. Abbas Ubsp. Occam, Marsilius Patav. &c.*

For, although the popes themselves plainly do claim an absolute supremacy in them over the church; although the stream of divines who do flourish in favour with them doth run that way; although, according to their principles (if they had any principles clearly and certainly fixed), that might seem to be the doctrine of their church: yet is there among them a numerous party, which doth not allow him such a supremacy, putting great restraints to his authority (as we shall presently shew.) And as the other party doth charge this with heresy, so doth this return back the same imputation on that.

§ IX. That their doctrine is in this matter so various and uncertain, is no great wonder; seeing interest is concerned in the question, and principles are defective toward the resolution of it.

1. Contrary interests will not suffer the point to be decided, nor indeed to be freely disputed on either hand.

On one hand, the pope will not allow his prerogatives to be discussed; according to that maxim of the great Pope Innocent III., "When there is a question touching the privileges of the apostolic see, we will not that others judge about them."* Whence (as we before touched) the pope did peremptorily command his legates at Trent, in no case to permit any dispute about his authority.

On the other hand, the French will not permit the supremacy of their king in temporals, or the privileges of their church in spirituals, to be contested in their kingdom. Nor, we may suppose, would any prince admit a decision prejudicial to his authority and welfare, subjecting and enslaving him to the will of the Roman court. Nor (we may hope) would any church patiently comport with the irrecoverable oppression of all its rights and liberties by a peremptory establishment of papal omnipotency.

2. Nor is it easy for their dissensions to be reconciled upon theological grounds, and authorities to which they pretend deference. For, not only their schools and masters of their doctrine do in the case disagree, but their synods do notoriously clash.

* Cum super privilegiis sedis apostolicæ causa vertatur, nolumus de ipsis per alios judicari.—*Greg. Decr.* lib. ii. tit. 1, cap. 12.

§ X. Yea, even popes themselves have shifted their pretences, and varied in style, according to the different circumstances of time, and their variety of humours, designs, interests.

In time of prosperity and upon advantage, when they might safely do it, any pope almost would talk high, and assume much to himself: but when they were low, or stood in fear of powerful contradiction, even the boldest popes would speak submissly or moderately. As, for instance, Pope Leo I., after the second Ephesine synod, when he had to do with Theodosius II., did humbly supplicate, and whine pitifully; but after the synod of Chalcedon, having got the emperor favourable, and most of the bishops complacent to him, he ranted bravely. And we may observe, that even Pope Gregory VII., who did swagger so boisterously against the Emperor Henry, was yet calm and mild in his contests with our William the Conqueror; who had a spirit good enough for him, and was far out of his reach.

And popes of high spirit and bold face (such as Leo I., Gelasius I., Nic. I., Gregory II., Gregory VII., Innocent III., Boniface VIII., Julius II., Paul IV., Sextus V., Paulus V., &c.), as they did ever aspire to screw papal authority to the highest peg; so would they strain their language in commendation of their See as high as their times would bear. But other popes of meeker and modester disposition (such as Julius I., Anastasius II., Gregory I., Leo II., Adrian VI., &c.), were content to let things stand as they found them, and to speak in the ordinary style of their times; yet so, that few have let their authority go backward or decline.

We may observe, that the pretences and language of popes have varied according to several periods, usually growing higher as their state grew looser from danger of opposition or control.

In the first times, while the emperors were pagans, their pretences were suited to their condition, and could not soar high; they were not then so mad as to pretend to any temporal power, and a pittance of spiritual eminency did content them.

When the empire was divided, they could sometimes be more haughty and peremptory; as being in the west, shrouded under the wing of the emperors there

(who commonly did affect to improve their authority, in competition to that of other bishops), and at distance from the reach of the eastern emperor.¹

The cause of Athanasius having produced the Sardican canons, concerning the revision of some causes by the popes, by colour of them they did hugely enlarge their authority, and raise their style; especially in the west, where they had great advantages of augmenting their power.

When the western empire was fallen, their influence upon that part of the empire which came under protection of the eastern emperors rendering them able to do service or disservice to those emperors, they, according to the state of times, and the need of them, did talk more big or more tamely.

Pope Boniface III., having by compliance with the usurper Phocas obtained a declaration from him concerning the headship of the Roman church, did make a considerable step forward toward the height of papal greatness.

After that Pope Gregory II. had withdrawn Italy from the oriental empire, and Rome had grown in a manner loose and independent from other secular powers; in the confusions of the west, the pope interposing to arbitrate between princes, trucking and bartering with them, as occasion served, for mutual aid and countenance, did grow in power, and answerably did advance his pretences.

The spurious Decretal Epistles of the ancient popes (which asserted to the pope high degrees of authority) being foisted into men's hands, and insensibly creeping into repute did inspire the pope with confidence to invade all the ancient constitutions, privileges, and liberties of churches; and having got such interest every where, he might say what he pleased, no clergyman daring to check or cross him. Having drawn to himself the final decision of all causes, having got a finger in disposal of all preferments; having by dispensations, exemptions, and grants of privileges, tied to him so many dependents, what might not he say or do?

Pope Gregory VII. being a man of untameable spirit, and taking advantage from the distractions and corruptions of

his times, did venture to pull a feather with the emperor; and with success having mated him, did set up a peremptory claim to sovereignty over all persons in all causes.

In his footsteps his successors have trodden, being ever ready upon occasion to plead such a title, and to practise according to it. No pope would forego any power which had been claimed by his predecessors. And popes would ever be sure to have dancers after their pipe, numberless abettors of their pretences.

No wonder, then, that persons deferring much regard to the authority of popes, and accommodating their conceits to the dictates of them (or of persons depending on them), should in their opinions vary about the nature and extent of papal authority; it having never been fixed within certain bounds, or having in several ages continued the same thing.

§ XI. Wherefore intending by God's help to discuss the pretended authority of the pope, and to shew that he by no divine institution, and by no immutable right, hath any such power as he doth claim; by reason of this perplexed variety of opinions I do find it difficult to state the question, or to know at what distinct mark I should level my discourse.

§ XII. But seeing his pretence to any authority in temporals, or to the civil sword, is so palpably vain, that it hardly will bear a serious dispute, having nothing but impudence and sophistry to countenance it; seeing so many in the Roman communion do reject it, and have substantially confuted it; seeing now most are ashamed of it, and very few (even among those sects which have been its chief patrons) will own it; seeing Bellarmine himself doth acknowledge it a novelty devised about 500 years ago in St. Bernard's time;* seeing the popes themselves, whatever they think, dare now scarce speak out, and forbear upon sufficient provocation to practise according to it; I shall spare the trouble of meddling with it, confining my discourse to the pope's authority in ecclesiastical

* Primi qui temporalem potestatem summo pontifici ex Christi institutione tribuunt, videntur esse Hugo de S. Victore, Bernardus, &c.—*Bell. v. 5.* The first that yield the pope temporal power by Christ's institution, seem to be Hugo, &c.

¹ P. Nich. ad Imp. Mich. p. 511, 513.

affairs; the pretence whereto I am persuaded to be no less groundless, and no less noxious than the other to Christendom; the which being overthrown, the other, as superstructed on it, must also necessarily fall.

§ XIII. And here the doctrine which I shall contest against is that in which the cordial partisans of that See do seem to consent, which is most common and current, most applauded and countenanced in their theological schools; which the popes themselves have solemnly defined, and declared for standing law, or rule of jurisdiction; which their most authentic synods (whereby their religion is declared, and distinguished from others) have asserted or supposed; which the tenor of their discipline and practice doth hold forth; which their clergy by most solemn professions and engagements is tied to avow; which all the clients and confidants of Rome do zealously stand for (more than for any other point of doctrine;) and which no man can disclaim without being deemed an enemy or a prevaricator toward the apostolic see.

§ XIV. Which doctrine is this, That (in the words of the Florentine synod's definition) "the apostolical chair and the Roman high priest doth hold a primacy over the universal church; and that the Roman high priest is the successor of St. Peter, the prince of the apostles, and the true lieutenant of Christ, and the head of the church; and that he is the father and doctor of all Christians; and that unto him," in St. Peter, "full power is committed to feed, and direct, and govern the catholic church under Christ; according as is contained in the Acts of General Councils and in the Holy Canons."*

That (in the words of Pope Leo X. approved by the Laterane synod)† "Christ before his departure from the world, did in solidity of the rock institute Peter and his successors to be his lieutenants, to whom it is so necessary to obey, that who doth not obey must die the death."

* *Ἐτι δρίζομεν τὴν ἀγίαν ἀποστολικὴν καθέδραν, &c.—Concil. Flor. defin. p. 854.

† Christus—migraturus ex mundo ad Patrem, in soliditate Petræ Petrum ejusque successores vicarios suos instituit, quibus ex libri Regum testimonio ita obedire necesse est, ut qui non obedierit, morte moriatur.—P. Leo X. in Conc. Later. sess. xi. p. 151.

That to the pope, as sovereign monarch by divine sanction of the whole church, do appertain royal prerogatives (*regalia Petri*, the royalties of Peter, they are called in the oath prescribed to bishops.) Such as these which follow:

To be superior to the whole church, and to its representative, a general synod of bishops. To convocate general synods at his pleasure; all bishops being obliged to attend upon summons from him. To preside in synods, so as to suggest matter, promote, obstruct, overrule the debates in them. To confirm or invalidate their determinations, giving like to them by his assent, or subtracting it by his dissent. To define points of doctrine, or to decide controversies authoritatively; so that none may presume to contest, or dissent from his dictates. To enact, establish, abrogate, suspend, dispense with ecclesiastical laws and canons. To relax or evacuate ecclesiastical censures by indulgence, pardon, &c. To avoid promises, vows, oaths, obligations to laws by his dispensation.* To be the fountain of all pastoral jurisdiction and dignity. To constitute, confirm, judge, censure, suspend, depose, remove, restore, reconcile bishops. To confer ecclesiastical dignities and benefices by paramount authority, in way of provision, reservation, &c. To exempt colleges, monasteries, &c. from jurisdiction of their bishops and ordinary superiors. To judge all persons in all spiritual causes, by calling them to his cognizance, or delegating judges for them, with a final and peremptory sentence. To receive appeals from all ecclesiastical judicatories; and to reverse their judgments, if he findeth cause. To be himself unaccountable for any of his doings, exempt from judgment, and liable to no reproof. To erect, transfer, abolish episcopal sees. To exact oaths of fealty and obedience from the clergy. To found religious orders; or to raise a spiritual militia for propagation and defence of the church. To summon and commissionate soldiers by croisade, &c. to fight against infidels, or persecute infidels.

Some of these are expressed, others in general terms couched in those words of Pope Eugenius, telling the Greeks what they must consent unto. "The

* Bell. iv. 22.

pope," said he, "will have the prerogatives of his church; and he will have appeals to him; and to feed all the church of Christ, as shepherd of the sheep. Beside these things, that he may have authority and power to convoke general synods, when need shall be; and that all the patriarchs do yield to his will."*

That the pope doth claim, assume, and exercise a sovereignty over the church endowed with such prerogatives, is sufficiently visible in experience of fact, is apparent by the authorized dictates in their canon law, and shall be distinctly proved by competent allegations, when we shall examine the branches of this pretended authority.

In the mean time it sufficeth to observe, that in effect all clergymen do avow so much, *bona fide* and without prevarication do submit to take the oaths and engagements prescribed to them of course by papal appointment. For this surely, according to the pope's meaning (by which their obligation is to be measured), is designed in the profession ordained by Pope Pius IV. wherein every beneficed clergyman is enjoined to say, "And I do promise and swear true obedience to the Roman pontiff, the successor of St. Peter, and the vicar of Jesus Christ."† Which profession was appointed in pursuance of a sanction made by the Trent council, that all such persons "should vow and swear to abide in obedience to the Roman church;"‡ and consequently, how hard soever its yoke should be, they would not shake it off: which inferreth most absolute sovereignty of that church, or of the pope, who ruleth the roast in it.

But what that *true obedience* doth import, or how far the papal authority in the pope's own sense, and according to the public spirit of that church, doth stretch, is more explicitly signified in the

* Θέλει τὰ προνόμια τῆς ἐκκλησίας αὐτοῦ, καὶ θέλει ἔχειν τὴν ἐκκλησίαν, καὶ ποιμαίνειν πᾶσαν τὴν ἐκκλησίαν τοῦ Χριστοῦ, ὡς περ ποιῆν τῶν προβάτων πρὸς τοῦτοις, ἵνα ἔχη ἐξουσίαν καὶ δύναμιν συγκροτεῖν σύνοδον οἰκουμενικὴν, ὅτι δεήσει· καὶ πάντας τοὺς πατριάρχας ὑπέκειν τῷ θελήματι αὐτοῦ. — Conc. Flor. p. 846.

† Romanoque pontifici, B. Petri successori, ac Jesu Christi vicario, veram obedientiam spondeo ac juro. — Bull. Pii IV. super forma juram.

‡ Provisi de beneficiis—in Romanæ ecclesiæ obedientia se permansuros spondeant ac jurent. — Conc. Trid. sess. xxiv. cap. 12.

oath which all bishops at their consecration, and all metropolitans at their instalment, are required to take; the which, as it is extant in the Roman Pontifical,* set out by order of Pope Clement VIII. doth run in those terms:—

"I N., elect of the church of N., from henceforward will be faithful and obedient to St. Peter the apostle, and to the holy Roman church, and to our lord the Lord N. pope N. and to his successors, canonically coming in. I will neither advise, consent, or do any thing that they may lose life or member, or that their persons may be seized, or hands anywise laid upon them, or any injuries offered to them, under any pretence whatsoever. The counsel which they shall intrust me withal, by themselves, their messengers, or letters, I will not knowingly reveal to any to their prejudice. I will help them to defend and keep the Roman papacy, and the royalties of St. Peter, saving my order, against all men. The legate of the apostolic see, going and coming, I will honourably treat and help in his necessities. The rights, honours, privileges, and authority of the holy Roman church, of our Lord the pope, and his foresaid successors, I will endeavour to preserve, defend, increase, and advance. I will not be in any counsel, action, or treaty, in which shall be plotted against our said lord, and the said Roman church, any thing to the hurt or prejudice of their persons, right, honour, state, or power; and if I shall know any such thing to be treated or agitated by any whatsoever, I will hinder it to my power; and as soon as I can will signify it to our said lord, or to some other, by whom it may come to his knowledge. The rules of the holy fathers, the apostolic decrees, ordinances, or disposals, reservations, provisions, and mandates, I will observe with all my might, and cause to be observed by others. Heretics, schismatics, and rebels to our said lord, or his foresaid successors, I will to my power persecute and oppose. I will come to a council when I am called, unless I be hindered by a canonical impediment. I will by myself in person visit the threshold of the apostles every three years; and give an account to our lord and his foresaid successors of

* Pontif. Rom. Antwerp. anno 1626, p. 59, 86.

faith, and the extirpation of (the said) schism, and the general reformation of the church of God in head and members."*

The which doctrine they notably put in practice, exercising jurisdiction over popes, and for errors, misdemeanours, or contumacies, discarding three (of whom it is hard if one were not true pope), and choosing another, who afterwards did pass for a right pope, and himself did confirm the acts of that council. (So that this semi-heresy hath at least the authority of one pope to countenance it.) "Our most holy lord the pope said in answer thereunto, that he would maintain and inviolably observe all and every of those things that were conciliarly determined, concluded, and decreed, by the present council in matters of faith."†

The synod of Basil declared the same point, "that councils are superior to popes, to be a truth of catholic faith, which whoever doth stiffly oppose is to be accounted a heretic:‡ Nor (say they) did any skilful man ever doubt the pope to be subject to the judgment of general synods in things concerning faith.|| In virtue of which doctrine, and by its irresistible authority,"§ the synod did sentence and reject Pope Eugenius as criminal, heretical, and contumacious.

These synods, although reprobated by popes in counter-synods, are yet by many Roman Catholic divines retained in great veneration;" and their doctrine is so current in the famous Sorbonne, that (if we may believe the great Cardinal of Lorraine) the contrary is there reputed *heretical*.¶

* Primo declarat quod ipsa synodus, &c.—*Sess.* 4, 5.

† Sanctiss. Dominus noster papa dixit, respondendo ad prædicta, quod omnia et singula determinata, conclusa et decreta in materiis fidei per præsens concilium conciliariter tenere, et inviolabiliter observare volebat.—*Conc. Const. sess.* xlv. p. 1119.

‡ Veritas de potestate concilii supra papam — est veritas fidei catholicæ—cui pertinaciter repugnans est censendus hæreticus.—*Conc. Bas. sess.* xxxiii. (p. 95.)

|| Nec unquam aliquis peritorum dubitavit, summum pontificem in his quæ fidem concernunt iudicio earundem generalium synodorum esse subjectum.—*Concil. Bas. sess.* xlv. p. 117.

§ Vigore cuius, ac ineffabili et inexpugnabili auctoritate —. *Sess.* xxxviii. p. 101.

¶ Ego vero negare non possum, &c.

• (Concil. Later. &c.)

§ XVI. Yet notwithstanding these oppositions, the former opinion averring the pope's absolute sovereignty, doth seem to be the genuine doctrine of the Roman church, if it hath any.

For those divines, by the pope and his intimate confidants, are looked upon as a mongrel brood, or mutinous faction; which he by politic connivance doth only *tolerate*, because he is not well able to correct or suppress them. He is afraid to be violent in reclaiming them to his sense, lest he spend his artillery in vain, and lose all his power and interest with them.*

Nor indeed do those men seem to adhere to the Roman party out of entire judgment or cordial affection; but in compliance with their princes, or upon account of their interest, or at best regard to peace and quiet. They cannot conveniently break with the pope, because his interest is twisted with their own, so as not easily to be disentangled.

For how can they heartily stick to the pope, whenas their opinion doth plainly imply him to be an usurper and a tyrant (claiming to himself, and exercising authority over the church, which doth not rightfully belong to him;) to be a rebel and traitor against the church (invading and possessing the sovereignty due to it; for such questionless the Duke of Venice would be, should he challenge and assume to himself such a power over his commonwealth, as the pope hath over Christendom;) to be an impostor and seducer, pretending to infallible conduct, which he hath not.

How can they honestly condemn those who (upon such grounds) do shake off such yokes, refusing to comply with the pope, till he correct his errors, till he desist from those usurpations and impostures, till he restore to the church its rights and liberties?

How are the doctrines of those men consistent or congruous to their practice? For they call the pope monarch of the church, and universal pastor of Christians, by God's appointment, indefectibly; yet will they not admit all his laws, and reject doctrines which he teacheth, particularly those which most nearly

* Nam adhuc videmus ab ecclesia tolerari, qui eam sententiam sequuntur —. *Bell. iv. 2.*

of the holy fathers" into "the royalties of St. Peter."

§ XV. I know there are within the Roman communion great store of divines, who do contract the papal sovereignty within a much narrower compass, refusing to him many of those prerogatives, yea, scarce allowing to him any of them.

There are those who affirm the pope, in doctrine and discipline, subject to the church, or to a general synod representing it. Which opinion thwarteth a proposition, in Bellarmine's opinion, *even almost an article of faith*: but to be even with him, they do hold his proposition to be quite heretical: "The pope is simply and absolutely above the universal church;—this proposition is almost an article of faith,"* saith Bellarmine: the cardinal of Lorraine on the contrary, "But I," saith he, "cannot deny but that I am a Frenchman, and bred up in the church of Paris, which teaches that the Roman pontiff is subject to a council, and they who teach the contrary are there branded as heretics."†

There are those who affirm the pope, if he undertake points of faith without assistance of a general synod, may teach heresy; (which opinion, as Bellarmine thought, doth "closely border on heresy:‡") and those who conceive that popes may be and have been heretics; whence Christians sometimes are not obliged to admit their doctrine, or observe their pleasure.

There are those who maintain the pope, no less than other bishops, subject to the canons, or bound to observe the constitutions of the church; that he may not infringe them, or overrule against them, or dispense with them: and that to him attempting to do so, obedience is not due.

There are those who maintain, that the pope cannot subvert or violate the rights and liberties of particular churches,

* Summus pontifex simpliciter et absolute est supra ecclesiam universam;—hæc propositio est fere de fide.—*Bell. de Conc.* ii. 17.

† Ego vero negare non possum quin Gallus sim, et Parisiensis ecclesiæ alumnus, in qua Rom. pontificem subesse concilio tenetur, et qui docent ibi contrarium, ii tanquam hæretici notantur.—*Card. Loth. apud Laur. Ep.* i. 1.

‡ Quæ sententia videtur omnino erronea et hæresi proxima.—*Bell.* iv. 2.

settled in them agreeably to the ancient canons of the church universal.

There are those who assert to general councils a power of reforming the church, without or against the pope's consent.

There are those who, as Bellarmine telleth us, do allow the pope to be no more in the ecclesiastical republic than as the Duke of Venice in his senate, or as the general of an order in his congregation; and that he therefore hath but a very limited and subordinate power."

There are consequently those who conceive the pope notoriously erring, or misdemeaning himself, to the prejudice of the Christian state, may be called to an account, may be judged, may be corrected, may be discarded by a general synod.

Such notions have manifestly prevailed in a good part of the Roman communion, and are maintained by most divines in the French church; and they may be supposed every where common, where there is any liberty of judgment, or where the inquisition doth not reign.

There have been seasons wherein they have so prevailed, as to have been defined for catholic truths in great synods, and by them to have been applied to practice. For,

In the first great synod of Pisa it was declared, that councils may "reform the church sufficiently both in head and members:"" and accordingly that synod did assume to judge two popes (Gregory XII. and Benedict XIII.) contending for the papacy (whereof one was the true pope; and deposing them both, did substitute Alexander V. "who for one year" (as Antoninus reporteth), "according to the common opinion, did hold the seat of Peter."**

The synod of Constance declared, that "the synod lawfully assembled in the Holy Ghost, making a general council representing the catholic church militant, hath immediately power from Christ; to which every one, of whatever state or dignity he be, although it be papal, is bound to obey in those things which belong to

* Qui anno uno sedem Petri tenuit, secundum communem opinionem.—*Anton. de Conci. Pis.* cap. v. § 3.

** *Bell. de Conc.* ii. 14.

‡ *Anon* 1409, *Conc. Pis.* Sess. 16, 17.

faith, and the extirpation of (the said) schism, and the general reformation of the church of God in head and members."*

The which doctrine they notably put in practice, exercising jurisdiction over popes, and for errors, misdemeanours, or contumacies, discarding three (of whom it is hard if one were not true pope), and choosing another, who afterwards did pass for a right pope, and himself did confirm the acts of that council. (So that this semi-heresy hath at least the authority of one pope to countenance it.) "Our most holy lord the pope said in answer thereunto, that he would maintain and inviolably observe all and every of those things that were conciliarly determined, concluded, and decreed, by the present council in matters of faith."†

The synod of Basil declared the same point, "that councils are superior to popes, to be a truth of catholic faith, which whoever doth stiffly oppose is to be accounted a heretic:‡ Nor (say they) did any skilful man ever doubt the pope to be subject to the judgment of general synods in things concerning faith.¶ In virtue of which doctrine, and by its irresistible authority,"§ the synod did sentence and reject Pope Eugenius as criminal, heretical, and contumacious.

These synods, although reprobated by popes in counter-synods, are yet by many Roman Catholic divines retained in great veneration;° and their doctrine is so current in the famous Sorbonne, that (if we may believe the great Cardinal of Lorraine) the contrary is there reputed heretical.¶

* Primo declarat quod ipsa synodus, &c.—Sess. 4, 5.

† Sanctiss. Dominus noster papa dixit, respondendo ad prædicta, quod omnia et singula determinata, conclusa et decreta in materiis fidei per præsens concilium conciliariter tenere, et inviolabiliter observare volebat.—*Conc. Const. sess. xlv. p. 1119.*

‡ Veritas de potestate concilii supra papam — est veritas fidei catholicæ—cui pertinaciter repugnans est censendus hæreticus.—*Conc. Bas. sess. xxxiii. (p. 95.)*

¶ Nec unquam aliquis peritorum dubitavit, summum pontificem in his quæ fidem concernunt iudicio earundem generalium synodorum esse subjectum.—*Concil. Bas. sess. xlv. p. 117.*

§ Vigore cuius, ac ineffabili et inexpugnabili autoritate —. Sess. xxxviii. p. 101.

¶ Ego vero negare non possum, &c.

° (Concil. Later. &c.)

§ XVI. Yet notwithstanding these oppositions, the former opinion averring the pope's absolute sovereignty, doth seem to be the genuine doctrine of the Roman church, if it hath any.

For those divines, by the pope and his intimate confidants, are looked upon as a mongrel brood, or mutinous faction; which he by politic connivance doth only tolerate, because he is not well able to correct or suppress them. He is afraid to be violent in reclaiming them to his sense, lest he spend his artillery in vain, and lose all his power and interest with them.*

Nor indeed do those men seem to adhere to the Roman party out of entire judgment or cordial affection; but in compliance with their princes, or upon account of their interest, or at best regard to peace and quiet. They cannot conveniently break with the pope, because his interest is twisted with their own, so as not easily to be disengaged.

For how can they heartily stick to the pope, whenas their opinion doth plainly imply him to be an usurper and a tyrant (claiming to himself, and exercising authority over the church, which doth not rightfully belong to him;) to be a rebel and traitor against the church (invading and possessing the sovereignty due to it; for such questionless the Duke of Venice would be, should he challenge and assume to himself such a power over his commonwealth, as the pope hath over Christendom;) to be an impostor and seducer, pretending to infallible conduct, which he hath not.

How can they honestly condemn those who (upon such grounds) do shake off such yokes, refusing to comply with the pope, till he correct his errors, till he desist from those usurpations and impostures, till he restore to the church its rights and liberties?

How are the doctrines of those men consistent or congruous to their practice? For they call the pope monarch of the church, and universal pastor of Christians, by God's appointment, indefectibly; yet will they not admit all his laws, and reject doctrines which he teacheth, particularly those which most nearly

* Nam adhuc videmus ab ecclesia tolerari, qui eam sententiam sequuntur —. Bell. iv. 2.

touch him, concerning his own office and authority. They profess themselves his loyal subjects, yet pretend liberties which they will maintain against him. They hold that all are bound to entertain communion with him, yet confess that he may be heretical and seduce into error. They give him the name and shadow of a supremacy, but so that they can void the substance and reality thereof.*

In fine, where should we seek for the doctrine of the Roman church, but at Rome, or from Rome itself? where these doctrines are heterodoxies.

§ XVII. We shall not therefore have a distinct regard to the opinion of these semi-Romanists; nor consider them otherwise, than to confirm that part of truth which they hold, and to confute that part of error which they embrace; allowing, at least in word and semblance, more power to the pope than we can admit as due to him. Our discourse shall be levelled at him as such as he pretendeth himself to be, or as assuming to himself the forementioned powers and prerogatives.

§ XVIII. Of such vast pretences we have reason to require sufficient grounds. He that demandeth assent to such important assertions, ought to produce clear proofs of them: he that claimeth so mighty power, should be able to make out a good title to it; for, "No man may take this" (more than pontifical) "honour to himself, but he that is called by God, as was Aaron."^p "They are worthily to be blamed, who tumultuously and disorderly fall upon curbing or restraining those who by no law are subject to them."[†]

We cannot well be justified from a stupid easiness, in admitting such a lyeutenancy to our Lord, if we do not see exhibited to us manifest and certain patents assuring its commission to us.

* Manifestum autem schismatis argumentum est, cum quis se communioni subtrahit apostolicæ sedis.—*Balus. not. ad Agobard.* p. 112. It is a manifest argument of schism, when any man withdraws himself from communion with the apostolic see.

† Jure culpandi sunt, qui turbide atque inordinate in eos coercendos insiliunt, qui nulla sibi lege subjecti sunt.—*Aug. de Unit. Eccl.* cap. 17.

^p Heb. v. 4.

We should love the church better than to yield up its liberty to the will of a pretender, upon slight or no ground. Their boldly claiming such a power, their having sometime usurped such a power, will not excuse them or us.* Nor will precarious assumptions, or subtle distinctions, or blind traditions, or loose conjectures, serve for probations in such a case.

§ XIX. Such demands they cannot wholly balk: wherefore for satisfaction to them, not finding any better plea, they hook in St. Peter; affirming that on him by our Lord there was instated a primacy over his brethren, all the apostles and the disciples of our Lord, importing all the authority which they claim; and that from him this primacy was devolved by succession to the bishops of Rome, by right indefectible for all future ages.

Which plea of theirs doth involve these main suppositions:

I. *That St. Peter had a primacy over the apostles.*

II. *That St. Peter's primacy with its rights and prerogatives was not personal, but derivable to his successors.*

III. *That St. Peter was bishop of Rome.*

IV. *That St. Peter did continue bishop of Rome, after his translation, and was so at his decease.*

V. *That the bishops of Rome (according to God's institution, and by original right derived thence) should have an universal supremacy and jurisdiction over the Christian church.*

VI. *That in fact the Roman bishops continually from St. Peter's time have enjoyed and exercised this sovereign power.*

VII. *That this power is indefectible and unalterable.*

The truth and certainty of these propositions we shall in order discuss; so that it may competently appear, whether those who disclaim these pretences are (as they are charged) guilty of heresy and schism; or they rather are liable to the imputations of arrogancy and impiety who do obtrude and urge them.

* Nemo sibi et professor et testis est.—*Ter-tul. v. 1, adv. Marc.* None can be both a claimer and a witness for himself.

A TREATISE

OF THE

POPE'S SUPREMACY.

MATT. x. 2.—*Now the names of the twelve apostles were these; the first, Simon, who is called Peter.**

AMONG the modern controversies there is scarce any of greater consequence than that about universal supremacy, which the bishop of Rome claimeth over the Christian church; the assertion whereof on his side dependeth upon divers suppositions; namely these:

I. *That St. Peter by our Lord's appointment had a primacy, implying a sovereignty of authority and jurisdiction over the apostles.*

II. *That the rights and prerogatives of this sovereignty were not personal, but derivable, and transmitted to successors.*

III. *That St. Peter was bishop of Rome.*

IV. *That St. Peter did continue bishop of Rome after his translation, and was so at his decease.*

V. *That hence of right to the bishops of Rome, as St. Peter's successors, an universal jurisdiction over the whole church of Christ doth appertain.*

VI. *That in fact the said bishops continually from St. Peter's time have enjoyed and exercised this power.*

VII. *That this power is indefectible; such as by no means can be forfeited or fail.*

In order to the discussion and resolution of the first point, I shall treat upon

the primacy of St. Peter; endeavouring to shew what primacy he was capable of, or might enjoy; what he could not pretend to, nor did possess.

SUPPOSITION I.

The first supposition of those who claim universal jurisdiction to the pope over the church is, *That St. Peter had a primacy over the apostles.*

IN order to the resolution of this point, we may consider that there are several kinds of primacy, which may belong to a person in respect of others: for there are,

1. *A primacy of worth, or personal excellency.*

2. *A primacy of reputation and esteem.*

3. *A primacy of order, or bare dignity and precedence.*

4. *A primacy of power or jurisdiction.*

To each of these what title St. Peter might have, let us in order examine.

1. As for the first of these (*a primacy of worth, or merit*, as some of the ancients call it), we may well grant it to St. Peter, admitting that probably he did exceed the rest of his brethren in personal endowments and capacities (both natural and moral), qualifying him for the discharge of the apostolical office in an eminent manner; particularly that in quickness of apprehension, in boldness of spirit, in readiness of speech, in char-

* Πρωτος Σίμων.

ity to our Lord, and zeal for his service, in resolution, activity, and industry he was transcendent, may seem to appear by the tenor of the evangelical and apostolical histories; in the which we may observe him upon all occasions ready to speak first, and to make himself *the mouth*, as the fathers speak, of the apostles, in all deliberations nimble at propounding his advice, in all undertakings forward to make the onset; being πανταχοῦ θερμὸς, *always hot and eager, always prompt and vigorous*, as St. Chrysostom often affirmeth concerning him: these things are apparent in his demeanour, and it may not be amiss to set down some instances.*

When our Lord, observing the different apprehensions men had concerning him, asked the apostles, "But whom say ye that I am?" up starteth he, προσηδὲ καὶ προλαμβάνεται, "he skippeth forth, and preventeth the rest," crying, *Thou art the Christ, the Son of the living God.*" The other apostles were not ignorant of the point; for they at their conversion did take Jesus for the Messiah, which (even according to the common notion of the Jews) did imply his being the Son of God; Nathanael (that is, St. Bartholomew, as is supposed) had in terms confessed it; the whole company, upon seeing our Lord walk on the sea, had avowed it;^b St. Peter before that in the name of them all had said, *Ἡμεῖς πεπιστεύκαμεν, καὶ ἐγνώκαμεν,† We have believed, and have known, that thou art the Christ, the Son of the living God.*^c They therefore had the same faith, but he, from a special alacrity of spirit, and expedition in utterance, was more forward to declare it; "He was more hot," saith St. Gre-

gory Nazianzen, "than the rest at acknowledging Christ."^{**}

When our Saviour walked on the sea, who but he had the faith and the courage to venture on the waters towards him?^d

When our Lord was apprehended by the soldiers, presently up was his spirit, and out went his sword in defence of him.^e

When our Lord predicted, that upon his coming into trouble all the disciples would be offended, and desert him, he was ready to say, *Though all men shall be offended because of thee, yet will I never be offended*; and, *Though I should die with thee, yet will I not deny thee*;^f such was his natural courage and confidence.

When our Lord was discoursing about his passion, he suddenly must be advising in the case, and urging him to *spare himself*;^g upon which St. Chrysostom biddeth us to "consider, not that his answer was unadvised, but that it came from a genuine and fervent affection."[†]

And at the transfiguration, he fell to proposing about making an abode there, *not knowing what he said*;^h so brisk was he in imagination and speech.

Upon the good woman's report that our Lord was risen from the dead, he first ran to the sepulchre,ⁱ and so (as St. Paul implieth) did obtain the first sight of our Lord after the resurrection;[‡] such was his zeal and activity upon all occasions.

At the consultation about supplying the place of Judas, he *rose up*, proposed, and pressed the matter.^j

At the convention of the apostles and elders about resolving *the debate* concerning observance of Mosaical institutions, he first rose up, and declared his sense.^k

In the promulgation of the gospel, and defence thereof before the Jewish rulers,

* Ἐνπεριστροφὸς γὰρ αἶψά τις ἦν ἄνθρωπος, κενεντρωμένος οὐ μετρίως εἰς τὴν ἐπὶ τὸ δράσαι καὶ εἰπεῖν προθυμίαν.—Cyrill. in Joh. xxi. 15. He was a very active and stirring man, exceedingly spurred on with much promptness and alacrity in doing and speaking. Πανταχοῦ εὐρίσκειται ἀπὸ πάντων ὁρῶν.—Chrys. in Joh. Or. xii. (13, 24.) Διὰ πάντων καὶ ἐν πᾶσιν τὴν αὐτὴν ἐμφαίνει θερμότητα.—Chrys. tom. v. Or. 59.

† Licet cæteri apostoli sciant, Petrus tamen respondet pro cæteris.—Ambros. in Luc. lib. vi. cap. 9.

^a Matt. xvi. 15, 16.

^b John i. 42, 46; Matt. xxvi. 63; John i. 50; Matt. xiv. 33.

^c John vi. 69.

* Θερμότερος τῶν ἄλλων εἰς ἐπίγνωσιν Χριστοῦ.—Greg. Naz. Or. 34.

† Μὴ τοῦτο ἐξετάσωμεν, ὅτι ἀπερίσκεπτος ἢ ἀπὸ κρισίς· ἀλλ' ὅτι γνησίον πόθου ἦν καὶ ζέοντος.—Tom. v. Or. 59.

‡ Καὶ ὅτι ὤφθη Κηφᾷ, εἶτα τοῖς δώδεκα—1 Cor. xv. 5. And that he appeared to Cephas, after that to the twelve.

^d Matt. xiv. 28. ^e John xviii. 10.

^f Matt. xxvi. 33, 35; John xiii. 37.

^g Matt. xvi. 22.

^h Μὴ εἰδὼς ὀλέγει.—Mark ix. 6.

ⁱ Luke ix. 33; xxiv.; xii. 34; John xx. 3.

^j Acts i. 15. ^k Acts xv. 7.

he did assume the conduct, and constantly took upon him to be the speaker ; the rest standing by him, implying assent, and ready to avow his word ; *Peter*, saith St. Luke, *standing with the rest, lift up his voice, and said unto them ;* so “ did they utter a common voice,” saith St. Chrysostom, “ and he was the mouth of all.”*

That in affection to our Lord, and zeal for his service, St. Peter had some advantage over the rest, that question, *Simon Peter, dost thou love me more than these ?* may seem to imply : (although the words *πλεϊον τούτων* may bear other interpretations, whereby the seeming invidiousness of the question, according to that sense, will be removed.) However, that he had a singular zeal for promoting our Lord's service, and propagation of the gospel, therein outshining the rest, seemeth manifest in the history, and may be inferred from the peculiar regard our Lord apparently did shew to him.†

Upon these premises we may well admit that St. Peter had a primacy of worth ; or that in personal accomplishments he was most eminent among the twelve apostles ; (although afterward there did spring up one, who hardly in any of these respects would yield to him ; who could confidently say, *that he did not come behind the very chief apostles ;* and of whom St. Ambrose saith, “ Neither was Paul inferior to Peter—being well to be compared even to the first, and the second to none :”‡ and St. Chrysostom, “ For what was greater than Peter, and what equal to Paul?”|| This is the

* *Καινήν προεβάλλοντο φωνήν, και πάντων αὐτὸς ἦν τὸ στόμα.*

† Aug. in Joh. Tract. 123. ‘Ο *μανικὸς ἐραστὴς τοῦ Χριστοῦ.*—Chrys. tom. v. Or. 24. An extreme lover of Christ. *Sæpe diximus nimii ardoris, amorisque quam maximi fuisse Petrum in Dominum.*—Hier. in Matt. xvi. 22. We have often said that Peter was transported with too much heat, and extraordinary great love of our Lord. *Ipse enim Petrus in apostolorum ordine primus, in Christi amore promptissimus, sæpe unus respondet pro omnibus.*—Aug. Sermon. xiii. *do verb. Dom. in Matt. i.* For Peter himself being first in the order of the apostles, and most prompt and forward in the love of Christ, answered oftentimes alone for all the rest.

‡ Nee Paulus inferior Petro—cum primo quoque facile conferendus, et nulli secundus.—Ambros. de Sp. S. ii. 12.

|| *Τί γὰρ Πέτρον μείζον; τί δὲ Παύλου ἴσον.*—Chrys. tom. v. Or. 167.

1 1 Cor. xv. 10 ; 2 Cor. xi. 23, 5 ; xii. 11.

primacy which Eusebius attributeth to him ; when he calleth him “ the excellent and great apostle, who for his virtue was the prolocutor of all the rest.”*

II. As to a *primacy of repute ;* which St. Paul meaneth, when he speaketh of the *οἱ δοκοῦντες*, those which had a special reputation, of those who seemed to be pillars^m of the *ἐπιεὶρ λιαν ἀποστολοι*, the *supereminent apostles ;* this advantage cannot be refused him ; being a necessary consequent of those eminent qualities resplendent in him, and of the illustrious performances achieved by him, beyond the rest.

This may be inferred from that advantageous renown which he hath had propagated from the beginning to all posterity.

This at least those eulogies of the fathers (styling him the chief, prince, head of the apostles) do signify.†

This also may be collected from his being so constantly ranked in the first place, before the rest of his brethren.

III. As to a *primacy of order or bare dignity*, importing that commonly, in all meetings and proceedings, the other apostles did yield him the precedence, the *προηγορία*, or privilege of speaking first (whether in propounding matters for debate, or in delivering his advice), in the conduct and moderation of affairs ; that this was stated on him, may be questioned ; for that this were a kind of womanish privilege ; and that it doth not seem to befit the gravity of such persons, or their condition and circumstances, to stand upon ceremonies of respect ; for that also our Lord's rules do seem to exclude all semblance of ambition, all kinds of inequality and distance between his apostles ; for that this practice doth not seem constantly and thoroughly to agree to his being endowed with this advantage ; especially seeing all that practice which favoureth it may fairly be assigned to other causes ; for that also the fathers' authority (if that be objected, as a main argument of such a primacy) in points of this nature, not bordering

* *Τὸν καρτερὸν και μέγαν τῶν ἀποστόλων, τὸν ἀρετῆς ἕνεκα τῶν λοιπῶν ἀπάντων προηγούμενον.*—Euseb. Hist. ii. 14.

† *Ὁ ἐπιφανέστατος τῶν ἀποστόλων Πέτρος.*—Ath. Disp. cont. Arium, p. 121.

^m Gal. ii. 2, 6, 9.

ⁿ 2 Cor. xi. 5 ; xii. 11.

on essentials of faith, is of no great strength; they in such cases speaking out of their own ingeny and conjecture; and commonly indulging their imaginations no less freely than other men.

But yet this primacy may be granted, as probable upon divers accounts of use and convenience; it might be useful to preserve order, and to promote expedition; or to prevent confusion, distraction, and dilatory obstruction in the management of things; yea, to maintain concord, and to exclude that ambition or affectation to be foremost, which is natural to men.

For seeing all could not go, speak, or act first, all could not guide affairs, it was expedient that one should be ready to undertake it, knowing his cue: "See," saith St. Chrysostom, noting on Acts ii. 14, where St. Peter speaketh for the rest, "the concord of the Apostles; they yield unto him the speech, for they could not all speak:"* and, "One" (saith St. Jerome) "is chosen among the twelve, that a head being appointed, an occasion of schism might be removed."†

St. Cyprian hath a reason for it somewhat more subtle and mystical, supposing our Lord did confer on him a preference of this kind to his brethren (who otherwise in power and authority were equal to him), that he might intimate and recommend unity to us; and the other African doctors (Optatus and St. Austin) do commonly harp on the same notion.‡ I can discern little solidity in this conceit, and as little harm.

However, supposing this primacy (at least in respect to the fathers, who generally seem to countenance it), divers probable reasons may be assigned why it should especially be conferred on St. Peter.||

* Σπόμαι τῶν ἀποστόλων τὴν ἁμόνοιαν, αὐτοὶ παραχωροῦσιν αὐτῷ τῆς ἡγεμονίας, οὐ γὰρ ἔδει πάντας φθέγγεσθαι.—Chrys. in Act. ii. 14.

† Inter duodecim unus eligitur, ut capite constituto schismatis tolleretur occasio.—Hier. in Jovin. i. cap. 14.

‡ In typo unitatis —. Aug. de Bapt. iii. 17.

|| Petrus—natura unus homo erat, gratia unus Christianus, abundantiore gratia unus idemque primus apostolus.—Aug. in Joh. Tract. 123. Peter was by nature one man, by grace one Christian, by a more abundant grace one and the same prime apostle. Ipse enim Petrus in apostolorum ordine primus, in Christi amore

* Cyp. Ep. 73, de Unit. Eccl. &c.

1. It is probable that St. Peter was first in standing among the apostles; I mean not that he was the first disciple, or first converted to faith in Christ; but first called to the apostolical office;* or first nominated by our Lord, when out of all his disciples he chose twelve, and called them apostles; Simon, whom he called Peter, and Andrew his brother.† He was one of the first believers at large; he was perhaps the first that distinctly believed our Lord's divinity; he was probably the very first apostle; as the fittest person in our Lord's eye for that employment.‡ "He," saith St. Hilary, "did first believe, and is the prince (or first man) of the apostleship."§ "He," saith St. Cyprian, "was the first whom the Lord chose."|| "He," saith St. Basil, "was by judgment preferred before all the disciples."¶ He by other ancients is called "the first fruits of the apostles."‡ And according to this sense St. Jerome, I suppose, doth call him and his brother Andrew *principes apostolorum*, that is (according to frequent usage of the word *principes* in Latin), *the first of the apostles.*‡

So that as in divers churches (perhaps when time was, in all), anciently, priority in ordination did ground a right to precedence, as it is in ours, with some exception; so might St. Peter, upon this account of being first ordained apostle, obtain such a primacy.

2. St. Peter also might be the first in age; which among persons otherwise equal is a fair ground of preference; for

promptissimus, sæpe unus respondet pro omnibus.—Aug. de verbis Dom. Sup. Matt. i. Serm. 13. For Peter himself being the first in the order of the apostles, the most forward in the love of Christ, he alone oftentimes answers for all the rest.

* [Προτίθησι δὲ Πέτρον καὶ Ἀνδρέαν, διότι καὶ πρωτόκλητοι.—Theoph. in Matt. x.]

† Γινώσκων τίς ἐν πρώτοις ἄξιος τάρτεσθαι, ἐξελέξατο τὸν Πέτρον ἀρχηγὸν εἶναι.—Epiaph. Hær. li. 17, p. 440.

‡ Primus creditus, et apostolatus est princeps.—Hil. in Matt. Can. 7.

|| Quem primum Dominus elegit.—Cypr. Ep. 71, p. 127.

§ Ὁ πάντων τῶν μαθητῶν προκριθείς.—Bas. de Judicio Dei, tom. ii. p. 268.

¶ Ἡ Ἀπαρχὴ τῶν ἀποστόλων.—Modest. apud Phot. Cod. 275; Clem. ad Jac.

‡ Luke vi. 14; Matt. iv. 18; Mark i. 16; Luke v. 3.

‡ Hier. in Jovin. 1.

he was a married man ; and that before he was called, as is intimated in St. Luke ;* and it may be inferred from hence, that he would not have married after that he *had left all*, and devoted himself to follow our Lord.† Upon which account of age St. Jerome did suppose that he was preferred before the beloved disciple : “ Why,” saith he, “ was not St. John elected, being a bachelor ? it was deferred to age, because Peter was elder, that a youth, and almost a boy, might not be preferred before men of good age.”**

I know that Epiphanius affirmeth St. Andrew to have been the elder brother ;† but it doth not appear whether he saith it from conjecture, or upon any other ground. And his authority, although we should suppose it bottomed on tradition, is not great ; tradition itself in such matters being very slippery, and often one tradition crossing another.

3. The most eminent qualifications of St. Peter (such as we before described) might procure to him this advantage.

They might breed in him an honest confidence, pushing him forward on all occasions to assume the former place, and thence by custom to possess it ; for *qui sibi fidit, dux regit examen*—it being in all action, as in walking, where he that naturally is most vigorous and active doth go before the rest.

They might induce others to a voluntary concession thereof ;‡ for to those who indisputably do excel in good qualities or abilities, honest and meek persons easily will yield precedence, especially on occasions of public concernment ; wherein it is expedient that the best qualified persons should be first seen.

They probably might also move our Lord himself to settle, or at least to insinuate this order ; assigning the first place to him, whom he knew most willing to

serve him, and most able to lead on the rest in his service.

It is indeed observable, that upon all occasions our Lord signified a particular respect to him, before the rest of his colleagues ; for to him more frequently than to any of them he directed his discourse ; unto him, by a kind of anticipation, he granted or promised those gifts and privileges which he meant to confer on them all ; him he did assume as spectator and witness of his glorious transfiguration ; him he picked out as companion and attendant on him in his grievous agony ; his feet he first washed ; to him he did first discover himself after his resurrection (as St. Paul implieth), and with him then he did entertain most discourse, in especial manner recommending to him the pastoral care of his church : “ by which manner of proceeding our Lord may seem to have constituted St. Peter the first in order among the apostles, or sufficiently to have hinted his mind for their direction, admonishing them by his example to render unto him a special deference.

4. The fathers commonly do attribute his priority to the merit of his faith and confession wherein he did outstrip his brethren.† “ He obtained supereminent glory by the confession of his blessed faith,”** saith St. Hilary. “ Because he alone of all the rest professeth his love (John xxi.), therefore he is preferred above all,”† saith St. Ambrose.

5. Constantly in all the catalogues of the apostles St. Peter’s name is set in the front ; and when actions are reported, in which he was concerned jointly with others, he is usually mentioned first, which seemeth not done without careful design, or special reason.†

Upon such grounds it may be reasonable to allow St. Peter a primacy of order ; such a one as the ringleader hath in a dance, as the primipilar centurion had in the legion, or the prince of the senate

* Sed cur non Joannes electus est virgo ? ætati delatum est, quia Petrus senior erat ; ne adhuc adolescens et pene puer progressæ ætatis hominibus præferretur.—*Hier. in Jovin.* i. 14.

† Μικροτέρου ὄντος τοῦ Πέτρου τῷ χρόνῳ τῆς ηλικίας.—*Ep. Hær. li. 17, p. 440.* Peter being the younger in age.

‡ Αὐτοὶ παραχωροῦσιν αὐτῷ, &c.—*Chrys. in Act. ii. 14.* They yield unto him, &c.

* Luke iv. 38 ; v. 7.

* Matt. xix. 27.

† Hor. Ep. i. 19.

* Supereminentem beatæ fidei suæ confessione gloriam promeruit.—*Hil. de Trin.* lib. vi. p. 121.

† Ideo quia solus proficitur amorem suum (John xxi.) ex omnibus, omnibus antefertur.—*Ambr. in Luc.* cap. ult.

* Matt. xvi. 16 ; xvii. 1 ; xxvi. 37 ; John xiii. 6 ; 1 Cor. xv. 5 ; John xxi.

† Hil. in Mat. Can. xiv. p. 506.

* Matt. x. 2 ; Mark iii. 17 ; Luke vi. 14 ; Acts i. 13 ; John xxi. 2.

had there, in the Roman state; at least, as among earls, baronets, &c. and others co-ordinate in degree, yet one hath a precedence of the rest.

IV. As to a primacy importing superiority in power, command, or jurisdiction; this by the Roman party is asserted to St. Peter, but we have great reason to deny it, upon the following considerations.

1. For such a power (being of so great importance) it was needful that a commission from God, its founder, should be granted in downright and perspicuous terms; that no man concerned in duty grounded thereon, might have any doubt of it, or excuse for boggling at it; it was necessary, not only for the apostles, to bind and warrant their obedience, but also for us, because it is made the sole foundation of a like duty incumbent on us; which we cannot heartily discharge without being assured of our obligation thereto, by clear revelation, or promulgation of God's will in the holy scripture;* for it was of old a current, and ever will be a true rule, which St. Austin in one case thus expresseth: "I do believe that also on this side there would be most clear authority of the divine oracles, if a man could not be ignorant of it without damage of his salvation;"† and Lactantius thus: "Those things can have no foundation, or firmness, which are not sustained by any oracle of God's word."‡

But apparently no such commission is extant in scripture; the allegations for it being, as we shall hereafter shew, no wise clear, nor probably expressive of any such authority granted by God; but on the contrary divers clearer testimonies are producible derogating from it.

2. If so illustrious an office was instituted by our Saviour, it is strange that

* It was a reasonable demand, which was made to our Saviour, *Tell us by what authority thou doest these things, or who is he that gave thee this authority?* (Luke xx. 2;) and the reasonableness of it our Lord did often avow, declaring that if by his doctrine and works he had not vouched the divinity of his authority, it had been no sin to disbelieve or resect him, (John v. 31, 36; x. 25, 37; xv. 22, 24.)

† *Credo etiam hinc divinorum eloquiorum clarissima autoritas esset, si homo sine dispendio promissæ salutis ignorare non posset.—Aug. de Pec. Mer. et Rem. ii. 36.*

‡ *Nullum fundamentum aut firmitatem possunt habere, quæ nullis divinarum vocum fulciuntur oraculis.—Lact. vii. 2.*

nowhere in the evangelical or apostolical history (wherein divers acts and passages of smaller moment are recorded) there should be any express mention of that institution; there being not only much reason for such a report, but many pat occasions for it; the time when St. Peter was vested with that authority; the manner and circumstances of his instalment therein; the nature, rules, and limits of such an office, had surely well deserved to have been noted, among other occurrences relating to our faith and discipline, by the holy evangelists; no one of them, in all probability, could have forborne punctually to relate a matter of so great consequence, as the settlement of a monarch in God's church, and a sovereign of the apostolical college (from whom so eminent authority was to be derived to all posterity, for compliance wherewith the whole church for ever must be accountable); particularly it is not credible that St. Luke should quite slip over so notable a passage, who "had," as he telleth us, "attained a perfect understanding of all things, and had undertaken to write in order the things that were surely believed among Christians"§ in his time; of which things this, if any, was one of the most considerable.

3. The time of his receiving institution to such authority can hardly be assigned. For was it when he was constituted by our Lord an apostle? Then indeed probably he began to obtain all the primacy and pre-eminence he ever had; but no such power doth appear then conferred on him, or at any time in our Saviour's life; at least, if it was, it was so covertly and indiscernibly, that both he himself and all the apostles must be ignorant thereof, who a little before our Lord's passion did more than once earnestly contest about superiority. And it is observable, that whereas our Lord before his passion did carefully teach and press on the apostles the chief duties which they were to observe in their behaviour toward each other; the maintenance of peace, of charity, of unity, of humility toward one another; yet of paying due respect and obedience to this superior he said nothing to them.*

* Luke i. 1.

† Matt. x. 1.

‡ Mark ix. 50; John xiii. 34; xv. 12; xvii. 21; xiii. 14.

The collation of that power could not well be at any time before the celebration of our Lord's Supper, because before that time St. Peter was scarce an ecclesiastical person; at least he was no priest, as the convention of Trent under a curse doth require us to believe;* for it were strange, that an unconsecrated person, or one who was not so much as a priest, should be endowed with so much spiritual power.

After his resurrection, our Lord did give divers common instructions, orders, and commissions to his apostles, but it doth not appear that he did make any peculiar grant to St. Peter; for as to the pretence of such an one drawn out of the appendix to St. John's Gospel, or grounded on the words *Pasce oves*, we shall afterward declare that to be invalid.†

4. If St. Peter had been instituted sovereign of the apostolical senate, his office and state had been in nature and kind very distinct from the common office of the other apostles; as the office of a king from the office of any subject; as an ordinary, standing, perpetual, successive office, from one that is only extraordinary, transitory, temporary, personal, and incommunicable (to speak according to distinctions now in use, and applied to this case;) whence, probably, as it was expedient to be, it would have been signified by some distinct name, or title, characterizing it, and distinguishing it from others; as that of arch-apostle, arch-pastor, high priest, sovereign pontiff, pope, his holiness, the vicar of Christ, or the like; whereby it might have appeared that there was such an officer, what the nature of his office was, what speciality of respect and obedience was due to him: but no such name or title (upon any occasion) was assumed by him, or was by the rest attributed to him, or in history is recorded concerning him; the

name of an apostle being all that he took on him, or by others was given to him.

5. There was indeed no office above that of an apostle known to the apostles, or to the primitive church; this, saith St. Chrysostom, "was the greatest authority," and "the top of authorities;" there was, saith he, "none before an apostle, none superior, none equal to him:"* this he asserteth of all the apostles, this he particularly applieth to St. Paul; this he demonstrateth from St. Paul himself, who purposely enumerating the chief officers instituted by God in his church, doth place apostles in the highest rank; *Our Lord*, saith St. Paul, *gave some apostles, some prophets, some evangelists, some pastors and teachers*; and God hath set some in *his church, first apostles, secondarily prophets, thirdly teachers*; *πρωτον ἀποστόλους*;" why not first a pope, an universal pastor, an œcumenical judge, a vicar of Christ, a head of the catholic church? Could St. Paul be so ignorant, could he be so negligent or so envious, as to pass by, without any distinction, the supreme officer, if such a one then had been? As put case, that one should undertake to recite the officers in any state, or republic, would he not do strangely, if he should pretermitt the king, the duke, the consul, the major thereof? Would not any one, confiding in the skill, diligence, and integrity of such a relator, be induced from such an omission to believe there was no such officer there? St. Chrysostom therefore did hence very rationally infer, that the apostolical office was the supreme in the Christian state, having no other superior to it.

St. Peter, therefore, was no more than an apostle; and as such he could have no command over those who were in the same highest rank co-ordinate to him, and who as apostles could not be subject to any.

* Si quis dixerit, illis verbis, *Hoc facite in meam commemorationem*, Christum non instituisse apostolos sacerdotes—*anathema sit. Conc. Trid. sess. xxii. can. 2.* If any one shall say that in those words, *Do this in remembrance of me*, Christ did not ordain his apostles priests—let him be accursed.

† *Ἐνεκελάμενοι τοῖς ἀποστόλοις*—. Acts i. 2; John xx. 21; Matt. xxviii. 19; Luke xxiv. 49; Mark xvi. 15.

* *Ἀρχὴ μέγιστη ἰεροσύνη τῶν ἀρχῶν*.—Chrys. tom. viii. p. 114. *Ἐίδες ὑψηλὸν καθήμενον τὸν ἀπόστολον, καὶ οὐδένα πρὸ ἐκείνου ὄντα, οὔτε ἀνώτερον*. Ibid. *Τῶν δὲ ἀποστόλων ἰσὸς οὐδεὶς γέγονεν*.—Chrys. tom. v. Or. 33. *Ἀποῦ τοῦ Παύλου ἀκούσαμεν ἀριθμοῦντος τὰς ἀρχὰς, καὶ ἐν τῷ ὑψηλότερῳ χεῖρῳ τὴν ἀποστολικὴν καθίζοντος*.—Chrys. tom. viii. ubi supra. We have heard Paul himself reckoning up powers or authorities, and placing the apostolical in the highest place.

* Eph. iv. 11; 1 Cor. xii. 28.

6. Our Lord himself, at several times, declared against this kind of primacy, instituting equality among his apostles, prohibiting them to affect, to seek, to assume, or admit a superiority of power one above another.

There was (saith St. Luke, *among the twelve*, at the participation of the holy supper) *a strife among them, who of them should be accounted the greatest,** or who had the best pretence to superiority: this strife our Lord presently did check and quash; but how? not by telling them, that he already had decided the case in appointing them a superior, but rather by assuring them that he did intend none such to be; that he would have no monarchy, no exercise of any dominion or authority by one among them over the rest:† but that notwithstanding any advantages one might have before the other (as greater in gifts, or as preceding in any respect), they should be one as another, all humbly condescending to one another, each being ready to yield help and service to one another:‡ *The kings (said he) of the Gentiles exercise lordship over them; and they that exercise authority over them are called benefactors; but ye shall not be so; but he that is greater among you, let him be as the younger;|| and he that is leader as he that doth minister;§* that is, whatever privilege any of you obtaineth, let it not be employed in way of command, but rather of compliance and subserviency, as occasion shall require; let him not pretend to be a superior, but rather behave himself as an inferior: thus our Lord did smother the debate, by remov-

ing from among them whatever greatness any of them did affect or pretend to; forbidding that any of them should *κυριεύειν*, or *ἐξουσιάζειν*, exercise any dominion or authority over the rest, as worldly princes did over their subjects.

Again, upon another occasion (as the circumstances of the place do imply), when two of the apostles (of special worth and consideration with our Lord, St. James and St. John, the sons of Zebedee) did affect a pre-eminence over the rest, requesting of our Lord, *Grant unto us that we may sit, one on thy right hand, and the other on thy left hand, in thy glory* (or in thy kingdom,° as St. Matthew hath it; that is, in that new state, which they conceived our Lord was ready to introduce;) which request doth not seem to import any great matter of authority; nor probably did they desire so much, as our adversaries do give to St. Peter; yet our Lord doth not only reject their suit, but generally declareth, that none of them were capable of such a preferment in his kingdom; which therein differed from worldly dominion, because in it there was no room for such an ambition; especially in that state of things wherein the apostles were to be placed; which was a state of undergoing persecutions, not of enjoying dignity, or exercising command; all the preferment which they reasonably could aspire to being to be dispensed in the future state (whereof they were not aware), according to God's preparation, in correspondence to the patience and industry any of them should exert in God's service; (upon which account St. Chrysostom saith), "It was a clear case that St. Paul should obtain the preference."*

It was indeed (as our Lord intimateth) incongruous for those, who had forsaken all things for Christ, who had embraced a condition of disgrace, who were designed, by self-denial, humility, neglect of temporal grandeur, wealth, and honour, by undergoing persecution, and undertaking conformity to our Lord (*being baptized with the baptism with which he was baptised*), to propagate the faith of a crucified Master, to seek or take on them authoritative dignity; for among them

* Luke xxii. 14, 24.—Τίς αὐτῶν δοκεῖ εἶναι μείζων.

† So doth St. Clemens interpret μείζων, alluding to this place.

‡ Ἦτω τις πιστὸς, ἦτω δυνατὸς γνώσιν ἐξείπειν, ἦτω σοφὸς ἐν διακρίσει λόγων, ἦτω γαργῶς ἐν ἔργοις, τοσούτω μᾶλλον ταπεινοφρονεῖν οὐκ εἶναι, ὅσω δοκεῖ μᾶλλον μείζων εἶναι· καὶ ζητεῖν τὸ κοινωφελὲς πάντων, μὴ τὸ ἑαυτοῦ.—Clem. ad Corinth. i. 48; apud Clem. Alex. Strom. vi. p. 647. Let a man be faithful, let him be powerful in declaring knowledge, let him be wise in discovering reasons, let him be strenuous in works, by so much the more ought he to be humble-minded, by how much the more he seems to be greater than others; and to seek the common benefit of all, and not of himself.

|| ὁ μείζων.

° Luke xxii. 25, 26.

§ ὁ ἡγούμενος.

* Εὐδόηλον ὅτι τῆς ἀνωτάτω ἀπολαύσεται τιμῆς καὶ προεδρίας.—Chrys. tom. v. Or. 33.

° Mark x. 37; Matt. xx. 25.

there could not well be any need of commanding or being commanded; it was more fit, that all of them should conspire to help and serve one another, in promoting the common design and service of their Lord, with mutual condescension and compliance; which was the best way of recommending themselves to his acceptance, and obtaining from him answerable reward.* Such was the drift of our Lord's discourse; whereunto (as in the other case) he did annex the prohibition of exercising dominion: *Ye know* (saith he) *that the princes of nations exercise dominion over them, and they that are great exercise authority upon them; but it shall not be so among you; but whosoever will be great among you, let him be your minister; and whosoever will be first among you, let him be your servant;*^d *Ὁς ἐὰν θέλη, whoever among you hath a mind to special grandeur and pre-eminence, let him understand that there is no other to be attained, beside that which resulteth from the humble performance of charitable offices to his brethren: the which whoever shall best discharge, he alone will become greatest and highest in the eye of God.*

Again, at another time, the apostles dreaming of a secular kingdom to be erected by our Lord, *disputed among themselves who should be the greatest;*^e and for satisfaction presumed to inquire of our Lord about it; when, as they surely were very ignorant of St. Peter's being their head, so there was a fair occasion as could be of our Lord's instructing them in that point, and enjoining their duty towards him; but he did not so, but rather taught him, together with the rest, not to pretend to any such thing, as preferment above the rest: *He sitting down called the twelve, and said unto them, If any one desire to be first, the same shall be last of all, and servant of all.*^f How could he (considering the occasion and circumstances of that speech) in plainer terms establish equality, or discountenance any claim to superiority

* Τότε ἡ ἐπιστοπία ἦν οὐ τιμῆ. ἀλλὰ πρόνοια τῶν ἀρχομένων, &c.—Chrys. in Act. i. 6. Then the government was not an honour, but a provident care of the governed, &c.

^d Matt. xx. 25, 26, 27.

^e Mark ix. 34; Luke ix. 46; Matt. xviii. 1.

^f Mark ix. 35.

among them? Had St. Peter then advanced such a plea, as they now affirm of right belonging to him, would he not thereby have depressed and debased himself to the lowest degree?

To impress this rule, our Lord then *calling a little child, did set him in the midst of them, telling them, that except they were converted (from such ambitious pretences), and became like little children (wholly void of such conceits) they could not enter into the kingdom of heaven;* that is, could not in effect be so much as ordinary good Christians; adjoining, that *whosoever should humble himself as did that little child (not affecting, or assuming more than such an innocent did), should be greatest in the kingdom of heaven;*^g in real worth, and in the favour of God, transcending the rest: so that St. Peter, claiming superiority to himself, would have forfeited any title to eminency among Christians.

Again, as to the power which is now ascribed to St. Peter by the party of his pretended successors, we may argue from another place; where our Saviour prohibiting his disciples to resemble the Jewish Scribes and Pharisees in their ambitious desires and practices, their affectations of pre-eminence, their assuming places and titles importing difference of rank and authority, he saith, *But be ye not called Rabbi: for there is one master (one Guide or Governor) of you, even Christ; but ye are brethren.*^h How more pregnantly could he have declared the nature of his constitution, and the relation of Christians one to another established therein, to exclude such differences of power, whereby one doth in way of domination impose his opinion or his will on others!

Ye are all fellow-scholars, fellow-servants, and fellow-children of God; it therefore doth not become you to be anywise imperious over one another; but all of you humbly and lovingly to conspire in learning and observing the pre-

* Καὶ τοῖς περὶ πρωτείων φιλονεικοῦσι γνωρίζοις μετὰ ἀπλότητος τὴν ἰσότητα παρεγγυᾷ, λέγων ὡς τὰ παῖδια αὐτοῦς γενέσθαι δεῖν.—Clem. Alex. Strom. v. (p. 660. [663].) And to those familiar friends striving for the preeminence, he commends equality together with simplicity, saying, that they ought to become as little children.

^g Matt. xxiii. 8,—εἰς καθήγητας.

cepts of your common Lord ; the doing which is backed with a promise and a threat suitable to the purpose : *He that exalteth himself shall be abased ; and he that will abase himself shall be exalted ;* the which sentences are to be interpreted according to the intent of the rules foregoing.

If it be said, that such discourse doth impugn all ecclesiastical jurisdiction ; I answer, that indeed thereby is removed all such haughty and harsh rule, which some have exercised over Christians ; that *αὐθεντία* (*arbitrary power*) ; that *ἐξουσία ἀνεύθυνος* (*absolute, uncontrollable authority*) ; that *τυραννικὴ προνομία* (*tyrannical prerogative*), of which the Fathers complain ; that *κατακυριεύειν τῶν κλήρων* (*domineering over their charges*), which St. Peter forbiddeth.^b “We” (saith St. Chrysostom) “were designed to teach the word, not to exercise empire or absolute sovereignty ; we do bear the rank of advisers, exhorting to duty.”^c*

A bishop, saith St. Jerome, differeth from a king, in that a bishop “presideth over those that are willing,” the king “against their will ;”[†] (that is, the bishop’s governance should be so gentle and easy, that men hardly can be unwilling to comply with it ; but should obey, as St. Peter exhorteth (*ὡν ἀναγκαστῶς, ἀλλ’ ἑκούσιως, not by constraint, but of their own accord ;*)[†] and, “Let” (saith he) “the bishops be content with their honour ; let them know themselves to be fathers, not lords ; they should be loved, not feared.”[‡]

And, “Thou” (saith St. Bernard to Pope Eugenius) “dost superintend, the name of *bishop* signifying to thee not dominion, but duty.”^{||}

* *Εἰς διδασκαλίαν λόγον προχειρίσθημεν, οὐκ εἰς ἀρχὴν, οὐδὲ εἰς αὐθεντίαν ἀμβόλιαν τάξιν ἐπέχομεν παρανοούντων.*—Chrys. in Eph. Or. 11.

† Ille enim nolentibus præest, hic volentibus.—*Hier. Ep. 3, ad Nepot.* ‘Ο μέντοι ἐδόντων δέειλαν ἀρχεῖν, &c.—Chrys. in Tit. i. 7. He ought to rule them so as they may be willing to be ruled, &c.

‡ Sed contenti sint honore suo ; patres se sciant esse non dominos —. *Hier. Ep. 62, ad Theoph.* cap. 3. Amari patens, et episcopus debet, non timeri.—*Ibid.* cap. 1.

|| Inde denique superintendis, sonante tibi Chrys. in 1 Tim. iii. 1 ; in Eph. Or. 11 : Isid. Pel. Ep. iv. 219 ; ii. 125 ; Greg. Naz. Or. 28 ; 1 Pet. v. 3.

At least those precepts of our Lord do exclude that power which is ascribed to St. Peter over the apostles themselves, the which indeed is greater than in likelihood any Pharisee did ever affect ; yet in many respects doth exceed any domination which hath been claimed or usurped by the most absolute monarch upon earth ; for the power of St. Peter in their opinion was the same which now the Roman bishop doth challenge to himself over the pastors and people of God’s church, by virtue of succession to him (St. Peter’s power being the base of the papal, and therefore not narrower than its superstructure ;) but what domination comparable to that hath ever been used in the world ?

What emperor did ever pretend to a rule so wide in extent (in regard either to persons or matters), or so absolute in effect ?

Whoever, beside his holiness, did usurp a command, not only over the external actions, but the most inward cogitations of all mankind ; subjecting the very minds and consciences of men to his dictates, his laws, his censures ?

Who ever thundered curses and damnations on all those who should presume to dissent from his opinion, or to contest his pleasure ?

Who ever claimed more absolute power, in making, abolishing, suspending laws, or imposing upon men what he pleased, under obligation of conscience, and upon extremest penalties ?

What prince ever used a style more imperious, than is that which is usual in the papal bulls : “Let it be lawful for no man whatever to infringe this expression of our will and command, or to go against it with bold rashness.”^{**}

What Domitian more commonly did admit the appellation of *lord*, than doth the pope ? “Our most holy lord,”^{††} is the ordinary style attributed to him by the Fathers of Trent, as if they were his slaves, and intended to enslave all Christendom to him.

episcopi nomine non dominium, sed officium.—*Bern. de Consid.* ii. 6.

* Nulli hominum liceat hanc paginam nostræ voluntatis et mandati infringere, vel ei ausu temerario contraire.

† Sanctissimus dominus noster.—*Concil. Trid. sess. xxii. cap. 11, &c.*

† 1 Pet. v. 2, 3.

Who ever did exempt his clients and dependents in all nations from subjection to civil laws, from undergoing common burdens and taxes, from being judged or punished for their misdemeanours and crimes?

Who ever claimed a power to dispose of all things one way or other, either directly or indirectly? to dispose even of kingdoms, to judge sovereign princes, and to condemn them, to depose them from their authority, absolving their subjects from all allegiance to them, and exposing their kingdoms to rapine?

To whom but a pope were ever ascribed prerogatives like those of judging all men, and himself being liable to no judgment, no account, no reproof or blame; so that, as a papal canon assur-eth us, "Let a pope be so bad, as by his negligence and maladministration to carry with him innumerable people to hell, yet no mortal man whatever must presume here to reprove his faults; because he being to judge all men, is himself to be judged of no man, except he be caught swerving from the faith;"* which is a case they will hardly suffer a man to suppose possible.

To whom but to a pope was such power attributed by his followers, and admitted by himself, that he could hear those words applying to him, "all power is given to thee in heaven and in earth?"†

Such power the popes are wont to challenge, and when occasion serveth do not fail to execute, as successors of St. Peter;‡ to whom therefore consequently they ascribe it: and sometimes in express terms; as in that brave apostrophe of Pope Gregory VII. (the spirit of which pope hath possessed his successors generally:) "Go to therefore" (said he, directing his speech to St. Peter and St. Paul), "most holy princes of the apostles, and what I have said confirm by your authority; that now at length all men may understand, whether ye can bind and loose; that also ye can take away and give on earth, empires,

kingdoms, and whatever mortal men can have."*

Now if the assuming and exercising such powers be not that *κατακυριεύειν*, and *κατεξουσιάζειν*, that exalting one's self, that being called rabbi, father, master, which our Lord prohibiteth, what is so? what then can those words signify? what could our Lord mean?

The authority, therefore, which they assign to St. Peter, and assume to themselves from him, is voided by those declarations and precepts of our Lord; the which it can hardly be well conceived that our Lord would have proposed, if he had designed to constitute St. Peter in such a supremacy over his disciples and church.

7. Surveying particulars, we shall not find any peculiar administration committed to St. Peter, nor any privilege conferred on him, which was not also granted to the other apostles.

Was St. Peter an ambassador, a steward, a minister, a vicar (if you please), or surrogate of Christ? so were they, by no less immediate and express warrant than he; for, *as the Father sent me, so also I send you*, said our Lord presently before his departure; by those words, as St. Cyprian remarketh, "granting an equal power to all the apostles;"† and, *We* (saith St. Paul) *are ambassadors for Christ; we pray you in Christ's stead, be reconciled to God*; and, *So let a man esteem us, as the ministers of Christ, and stewards of the mysteries of God.*‡

Was St. Peter a rock, on which the church was to be founded? Be it so; but no less were they all; for the wall of Jerusalem, which *came down from heaven, had twelve foundations, on which were inscribed the names of the twelve apostles of the Lamb*; and, *We* (saith St. Paul) *are all built upon the foundation of the prophets and apostles, Christ himself being the chief corner stone*;* whence "equally" (saith St. Jerome)

* Agite apostolorum sanctissimi principes, &c.—*Plat. in Greg VII.* In Concil. Rom. vi. apud Bin. p. 491.

† Et quamvis apostolis omnibus post resurrectionem suam parem potestatem tribuat et dicat, Sicut, &c.—*Cypr. de Un. Eccl.* p. 195.

‡ 2 Cor. v. 20; 1 Cor. iv. 1; 2 Cor. vi. 4.

* Matt. xvi. 18; Rev. xxi. 10, 14; Eph. ii. 20.

* Si papa suæ, &c.—*Grat. Dist.* xl. cap. 6.

† Concil. Lat. Sub Leone X. sess. xi. p. 133, (in Or. Archiep. Patrac.)

‡ Hac itaque fiducia fretus, &c.—*Excommun. Henrici E. in Concil. Rom. iii. sub. Greg. VII.* apud Bin. tom. vii. p. 484.

“the strength of the church is settled upon them.”*

Was St. Peter an architect of the *spiritual house* (as himself calleth the church?) so were also they; for *I* (saith St. Paul) *as a wise masterbuilder, have laid the foundation.*¹

Were *the keys* of the church (or of the *kingdom of heaven*^m) committed to him? so also were they unto them: they had a power to open and shut it by effectual instruction and persuasion, by dispensation of the sacraments, by exercise of discipline, by exclusion of scandalous and heretical persons; whatever faculty the keys did import, the apostles did use it in the foundation, guidance, and government of the church; and did (as the Fathers teach) impart it to those whom they did in their stead constitute to feed and govern the church.

Had St. Peter a power given him of binding and loosing effectually? so had they, immediately granted by our Saviour, in as full manner, and couched in in the same terms: *If thou shalt bind on earth, it shall be bound in heaven,* said our Lord to him; and, *Whatsoever things ye shall bind on earth, they shall be bound in heaven,*ⁿ said the same divine mouth to them.†

Had he a privilege to remit and retain sins? it was then by virtue of that common grant or promise; *Whose soever sins ye remit, they shall be remitted; and whose soever sins ye retain, they are retained.*^o

Had he power and obligation to feed the sheep of Christ (all or some?) so had they indefinitely and immediately: so had others by authority derived from them; who were nominated *pastor*; who had this charge laid on them: *Take heed unto yourselves, and to all the flock, over which the Holy Ghost hath made you*

overseers, to feed the church of God, which he hath purchased with his own blood; whom he doth himself exhort, Feed the flock of God which is among you, taking the oversight thereof:^p let feeding signify what it can, instruction, or guidance, or governance, or all of them together (*Regio more impera*, if you please, as Bellarmine will have it), it did appertain to their charge; to teach was a common duty, to lead and to rule were common functions; St. Peter could not, nor would not appropriate it to himself; it is his own exhortation, when he taketh most upon him, *Be mindful of the commandment (or precept) of us the apostles of the Lord and Saviour.*^q

Was his commission universal, or unlimited? so was theirs, by the same immediate authority; for, *All power* (said he to them, when he gave his last charge) *is given to me in heaven and in earth; go therefore, and teach all nations, baptizing them, and teaching them to observe all things whatsoever I command you; and, Go ye into all the world, and preach the gospel to every creature.*^r

They, as St. Chrysostom speaketh, “were all in common intrusted with the whole world, and had the care of all nations.”*

Was he furnished with extraordinary gifts, with special graces, with continual directions and assistance for the discharge of the apostolical office? so were they; for the *promise* was common of sending the Holy Spirit, *to lead them into all truth, and, clothing them with the power from on high;*^s and of endowing them with power to perform all sorts of miraculous works; our Lord before his departure *breathed into them, and said, receive ye the Holy Ghost; All of them* (saith St. Luke) *were filled with the Holy Ghost; all of them with confidence and truth could say, it hath seemed good to the Holy Ghost, and to us;*^t all of them did abundantly partake of that character

* Ex æquo super eos ecclesiæ fortitudo solidatur.—*Hier. in Jovin.* i. 14.

† *Ὅτι καὶ τοῖς ἀπ' ἐκείνων τὸ ἀρχιερατικὸν κατὰ διαδοχὴν περιβεβλημένοις ἄξιώμα, τὴν αὐτὴν προσείηαι τοῦ δεσμεῖν καὶ λύειν ἕξουσίαν πιστεύομεν.—*Phot. Cod.* 280, p. 1600. Those who, by succession from them (viz. the apostles), were endowed with episcopal authority, we believe to have the same power of binding and loosing.

¹ 1 Peter ii. 5; 1 Cor. iii. 10.

^m Matt. xvi. 19.

ⁿ Matt. xvi. 19; xviii. 18.

^o John xx. 23.

* Πάντες κοινῆ τὴν οἰκουμένην ἱππιστευθῆτες.—*Chrys. tom.* viii. p. 115; tom. v. *Orat.* 47, in 2 *Cor.* xi. 28.

^p Eph. iv. 11; Acts xx. 28; 1 Pet. v. 2.

^q 2 Pet. iii. 2.

^r Matt. xxviii. 19; Mark xvi. 15; Luke xxiv. 47.

^s Luke xxiv. 49; John xvi. 13, 14, 26.

^t John xx. 22; Acts ii. 4; xv. 28.

which St. Paul respected, when he did say, *The signs of an apostle were wrought among you, in signs and wonders, and mighty deeds.*^a

Did St. Peter represent the church as receiving privileges in its behalf; as the Fathers affirm? so did they, according to the same Fathers: "If therefore" saith St. Austin, citing the famous place, *Sicut me misit Pater* "they did bear the person of the church, and this was said to them, as if it were said to the church itself, then the peace of the church remitteth sins."[†]

What singular prerogative then can be imagined appertaining to St. Peter? what substantial advantage could he pretend to beyond the other apostles? Nothing surely doth appear; whatever the patrons of his supremacy do claim for him is precariously assumed, without any fair colour of proof; he for it is beholden, not to any testimony of holy scripture, but to the invention of Roman fancy: we may well infer with Cardinal Cusanus; "We know that Peter did not receive more power from Christ than the other apostles; for nothing was said to Peter which was not also said to the other: therefore" (addeth he) "we rightly say that all the apostles were equal to Peter in power."[‡]

8. Whereas St. Peter himself did write two Catholic Epistles, there doth not in them appear any intimation, any air or savour of pretence to this arch-apostolical power. It is natural for persons endowed with unquestionable authority (howsoever otherwise prudent and modest), to discover a spice thereof in the matter or in the style of their writing; their mind, conscious of such advantage, will suggest an authoritative way of expression; especially when they earnestly exhort, or seriously reprove, in

^a Cui totius ecclesiæ figuram gerenti, &c.—*Aug. Ep.* 165.

[†] Ergo si personam gerebant ecclesiæ, et sic eis hoc dictum est, tanquam ipsi ecclesiæ diceretur, pax ecclesiæ dimittit peccata, &c.—*Aug. de Bapt. cont. Dom.* iii. 18.

[‡] Scimus quod Petrus nihil plus potestatis a Christo recepit aliis apostolis; nihil enim dictum est ad Petrum, quod aliis etiam dictum non est. Ideo recte dicimus omnes apostolos esse æquales cum Petro in potestate.—*Card. Cus. de Conc. Cath.* ii. 13.

^a 2 Cor. xii. 12.

which cases their very authority is a considerable motive to assent or compliance, and strongly doth impress any other arguments; but no critic perusing those Epistles would smell a pope in them. The speech of St. Peter, although pressing his doctrine with considerations of this nature, hath no tang of such authority.

The elders (saith he) *which are among you, I exhort, who also am an elder, and a witness of the sufferings of Christ, and also a partaker of the glory that shall be revealed:*^v by such excellent but common advantages of his person and office, he presseth on the clergy his advices.

Had he been what they make him, he might have said, I, the peculiar vicar of Christ, and sovereign of the apostles, do not only exhort, but require this of you: this language had been very proper, and no less forcible: but nothing like this, nothing of the spirit and majesty of a pope, is seen in his discourse; there is no "pagina nostræ voluntatis et mandati," which now is the papal style; when he speaketh highest, it is in the common name of the apostles, *Be mindful* (saith he) *of the command* (that is, of the doctrine and precepts) *of us, the apostles of the Lord and Saviour.*^w

9. In the apostolical history, the proper place of exercising this power ("wherein," as St. Chrysostom saith, "we may see the predictions of Christ, which he uttered in the Gospels, reduced to act, and the truth of them shining in the things themselves,")^x no footstep thereof doth appear.

We cannot there discern that St. Peter did assume any extraordinary authority, or that any deference by his brethren was rendered to him, as to their governor or judge. No instance there doth occur of his laying commands on any one apostle, or exercising any act of jurisdiction upon any one; but rather to the contrary divers passages are observable, which argue, that he pretended to no such thing, and that others did not understand any such thing belonging to him.

^x Καὶ γὰρ τὰς προρρήσεις ἃς ἐν τοῖς εὐαγγελίοις ὁ Χριστὸς προαναφώνησεν, ταύτας εἰς ἔργον ἐνταυθὰ ἐστὶν ἰδεῖν, καὶ ἐπ' αὐτῶν τῶν πραγμάτων διαλάμπουσαν τὴν ἀλήθειαν.—*Chrys. in Act.* 1.

^v 1 Pet. v. 1.

^w τῆς ἐνοχλῆς.—2 Pet. iii. 2.

His temper indeed and zeal commonly did prompt him to be most forward in speaking and acting upon any emergency for the propagation or maintenance of the gospel;* and the memory of the particular charge which our Lord departing had lately put on him, strongly might instigate him thereto; regard to his special gifts and sufficiency did incline the rest willingly to yield that advantage to him; and perhaps because, upon the considerations before touched, they did allow some preference in order to him; but in other respects, as to the main administration of things, he "is but one among the rest."† not taking upon him in his speech or behavior beyond others. All things are transacted by common agreement, and in the name of all concurring; no appeal in cases of difference is made singly to him; no peremptory decision or decree is made by him; no orders are issued out by him alone, or in a special way; in ecclesiastical assemblies he acteth but as one member; in deliberations he doth only propound his opinion, and passeth a single vote; his judgment and practice are sometime questioned, and he is put to render an account of them: he doth not stand upon his authority, but assigneth reasons to persuade his opinion, and justify his actions; yea sometimes he is moved by the rest, receiving orders and employment from them: these things we may discern by considering the instances which follow.‡

In the designation of a new apostle to supply the place of Judas, he did indeed suggest the matter, and lay the case before them; he first declared his sense; but the whole company did choose two, and referred the determination of one to lot, or to God's arbitration.*

* Ὡς θερμὸς, καὶ ὡς ἐμπιστευθεὶς παρὰ τοῦ Χριστοῦ τὸ πνεῦμα, καὶ ὡς τοῦ χοροῦ πρῶτος δεῖ πρότερος ἀρχεται τοῦ λόγου.—Chrys. in Act. i. 15. As being a man hot and earnest, and as intrusted with a flock by Christ, and as the foreman of the company, he ever begins to speak. Εὐθέτως ταῦτα ἐγένετο διὰ τὴν ἀρετὴν τοῦ ἀνδρός.—In Act. i. 26. Probably so it fell out by reason of the signal virtue of the man.

† Ἐτέρος τις τῶν αὐτῶν ἐκείνου τοῦ χοροῦ.—Chrys. de Sacerd. Or. 4.

‡ Ὅσα δὲ αὐτῶν μετὰ κοινῆς πάντα ποιοῦντα γνώμης οὐδὲν ἀθεντικῶς, οὐδὲ ἀρχικῶς.—Chrys. in Act. i. 16. Behold him doing all things by common consent; nothing authoritatively nor imperiously.

* Acts i. 15, 26, 23, καὶ ἔστησαν δύο.

At the institution of deacons, *the twelve did call the multitude of disciples*, and directed them to elect the persons; and the proposal being *acceptable* to them, it was done accordingly; *they chose Stephen, &c.*‡ whom *they set before the apostles, and when they had prayed, they laid their hands on them.****

In that important transaction about the observance of Mosaic institutions, *a great stir and debate being started*,† which St. Paul and St. Barnabas by disputation could not appease, what course was then taken? Did they appeal to St. Peter, as to the supreme dictator and judge of controversies? Not so; but *they sent to the apostles and elders at Jerusalem, to inquire about the question*; when those great messengers were arrived there, *they were received by the church, and the apostles, and elders*; and having made their report, *the apostles and elders did assemble to consider about that matter.*‡ In this assembly, *after much debate passed*, and that many had freely uttered their sense, St. Peter *rose up*, with apostolical gravity, declaring what his reason and experience did suggest conducing to a resolution of the point; whereto his words might indeed be much available, grounded, not only upon common reason, but upon special revelation concerning the case; whereupon St. James, alleging that revelation, and backing it with reason drawn from scripture, with much authority pronounceth his judgment: *Therefore* (saith he) *I judge* (that is, saith St. Chrysostom, *I authoritatively say*‡) *that we trouble not them, who from among the Gentiles are turned to God; but that we write unto them, &c.** And the result was, that according to the proposal of St. James, it was by general consent determined to send a decretal letter unto the Gentile Christians, containing a canon, or advice directive of their practice in the case: *It then seemed good to* (or was decreed by) *the apostles and elders, with the whole church, to send—and the*

* Acts vi. 5, καὶ ἤρρεσεν ὁ λόγος ἐν ὧσιν παύρης τοῦ πλήθους· καὶ ἐξελέξατο Στέφανον, &c.

† Acts xv. 2.—Γενωμένης στάσεως, καὶ ἐσζητήσεως οὐκ ὀλίγης.

‡ Διδὲ ἐγὼ κρίνω.—Acts. xv. 19. Τί ἐστι κρίνω ἐγὼ; ἀπὸ τοῦ μετ' ἐξουσίας λέγω τοῦτο εἶπαι.—Chrys.

‡ Acts vi. 2. † Acts xv. 2, 4, 6, 7.

* Acts xv. 13—18.

letter ran thus : *The apostles, and elders, and brethren, to the brethren of the Gentiles,**— Now in all this action (in this leading precedent for the management of things in ecclesiastical synods and consistories), where can the sharpest sight descry any mark of distinction or pre-eminence which St. Peter had in respect to the other apostles? Did St. Peter there anywise behave himself like his pretended successors upon such occasions? what authority did he claim or use before that assembly, or in it, or after it? Did he summon or convocate it? No; they met upon common agreement. Did he preside there? No; but rather St. James, “to whom” (saith St. Chrysostom), “as bishop of Jerusalem, the government was committed.”† Did he offer to curb or check any man, or to restrain him from his liberty of discourse there? No; “there was much disputation,” every man frankly speaking his sense. Did he more than use his freedom of speech becoming an apostle, in arguing the case and passing his vote? No; for in so exact a relation nothing more doth appear. Did he form the definitions, or pronounce the decrees resulting? No; St. James rather did that; for (as an ancient author saith) “Peter did make an oration, but St. James did enact the law.”‡ Was, beside his suffrage in the debate, any singular approbation required from him, or did he by any bull confirm the decrees? No such matter; these were devices of ambition, creeping on and growing up to the pitch where they now are. In short, doth any thing correspondent to papal pretences appear assumed by St. Peter, or deferred to him? If St. Peter was such a man as they make him, how wanting then was he to himself, how did he neglect the right and dignity of his office, in not taking more

upon him, upon so illustrious an occasion, the greatest he did ever meet with? How defective also were the apostolical college, and the whole church of Jerusalem, in point of duty and decency, yielding no more deference to their sovereign, the vicar of their Lord! Whatever account may be framed of these defaultances, the truth is, that St. Peter then did know his own place and duty better than men do know them now; and the rest as well understood how it became them to demean themselves. St. Chrysostom's reflections on those passages are very good; that indeed then “there was no fastuousness in the church,” and “the souls of those primitive Christians were clear of vanity;”* the which dispositions did afterward spring up and grow rankly to the great prejudice of religion, begetting those exorbitant pretences which we now disprove.

Again, when St. Peter, being warned from heaven thereto, did receive Cornelius, a Gentile soldier, unto communion;‡ divers good Christians, who were ignorant of the warrantableness of that proceeding (as others commonly were, and St. Peter himself was, before he was informed by that special revelation), did not fear *διακρίνεσθαι πρὸς αὐτὸν, to contest with him* about it;§ not having any notion (as it seemeth) of his supreme unaccountable authority (not to say of that infallibility, with which the canonists and Jesuits have invested him;) unto whom St. Peter rendereth a fair account, and maketh a satisfactory apology for his proceedings;† not brow-beating those audacious contenders with his authority, but gently satisfying them with reason. But if he had known his power to be such, as now they pretend it to be, he should have done well to have asserted it, even out of good-will and charity to

* *Τότε ἔδοξε τοῖς, &c.*—Acts xv. 22. *Τὰ δόγματα τὰ κεκριμένα ὑπὸ τῶν ἀποστόλων, καὶ τῶν πρεσβυτέρων.*—Acts xvi. 4. *Κρίναντες ἡμεῖς ἐπιστεύλαμεν.*—Acts xxi. 25.

† *Ἰάκωβος ὁ ἀδελφὸς τοῦ Κυρίου τὴν ἐκκλησίαν τότε ἐπιστάτευεν ἐν ἀρχῇ τὴν ἐν Ἱεροσολύμοις, καὶ τῶν ἐξ Ἰουδαίων πιστευσάντων προεστῆκε πάντων.*—Chrys. tom. v. Or. 59. *Ἐκεῖνος γὰρ ἦν τὴν ἀρχὴν ἐγκειρισμένος—ἐν δυναστείᾳ ἦν.*—Chrys. in loc. For he had the government committed to him—he was empowered.

‡ *Πέτρος δὴμηγορεῖ, ἀλλ' Ἰάκωβος νομοθετεῖ.*—Hesych. apud Phot. Cod. 275.

* *Ὁθως οὐδεὶς τῶνος ἦν ἐν τῇ ἐκκλησίᾳ οὐτως καθαρὰ δόξης ἢν αὐτῶν ἡ ψυχῆ.*—Chrys. *ibid.*

† *Ὅρα τὸ ἀνυφὸν καὶ ἀνεκδόξον,—ὅρα πῶς ἀπολογεῖται, καὶ οὐκ ἀξιοῖ τῷ τοῦ διδασκάλου ἀξιώματι χρῆσθαι.*—Chrys. See how free he is from pride and vain-glory; see how he excuses himself, and thinks himself not worthy to have the honour of a master.

‡ *Acts x. 28. Καὶ ἐμοὶ ὁ θεὸς ἔδειξε.*—Acts xi. 12.

§ *Acts xi. 2; Bell. de Pont. Rom. iv. 3, 4; Acts xi. 18.*

those good brethren;* correcting their error, and checking their misdemeanour; shewing them what an enormous presumption it was so to contend with their sovereign pastor and judge.

Further; so far was St. Peter from assuming command over his brethren, that he was upon occasion ready to obey their orders; as we may see by that passage, where, upon the conversion of divers persons in Samaria, it is said, that *the apostles hearing it, did send to them Peter and John, who going down, prayed for them, that they might receive the Holy Ghost.*¹ The apostles sent him: that, had he been their sovereign, would have been somewhat unseemly and presumptuous; for subjects are not wont to send their prince, or soldiers their captain; to be sent being a mark of inferiority, as our Lord himself did teach: *A servant* (saith he) *is not greater than his lord; nor he that is sent greater than he that sent him.*² St. Luke therefore should at least have so expressed this passage, that the apostles might have seemed to keep their distance, and observed good manners; if he had said, they beseeched him to go, that had sounded well; but *they sent him* is harsh, if he were *dominus noster papa*, as the modern apostles of Rome do style their Peter. The truth is, then, among Christians there was little standing upon punctilios; private considerations and pretences to power then took small place; each one was ready to comply with that which the most did approve; the community did take upon it to prescribe unto the greatest persons, as we see again in another instance, where the brethren at Antioch did *appoint Paul and Barnabas* (the most considerable persons among them) *to go up unto Jerusalem.* They were then "so generous, so merciful, so full of charity, as, rather than to cause or foment any disturbance, to recede, or go whither the multitude pleased, and do what was commanded by it."[†]

* Ita ut Petrus quoque timens ne culparetur ab ipsis.—*Iren.* iii. 12, 15, p. 200. *N.* In the matter at Antioch, St. Peter did comply with St. James and the Judaizers, which did not seem such authority.

† Ἐραζαν ἀναβαίνειν Παῦλον καὶ Βαρνάβαν.—*Acts xv.* 2; *xiii.* 2. Τίς ὄν ἐν ἡμῖν γενναῖος; τίς ἐσπλαγχνός; τίς πεπληροφημένος ἀγάπης; εἰπάτω, εἰ δὲ ἐμὲ στάσεις, καὶ ἔρις, καὶ σχίσματα, ἐκχωρῶ, ^d *Acts viii.* 14. ^e *John xiii.* 16.

10. In all relations which occur in scripture, about controversies incident of doctrine or practice, there is no appeal made to St. Peter's judgment, or allegation of it as decisive; no argument is built on his authority: dissent from his opinion, or disconformity to his practice, or disobedience to his orders, are not mentioned as ground of reproof, as aggravation of any error, any misdemeanour, any disorder; which were very strange, if then he was admitted or known to be the universal prince and pastor of Christians, or the supreme judge and arbitrator of controversies among them: for then surely the most clear, compendious, and effectual way to confute any error, or check any disorder, had been to allege the authority of St. Peter against it: who then could have withstood so mighty a prejudice against his cause? If now a question doth arise about any point of doctrine, instantly the parties (at least some one of them, which hopeth to find most favour) hath recourse to the pope to define it; and his judgment, with those who admit his pretences, proveth sufficiently decisive, or at least greatly swayeth in prejudice to the opposite party. If any heresy, or any opinion disagreeing from the current sentiments, is broached, the pope presently doth roar, that his voice is heard through Christendom, and thundereth it down: if any schism or disorder springeth up, you may be sure that Rome will instantly meddle to quash it, or to settle matters as best standeth with its principles and interests: such influence hath the shadow of St. Peter's authority now: but no such regard was then had to poor Pope Peter himself; he was not so busy and stirring in such cases: the apostles did not send heretics to be knocked down by his sentence, nor schismatics to be scourged by his censure; but were fain to use the long way of disputation, striving to convince them by testimonies of scripture, and rational discourse. If they did use *authority*, it

ἄπειμι ὃν ἐὰν βούλησθε, καὶ ποιῶ τὰ προστασσόμενα ὑπὸ τοῦ πλῆθους. *Clem. ad Cor.* 54. Who among you is noble and generous? who has bowels of compassion? who is full of charity? Let him say, If for my sake there be sedition, and strife, and divisions, I will depart, and go whither you would have me, and do what shall be enjoined me by the multitude.

was their own; which they challenge as given to them by Christ for edification, or upon account of the more than ordinary gifts and graces of the divine Spirit, conferred on them by God.⁴

11. St. Peter nowhere doth appear intermeddling as a judge or governor paramount in such cases; yea, where he doth himself deal with heretics and disorderly persons, confuting and reproofing them (as he dealeth with divers notoriously such), he proceedeth not as a pope decreeing, but as an apostle warning, arguing, and persuading against them.

It is particularly remarkable how St. Paul, reproofing the factions which were among Christians at Corinth, doth represent the several parties, saying, *I am of Paul, I am of Apollos, I am of Cephas, I am of Christ.*⁵ Now supposing the case then had been clear and certain (and if it were not so then, how can it be so now?) that St. Peter was sovereign of the apostles, is it not wonderful that any Christian should prefer any apostle or any preacher before him? as if it were now clear and generally acknowledged that the pope is truly what he pretendeth to be, would any body stand in competition with him, would any glory in a relation to any other minister before him?

It is observable how St. Clemens reflecteth on this contention: "Ye were" (saith he) "less culpable for that partiality; for ye did then incline to renowned apostles, and to a man approved by them: but now," &c.*

If it be replied, that Christ himself did come into the comparison; I answer, that probably no man was so vain as to compare him with the rest, nor indeed could any there pretend to have been baptized by him (which was the ground of the emulation in respect of the others;) but those who said they were of Christ were the wise and peaceable sort, who by saying so declined and disavowed faction; whose behaviour St. Paul himself in his discourse commendeth and

confirmeth, shewing that all indeed were of Christ,⁶ the apostles being only his ministers, to work faith and virtue in them. "None" (saith St. Austin) "of those contentious persons were good, except those who said, But I am of Christ."⁷

We may also here observe, that St. Paul, in reflecting upon these contentions, had a fair occasion of intimating somewhat concerning St. Peter's supremacy, and aggravating their blameable fondness, who compared others with him.

12. The consideration of the apostles proceeding in the conversion of people, in the foundation of churches, and in administration of their spiritual affairs, will exclude any probability of St. Peter's jurisdiction over them.

They went about their business, not by order or license from St. Peter, but according to special instinct and direction of God's Spirit (*being sent forth by the Holy Ghost; going by revelation*), or according to their ordinary prudence, and the habitual wisdom given unto them;⁸ by those aids (without troubling St. Peter or themselves more) they founded societies, they ordained pastors, they framed rules and orders requisite for the edification and good government of churches, reserving to themselves a kind of paramount inspection and jurisdiction over them; which in effect was only *πατρική επιμέλεια*, a paternal care over them; which they particularly claimed to themselves upon account of spiritual parentage, for that they had begotten them to Christ: *If* (saith St. Paul to the Corinthians) *I am not an apostle to others, I am however so to you: why so? because he had converted them, and could say, As my beloved sons I warn you: for though ye have ten thousand instructors in Christ, yet ye have not many fathers: for in Christ Jesus I have begotten you through the gospel.*⁹ This paternal charge they did exercise without any dependence or regard to St. Peter, none

* Falsum est quod illi boni erant, exceptis eis qui dicebant, Ego autem Christi.—Aug. Cont. Crescon. i. 27.

⁴ 1 Cor. iii. 5.

⁵ Ἐκπεμφθέντες ὑπὸ τοῦ πνεύματος. ἔγ.—Acts xiii. 4, 2; xvi. 6, 9; Gal. ii. 2, κατ' ἀποκάλυψιν.—2 Pet. iii. 5; 1 Cor. vii. 17; xi. 34; xvi. 1; Tit. i. 5; Isid. Pel.; 1 Thess. ii. 7, 11.

⁶ 1 Cor. ix. 2; Acts xviii. 1.

⁷ 1 Cor. iv. 14, 15; Gal. iv. 19.

* Ἄλλ' ἡ πρόσκλησις ἐκεῖνη ἦτον ἀμαρτίαν ὑμῶν προσήνεγκεν' προσελίθητε γὰρ ἀποστόλοις μεμαρτυρημένοις, καὶ ἀνδρὶ δεδοκιμασμένῳ παρ' αὐτοῖς· νυνὶ δέ, &c.—Clem. ad Corinth. 47.

¹ 2 Cor. xiii. 10; x. 8; xii. 21; 1 Cor. iv. 2; 2 Thess. iii. 14; 1 Cor. vii. 25, 40; 1 Thess. iv. 8.

² 1 Cor. i. 12; iii. 21.

such appearing, it not being mentioned that they did ever consult his pleasure, or render him an account of their proceedings; but it rather being implied in the reports of their actions, that they proceeded absolutely, by virtue of their universal office and commission of our Lord.

If it be alleged, that St. Paul went to Jerusalem to St. Peter; I answer, that it was to visit him out of respect and love; or to confer with him for mutual edification and comfort; or at most to obtain approbation from him and the other apostles, which might satisfy some doubters, but not to receive his commands or authoritative instructions from him; it being, as we shall afterwards see, the design of St. Paul's discourse to disavow any such dependence on any man whatever. So doth St. Chrysostom note; "What" (saith he) "can be more humble than this soul? after so many and so great exploits, having no need at all of Peter, or of his discourse, but being in dignity equal to him (for I will now say no more), he yet doth go up to him, as to one greater and ancients; and a sight alone of Peter is the cause of his journey thither." And, "He went" (saith he again) "not to learn any thing of him, nor to receive any correction from him, but for this only, that he might see him, and honour him with his presence."*

And indeed, that there was no such deference of the apostles to St. Peter, we may hence reasonably presume, because it would then have been not only impertinent and needless, but inconvenient and troublesome. For,

13. If we consider the nature of the apostolical office, the state of things at that time, and the manner of St. Peter's life; in correspondence to those things, he will appear incapable, or unfit, to manage such a jurisdiction over the apostles as they assign him.

The nature of the apostolical ministry

* Τί ταύτης ταπεινοφρονέστερον γένοιτ' ἂν τῆς ψυχῆς; μετὰ τούτα καὶ τοιαῦτα κατορθώματα μηδὲν Πέτρον δέμενος, μηδὲ τῆς ἐκείνου φωνῆς, ἀλλ' ἰσότητος ἂν αὐτῷ (πλέον γὰρ οὐδὲν ἐρῶ τέως) ὁμῶς ἀνέρχεται ὡς πρὸς μείζονα, καὶ πρεσβύτερον καὶ τῆς ἀποστομίας αὐτῷ τῆς ἐκεῖ γίνεται αἰτίας ἢ ἱστορία Πέτρον μόνῃ.—ὅχι ὡς μαθησόμενος τι παρ' αὐτοῦ, οὐδὲ ὡς διόρθωσιν τινα δεξάμενος, ἀλλὰ διὰ τοῦτο μόνον, ὥστε ἰδεῖν αὐτὸν καὶ τιμῆσαι τῇ παρουσίᾳ.—Chrys. in Gal. i. 18.

† Gal. i. 18.—ἰστορήσαι.

was such, that the apostles were not fixed in one place of residence, but were continually moving about the world, or in *procinctu*,^m ready in their gears to move whither divine suggestions did call them, or fair occasion did invite them, for the propagation or furtherance of the gospel.*

The state of things was not favourable to the apostles, who were discountenanced and disgraced, persecuted, and driven from one place to another (as our Lord foretold of them;)[†] Christians lay scattered about at distant places, so that opportunities of despatch for conveyance of instructions from him, or of accounts to him, were not easily found.

St. Thomas preaching in Parthia, St. Andrew in Scythia, St. John in Asia, Simon Zelotes in Britain, St. Paul in many places; other apostles and apostolical men in Arabia, in Ethiopia, in India, in Spain, in Gaul, in Germany, *in the whole world, and in all the creation under heaven*,ⁿ as St. Paul speaketh, could not well maintain correspondence with St. Peter; † especially considering the manner of his life, which was not settled in any one known place, but moveable and uncertain; for he continually roved over the wide world, preaching the gospel, converting, confirming, and comforting Christian people, as occasion starting up did induce: how then could he conveniently dispense all about his ruling and judging influence? how in cases incident could direction be fetched from him, or reference be made to him by those subordinate governors, who could not easily

* Ἐπειδὴν γὰρ ἤμελλον τῆς οἰκουμένης τὴν ἐπιτροπὴν ἀναδέξασθαι, οὐκ ἔδει συμπελέχθαι λοιπὸν ἀλλήλοις· ἢ γὰρ ἂν μεγάλη τοῦτο τῇ οἰκουμένῃ γέγονε ζῆμία.—Chrys. in Joh. xxi. 23. For seeing they were to take upon them the inspection and superintendency of all the world, it behoved them not any longer to be mixed or conjoined together, for this had been a great loss and hindrance to the world.

† Ὁ τὴν οἰκουμένην σταδίευσας, καὶ τῷ περὶ πίστεως ὁδῶν τὸν κόσμον μικρὸν ἀποφῆνας.—Bas. Seleuc. Or. 2. He that run his race through the whole universe, and by his so eager running for the faith made the world, as it were, too narrow for him.

^m 2 Cor. xi. 25.

ⁿ 1 Cor. iv. 9; 2 Cor. iv. 8; vi 4; xi. 25; Matt. xxiv. 9; Luke xxi. 12.

• Euseb. iii. 1; Niceph. ii. 38, 39, 40; Tertul. ad Jud. cap. 7.

† Col. i. 6, 33; Rom. x. 18.

know where to come at him, or whence to hear from him in any competent time? To send to him had been to shoot at rovers; affairs, therefore, which should depend on his resolution and orders, must have had great stops; he could but very lamely have executed such an office; so that his jurisdiction must have been rather an extreme inconvenience and encumbrance, than anywise beneficial or useful to the church.

Gold and silver he had none, or a very small purse, to maintain dependants and officers to help him (nuncios, legates a latere, secretaries, auditors, &c.), infinity of affairs would have oppressed a poor helpless man; and to bear such a burden as they lay on him no one could be sufficient.

14. It was indeed most requisite, that every apostle should have a complete, absolute, independent authority in managing the concerns and duties of his office; that he might not anywise be obstructed in the discharge of them; not clogged with a need to consult others, not hampered with orders from those who were at distance, and could not well decry what was fit in every place to be done.

The direction of him who had promised to be *perpetually present with them*,^a and by his Holy Spirit to guide, to instruct, to admonish them upon all occasions, was abundantly sufficient; they did not want any other conduct or aid beside that special light and powerful influence of grace, which they received from him; the which *ἰκάρωσεν αὐτοῦς διδ* (as St. Paul speaketh) *render them sufficient ministers of the New Testament*.^b

Accordingly their discourse and practice do thoroughly savour of such an independence; nor in them is there any appearance of that being true, which Bellarmine dictateth, that "the apostles depended on St. Peter, as on their head and commander."^c

15. Particularly the discourse and behaviour of St. Paul toward St. Peter doth evidence, that he did not acknowledge any dependence on him, any subjection to him.

^a — a quo illi tanquam a capite et imperatore suo pendeant.—Bellarm. de Pont. i. 16.

^b Matt. xxviii. 20; John xvi. 13; xiv. 26.

^c 2 Cor. iii. 5; Rom. xv. 15.

St. Paul doth often purposely assert to himself an independent and absolute power, inferior or subordinate to none other, insisting thereon for the enforcement or necessary defence of his doctrine and practice (*I have become a fool in glorying; ye have compelled me*,^a saith he;) alleging divers pregnant arguments, to prove and confirm it, drawn from the manner of his call, the characters and warrants of his office, the tenor of his proceedings in the discharge of it, the success of his endeavours, the approbation and demeanour toward him of other apostles.

As for his call and commission to the apostolical office, he maintaineth (as if he meant designedly to exclude those pretences, that other apostles were only called *in partem sollicitudinis* with St. Peter), that he was *an apostle, not from men, nor by man, but by Jesus Christ, and God the Father*;^b that is, that he derived not his office immediately or mediately from men, or by the ministry of any man, but immediately had received the grant and charge thereof from our Lord; as indeed the history plainly sheweth, in which our Lord telleth him, that he did "constitute him an officer, and a chosen instrument to him, to bear his name to the Gentiles."^c

Hence he so often is careful and cautious to express himself an apostle by *the will* and special *grace*, or favour and appointment, and command of God; and particularly telleth the Romans, that *by Christ he had received grace and apostleship*.^d

For the warrant of his office, he doth not allege the allowance of St. Peter, or any other, but those special gifts and graces which were conspicuous in him, and exerted in miraculous performances: *Truly* (saith he) *the signs of an apostle were wrought among you in all patience, in signs, and wonders, and mighty deeds; and I will not dare to speak of any of those things which Christ hath not wrought by*

^a Bell. i. 9, 14, 16.—Οὐκ ἀπ' ἀνθρώπων. οὐδὲ δι' ἀνθρώπων.—Gal. i. 1.

^b Προχειρίσασθαι σε ἑπηρέην, &c.—Acts ix. 15; xxii. 21; xxvi. 16.

^c 2 Cor. xii. 11; Rom. xi. 13.

^d Διὰ θελήματος Θεοῦ, 1 Cor. i. 1; 2 Cor. i. 1; Eph. i. 1, Col. i. 1; 2 Tim. i. 1.—Χάρις, Rom. i. 5; 1 Cor. xv. 10; Eph. iii. 7; 1 Tim. i. 12.—Καρ' ἰκταρῆν, 1 Tim. i. 1.

me, to make the Gentiles obedient, by word and deed, through mighty signs and wonders, by the power of the Spirit of God.^a

To the same purpose he allegeth his successful industry in converting men to the gospel: *Am I not an apostle? (saith he) are ye not my work in the Lord? If I am not an apostle to others, I am surely one to you: for the seal of mine apostleship are ye in the Lord. And, By the grace of God I am what I am: and his grace which was on me became not in vain: but I laboured more abundantly than they all.*^b

In the discharge of his office, he immediately (after that he had received his call and charge from our Saviour), without consulting or taking license from any man, did vigorously apply himself to the work: *Immediately (saith he) I conferred not with flesh and blood: neither went I up to Jerusalem to them that before me were apostles:*^c so little did he take himself to be accountable to any man.

In settling order, and correcting irregularities in the church, he professed to act merely by his own authority, conferred on him by our Lord: *Therefore (saith he) being absent, I write these things, that being present, I may not use severity, according to the authority which the Lord hath given me for edification, not for destruction.*^d

Such being the privileges which he did assert to himself with all confidence, he did not receive for it any check from other apostles; but the chief of them, *knowing the grace that was given unto him, gave unto him the right hand of fellowship;*^e in token of their acknowledgement and allowance of his proceedings.

Upon these considerations (plainly signifying his absolute independence in the reception and execution of his office) he doth more than once affirm (and in a manner *boast*) himself *to be inferior in nothing to the very chief apostles:*^f in nothing; that is, in nothing pertinent to the authority or substantial dignity of his place; for as to his personal merit, he professeth himself *much less than the*

least of the apostles;^g but as to the authenticity and authority of his office, he deemed himself equal to the greatest; *being by the grace of God what he was, a minister of the gospel, according to the gift of the grace of God, which was given him according to the effectual working of his power.*^h

When he said he was *behind none,*ⁱ he could not forget St. Peter; when he said *none of the chief,* he could not but especially mean him (he did indeed, as St. Chrysostom saith, intend "to compare himself with St. Peter;")^j when he said *in nothing,* he could not but design that which was most considerable, the authority of his place; which in the context he did expressly mention.^k For when he objected to himself the semblance of fondness or arrogance in speaking after that manner, he declared that he did not speak rashly or vainly, but upon serious consideration, and with full assurance, finding it very needful or useful to maintain his authority, or to *magnify his office,*^l as he elsewhere speaketh.

If things had been as now we are taught from the Roman school, it is strange that St. Paul should compare himself so generally, not excepting St. Peter; that he should express (nor by the least touch intimate) no special consideration for his, as they tell us, "ordinary pastor;"^m that he should not consider how liable such words were to be interpreted in derogation to St. Peter's due prerogatives.

But it is no wonder that St. Paul, in St. Peter's absence, should thus stand on his own legs, not seeming to mind him, whenas in immediate transactions with him he demeaned himself as his fellow, yielding to him no respect or deference, as to his superior. For,

When St. Paul went to Jerusalem, to have conference with St. Peter and other apostles, who were chief in repute, he professeth that *they did not confer any thing to him,*ⁿ so as to change his opinion, or divert him from his ordinary

^a 2. Cor. xii. 12; Rom. xv. 18, 19; 1 Cor. ii. 4.

^b 1 Cor. ix. 1, 2; xv. 10; 2 Cor. xi. 23.

^c Gal. i. 16, 17. ^d 2 Cor. xiii. 10; x. 8.

^e Gal. ii. 9. ^f 2 Cor. xi. 5; xii. 11.

* Πρὸς τοὺς περὶ Πέτρον ποιούμενος τὴν συγκρίσιν.

^a 1 Cor. xv. 9; Eph. iii. 8.

^b 1 Cor. xv. 10; Eph. iii. 7.

^c 2 Cor. xi. 5.

^d Κατὰ προδιόρθωσιν, 2 Cor. xii. 11; i. 16, 17.

^e Rom. xi. 13. ^f Bell. de Pont. i. 41.

^g Gal. ii. 2.

course of practice, which was different from theirs: this was (it seemeth) hardly proper or seemly for him to say, if St. Peter had been his sovereign: but he seemeth to say it on very purpose to exclude any prejudice that might arise to his doctrine from their authority or repute; their authority being none over him, their repute being impertinent to the case; for *whatsoever* (addeth he) *they were, it maketh no matter to me; God respecteth no man's person:*^b the which might well be said of persons greater in common esteem, but not so well of one who was his superior in office; to whose opinion and conduct, as of his judge and pastor by God's appointment, he did owe a special regard.

Again, St. Paul at Antioch *observing St. Peter, out of fear*^c and policy, to act otherwise than became the simplicity and sincerity of Christians, to the prejudice of *evangelical truth*, charity, and liberty, against his own judgment and former practice, drawing others by his pattern into the same unwarrantable course of behaviour, did *withstand him to the face, did openly reprove him before all, because he was blameable;*^d did, as Pope Gelasius I. affirmeth (to excuse another pope misbehaving himself), "worthily confute him;"^e did (as St. Augustine often doth affirm and argue, in proof that greatest persons may sometimes err and fail) "correct him, rebuke him, chide him."^f

* (Vide P. Pelag. II. apud Bin. tom. iv. p. 308, in Epist. ad Eliam.) Nunquid ideo aut illa ejus sequenda sunt, quæ merito ejus copostolus ejus facta redarguit.—Gelas. I. de Anath. (apud Bin. tom. iii. p. 645.)

† Apostolo Paulo monstrante et corrigente.—Aug. cont. Crescon. i. 32; ii. 32; Ep. 19, de Bapt. Cont. Don. ii. 1, 2; correptus, cont. Don. ii. 1; objurgavit, Ep. 8; —qui de minore causa conversationis ambigux Petro ipsi non pepercit.—Tert. v. 3, (contra Marc.) — who for a smaller matter of doubtful conversation spared not Peter himself. Cum laudetur etiam Pauli minimi apostolorum sana ratio atque libertas, quod Petrum apostolorum primum ad ductum in hypocrisis, et non recta via incidentem ad veritatem evangelii fidenter improban, in faciem illi restitit, eumque coram omnibus coram objurgavit.—Fac. Her. viii. 6. Whereas the sound reason and freedom even of Paul, the least of the apostles, is commended, in that when Peter, the chief of the apostles, was carried away with dissimulation, and walked not in a right way, according to the

^a Gal. ii. 6.

^b Gal. ii. 12–14.

^c Gal. ii. 11, 14.

Which behaviour of St. Paul doth not well consist with the "supposition, that St. Peter was his superior in office;"^g If that had been, Porphyrius with good colour of reason might have objected procacity to St. Paul in taxing his betters; for he then indeed shewed us no commendable pattern of demeanour towards our governors, in so boldly opposing St. Peter, in so openly censuring him, in so smartly confuting him.

More unseemly also it had been to report the business as he doth in writing to the Galatians; for to divulge the miscarriages of superiors, to revive the memory of them, to register them, and transmit them down to all posterity, to set forth our clashing and contests with them, is hardly allowable; if it may consist with justice and honesty, it doth yet little savour of gravity and modesty: it would have been more seemly for St. Paul to have privately and humbly remonstrated to St. Peter, than openly and downrightly to have reprehended him; at least it would have become him in cold blood to have represented his carriage more respectfully, consulting the honour of the universal pastor, whose reputation was like to suffer by such a representation of his proceedings. Pope Pelagius II. would have taught St. Paul better manners; who saith, that "they are not to be approved, but reprobated, who do reprove or accuse their prelates;"^h and Pope Gregory would have taught him another lesson, namely, that "the evils of their superiors do so displease good subjects, that however they do conceal them from others;"ⁱ and, "subjects are to be admonished, that they do not rashly judge the life of their superiors, if perhaps they see them do blameably," &c.†

It is plain, that St. Paul was more bold with St. Peter, than any man now must

truth of the gospel, he boldly disliked, and withstood him to the face, and reprov'd him openly before all.

* Non sunt consentiendi, sed reprobandi, qui prælatos suos, reprehendunt vel accusant.—Pelag. II. Ep. 2.

† Bonis subditis sic præpositorum suorum mala displicent. ut tamen hæc ab aliis occultent.—Greg. M. Moral. xxv. 15.

‡ Admonendi sunt subditi, ne præpositorum suorum vitam temere judicent, siquid eos fortasse agere reprehensibiliter vident, &c.—Greg. Past. part. iii. cap. 1, Admon. 5.

^g Hier. ad Aug. Ep. 11, in Prol. ad Gal.

be with the pope ; for let the pope commit never so great crimes, yet should "no mortal" (saith the canon law) "presume to reprove his faults."^k

But if St. Peter were not in office superior to St. Paul, but his colleague, and equal in authority, although preceding him in standing, repute, and other advantages ; then St. Paul's free proceeding toward him was not only warrantable, but wholesome, and deserving for edification to be recited and recorded ; as implying an example how colleagues upon occasion should with freedom and sincerity admonish their brethren of their errors and faults ; St. Peter's carriage in patiently bearing that correction also affording another good pattern of equanimity, in such cases ; to which purpose St. Cyprian (alleged and approved by St. Austin)^l doth apply this passage : "for" (saith he) "neither Peter, whom the Lord first chose, and upon whom he built his church, when Paul afterward contended with him about circumcision, did insolently challenge, or arrogantly assume any thing to himself, so as to say, that he did hold the primacy, and that rather those who were newer and later apostles ought to obey him ; neither despised he St. Paul, because he was before a persecutor of the church ; but he admitted the counsel of truth, and easily consented to the lawful course which St. Paul did maintain ; yielding indeed to us a document both of concord and patience, that we should not pertinaciously love our own things, but should rather take those things for ours which sometimes are profitably and wholesomely suggested by our brethren and colleagues, if they are true and lawful :"^m this St. Cyprian speaketh, upon supposition that St. Peter and St. Paul were equals, or (as he calleth them) colleagues and brethren, in rank co-ordinate ; otherwise St. Cyprian would not have approved the action ; for he often severely doth inveigh against inferiors taking upon them to censure their superiors : "What tumour" (saith he) "of pride, what arrogance of mind, what inflation of heart, is it, to call our superiors and bish-

ops to our cognizance ?"ⁿ St. Cyprian, therefore, could not conceive St. Peter to be St. Paul's governor, or superior in power ; he doth indeed plainly enough in the forecited words signify, that in his judgment St. Peter had done "insolently and arrogantly," if he had assumed any "obedience" from St. Paul. St. Austin also doth in several places of his writings make the like application of this passage.

The ancient writer contemporary to St. Ambrose, and passing under his name, doth argue in this manner : "Who dared resist Peter the first apostle, to whom the Lord did give the keys of the kingdom of heaven, but another such a one ; who in assurance of his election knowing himself to be not unequal to him, might constantly disprove what he had unadvisedly done ?"^t

It is indeed well known, that Origen, and after him St. Chrysostom and St. Jerome, and divers of the ancients beside, did conceive that St. Paul did not seriously oppose or tax St. Peter, but did only do it seemingly, upon confederacy with him, for promoting a good design.

This interpretation, however strained and earnestly impugned by St. Austin, I will not discuss ; but only shall observe, that it being admitted, doth rather strengthen than weaken our discourse : for, if St. Peter were St. Paul's governor, it maketh St. Peter to have consented to an act in all appearance indecent, irregular, and scandalous ; and how can we imagine that St. Peter would have conspired to the impairing his own just authority in the eye of a great church ? doth not such a condescension imply in him a disavow-

* Quis enim hic est superbiæ tumor, quæ arrogantia animi, quæ mentis inflatio ad cognitionem suam præpositos et sacerdotes vocare ?—*Cypr. Ep. 69.*

† Nam quis eorum auferet Petro primo apostolo, cui claves regni cœlorum Dominus dedit, resistere, nisi alius talis, qui fiducia electionis suæ, sciens se non imparem, constanter improbaret quod ille sine consilio fecerat ?—*Ambr. in Gal. ii. 9.* Paulus Petrum reprehendit, quod non auferet, nisi se non imparem sciret.—(*Hieron. vel alius quis ad Gal. citatus a Grat. Caus. ii. qu. 7. cap. 33.*) Paul reprehended Peter, which he would not have dared to do, had he not known himself to be equal to him.

ⁿ Aug. cont. Don. de Bapt. ii. 1, 2 Ep. 19.

^l S. Cyril. cont. Jul. lib. ix. (p. 325,) Chrys. tom. v. Or. 59, *ὅτι ἀπὸ ψυχῆς*.—Aug. Ep. 11, &c.

^k Nam nec Petrus, quem primum Dominus elegit, &c.—*Cypr. Ep. 71. (ad Quint.)*

^l Grat. Dist. xl. cap. 6.

^m Aug. de Bapt. cont. Don ii. 2.

ing of superiority over St. Paul, or a conspiracy with him to overthrow good order?

To which purpose we may observe, that St. Chrysostom,* in a large and very elaborate discourse, wherein he professeth to endeavour "an aggravation" of the irregularity of St. Paul's demeanour, if it were serious; doth not lay the stress of that aggravation upon St. Paul's opposing his lawful governor, but his only so treating a co-apostle of such eminency: neither when to that end he designeth to reckon all the advantages of St. Peter beyond St. Paul, or any other apostle, doth he mention this, which was chiefly material to his purpose, that he was St. Paul's governor; which observations if we do carefully weigh, we can hardly imagine that St. Chrysostom had any notion of St. Peter's supremacy in relation to the apostles.†

In fine, the drift of St. Paul, in reporting those passages concerning himself, was not to disparage the other apostles, nor merely to command himself, but to fence the truth of his doctrine, and maintain the liberty of his disciples, against any prejudice that might arise from any authority that might be pretended in any considerable respects superior to his, and alleged against them; to which purpose he declareth by arguments and matters of fact, that his authority was perfectly apostolical, and equal to the greatest; even to that of St. Peter, the prime apostle; of St. John, the beloved disciple; of St. James, the bishop of Jerusalem; the judgment or practice of whom was no law to him, nor should be to them, further than it did consist with that doctrine which he, by an independent authority, and by special revelation from Christ, did preach unto them: he might, as St. Chrysostom noteth, have pretended "to some advantage over them," in regard that he "had laboured more abundantly than they all;" but he for-

bearth to do so, "being contented to obtain equal advantages."‡

Well, therefore, considering the disadvantage which this passage bringeth to the Roman pretence, might this history be called by Baronius "a history hard to be understood, a stone of offence, a rock of scandal, a rugged place, which St. Austin himself, under favour, could not pass over without stumbling."§

It may also be considered, that St. Paul particularly doth assert to himself an independent authority over the gentiles, coordinate to that which St. Peter had over the Jews;† the which might engage him so earnestly to contest with St. Peter, as by his practice seducing those who belonged to his charge; the which also probably moved him thus to assert his authority to the Galatians, as being Gentiles under his care, and thence obliged especially to regard his authority. *They* (saith St. Paul) *knowing that I was intrusted with the gospel of uncircumcision as Peter was intrusted with that of circumcision,—gave unto me and Barnabas the right hand of fellowship:* the which words do clearly enough signify that he took himself, and that the other apostles took him to have, under Christ, an absolute charge, subordinate to no man, over the Gentiles; whence he claimeth to himself, as his burden, *the care of all the churches:* he therefore might well contest for their liberty, he might well insist upon his authority among them.

Thus did St. Chrysostom understand the case; for "Christ" (saith he) "committed the Jews to Peter, but set Paul over the Gentiles;"‡ and, "He" (saith that great father) "further doth shew himself to be equal to them in dignity,

* Καὶ τὰς τῆς μάστιγας τῶν ἀποστόλων πλεονεκτήσας, περισσότερον γὰρ αὐτῶν ἰκοίσατο, φησὶν, ἀλλὰ τίως οὐ κατασκευάζει τοῦτο, ἀλλ' ἀγαπᾷ τὰ ἴσα φέρων.—Chrys. in Gal. i. 1.

† Plena auctoritas Petro in Judaismi prædicatione data dignoscitur, et Pauli perfecta auctoritas in prædicatione Gentium invenitur.—*Ambr.* There is discerned a full authority given to Peter of preaching to the Jews, and in Paul there is found a perfect power and authority of preaching to the Gentiles.

‡ Τοὺς μὲν οὖν Ἰουδαίους ἐπέτρεψε τῷ Πέτρῳ, τοῖς δὲ Ἕλλησι τὸν Παῦλον ἐπέστειλεν ὁ Χριστός.—Chrys. tom. 5, Or. 59.

§ Baron. An. li. § 32-34, 35, &c.

¶ Rom. xi. 13.

¶ Gal. ii. 7.

¶ 2 Cor. xi. 28.

* Chrys. tom. v. Or. 59.—Καὶ γὰρ ἀξίω τὴν κατηγορίαν, καὶ μείζονα ποιῶ, &c.

† Ὡς οὐδὲν μοι ὄφελος ἂν Πέτρον τὴν κατηγορίαν ἀποσκευασαμένου, ὁ Παῦλος φαινηταὶ θαρσαλέως καὶ ἀπερισκέπτως τοῦ συναποστόλου κατηγορῶν —. So that it is no advantage to me, if, when Peter has confuted the charge, Paul appear to accuse his fellow apostle boldly and inconsiderately.

• Gal. i. 12.

and compareth himself, not only to the others, but even to the ringleader; shewing that each did enjoy equal dignity."*

It may also by any prudent considerer easily be discerned, that if St. Peter had really been as they assert him, so in authority superior to the other apostles, it is hardly possible that St. Paul should upon these occasions express nothing of it.

16. If St. Peter had been appointed sovereign of the church, it seemeth that it should have been requisite that he should have outlived all the apostles; for then either the church must have wanted a head, or there must have been an inextricable controversy about who that head was. St. Peter died long before St. John (as all agree), and perhaps before divers others of the apostles. Now, after his departure did the church want a head? (then it might before and after have none; and our adversaries lose the main ground of their pretence.) Did one of the apostles become head? (which of them was it; upon what ground did he assume the headship, or who conferred it on him; who ever did acknowledge any such thing, or where is there any report about it?) Was any other person made head? (suppose the bishop of Rome, who only pretendeth thereto;) then did St. John and other apostles become subject to one in degree inferior to them? then what becometh of St. Paul's *first apostles, secondly prophets, thirdly teachers*?¹ What do all the apostolical privileges come to, when St. John must be at the command of Linus, and Cletus, and Clemens, and of I know not who beside? Was it not a great absurdity for the apostles to trundle under the *pastors and teachers of Rome*?²

The like may be said for St. James, if he (as the Roman church doth in its liturgies suppose) were an apostle who in many respects might claim the pre-eminence; who therefore, in the Apostolical Constitutions, is preferred before Clement bishop of Rome.

17. Upon the same grounds, on which a supremacy of power is claimed to St. Peter, other apostles might also challenge

* Δείκνουν αὐτοῖς ἑνότητα ὄντα λοιπὸν, καὶ οὐ τοῖς ἄλλοις ἰαντὸν, ἀλλὰ τῷ κορυφαίῳ συγκρίνει. δεικνύς ὅτι τῆς αὐτῆς ἑκάστου ἀπίθανον εἶναι.—Chrys. in Gal. ii. 8.

¹ 1 Cor. xii. 28.

² Eph. iv. 11.

a superiority therein over their brethren; but to suppose such a difference of power among the rest is absonous; and therefore the grounds are not valid upon which St. Peter's supremacy is built.

I instance in St. James and St. John, who upon the same probabilities had (after St. Peter) a preference to the other apostles. For to them our Saviour declared a special regard; to them the apostles afterwards may seem to have yielded a particular deference; they, in merit and performances, seem to have surpassed; they (after St. Peter and his brother) were first called to the apostolical office; they (as St. Peter) were by our Lord new christened (as it were), and nominated *Boanerges*, by a name signifying the efficacy of their endeavour in their master's service; they, together with St. Peter, were assumed to behold the transfiguration; they were culled out to wait on our Lord in his agony; they also, with St. Peter (others being excluded, were taken to attest our Lord's performance of that great miracle of restoring the ruler's daughter to life; they, presuming on their special favour with our Lord, did pretend to the chief places in his kingdom.³

To one of them it is expressed that our Saviour did bear a peculiar affection, he being *the disciple whom Jesus loved*, and *who leaned on his bosom*:⁴ to the other he particularly discovered himself after his resurrection, and first honoured him with the crown of martyrdom.

They in blood and cognation did nearest touch our Lord; being his cousin-germans (which was esteemed by the ancients a ground of preferment;) as Hezippus reporteth.⁵

Their industry and activity in propagation of the gospel was most eminently conspicuous.

To them it was peculiar, that St. James did first suffer for it, and St. John did

* Τοὺς δὲ ἀπολιθύντας ἠγύσασθαι τῶν ἐκκλησιῶν, ὡς ἂν εἴη μισοῦσας ἑμὸν καὶ ἀπὸ γίνους ὄντας τοῦ Κυρίου.—Hegesipp. apud Euseb. iii. 20. They being dismissed, and sent away to govern the churches, as being both witnesses, and also kinsmen of our Lord.

³ Matt. iv. 21; Luke v. 10; Mark iii. 17; Matt. xvii. 1, 2; 2 Pet. i. 16; Matt. xxvi. 37; Mark xiv. 33; Matt. xx. 20, 21; Mark x. 35, 37.

⁴ John xiii. 23; xxi. 7. 20; 1 Cor. xv. 7.

⁵ John xiii. 23; xxi. 7. 20; 1 Cor. xv. 7.

longest persist in the faithful confession of it;* whose writings in several kinds do remain as the richest magazines of Christian doctrine, furnishing us with the fullest testimonies concerning the divinity of our Lord, with special histories of his life, and with his divinest discourses; with most lively incitements to piety and charity; with prophetic revelations concerning the state of the church. He therefore was one of the *στόλοι*, chief pillars and props, of the Christian profession; one of *ὡπὲρ μὲν ἀπόστολοι*, the *superlative apostles*.†

Accordingly in the rolls of the apostles, and in reports concerning them, their names usually are placed after St. Peter.‡

Hence also some of the fathers do take them, as St. Peter was, to have been preferred by our Lord.* “Peter” (saith St. Gregory Nazianzen) “and James and John, who both were indeed, and were reckoned, before the others—so indeed did Christ himself prefer them;” and, “Peter, James, and John,” saith Clemens Alexandrinus, “did not, as being preferred by the Lord himself, contest for honour, but did choose James the Just, bishop of Jerusalem” (or, as Ruffinus reads, “bishop of the apostles.”)

Hence if by designation of Christ, by the concession of the apostolical college, by the profulgency of his excellent worth and merit, or upon any other ground, St. Peter had the *πρωτεία*, or first place; the *δευτερεία*, or next place, in the same kind, by like means, upon the same grounds, seems to have belonged unto them; and if their advantage did imply difference, not in power, but in order only (not au-

thoritative superiority, but honorary precedence), then can no more be allowed or concluded due to him.

18. The fathers, both in express terms, and implicitly or by consequence, do assert the apostles to have been equal or co-ordinate in power and authority.

What can be more express than that of St. Cyprian? “The other apostles were indeed that which Peter was, endowed with equal consortship of honour and power;”* and again, “although our Lord giveth to all the apostles after his resurrection an equal power, and saith, As the Father sent me, so I send you.”†

What can be more plain than that of St. Chrysostom? “St. Paul sheweth, that each apostle did enjoy equal dignity?”‡

How again could St. Chrysostom^a more clearly signify his opinion, than when comparing St. Paul to St. Peter, he calleth St. Paul *ἰσοίμων αὐτῷ*, *equal in honour to him*; adding, *πλέον γὰρ οὐδὲν ἐρῶ τέως*, *for I will not as yet say anything more*,^b as if he thought St. Paul indeed the more honourable?

How also could St. Cyril more plainly declare his sense to be the same, than when he called St. Peter and St. John *ἰσοίμους ἀλλήλοις*, *equal to one another in honour*?||

Did not St. Jerome also sufficiently declare his mind in the case, when he saith of the apostles, that “the strength of the church is equally settled upon them?”§

* Hoc erant utique et cæteri apostoli quod fuit Petrus, pari consortio præditi et honoris et potestatis.

† — quamvis apostolis omnibus post resurrectionem suam parem potestatem tribuat, ac dicat, &c.—*Cypr. de Un. Eccl.*

‡ Δεικνύς, ὅτι τῆς αὐτῆς ἑκαστος ἀπέλαυσεν ἀξίας.—*Chrys. in Gal. ii. 8.*

|| Πέτρος καὶ Ἰωάννης ἰσότιμοι ἀλλήλοις, καθὼ καὶ ἀπόστολοι καὶ ἅγιοι μαθηταί.—*Act. Con. Eph. part i. p. 209.* Peter and John were equal in honour one to another, as were also the apostles and holy disciples. Did Tertullian think St. Paul inferior to St. Peter, when he said, “It is well that Peter is even in martyrdom equalled to Paul?” *Bene quod Petrus Paulo et in martyrio adæquat.*—*Tert. de Præser. 24.*

§ At dicis super Petrum fundatur ecclesia, licet id ipsum alio loco super omnes apostolos fiat, et ex æquo super eos ecclesiæ fortitudo solidetur.—*Hieron. in Jovin. i. 14.* But you will say the church is founded upon Peter,

* *Chrys. in Gal. ii. 8.*

^b *Vide Tert. de Præser. cap. 20.*

* Λαβὼν τοίνυν τοὺς κορυθαίους.—*Chrys. in Matt. xvii. 1.* Taking therefore the chief and principal. Διὰ τὶ τούτους παραλαμβάνει μονοὺς; ὅτι οὗτοι τῶν ἄλλων ἦσαν ὑπερέχοντες.—*Chrys. ibid.* Wherefore taketh he these only with him? Because these were the chief and principal above the others. Πέτρος, καὶ Ἰάκωβος, καὶ Ἰωάννης, οἱ πρὸ τῶν ἄλλων καὶ ὄντες καὶ ἀριθμούμενοι—αὕτη μὲν ἡ Χριστοῦ προτίμησις.—*Greg. Naz. Or. 26.* Πέτρον φησὶ καὶ Ἰάκωβον, καὶ Ἰωάννην ὡς ἂν καὶ ὑπὸ τοῦ Κυρίου προτετίμημένους μὴ ἐπιδικάζεσθαι ὀδύης, ἀλλὰ Ἰάκωβον τὸν ὀ καιὸν ἐπίσκοπον Ἱεροσολύμων εἰλεσθαι. (*Ruffinus reddidit apostolorum episcopum.*)—*Clem. Alex. apud Euseb. ii. 1.*

* *Acts xii. 2.*

† *Gal. ii. 9; 2 Cor. xii. 11; xi. 5.*

‡ *Mark iii. 17; Acts i. 13.*

Doth not Dionysius (the supposed Areopagite) call "the decade of the apostles co-ordinate with their foreman,"* St. Peter? in conformity, I suppose, to the current judgment of his age.

What can be more full than that of Isidore (whose words shew how long this sense continued in the church:) "The other apostles did receive an equal share of honour and power; who also being dispersed in the whole world, did preach the gospel; and to whom departing, the bishops did succeed, who are constituted through the whole world in the sees of the apostles?"†

By consequence the Fathers do assert this equality, when they affirm (as we before did shew) the apostolical office to be absolutely supreme; when also they affirm (as afterwards we shall shew) all the apostles' successors to be equal as such; and particularly that the Roman bishop, upon account of his succeeding St. Peter, hath no pre-eminence above his brethren; for, "wherever a bishop be, whether at Rome, or at Eugubium; at Constantinople, or at Rhegium; at Alexandria, or at Thanis; he is of the same worth, and of the same priesthood: the, force of wealth, and lowness of poverty doth not render a bishop more high or more low; for that all of them are successors of the apostles."‡

19. Neither is it to prudential esteem a despicable consideration, that the most ancient of the Fathers, having occasion sometimes largely to discourse of St. Peter, do not mention any such prerogatives belonging to him.

20. The last argument which I shall use against this primacy, shall be the insufficiency of those arguments and testimonies which they allege to warrant and prove it.

If this point be of so great consequence

though the same thing in another place is affirmed of all the apostles, and that, &c.

* 'Ο τῶν μαθητῶν κορυφαῖος, μετὰ τῆς δημοταγοῦς αὐτῶν καὶ ἱεραρχικῆς δεκάδος.—Dionys. de Eccl. Hier. cap. 5.

† Cæteri apostoli cum Petro par consortium honoris et potestatis acceperunt, qui etiam in toto orbe dispersi evangelium prædicaverunt, quibusque decedentibus successerunt episcopi, qui sunt constituti per totum mundum in sedibus apostolorum. *Isid. Hisp. de Off. ii. 5.*

‡ Ubiunque fuerit episcopus, sive Romæ sive Eugubii, &c.—*Hier. ad Evagr. Ep. 85; Clem. ad Corinth. Iren. iii. 12; iii. 1, 3.*

as they make it; if, as they would persuade us, the subsistence, order, unity, and peace of the church, together with the salvation of Christians, do depend on it;* if, as they suppose, many great points of truth do hang on this pin; if it be, as they declare, a main article of faith, and "not only a simple error, but a pernicious heresy, to deny this primacy;"† then it is requisite, that a clear revelation from God should be producible in favour of it (for upon that ground only such points can firmly stand; then it is most probable, that God (to prevent controversies, occasions of doubt, and excuses for error about so grand a matter) would not have failed to have declared it so plainly, as might serve to satisfy any reasonable man, and to convince any forward gainsayer: but no such revelation doth appear; for the places of scripture which they allege do not plainly express it, nor pregnantly imply it, nor can it by fair consequence be inferred from them: no man unprepossessed with affection to their side would descry it in them; without thwarting St. Peter's order, and *wresting the scriptures,*‡ they cannot deduce it from them. This by examining their allegations will appear.

I. They allege those words of our Saviour, uttered by him upon occasion of St. Peter's confessing him to be the Son of God, *Thou art Peter, and upon this rock will I build my church.*⁴ Here, say they, St. Peter is declared the foundation, that is, the sole supreme governor of the church.‡

To this I answer:

1. Those words do not clearly signify any thing to their purpose; for they are metaphorical, and thence ambiguous, or capable of divers interpretations; whence they cannot suffice to ground so main a

* Agitur de summa rei Christianæ, &c.—*Bell. præf. ad lib. de Pontif. R.*

† Est enim revera non simplex error, sed perniciosa hæresis negare B. Petri primatum a Christo institutum.—*Bell. de Pont. R. i. 10.*

‡ S. Romana ecclesia nullis synodicis constitutis cæteris ecclesiis prælata est, sed evangelica voce Domini et Salvatoris nostri primatum obtinuit; *Tu es Petrus* (inquiens) &c.—*P. Gelas. i. Dist. 21, cap. 3.* The holy church of Rome is not preferred before other churches by any synodical decrees, but has obtained the primacy by the voice of our Lord and Saviour in the gospel, saying, *Thou art Peter,* &c.

⁴ 2 Pet. iii. 16.

⁴ Matt. xvi. 18.

point of doctrine, or to warrant so huge a pretence; these ought to stand upon downright, evident, and indubitable testimony.

It is pretty to observe how Bellarmine proposeth this testimony: "Of which words" (saith he) "the sense is plain and obvious, that it be understood, that under two metaphors the principate of the whole church was promised;"* as if that sense could be so plain and obvious, which is couched under two metaphors, and those not very pat or clear in application to their sense.

2. This is manifestly confirmed from that the Fathers and divines, both ancient and modern, have much differed in exposition of these words.

["Some" (saith Abulensis) "say that this rock is Peter—others say, and better, that it is Christ—others say, and yet better, that it is the confession which Peter maketh.":]

For some interpret *this rock* to be Christ himself, of whom St. Paul saith, *Other foundation can no man lay, than that which is laid, which is Jesus Christ.*

St. Austin telleth us in his Retractions, that he often had expounded the words to this purpose, although he did not absolutely reject that interpretation which made St. Peter the rock; leaving it to the reader's choice which is the most probable.†

Others (and those most eminent Fathers) do take the rock to be St. Peter's faith, or profession: "Upon the rock" (saith the prince of interpreters) "that is, upon the faith of his profession;‡ and

* Quorum verborum planus et obvius sensus est, ut intelligatur sub duabus metaphoris promissum Petro totius ecclesie principatum.—*Bell. de Pont.* i. 10.

† Scio me postea sæpissime exposuisse, ut super hanc Petram intelligeretur quem confessus est Petrus; harum autem duarum sententiarum quæ sit probabilius eligat lector.—*Aug. Retr.* i. 21. *Vide Aug.* in Joh. tr. 124, de Verb. Dom. in Matt. Serm. 13. Super hanc inquit, Petram quam confessus es, ædificabo ecclesiam meam.—*Aug. in Joh.* tr. 124, et de Verb. Dom. in Matt. Serm. 13 (tom. 10.) Super hanc Petram, id est, super me ædificabo ecclesiam meam.—*Ans. in Matt.* xvi. 18.

‡ Τῆ Πέτρα — ρουτίσσι τῆ πίστι τῆς ἠκολούθῃ.—*Chrys.* in Matt. xvi. 18.

• Tostat. in Matth. xvi. qu. 67.

† 1 Cor. iii. 11.

again, "Christ saith that he would build his church on Peter's confession;"* and again (he, or another ancient writer under his name), "Upon this rock, he said not upon Peter; for he did not build his church upon the man, but upon his faith."†

Our Lord" (saith Theodoret) "did permit the first of the apostles, whose confession he did fix as a prop or foundation of the church, to be shaken."‡

[Whence Origen saith, that "every disciple of Christ is the rock,"] in virtue of his agreement with Peter in that holy confession.]

This sense even popes have embraced.§

Others say,¶ that as St. Peter did not speak for himself, but in the name of all the apostles, and of all faithful people, representing the pastors and people of the church; so correspondently our Lord did declare, that he would build his church upon such faithful pastors and confessors.

Others do indeed by the rock understand St. Peter's person, but do not thereby expound to be meant his being supreme governor of the apostles, or of the whole church.¶

* — τὴν ἐκκλησίαν ἔφησεν ἐπὶ τὴν ἠκολούθησιν τὴν ἐκείνου.—*Chrys.* in Joh. i. 50.

† Ἐπὶ ταύτῃ τῇ Πέτρῳ οὐκ εἶπεν ἐπὶ τῷ Πέτρῳ· οὐτε γὰρ ἐπὶ τῷ ἀνθρώπῳ, ἀλλ' ἐπὶ τὴν πίστιν τὴν ἐαυτοῦ ἐκκλησίαν ᾠκοδόμησε.—*Chrys.* tom. v. Or. 163. Super hanc igitur confessionis Petram ecclesie ædificatio est.—*Hil. de Trin.* 6.

‡ — ἀποστόλων τὸν πρῶτον, οὗ τὴν ἠκολούθησιν οὐκ εἶπεν ἐπὶ τῷ Πέτρῳ, ἀλλ' ἐπὶ τὴν πίστιν τὴν ἐαυτοῦ ἐκκλησίαν ᾠκοδόμησε.—*Theod.* Ep. 77.

¶ Πέτρα γὰρ πᾶς ὁ Χριστοῦ μαθητῆς, &c.—*Orig.* in Matt. xvi. p. 275.

§ In vera fide persistite, et vitam vestram in petra ecclesie, hoc est in confessione B. Petri apostolorum principis solidate.—*Greg. M. Ep.* iii. 33. Persist in the true faith, and establish and fix your life upon the rock of the church, that is, upon the confession of blessed Peter, the prince of the apostles. Super ista confessione ædificabo ecclesiam meam.—*Felix III. Ep.* 5. *Vide Nic. I. Ep.* ii. 6; *Joh. VIII. Ep.* 76.

¶ Unus pro omnibus loquens, et ecclesie voce respondens.—*Cypr. Ep.* 55. One speaking for all, and answering in the name of the church. Cui ecclesie figuram gerenti Dominus ait, *Super hanc.* — *Aug. Ep.* 165.—To whom, representing the whole church, our Lord saith, *Upon this rock,* &c. Petrus ex persona omnium apostolorum profitetur.—*Hier. in loc.* Peter professes in the person of all the apostles.

• *Vide Rigalt.* in *Cypr. Ep.* 27, 40, 70, 71, 73, 69.

The divines, schoolmen, and canonists of the Roman communion, do not also agree in exposition of the words; and diverse of the most learned among them do approve the interpretation of St. Chrysostom.

Now then, how can so great a point of doctrine be firmly grounded on a place of so doubtful interpretation? How can any one be obliged to understand the words according to their interpretation, which persons of so good sense and so great authority do understand otherwise? With what modesty can they pretend that meaning to be clear, which so perspicacious eyes could not discern therein? Why may not I excusably agree with St. Chrysostom, or St. Austin, in understanding the place? May I not reasonably oppose their judgment to the opinion of any modern doctors, deeming Bellarmine as fallible in his conceptions as one of them? Why consequently may I not without blame refuse their doctrine, as built upon this place, or disavow the goodness of this proof?

3. It is very evident, that the apostles themselves did not understand those words of our Lord to signify any grant or promise to St. Peter of supremacy over them; for would they have *contended* for the chief place, if they had understood whose it of right was by our Lord's own positive determination? would they have *disputed* about a question, which to their knowledge by their Master was already stated? Would they have troubled our Lord to inquire of him who should be the greatest in his kingdom, when they knew that our Lord had declared his will to make St. Peter viceroy? Would the sons of Zebedee have been so foolish and presumptuous as to beg the place, which they knew by our Lord's word and promise fixed on St. Peter? Would St. Peter among the rest have fretted at that idle overture, whenas he knew the place by our Lord's immutable purpose and infallible declaration assured to him? * And if none of the apostles did understand the words to imply this Roman sense, who can be obliged so to un-

* Math. xx. 24.—'Ἀκούσαντες οἱ δέκα ἡγανάκτουσιν. And when the ten heard it, they were moved with indignation.

† Luke xxii. 14; Mark ix. 33; Matt. xviii. 1.

derstand them? Yea who can wisely, who can safely so understand them? for surely they had common sense, as any man living now? they had as much advantage as we can have to know our Lord's meaning; their ignorance therefore of this sense being so apparent, is not only a just excuse for not admitting this interpretation, but a strong bar against it.

4. This interpretation also doth not well consist with our Lord's answers to the contests, inquiries, and petitions of his disciples, concerning the point of superiority: for doth he not (if the Roman expositions be good) seem upon those occasions, not only to dissemble his own word and promise, but to disavow them, or thwart them? Can we conceive, that he would in such a case of doubt forbear to resolve them, clearly to instruct them, and admonish them of their duty?

5. Taking the rock, as they would have it, to be the person of St. Peter, and that on him the church should be built; yet do not the words *being a rock* probably denote government? for what resemblance is there between being a rock and a governor? at least, what assurance can there be that this metaphor precisely doth import that sense; seeing in other respects, upon as fair similitudes, he might be called so?

St. Austin saith, "the apostles were foundations, because their authority doth support our weakness."*

St. Jerome saith, that they "were foundations, because the faith of the church was first laid in them."†

St. Basil saith, that "St. Peter's soul was called the rock, because it was firmly rooted in the faith, and did hold stiff, without giving way against the blows of temptation."‡

Chrysologus saith, that "Peter had his name from a rock, because he first mer-

* Quare sunt fundamenta apostoli et prophetae, quia eorum auctoritas portat infirmitatem nostram.—Aug. in Psal. lxxxvi.

† In illis erant fundamenta, ibi primum posita est fides ecclesiae.—Hier. in Psal. lxxxvi.

‡ Πέτρον δὲ ὕψελθ' ἢ ψυχὴ τοῦ μακαρίου Πέτρον ἀνόρασταί, διὰ τὸ παγίως ἐνερχόμεθα τῇ πίστει, καὶ στερεῶς καὶ ἐνευρότως ἔχειν πρὸς τὰς ἐκ πειρασμῶν ἐναγομένους πληγὰς.—Bas. in Is. ii. p. 869.

ited to found the church by firmness of faith.”*

These are fair explications of the metaphor, without any reference to St. Peter's government.

But, however, also admitting this, that being such a rock doth imply government and pastoral charge; yet do they (notwithstanding these grants and suppositions) effect nothing; for they cannot prove the words spoken exclusively in regard to other apostles, or to import any thing singular to him above or beside them: he might be a governing rock, so might others be; the church might be built on him, so it might be on other apostles; he might be designed a governor, a great governor, a principal governor, so might they also be; this might be without any violence done to those words.

And this indeed was; for all the other apostles in holy scripture are called foundations, and the church is said to be built on them.

“If” (saith Origen, the father of interpreters) “you think the whole church to be only built on Peter alone, what will you say of John the son of thunder, and of each of the apostles?”† &c. largely to this purpose.

“Christ” (as St. Jerome saith) “was the Rock, and he bestowed it upon the apostles, that they should be called rocks.”‡ And “You say,” (saith he again), “that the church is founded on Peter; but the same in another place is done upon all the apostles.”||

The twelve apostles, saith another ancient author, “were the immutable pillars of orthodoxy, the rock of the church.”

“The church” (saith St. Basil) “is built upon the foundation of the prophets and apostles; Peter also was one of the

mountains; upon which rock the Lord did promise to build his church.”*

St. Cyprian¹ in his disputes with Pope Stephen, did more than once allege this place, yet could he not take them in their sense to signify exclusively; for he did not acknowledge any imparity of power among the apostles or their successors. He indeed plainly took these words to respect all the apostles and their successors; our Lord taking occasion to promise that to one, which he intended to impart to all for themselves and their successors: “Our Lord,” saith he, “ordering the honour of a bishop, and the order of his church, saith to Peter, *I say to thee, &c.* Hence, through the turns of times and successions, the ordination of bishops and the manner of the church doth run on, that the church should be settled upon the bishops, and every act of the church should be governed by the same prelates:”† as therefore he did conceive the church to be built, not on the pope singularly, but on all the bishops; so he thought our Lord did intend to build his church, not upon St. Peter only, but on all his apostles.

6. It is not said that the apostles, or the apostolical office, should be built on him; for that could not be, seeing the apostles were constituted, and the apostolical office was founded, before that promise; the words only therefore can import, that according to some meaning he was a rock, upon which the church, afterward to be collected, should be built; he was “a rock of the church to be built,”‡ as Tertullian speaketh: the words therefore cannot signify any thing available to their purpose, in relation to the apostles.

7. If we take St. Peter himself for the rock, then (as I take it) the best

* Petrus a petra nomen adeptus est. quia primus meruit ecclesiam fidei firmitate fundare.—*Chrys. Serm.* 53.

† Εἰ δὲ ἐπὶ τῶν ἑνα ἐκεῖνον Πέτρον νομίζεις ὑπὸ τοῦ Θεοῦ οἰκοδομεῖσθαι τὴν πᾶσαν ἐκκλησίαν μόνον, τί ἂν φῆσαις περὶ Ἰωάννου τοῦ τῆς βροντῆς υἱοῦ, ἢ ἐκάστου τῶν ἀποστόλων, &c.—*Orig. in Matth. xvi.* p. 275.

‡ Petra Christus est, qui donavit apostolis, ut ipsi quoque Petre vocentur.—*Hier. in Amos, ix.* 12.

|| Dicis super Petrum fundatur ecclesia, licet id ipsum in alio loco super omnes apostolos fiat.—*Hier. in Jovin. i.* 14.

¹ Eph. ii. 20.

* Ἐκκλησία—ἠκοδόμηται ἐπὶ τῷ θεμελίῳ τῶν ἀποστόλων καὶ προφητῶν ἐν τῶν ὄρεων ἦν καὶ Πέτρος, ἐφ' ἧς καὶ πέτρας ἐπηγγέλατο ὁ Κύριος οἰκοδομήσειν αὐτοῦ τὴν ἐκκλησίαν.—*Basil. in Isa. ii.* p. 869.

† Dominus noster episcopi honorem, et ecclesie sue rationem disponens, dicit Petro, Ego tibi dico — Inde, per temporum et successionum vices, episcoporum ordinatio et ecclesie ratio becurrit, ut ecclesia super episcopos constituatur, et omnis actus ecclesie per eosdem præpositos gubernetur. *Cypr. Ep.* 27. *et de Unit. Eccl.*

‡ Latuit aliquid Petrum ædificandæ ecclesie Petram dictum. *Tertull. de Præscr. cæc.* 22.

¹ Cypr. Ep. 71, 73.

meaning of the words doth import, that our Lord designed St. Peter for a prime instrument, (the first mover,* the most diligent and active at the beginning, the most constant, stiff, and firm) in the support of his truth, and propagation of his doctrine, or conversion of men to the belief of the gospel; the which is called building of the church; according to that of St. Ambrose, or some ancient homilist under his name, "He is called a rock, because he first did lay in the nations the foundations of faith:"† in which regard, as the other apostles are called foundations of the church (the church being founded on their labours), so might St. Peter signally be so called; who, as St. Basil saith, allusively interpreting our Saviour's words, "for the excellency of his faith did take on him the edifying of the church."‡

Both he and they also might be so termed, for that upon their testimonies concerning the life, death, and resurrection of Christ, the faith of Christians was grounded; as also it stands upon their convincing discourses, their holy practice, their miraculous performances; in all which St. Peter was most eminent; and in the beginning of Christianity displayed them to the edification of the church.

This interpretation plainly doth agree with matter of fact and history; which is the best interpreter of right or privilege in such cases; for we may reasonably understand our Saviour to have promised that, which in effect we see performed; so "the event sheweth, the church was built on him, that is by him."|| saith Tertullian.

But this sense doth not imply any superiority of power or dignity granted to St. Peter above his brethren; however it may signify an advantage belonging to

him, and deserving especial respect; as St. Chrysostom notably doth set out in these words: "Although John, although James, although Paul, although any other whoever may appear performing great matters; he yet doth surpass them all, who did precede them in liberty of speech, and opened the entrance, and gave to them, as to a river carried with a huge stream, to enter with great ease:"* doing this, as, I say, it might signify his being a rock of the church, so it denoteth an excellency of merit, but not a superiority in power.

8. It may also be observed, that St. Peter before the speaking of those words by our Lord, may seem to have had a primacy, intimated by the evangelists, when they report his call to the apostolical office;‡ and by his behaviour, when in this confession, and before in the like, he undertook to be their mouth and spokesman; when, "not being unmindful of his place" (saith St. Ambrose) "he did act a primacy; a primacy" (ad-deth that father) "of confession, not of honour; of faith, not of order:"† his primacy therefore (such as he had) cannot well be founded on this place, he being afore possessed of it, and, as St. Ambrose conceived, exercising it at that time.

II. They allege the next words of our Lord, spoken in sequel upon the same occasion: "To thee will I give the keys of the kingdom of heaven;" that is, say they, "the supreme power over all the church;"‡ for he, say they, that hath the keys is master of the house.

To this testimony we may apply divers of the same answers which were given to the former. For,

1. These words are figurative, and therefore not clear enough to prove their assertion.

* Πέτρος ἐν ἀπόστολοις πρῶτος ἐκήρυξε τὸν Χριστόν.—Chrys. Peter first of all the apostles preached Christ.

† Petra dicitur eo quod primus in nationibus fidei fundamenta posuerit.—Ambr. de Sanctis. Serm. 2.

‡ Ὁ διὰ πίστεως ὑπεροχὴν ἐφ' ἑαυτὸν τὴν οἰκοδομὴν τῆς ἐκκλησίας δεξιόμενος.—Bas. contra Eunom. lib. 2. Petra ædificandæ ecclesiæ.—Tertull. de Præscr. cap. 22.

|| Sic enim. exitus docet, in ipso ecclesia extracta est, id est per ipsum, &c.—Tert. de Pudic. cap. 21.

* Κἄν Ἰωάννης, κἄν Ἰάκωβος, κἄν Παῦλος, κἄν ἄλλος ὁσποιοῦν μετὰ ταῦτα μέγα τι ποιῶν φαίνοισαι, πάντων οὗτος πλεονεκτεῖ, ὁ προδοποιήσας αὐτῶν τῇ παύσει, καὶ διανοίξας τὴν εἰσοδὸν, καὶ τοὺς ἀεὶ καθάπερ ποταμὸν πολλῶν φερομένοιο ῥέματι μετὰ πολλῆς ἀδείας ἐπεισελεῖν, &c.—Chrys. tom. v. Or. 59.

† Loci non immemor sui primatum egit,—primatum confessionis, non honoris; fidei, non ordinis.—Ambr. de Incarn. cap. 4.

‡ Per claves datas Petro intelligimus summam potestatem in omnem ecclesiam.—Bell. de Pont. i. 3.

* Matt. x. 2; John vi. 69.

2. They do admit, and have received, various interpretations.

3. It is evident, that the apostles themselves did not understand these words as importing a supremacy over them; that St. Peter himself did not apprehend this sense; that our Lord, upon occasion inviting to it, did not take notice of his promise according thereto.

4. The words, "I will give thee," cannot anywise be assured to have been exclusive of others, or appropriated to him. "He said" (as a very learned man of the Roman communion noteth) "to Peter, *I will give thee the keys*; but he said not, *I will give them to thee alone*:"* nothing therefore can be concluded from them to their purpose.

5. The fathers do affirm that all the apostles did receive the same keys.

"Are" (saith Origen) "the keys of the kingdom of heaven given by the Lord to Peter alone, and shall none other of the blessed ones receive them? But if this, *I will give thee the keys of the kingdom of heaven*, be common, how also are not all the things common which were spoken before, or are added as spoken to Peter?"†

St. Jerome says in express words, that all "the apostles did receive the keys of the kingdom of heaven."‡

"He" (saith Optatus) "did alone receive the keys of the kingdom of heaven," (which were) "to be communicated to the rest;" that is (as Rigaltius well expoundeth those words), "which Christ himself would also communicate to the rest."||

Theophylact. "Although it be spok-

* Dixit Petro, Dabo tibi claves; at non dixit, Dabo tibi soli.—*Rigalt. in Epist. firmil.*

† Ἄρα δὲ τῷ Πέτρῳ μόνῳ δίδονται ἐπὶ τοῦ Κυρίου αἱ κλεῖδες τῆς τῶν οὐρανῶν βασιλείας, καὶ οὐδεὶς ἕτερος τῶν μακαρίων αὐτὰς λήψεται; εἰ δὲ κοινὸν ἐστὶν εἰς πᾶσι πρὸς ἑτέροισι, τὸ δῶσω σοὶ τὰς κλεῖδας τῆς βασιλείας τῶν οὐρανῶν, πῶς οὐχὶ καὶ πάντα τὰτε προσειρημένα, καὶ τὰ ἐπιφερόμενα ὡς πρὸς Πέτρον λελεγμένα;—*Orig. in Matt. xvi. p. 275.*

‡ Quod Petro dicitur, apostolis dicitur.—*Ambr. in Psal. xxxviii.* What is said to Peter, is said to the apostles. Licet id ipsum in alio loco super omnes apostolos fiat, et cuncti claves regni cœlorum accipiant.—*Hier. in Jov. i. 14.* Though the same thing in another place is done upon all the apostles, and all receive the keys of the kingdom of heaven.

|| Claves regni cœlorum communicandas cæteris solus accepit.—*Opt. lib. 7.* Communicandas cæteris dixit, quas ipse Christus com-

en to Peter alone, *I will give thee*, yet it is given to all the apostles."*

It is part of St. John's character in St. Chrysostom, "He that hath the keys of the heavens."†

6. Indeed, whatever (according to any tolerable exposition, or according to the current expositions of the Fathers) those keys of the kingdom of heaven do import‡ (whether it be a faculty of opening it by doctrine, of admitting into it by dispensation of baptism and absolution, of excluding from it by ecclesiastical censure, or any such faculty signified by that metaphorical expression), it plainly did belong to all the apostles, and was effectually conferred on them; yea, after them, upon all the pastors of the church in their several precincts and degrees; who in all ages have claimed to themselves the power of the keys; to be (as the *Council of Compeigne* calleth all bishops) *clavigeri*, the "key-bearers of the kingdom of heaven."||

So that in these words nothing singular was promised or granted to St. Peter; although it well may be deemed a singular mark of favour, that what our Lord did intend to bestow on all pastors, that he did anticipately promise to him; or, as the Fathers say, to the church and its pastors in him. In which respect we may admit those words of Pope Leo I.‡

7. Indeed divers of the Fathers do conceive the words spoken to St. Peter, not as a single person, but as a representative of the church, or as standing in the

municaturus erat et cæteris.—*Rigalt. in Cypr. de Un. Eccl.*

* Εἰ γὰρ καὶ πρὸς Πέτρον μόνον εἶρηται τὸ δῶσω σοι, ἀλλὰ καὶ πᾶσι τοῖς Ἀποστόλοις δίδονται.—*Theoph. in loc.*

† Ὁ τὰς κλεῖδες ἔχων τῶν οὐρανῶν.—*Chrys. in Præf. Evang. Joh.*

‡ Clavis intelligit verbum Dei, evangelium Christi.—*Rigalt. in Cyp. Ep. 73.*

|| Episcopi—quos constat esse vicarios Christi, et clavigeros regni cœlorum.—*Conc. Comp. apud Bin. tom. vi. p. 361.*

§ Transivit quidem in apostolos alios vis istius potestatis, sed non frustra uni commendatur quod omnibus intimitur. Petro ergo singulariter hoc creditur, quia cunctis ecclesie rectoribus Petri forma proponitur.—*Leo I. in Nat. Petri et Pauli, Serm. 2.* The efficacy of this power passed indeed upon all the apostles; yet was it not in vain, that what was intimated to all, was commended to one. Therefore this is committed singly to Peter, because Peter's pattern and example is propounded to all the governors of the church.

room of each pastor therein ; unto whom our Lord designed to impart the power of the keys.

“ All we bishops ” (saith St. Ambrose) “ have in St. Peter received the keys of the kingdom of heaven.”*

8. These answers are confirmed by the words immediately adjoined, equivalent to these, and interpretative of them : *And whatsoever thou shalt bind on earth shall be bound in heaven ;*^k—the which doth import a power or privilege, soon after expressly, and in the very same words, promised or granted to all the apostles ; as also the same power in other words was by our Lord conferred on them all after the resurrection.^l

If therefore the keys of the kingdom of heaven do import supreme power, then each apostle had supreme power.

9. If we should grant (that which nowise can be proved) that something peculiarly belonging to St. Peter is implied in those words, it can only be this, that he should be a prime man in the work of preaching and propagating the gospel, and conveying the heavenly benefits of it to believers ; which is an opening of the kingdom of heaven ; according to what Tertullian excellently saith of him : “ So ” (saith he) “ the event teacheth, the church was built in him, that is, by him ; he did initiate the key ; see which, *Ye men of Israel, hear these*

* In B. Petro claves regni cœlorum cuncti suscepimus sacerdotes.—*Ambros. de Dign. Sac.* 1. Ecclesia quæ fundatur in Christo, claves ab eo regni cœlorum accepit, id est, potestatem ligandi solvendique peccata.—*Aug. Tract.* 124, in *Joh.* : vide *Tract.* 50. The church, which is founded upon Christ, received from him the keys of the kingdom of heaven, i. e. the power of binding and loosing sins. In typo unitatis Petro Dominus dedit potestatem.—*Aug. de Bapt.* iii. 17. Our Lord gave the power to Peter, as a type of unity. Ἐν προσώπῳ τοῦ κορυφαίου καὶ τοῖς λοιποῖς τῶν μαθητῶν ἡ τοιαύτη ἰξουσία δέδοται.—*Phot. Cod.* 280. Such authority was given to the rest of the apostles in the person of him who was the chief. Non sine causa inter omnes apostolos ecclesiæ catholicæ per sonas sustinet Petrus ; huic enim ecclesiæ claves regni cœlorum datæ sunt, cum Petro datæ sunt.—*Aug. de Ag. Chr.* cap. xxx. in *Ps.* cviii. Not without cause does Peter among the rest of the apostles sustain the person of the catholic church ; for to this church are the keys of the kingdom of heaven given, when they are given unto Peter.

^k Aug. supr. *Matt.* xviii. 18.

^l John xx. 23.

words, *Jesus of Nazareth, a man approved of God among you,*” &c. “ He, in fine, in the baptism of Christ, did unlock the entrance to the kingdom of heaven.”* &c.

10. It seemeth absurd, that St. Peter should exercise the power of the keys in respect to the apostles : for did he open the kingdom of heaven to them, who were by our Lord long before admitted into it ?

11. In fine, our Lord (as St. Luke relateth it) did say to St. Peter, and probably to him first, *Fear not, from henceforth thou shalt catch men :*^m might it hence be inferred, that St. Peter had a peculiar or sole faculty of catching men ? why might it not by as good a consequence as this, whereby they would appropriate to him this opening faculty ? Many such instances might in like manner be used.

III. They produce those words of our Saviour to St. Peter, *Feed my sheep ;* that is, in the Roman interpretation, “ Be thou universal governor of my church.”

To this allegation I answer :

1. From words which truly and properly might have been said to any other apostle, yea, to any Christian pastor whatever, nothing can be concluded to their purpose, importing a peculiar duty or singular privilege of St. Peter.

2. From indefinite words a definite conclusion (especially in matters of this kind) may not be inferred : it is said, *Do thou feed my sheep ;* it is not said, *Do thou alone feed all my sheep :* this is their arbitrary gloss, or presumptuous improvement of the text ; without succour whereof the words signify nothing to their purpose, so far are they from sufficiently assuring so vast a pretence : for instance, when St. Paul doth exhort the bishops at Ephesus *to feed the church of God ;* may it thence be collected, that each of them was an universal go-

* Sic enim exitus docet, in ipso ecclesia exstructa est, id est, per ipsum ; ipse clavem imbuuit ; vide quam, Viri Israelitæ, auribus mandate quæ dico, Jesum Nazarenum virum a Deo vobis destinatum, &c. Ipse denique primus in Christi baptismo reseravit aditum cœlestis regni, &c.—*Tert. de Pud.* 21.

^m Luke v. 10 ; *Matt.* iv. 19.

vernor of the whole church, *which Christ had purchased with his own blood?*"

3. By these words no new power is (assuredly at least) granted or instituted by our Lord;* for the apostles before this had their warrant and authority con-signed to them, when our Lord did in-spire them, and solemnly commissionate them, saying, *As the Father did send me, so I send you:* to which commis-sion, these words (spoken occasionally, before a few of the disciples) did not add or derogate. At most, the words do only, as St. Cyril saith, "renew the for-mer grant of apostleship," after his great offence of denying our Lord.†

4. These words do not seem institutive or collative of power, but rather only ad-monitive or exhortative to duty; imply-ing no more, but the pressing a common duty, before incumbent on St. Peter, upon a special occasion, in an advanta-geous season, that he should effectually discharge the office which our Lord had committed to him.

Our Lord, I say, presently before his departure, when his words were like to have a strong impression on St. Peter, doth earnestly direct and warn him to express that special ardency of affection which he observed in him, in an answer-able care to perform his duty of feeding; that is, of instructing, guiding, edifying, in faith and obedience, those sheep of his; that is, those believers who should be converted to embrace his religion, as ever he should find opportunity.‡

5. The same office certainly did be-long to all the apostles, who, as St. Je-rome speaketh, "were the princes of our discipline, and chieftains of the Christian doctrine;"|| they at their first vocation had a commission and command *to go unto the lost sheep of the house of Israel, that were scattered abroad like sheep not*

* *Κεχειροτόνητο μὲν ἦδη πρὸς τὴν θείαν ἀποστο-λὴν ἁπλῶς τοῖς ἑτέροις μαθηταῖς Πέτρος.*—Cyril. in loc. Peter was ordained to the holy apostle-ship together with the rest of the disciples.

† *Διὰ δὲ τοῦ φάναι τὸν Κύριον βόσκει τὰ ἀρνία μου, ἀνανέωσις ὡσπερ τις τῆς ἡδῆ δοθείσης ἀποστολῆς αὐτῶ γενέσθαι νοεῖται.*—Cyril. ibid.

‡ Paulus apostolus boni pastoris implebat officium, quando Christum prædicabat.—*Aug. in Joh. tr. 47.* Paul fulfilled the office of a good pastor, when he preached Christ.

|| Principes disciplinæ nostræ, et Christiani dogmatis duces.—*Hier. in Jovin. i. 14.*

• Acts xx. 28.

• John xx. 21.

having a shepherd; they before our Lord's ascension were enjoined *to teach all nations* the doctrines and precepts of Christ; to receive them into the fold, to feed them with good instruction, to guide and govern their converts with good discipline; hence, "all of them," as St. Cyprian saith, "were shepherds; but the flock did appear one, which was fed by the apostles with unanimous agree-ment."*

6. Neither could St. Peter's charge be more extensive, than was that of the other apostles; for they had a general and unlimited care of the whole church; that is, according to their capacity and opportunity, none being exempted from it, who needed or came into the way of their discharging pastoral offices for them.

"They were œcumenical rulers," as St. Chrysostom saith, "appointed by God, who did not receive several nations or cities, but all of them in common were entrusted with the world."†

Hence particularly St. Chrysostom calleth St. John, "a pillar of the churches over the world;" and St. Paul, "an apostle of the world," who "had the care, not of one house, but of cities and na-tions, and of the whole earth:" who "undertook the world, and governed the churches;" on whom "the whole world did look," and "on whose soul the care of all the churches every where did hang; into whose hands were delivered the earth, and the sea, the inhabited and uninhabited parts of the world."‡

* Pastores sunt omnes, sed grex unus ostenditur, qui ab apostolis omnibus unanimes consensione pascatur.—*Cypr. de Un. Eccl.*

† *Ἀρχοντές εἰσιν ὑπὸ τοῦ Θεοῦ χειροτονηθέντες οἱ ἀπόστολοι: ἄρχοντες οὐκ ἔθνη καὶ πόλεις διαφόρους λαμβάνοντες, ἀλλὰ πάντες κοινῇ τὴν οἰκουμένην ἐμπιστευθέντες.*—Chrys. tom. viii. p. 115.

‡ *Ὁ στήλος τῶν κατὰ τὴν οἰκουμένην ἐκκλησιῶν.*—Chrys. Præf. Comment. ad Joh. *Καὶ γὰρ τῆς οἰκουμένης ἀπόστολος ἦν.*—Chrys. in 1 Cor. ix. 2. *Οὗτος ὁ οὐκ οἰκίας μιᾶς, ἀλλὰ καὶ πολλῶν, καὶ ἡμῶν, καὶ ἔθνῶν, καὶ δολκλήρον τῆς οἰκουμένης φροντίδα ἔχων.*—Chrys. in 2 Cor. xi. 28. *Τῆς οἰκουμένης ἀντιλαμβάνετο πάσης, καὶ διεκθύερα τὰς ἐκκλησίας.*—Chrys. tom. viii. p. 115. *Ἡ οἰκουμένη πάσα πρὸς αὐτὸν ἐβλεπεν, αἱ φροντίδες τῶν πανταχοῦ τῆς γῆς ἐκκλησιῶν τῆς ἐκείνου ψυχῆς ἦν ἐξηρημέναι.*—Chrys. tom. v. Or. 59. *Ὁ Μιχαὴλ τὸ τῶν Ἰουδαίων ἔθνος ἐνεχειρίσθη: Παῦλος δὲ γῆν, καὶ θάλατταν, καὶ τὴν οἰκουμένην, καὶ τὴν δοικητον.*—Chrys. tom. viii. p. 39.

• Matt. x. 6; ix. 36.

• Matt. xxviii. 19, 28.

And could St. Peter have a larger flock committed to him? could this charge, *Feed my sheep*, more agree to him, than to those who no less than he were obliged to feed all Christian people every where?

7. The words indeed are applicable to all Christian bishops and governors of the church; according to that of St. Cyprian to Pope Stephen himself: "We being many shepherds, do feed one flock, and all the sheep of Christ:"* for they are styled pastors; they, in terms as indefinite as those in this text, are exhorted to feed the church of God, which he hath purchased with his own blood;† to them (as the Fathers commonly suppose) this injunction doth reach; our Lord, when he spake thus to St. Peter, intending to lay a charge on them all to express their love and piety toward him in this way, by feeding his sheep and people.‡

"Which sheep" (saith St. Ambrose) "and which flock, not only then St. Peter did receive, but also with him all we priests did receive it."‡

"Our Lord" (saith St. Chrysostom) "did commit his sheep to Peter, and to those which came after him;"|| that is, to all Christian pastors, as the scope of his discourse sheweth.

"When it is said to Peter" (saith St. Austin) "it is said to all, *Feed my sheep*."§

"And we" (saith St. Basil) "are taught this" (obedience to superiors) "by Christ himself constituting St. Peter pastor after himself of the church (for *Peter*, saith he, dost thou love me more than these? *Feed my sheep*;) and conferring to all pastors and teachers continually af-

* Pastores multi sumus, unum tamen gregem, et oves Christi universas pascimus.—*Cypr. Ep. 67, ad P. Steph.*

† Quanto magis debent usque ad mortem pro veritate certare, et usque ad sanguinem adversus peccatum, quibus oves ipsas pascendas, hoc est docendas regendasque committit.—*Aug. in Joh. Tract. 123.* How much more ought they to contend for the truth even unto death, and against sin even unto blood, to whom he committeth his sheep to be fed, that is, to be taught and governed.

‡ Quas oves, et quem gregem non solum tunc B. suscepit Petrus, sed et cum eo nos suscepimus omnes.—*Ambr. de Sacerd. 2.*

|| Τα πρόβατα, ἃ τῷ Πέτρῳ, καὶ τοῖς μετ' αὐτοῦ ἐκείνων ἐνεχείρισεν.—*Chrys. de Sacerd. 1.*

§ Cum dicitur Petro, ad omnes dicitur, *Pasce oves meas*.—*Aug. de Agone Christ. 30.*

* Acts xi. 28.

terward an equal power" (of doing so;) "whereof it is a sign, that all do in like manner bind and do loose as he."*

St. Austin compriseth all these considerations in those words.†

How could these great masters more clearly express their mind, that our Lord in those words to St. Peter did inculcate a duty nowise peculiar to him, but equally together with him belonging to all guides of the church; in such manner, as when a master doth press a duty on one servant, he doth thereby admonish all his servants of the like duty? whence St. Austin saith, that St. Peter in that case "did sustain the person of the church;"‡ that which was spoken to him belonging to all its members, especially to his brethren the clergy.

"It was" (saith Cyril) "a lesson to teachers, that they cannot otherwise please the Arch-pastor of all, than by taking care of the welfare of the rational sheep."||

8. Hence it followeth, that the sheep, which our Saviour biddeth St. Peter to feed, were not the apostles, who were his fellow-shepherds, designed to feed others, and needing not to be fed by him; but the common believers, or people of God, which St. Peter himself doth call *the flock of God*: *Feed* (saith he to his

* Καὶ τοῦτον παρ' αὐτοῦ Χριστοῦ παιδευόμεθα, Πέτρον ποιμένα μετ' ἑαυτὸν τῆς ἐκκλησίας καθιστώμενος, Πέτρε, γὰρ φησὶ, φιλεῖς με πλείον τούτων; παρμαίνε τὰ πρόβατά μου καὶ πᾶσι δὴ τοῖς ἐφεξῆς ποιμῆσι καὶ διδασκάλοις τὴν ἴσην παρέχοντος ἐξουσίαν καὶ τοῦτον σημεῖον τὸ δεσμεῖν πάντας ὁμοίως, καὶ λυεῖν ὡς περ ἐκείνος.—*Bas. Const. Mon. cap. 22.*

† Et quidem, fratres, quod pastor est, dedit et membris suis; nam et Petrus pastor, et Paulus pastor, et ceteri apostoli pastores, et boni episcopi pastores.—*Aug. in Joh. Tract. 47.* And indeed, brethren, that which a pastor is, he gave also to his members; for both Peter was a pastor, and Paul a pastor, and the rest of the apostles were pastors, and good bishops are pastors.

‡ Ut ergo Petrus quando ei dictum est, Tibi dabo claves, in figura personam gestabat ecclesie, sic et quando ei dictum est, Pasce oves meas, ecclesie quoque personam in figura gestabat.—*Aug. in Ps. cviii. Oὐ πρὸς ἱερείας δὲ τοῦτο μόνον εἰρηται, ἀλλὰ καὶ πρὸς ἕκαστον ἡρώων τῶν καὶ μικρὸν ἐμπειστευμένων ποιμῆσιον.*—*Chrys. in Matt. xxiv. Or. 77.* This was not spoken to those priests only, but to every one of us, who have the care even of a little flock committed to us.

|| Διδασκάλους δὲ γνώσας διὰ τῆς τῶν προκειμένων εἰσθίβηκε θεουρίας, ὡς οὐκ ἂν ἐτέρως εὐαρισθησειν τῷ πάντων ἀρχιποιμένῳ, εἰ μὴ τῆς τῶν λογικῶν προβάτων ἐβρωστίας, καὶ τῆς εἰς τὸ εὖ αἰῶνα διαμονῆς ποιούσης φροντίδα.—*Cyril. ibid.*

fellow-elders) *the flock of God which is among you*; and St. Paul: *Take heed therefore unto yourselves, and to all the flock over which the Holy Ghost hath made you overseers.**

9. Take feeding for what you please; for teaching, for guiding; the apostles were not fit objects of it, who were immediately taught and guided by God himself.

Hence we may interpret that saying of St. Chrysostom, which is the most plausible argument they can allege for them, that our Lord, in saying this, did commit to St. Peter "a charge" (or presidency) "over his brethren;"* that is, he made him a pastor of Christian people, as he did others; at least, if *προστασία τῶν ἀδελφῶν* be referred to the apostles, it must not signify authority over them, but at most a primacy of order among them; for that St. Peter otherwise should feed them, St. Chrysostom could hardly think, who presently after saith, that "seeing the apostles were to receive the administration of the whole world, they ought not afterward to converse with one another; for that would surely have been a great damage to the world."†

10. But they, forsooth, must have St. Peter solely obliged to feed all Christ's sheep; so they did impose upon him a vast and crabb'd province; a task very incommodious, or rather impossible for him to undergo. How could he in duty be obliged, how could he in effect be able, to feed so many flocks of Christian people scattered about in distant regions, through all nations under heaven? He, poor man, that had so few helps, that had no officers or dependents, nor wealth to maintain them, would have been much put to it to feed the sheep in Britain and in Parthia; unto infinite distraction of thoughts such a charge must needs have engaged him.

But for this their great champion hath a fine expedient: "St. Peter" (saith he) "did feed Christ's whole flock, partly by

himself, partly by others;"* so that, it seemeth, the other apostles were St. Peter's curates, or vicars and deputies. This indeed were an easy way of feeding; thus, although he had slept all his time, he might have fed all the sheep under heaven; thus any man as well might have fed them. But this manner of feeding is, I fear, a later invention, not known so soon in the church; and it might then seem near as absurd to be a shepherd, as it is now (in his own account) to be a just man by imputation; that would be a kind of *putative* pastorage, as this a *putative* righteousness. However, the apostles, I dare say, did not take themselves to be St. Peter's surrogates, but challenged to themselves to be accounted *the ministers, the stewards, the ambassadors of Christ himself*;‡ from whom immediately they received their orders, in whose name they acted, to whom they constantly refer their authority, without taking the least notice of St. Peter, or intimating any dependence on him.

It was therefore enough for St. Peter that he had authority restrained to no place; but might, as he found occasion, preach the gospel, convert, confirm, guide Christians every where to truth and duty: nor can our Saviour's words be forced to signify more.

In fine, this (together with the precedent testimonies) must not be interpreted so as to thwart practice and history; according, to which it appeareth, that St. Peter did not exercise such a power, and therefore our Lord did not intend to confer such an one upon him.

IV. Further, in confirmation of their doctrine, they do draw forth a whole shoal of testimonies, containing divers prerogatives, as they call them, of St. Peter, which do, as they suppose, imply this primacy; † so very sharp-sighted indeed they are, that in every remarkable accident befalling him, in every action performed by him, or to him, or about

* *Ἐγχειρίζει τὴν προστασίαν τῶν ἀδελφῶν.*—Chrys. in Joh. xxi. 15. *Τὴν προστασίαν ἐπιπέσει τῶν ἀδελφῶν.* In ver. 21.

† *Ἐπειδὴ γὰρ ἐμελλον τῆς οἰκουμένης τὴν ἐπιτροπὴν ἀναδέξασθαι, οὐκ ἔδει συμπεπλεγμένοι λοιπῶν ἀλλήλων: ἢ γὰρ ἂν, μεγάλη τούτου τῆ οἰκουμένην γέγονε ζημία.*—Ibid. ver. 23.

‡ 1 Pet. v. 2; Acts xx. 28.

* *Respondeo, S. Petrum partim per se, partim per alios, universum Dominicum gregem ut sibi imperatum erat pavisse.*—*Bell. de Pont. R.* i. 16.

† P. Leo IX. Ep. 1.—*Ad ejusdem primatus confirmationem, &c.*—*Bell. i.* 17.

‡ 1 Cor. iv. 1; 2 Cor. v. 20; x. 8; Gal. i. 1; Tit. i. 3, &c.

him, they can descry some argument or shrewd insinuation of his pre-eminence; especially being aided by the glosses of some fanciful expositor. From the change of his name; from his walking on the sea; from his miraculous draught of fish; from our Lord's praying for him that his faith should not fail, and bidding him to confirm his brethren; from our Lord's ordering him to pay the tribute for them both; from our Lord's first washing his feet, and his first appearing to him after the resurrection; from the prediction of his martyrdom; from sick persons being cured by his shadow; from his sentencing Ananias and Sapphira to death; from his preaching to Cornelius; from its being said *that he passed through all*;¹ from his being prayed for by the church; from St. Paul's going to visit him: from these passages, I say, they deduce or confirm his authority. Now in earnest, is not this stout argument? Is it not egregious modesty for such a point to allege such proofs? What cause may not be countenanced by such rare fetches? Who would not suspect the weakness of that opinion, which is fain to use such forces in its maintenance? In fine, is it honest or conscionable dealing, so to wrest or play with the holy scripture, pretending to derive thence proofs, where there is no show of consequence?

To be even with them, I might assert the primacy of St. John, and to that purpose might allege his prerogatives (which indeed may seem greater than those of St. Peter;) namely, that he was *the beloved disciple*,² that he leaned on our Lord's breast; that St. Peter, not presuming to ask our Lord a question, desired *him* to do it, as having a more special confidence with our Lord; that St. John did higher service to the church, and all posterity, by writing not only more Epistles, but also a most divine Gospel, and a sublime prophecy* concerning the state of the church; that St. John did *outrun Peter*, and *came first to the sepulchre* (in which passage such acute devisers would find

out marvellous significancy;) that St. John was a virgin; that he did outlive all the apostles (and thence was most fit to be universal pastor;) that St. Jerome, comparing Peter and John, doth seem to prefer the latter; for "Peter" (saith he) "was an apostle, and John was an apostle; but Peter was only an apostle; John both an apostle and an evangelist; and also a prophet;—and" (saith he) "that I may in brief speech comprehend many things, and shew what privilege belongeth to John—yea, virginity in John; by our Lord a virgin, his mother the virgin, is commended to the virgin disciple."³ Thus I might by prerogatives and passages very notable infer the superiority of St. John to St. Peter, in imitation of their reasoning; but I am afraid they would scarce be at the trouble to answer me seriously, but would think it enough to say I trifled: wherefore let it suffice for me in the same manner to put off those levities of discourse.

V. They argue this primacy from the constant placing St. Peter's name before the other apostles, in the catalogues and narrations concerning him and them.

To this I answer:

I. That this order is not so strictly observed, as not to admit some exceptions; for St. Paul saith, that *James, Cephas, and John, knowing the grace given unto him*—so it is commonly read in the ordinary copies, in the text of ancient commentators, and in old translations; and, *Whether Paul, whether Apollon, whether Cephas*, (saith St. Paul again;) and, *As the other apostles, and the brethren of the Lord, and Cephas*; and, *Philip* (saith St. John) *was of Bethsaida, the city of Andrew and Peter*;⁴ and Clemens Alexandrinus in Eusebius saith, that "the Lord, after his resurrection, delivered the special knowledge to James the just, and to John, and to Peter;"⁵† post-

* Petrus apostolus est, et Joannes apostolus, maritus et virgo; sed Petrus apostolus tantum, Joannes et apostolus et evangelista et propheta, &c.—*Hier. in Joann. i. 14.* Et ut brevi sermone multa comprehendam, doceamque ejus privilegii sit Joannes,—imo in Joanne virginitas; a Domino virgine mater virgo virgini discipulo commendatur.—*Hier. ibid.*

† Ἰακώβω τῷ δικαίῳ καὶ Ἰωάννῃ καὶ Πέτρῳ πρῶτῃ τῆν ἀνάστασιν παρέδωκε τὴν γνώσιν ὁ Κύριος.—*Eus. Hist. ii. 1.*

‡ Gal. ii. 9; 1 Cor. iii. 22; ix. 5; John i. 45.

* Infinita futurorum mysteria continentem.—*Hier.* Containing infinite mysteries of future things.

¹ Acts ix. 32.

² John xiii. 24.

³ John xx. 4.

oning St. Peter, as perhaps conceiving aim to have less of sublime revelations imparted to him : that order therefore is not so punctually constant.

In the Apostolical Constitutions, St. Paul and St. Peter being induced jointly prescribing orders, they begin, " I Paul, and I Peter, do appoint : " * so little ambitious or curious of precedence are they represented.

2. But it being indeed so constant, as not to seem casual, I further say, that position of names doth not argue difference of degree, or superiority in power ; any small advantage of age, standing, merit, or wealth, serving to ground such precedence, as common experince doth shew.

3. We formerly did assign other sufficient and probable causes why St. Peter had this place. So that this is no cogent reason.

VI. Further (and this indeed is far their most plausible argumentation), they allege the titles and eulogies given to St. Peter by the Fathers ; who call him *ἑξαρχον* (the prince), *κορυφαῖον* (the ringleader), *κεφαλὴν* (the head), *πρόεδρον* (the president), *ἀρχηγόν* (the captain), *προηγχορον* (the prolocutor), *πρωτοστάτην* (the foreman), *προστάτην* (the warden), *ἐκκεριστον τῶν ἀποστόλων* (the choice, or egregious apostle), *majorē* (the greater, or grandee among them), *primum* (the first, or prime apostle.)^x

To these and the like allegations I answer :

1. If we should say, that we are not accountable for every hyperbolical flash or flourish occurring in the Fathers (it being well known that they in their encomiastic speeches, as orators are wont, following the heat and gayety of fancy, do sometimes overlash), we should have the pattern of their greatest controvertists to warrant us ; † for Bellarmine doth put off their testimonies by saying, that they do " sometimes speak in way of excess, less properly, less warily, so as to need benign exposition, " &c. ‡ as Bishop An-

draws sheweth ; and it is a common shift of Cardinal Perron, whereof you may see divers instances alleged by M. Daille.^γ

Which observation is especially applicable to this case ; for that eloquent men do never more exceed in their indulgence to fancy, than in the demonstrative kind, in panegyrics, in their commendations of persons ; and I hope they will embrace this way of reckoning for those expressions of Pope Leo, sounding so exorbitantly, that St. Peter was by our Lord " assumed into consortship of his individual unity ; " and that " nothing did pass upon any from God, the fountain of good things, without the participation of Peter. * "

2. We may observe, that such turgid eulogies of St. Peter are not found in the more ancient Fathers ; for Clemens Romanus, Irenæus, Clemens Alexandrinus, Tertullian, Origen, Cyprian, Firmilian—when they mention St. Peter, do speak more temperately and simply, according to the current notions and traditions of the church in their time ; using indeed fair terms of respect, but not such high strains of courtship, about him. But they are found in the latter Fathers, who being men of wit and eloquence, and affecting in their discourses to vent those faculties, did speak more out of their own invention and fancy.

Whence, according to a prudent estimation of things in such a case, the silence or sparingness of the first sort is of more consideration on the one hand, than the speech, how free soever, of the latter is on the other hand : and we may rather suppose those titles do not belong to St. Peter, because the first do not give them, than that they do, because the other are so liberal in doing it.

Indeed if we consult the testimonies of this kind alleged by the Romanists, who with their utmost diligence have raked all ancient writings for them, it is strange that they cannot find any very ancient ones ; that they can find so few plausible ones ; that they are fain (to make up the

habere.—*de Amiss. Gr.* iv. 12 ; minus caute ; *de Purg.* i. 11.

* Nunc enim in consortium individuae unitatis assumptum id quod ipse erat voluit nominari.—*P. Leo I. Ep.* 89. Nihil a bonorum fonte Deo in quenquam sine Petri participatione transire.—*P. Leo de Assumpt. sua. Serm.* 3.

^γ Tort. Tort. p. 338 ; Daille. de Us. P. lib. i. cap. 6, p. 158, (et p. 31A.)

* Ἐγὼ Πᾶβλος καὶ ἐγὼ Πέτρος διατασσόμεθα.—*Const. Apost.* viii. 33.

† The truth is, the best arguments of the papists in other questions are some flourishes of orators, speaking hyperbolically and heedlessly.

‡ Per excessum loqui.—*Bell. de Miss.* ii. 10 ;

minus proprie, iii. 4 ; benigna expositione opus

^x Chrys. tom. v. Or. 59 ; Chrys. in Joh. xxi. ;

Cyp. cont. Jul. ix. (p. 325 ;) Aug. Ep. xi. 19.

number) to produce so many, which evidently have no force or pertinency; being only commendations of his apostolical office, or of his personal merits, without relation to others.

3. We say, that all those terms or titles, which they urge, are ambiguous, and applicable to any sort of primacy or pre-eminency; to that which we admit, no less than to that which we refuse; as by instances from good authors, and from common use, might easily be demonstrated; so that from them nothing can be inferred advantageous to their cause.

Cicero calleth Socrates "prince of the philosophers;"* and Sulpitius, "prince of all lawyers;" would it not be ridiculous thence to infer that Socrates was a sovereign governor of the philosophers, or Sulpitius of the lawyers? The same great speaker calleth Pompey "prince of the city in all men's judgment;"* doth he mean, that he did exercise jurisdiction over the city.

Tertullus calleth St. Paul *πρωτοστάτην*, a ringleader of the sect of the Nazarenes; and St. Basil calleth Eustathius Sebastenus "foreman of the sect of the Pneumatomachi:"† did Tertullus mean that St. Paul had universal jurisdiction over Christians? or St. Basil, that Eustathius was sovereign of those heretics?

So neither did "prince of the apostles," or any equivalent term, in the sense of those who assigned it to St. Peter, import authority over the apostles, but eminency among them in worth, in merit, in apostolical performances, or at most in order of precedence.

Such words are to be interpreted by the state of things, not the state of things to be inferred from them; and in understanding them we should observe the rule of Tertullian.‡

* Quem omnium iudicio longe principem esse civitatis videbat. — principem orbis terræ virum —. *Cic. pro. Domo sua.*

† Πρωτοστάτην τῆς τῶν πνευματομάχων αἵρέσεως. — *Bas. Ep. 74.*

‡ Malo te ad sensum rei quam ad sonum vocabuli exerceas. — *Tert. adv. Prax. cap. 3.* I had rather you would apply yourself to the sense of the thing, than to the sound of the word. Οὐ γὰρ αἱ λέξεις τὴν φύσιν παραιρῶνται: ἀλλὰ μᾶλλον ἢ φύσιν τὰς λέξεις εἰς ἑαυτὴν ἔλκουσα μεταβάλλει. — *Athan. Orat. iii. adv. Ar. (p. 373.)* For words do not take away the nature of

* *Cic. de Nat. Deor. lib. ii. Cic. de clar. Orat.*

• *Acts xxiv. 5.*

4. Accordingly the Fathers sometimes do explain those elogies signifying them to import the special gifts and virtues of St. Peter, wherein he did excel; so Eusebius calleth St. Peter "the most excellent and great apostle, who for his virtue was prolocutor of the rest."^b

5. This answer is thoroughly confirmed from hence; that even those who give those titles to St. Peter, do yet expressly affirm other apostles in power and dignity equal to him.

Who doth give higher elogies to him than St. Chrysostom? yet doth he assert all the apostles to be supreme, and "equal in dignity;" and particularly he doth often affirm St. Paul to be *ισότιμος*, equal in honour to St. Peter, as we before shewed.

The like we declared of St. Jerome, St. Cyril, &c. And as for St. Cyprian, who did allow a primacy to St. Peter, nothing can be more evident than that he took the other apostles to be "equal to him in power and honour."

The like we may conceive of St. Austin, who, having carefully perused those writings of St. Cyprian, and frequently alleging them, doth never contradict that his sentiment.

Even Pope Gregory himself acknowledgeth St. Peter not to have been properly the head, but only "the first member of the universal church; all being members of the church under one head."*

6. If Pope Leo I. or any other ancient pope, do seem to mean further, we may reasonably except against their opinion as being singular, and proceeding from partial affection to their See; such affection having influence on the mind of the wisest men; according to that certain maxim of Aristotle, "Every man is a bad judge in his own case."

7. The ancients, when their subject doth allure them, do adorn other apostles with the like titles, equalling those of St. Peter, and not well consistent with them,

things, but the nature rather changes the words, and draws them to itself.

* Certe Petrus apostolorum primum membrum S. et universalis ecclesiæ — sub uno capite omnes membra sunt ecclesiæ. — *Greg. 1. Ep. iv. 38.*

^b *Euseb. Hist. ii. 14.*

according to that rigour of sense which our adversaries affix to the commendations of St. Peter.

The Epistle of Clemens Romanus to St. James (an apocryphal but ancient writing), calleth St. James our Lord's brother, "the bishop of bishops;" the Clementine Recognitions call him "the prince of bishops;" Ruffinus, in his translation of Eusebius, "the bishop of the apostles;"* St. Chrysostom saith of him, that he "did preside over all the Jewish believers;"† Hesychius, presbyter of Jerusalem, calleth him "the chief captain of the new Jerusalem, the captain of priests, the prince of the apostles, the top among the heads," &c.‡

The same Hesychius calleth St. Andrew "the first-born of the apostolical choir, the first settled pillar of the church, the Peter before Peter, the foundation of the foundation, the first fruits of the beginning," &c.§

St. Chrysostom saith of St. John, that he was "a pillar of the churches through the world, he that had the keys of the kingdom of heaven," &c.¶

But as occasion of speaking about St. Paul was more frequent, so the eulogies of him are more copious, and indeed so high as not to yield to those of St. Peter.

"He was" (saith St. Chrysostom) "the ringleader and guardian of the choir of all the saints."¶¶

"He was the tongue, the teacher, the apostle of the world. He had the whole world put into his hands, and took care

* Κλήμης Ἰακώβου — ἐπισκόπων ἐπισκόπου. Jacobum episcoporum principem sacerdotum princeps orabat. *Clem. Rec.* i. 68. † apostolorum episcopus.—*Ruf. Euseb.* ii. 1.

† It is likely that Ruffinus did call him so, by mistaking that in the Apostolical Constitutions: Ὑπὲρ τοῦ ἐπισκόπου ἡμῶν Ἰακώβου.—*Apost. Const.* viii. 10. Τῶν ἐξ Ἰουδαίων πιστευσάντων προεστῆκεי πάντων.—*Chrys.* tom. v. Or. 59.

‡ Τῶν τῆς νέας Ἱερουσαλὴμ ἀρχιστράτηγον, τῶν ἱερέων ἡγήμονα, τῶν ἀποστόλων τὸν ἑξάρχον, τὸν ἐν κεφαλῇ κορυφῆν, &c.—*Hesych.* Presb. apud Phot. Cod. 275. (p. 1525.)

§ Ὁ τοῦ χοροῦ τῶν ἀποστόλων πρωτότοκος, ὁ πρωτοπαγὴς τῆς ἐκκλησίας στυλός, ὁ πρὸ Πέτρου Πέτρος, ὁ τοῦ θεμελίου θεμελίος, ὁ τῆς ἀρχῆς ἀπαρχή.—*Hesych.* apud Phot. Cod. 269.

¶ Ὁ στυλός τῶν κατὰ τὴν οἰκουμένην ἐκκλησιῶν, ὁ τὰς κλείς ἔχων τῶν οὐρανῶν, &c.—*Chrys.* in Joh. i. 1.

¶¶ Ὁ τῶν ἁγίων χοροῦ κορυφαῖος καὶ προστάτης.—*Chrys.* in Rom. xvi. 24. Ὁ τῆς οἰκουμένης ἀπόστολος.—*Chrys.* in 1 Cor. ix. 2.

thereof, and had committed to him all men dwelling upon earth."**

"He was the light of the churches, the foundation of faith, the pillar and ground of truth."

"He had the patronage of the world committed into his hands."†

"He was better than all men, greater than the apostles, and surpassing them all."‡

"Nothing was more bright, nothing more illustrious than he."||

"None was greater than he, yea none equal to him."§

Pope Gregory I. saith of St. Paul, that "he was made head of the nations, because he obtained the principate of the whole church."¶

These characters of St. Paul I leave

* Ἡ γλῶττα τῆς οἰκουμένης, τὸ φῶς τῶν ἐκκλησιῶν, ὁ θεμελίος τῆς πίστεως, ὁ στυλός καὶ ἐδραῖωμα τῆς ἀληθείας. Τὴν οἰκουμένην ἅπασαν ἐγκεχειρισμένος. He had the whole habitable world committed to his charge. Τῆς οἰκουμένης διδάσκαλος ἂν τοὺς τὴν γῆν οἰκοῦντας ἅπασας ἐπιτραπίεις. He was the teacher of the world, and had all the inhabitants of the earth committed to his trust.

† Τὴν τῆς οἰκουμένης προστασίαν ἐγκεχειρισμένος.—*In Jud. Or.* 6. Τῆς οἰκουμένης τὴν προστασίαν ἐπιδέξασθαι.—*In 1 Cor. Or.* 22. Οὐ τὴν οἰκουμένην ἅπασαν εἰς χεῖρας αὐτοῦ φέρων ἔθηκεν ὁ Θεός; *Tom.* vii. p. 2. Did not God put into his hands the whole world? Ὁ πάσης οἰκουμένης κρατῆσας.—*In 2 Tim.* ii. 1. He had the charge of the whole world.

‡ Πάντων ἀνθρώπων κρείττων.—*De Sacerd.* 4. Τίς οὖν πάντων ἀνθρώπων ἀμείνων; τίς δὲ ἕτερος, ἀλλ' ἢ ὁ σκηνοποιὸς ἐκεῖνος, ὁ τῆς οἰκουμένης διδάσκαλος—εἰ τοίνυν μείζονα τῶν ἀποστόλων λαμβάνει στέφανον, τῶν δὲ ἀποστόλων ἴσος οὐδὲς γέγονεν, οὗτος δὲ κρείττων μείζων, εὐδὸλον ὅτι τῆς ἀνομιᾶς ἀπολαύσεται τιμῆς καὶ προεδρίας.—*Tom.* v. Or. 33. Who then was better than all other men? who else but that tent-maker, the teacher of the world?—If therefore he receive a greater crown than the apostles, and none perhaps was equal to the apostles, and yet he greater than they, it is manifest, that he shall enjoy the highest honour and pre-eminence.

|| Παῦλον λαμπρότερον οὐδὲν ἦν, οὐδὲ περιφανέστερον.—*Tom.* v. Or. 47.

§ Οὐδὲις δὲ ἐκείνου μείζων, ἀλλ' οὐδὲ ἴσος ἐστὶ.—*Tom.* vi. Or. 9. Οὐδὲις Παύλου ἴσος ἦν.—*2 Tim.* iii. 15. Ὁ πάνσοφος, ὁ τῶν ἐκκλησιῶν, ἀριστος ἀρχιτέκτων.—*Theod.* Ep. 146. The most wise, and best architect, or chief builder of the churches. Ὁ μακάριος ἀπόστολος, ὁ τῶν πατέρων πατήρ.—*Just. M. Resp.* ad Orthod. Qu. 119. The blessed apostle, the father of the fathers.

¶ Caput effectus est nationum, quia obtinuit totius ecclesie principatum.—*Greg. M.* in 1 Reg. lib. 4. Videsis Paulus apostolorum princeps.—*Ep. Spalat.* in *Lat. Syn. sub. P. Jul.* II. Sess. i. p. 25.

them to interpret, and reconcile with those of St. Peter.

8. That the Fathers, by calling St. Peter prince, chieftain, &c. of the apostles, do not mean authority over them, may be argued from their joining St. Paul with him in the same appellations; who yet surely could have no jurisdiction over them; and his having any would destroy the pretended ecclesiastical monarchy.

St. Cyril calleth them together, "patrons, or presidents of the church."*

St. Austin (or St. Ambrose or Maximus) calleth them "princes of the churches."†

The Popes Agatho and Adrian (in their general synods) call them "the ringleading apostles."‡

The Popes Nicholas I. and Gregory VII., &c. call them "princes of the apostles."§

St. Ambrose, or St. Austin, or St. Maximus Taur. (choose you which), doth thus speak of them: "Blessed Peter and Paul are most eminent among all the apostles, excelling the rest by a kind of peculiar prerogative: but whether of the two be preferred before the other is uncertain; for I count them to be equal in merit, because they are equal in suffering," &c.||

To all this discourse I shall only add, that if any of the apostles, or apostolical men, might claim a presidency or authoritative headship over the rest, St. James seemeth to have the best title thereto; § for "Jerusalem was the mother of all churches,"^a the fountain of the Christian

law and doctrine, the "See" of our Lord himself, the chief Pastor.*

He, therefore, who, as the Fathers tell us, was by our Lord himself constituted bishop of that city, and the "first" of all bishops, might best pretend to be in special manner our Lord's vicar or successor: † "He," saith Epiphanius, "did first receive the episcopal chair, and to him our Lord first did intrust his own throne upon earth."‡

He accordingly did first exercise the authority of presiding and moderating in the first ecclesiastical synod, as St. Chrysostom in his notes thereon doth remark.

He therefore probably by St. Paul is first named in his report concerning the passages at Jerusalem; and to his orders it seemeth that St. Peter himself did conform; for it is said there, that *before certain came from St. James, he did eat with the Gentiles: but when they were come, he withdrew.*"

Hence in the Apostolical Constitutions, in the prayer prescribed for the church, and for all the governors of it, the bishops of the principal churches being specified by name, St. James is put in the first place, before the bishops of Rome and of Antioch: "Let us pray for the whole episcopacy under heaven, of those who rightly dispense the word of thy truth; and let us pray for our bishop James, with all his parishes; let us pray for our bishop Clemens, and all his parishes; let us pray for Euodius, and all his parishes."||—

Hereto consenteth the tradition of

* Ecclesia in Hierusalem fundata totius orbis ecclesias seminavit.—Hieron. in Isa. ii. The church founded in Jerusalem was the seminary of the churches throughout the whole world.—Theod. v. 9; vide Tert. de Præsc. cap. 20.

† Ἐπειτα ᾤθη Ἰακώβω, ἐμοὶ δοκεῖ τῷ ἀδελφῷ αὐτοῦ· αὐτός γὰρ αὐτὸν λέγεται χειροτονημένος, καὶ ἐπίσκοπον ἐν Ἱερουσαλήμοις πεποικέναι πρῶτον.—Chrys. in 1 Cor. Or. 11. After that he was seen of James, I suppose to his brother; for he is said to have ordained him, and made him the first bishop of Jerusalem.

‡ Πρῶτος οὗτος εἶληψε τὴν καθέραν τῆς ἐκκλησίας, ᾧ πεπιστευκε Κύριος τὸν θρόνον αὐτοῦ ἐπὶ τῆς γῆς πρῶτω.—Epiiph. Hæc. 78.

|| Ὑπὲρ πάσης ἐπισκοπῆς τῆς ὑπὸ τὸν οὐρανὸν τῶν ὀρθοτομούμενων τὸν λόγον τῆς σὸς ἀληθείας δευθῆραι καὶ ὑπὲρ τοῦ ἐπισκόπου ἡμῶν Ἰακώβου, καὶ τῶν παρακλιῶν αὐτοῦ δευθῆραι ὑπὲρ τοῦ ἐπισκόπου ἡμῶν Κλεμεντος, &c.—Const. Ap. viii. 10.

* Gal. ii. 9, 12.

* Πέτρος καὶ Παῦλος, οἱ τῆς ἐκκλησίας προστάται.—Cyril. Cat. 6.

† Ecclesiarum principes.—Aug. de Sanct. 27.

‡ Κορυφαῖοι ἀποστόλων.—P. Agatho, in 6 Syn. Act. iv. p. 35; P. Adrian in 7 Syn. Act. ii. p. 554.

|| Beati Petrus et Paulus eminent inter universos apostolos, et peculiari quadam prærogativa præcellunt; verum inter ipsos quis cui præponatur incertum est, puto enim illos æquales esse meritis, quia æquales sunt passione, &c.—Ambr. Serm. 66; Aug. de Sanct. 27. Max. Taur. Serm. 54.

§ Hæ voces ecclesie, ex qua habuit omnis ecclesia initium.—Iren. iii. 12. These are the words of the church, from whence every church had its beginning.

* Nicol. I. Ep. 7; Plat. in Greg. VII. &c.

† Isa. ii. 3; Luke xiv. 47.

those ancient writers afore cited, who call St. James "the bishop of bishops, the bishop of the apostles," &c.

SUPPOSITION II.

I proceed to examine the next supposition of the church monarchists, which is, *That St. Peter's primacy, with its rights and prerogatives, was not personal, but derivable to his successors.*

AGAINST which supposition I do assert, that admitting a primacy of St. Peter, of what kind or to what purpose soever, we yet have reason to deem it merely personal, and not (according to its grounds and its design) communicable to any successors, nor indeed in effect conveyed to any such.

It is a rule in the canon law, that "a personal privilege doth follow the person, and is extinguished with the person;"* and such we affirm that of St. Peter; for,

1. His primacy was grounded upon personal acts (such as his cheerful following of Christ, his faithful confessing of Christ, his resolute adherence to Christ, his embracing special revelations from God;) or upon personal graces, (his great faith, his special love to our Lord, his singular zeal for Christ's service;) or upon personal gifts and endowments, (his courage, resolution, activity, forwardness in apprehension and in speech;) the which advantages are not transient, and consequently a pre-eminence built on them is not in its nature such.

2. All the pretence of primacy granted to St. Peter is grounded upon words directed to St. Peter's person, characterized by most personal adjuncts, as name, parentage, and which exactly were accomplished in St. Peter's personal actings;† which therefore it is unreasonable to extend further.

Our Lord promised to *Simon, son of Jonas*, to build his church on him;‡ accordingly in eminent manner the church was founded upon his ministry, or by his first preaching, testimony, performances.

Our Lord promised to give him the keys of the heavenly kingdom: this power St. Peter signally did execute in converting Christians, and receiving them by baptism into the church, by conferring the Holy Ghost, and the like administrations.

Our Lord charged *Simon, son of Jonas*, to feed his sheep:‡ this he performed by preaching, writing, guiding, and governing Christians, as he found opportunity: wherefore, if any thing was couched under those promises or orders singularly pertinent to St. Peter, for the same reason that they were singular, they were personal; for,

These things being in a conspicuous manner accomplished in St. Peter's person, the sense of those words is exhausted; there may not with any probability, there cannot with any assurance, be any more grounded on them; whatever more is inferred must be by precarious assumption; and justly we may cast at those who shall infer it that expostulation of Tertullian, "What art thou, who dost overturn and change the manifest intention of our Lord, personally conferring this on Peter?"*‡

3. Particularly the grand promise to St. Peter of founding the church on him, cannot reach beyond his person; because there can be no other foundations of a society, than such as are first laid; the successors of those who first did erect a society, and establish it, are themselves but superstructures.

4. The apostolical office, as such, was personal and temporary; and therefore, according to its nature and design, not successive or communicable to others in perpetual descendance from them.

It was, as such, in all respects extraordinary, conferred in a special manner, designed for special purposes, discharged by special aids, endowed with special privileges, as was needful for the propagation of Christianity and founding of churches.

To that office it was requisite that the person should have an immediate designation and commission from God; such

* Privilegium personale personam sequitur, et cum persona extinguitur.—*Reg. Juris*, 7 in *Seculo*.

† *Matt. xvi. 17*; *John xxi. 15-17*.

‡ *Matt. xvi. 17*.

* *Qualis es evertens atque commutans manifestam Domini intentionem personaliter hoc Petro conferentem?—Tertul. de Pud. 21.*

‡ *John xxi. 15.*

as St. Paul so often doth insist upon for asserting his title to the office: *Paul, an apostle, not from men, or by man*—“Not by men” (saith St. Chrysostom;) “this is a property of the apostles.”*

It was requisite that an apostle should be able to attest concerning our Lord's resurrection or ascension, either immediately, as the twelve, or by evident consequence, as St. Paul; thus St. Peter implied, at the choice of Matthias: *Wherefore of those men which have companied with us—must one be ordained to be a witness with us of the resurrection*; and, *Am I not* (saith St. Paul) *an apostle? have I not seen the Lord?* according to that of Ananias, *The God of our fathers hath chosen thee, that thou shouldest know his will, and see that Just One, and shouldest hear the voice of his mouth; for thou shalt bear witness unto all men of what thou hast seen and heard.*†

It was needful also that an apostle should be endowed with miraculous gifts and graces, enabling him both to assure his authority and to execute his office; wherefore St. Paul calleth these *the marks of an apostle, the which were wrought by him among the Corinthians in all patience* (or perseveringly), *in signs, and wonders, and mighty deeds.*‡

It was also, in St. Chrysostom's opinion, proper to an apostle, that he should be able, according to his discretion, in a certain and conspicuous manner to impart spiritual gifts; as St. Peter and St. John did at Samaria; which to do, according to that Father, was “the peculiar gift and privilege of the apostles.”†

It was also a privilege of an apostle, by virtue of his commission from Christ, to *instruct all nations* in the doctrine and law of Christ; he had right and warrant

to exercise his function every where: “His charge was universal and indefinite; the whole world was his province;”* he was not affixed to any one place, nor could be excluded from any; he was (as St. Cyril calleth him) an œcumenical judge,† and “an instructor of all the subcelestial world.”‡

Apostles also did govern in an absolute manner, according to discretion, as being guided by infallible assistance, to the which they might upon occasion appeal, and affirm, *It hath seemed good to the Holy Ghost and us.*§ Whence their writings have passed for inspired, and therefore canonical, or certain rules of faith and practice.

It did belong to them to found churches, to constitute pastors, to settle orders, to correct offences, to perform all such acts of sovereign spiritual power, in virtue of the same divine assistance, according to the authority which the Lord had given them for edification; as we see practised by St. Paul.

In fine, the “apostleship was” (as St. Chrysostom telleth us) “a business fraught with ten thousand good things; both greater than all privileges of grace, and comprehensive of them.”‡

Now such an office, consisting of so many extraordinary privileges and miraculous powers, which were requisite for the foundation of the church, and the diffusion of Christianity, against the manifold difficulties and disadvantages which it then needs must encounter, was not designed to continue by derivation; for it containeth in it divers things, which apparently were not communicated, and which no man without gross imposture and hypocrisy could challenge to himself.

Neither did the apostles pretend to communicate it; they did indeed appoint standing pastors and teachers in each church; they did assume fellow-labourers or assistants in the work of preaching and governance: but they did not

* Τὸ δὲ οὐ δ' ἀνθρώπων, ταῦτο ἴδιον τῶν ἀποστόλων.—Chrys in Gal. i. 1.

† Τοῦτο γὰρ τὸ ὄψρον μόνον τῶν δώδεκα ταῦτο γὰρ ἦν τῶν ἀποστόλων ἐξαίρετον.—Chrys. in Act. viii. 18. De solis apostolis legitur, quorum vicem tenent episcopi, quod per manus impositionem Spiritus S. dabant.—P. Eugenius IV. in Instit. Arm. It is recorded of the apostles alone, in whose room the bishops succeed, that they gave the Holy Ghost by the laying on of hands.

‡ Gal. i. 1.

§ Acts i. 21, 22; 1 Cor. ix. 1; xv. 8; Acts xxii. 14, 15.

* 2 Cor. xii. 12; Rom. xv. 18.

* Ἐπειδὴ ἐμελλεν τῆς οἰκουμένης τὴν ἐπιτροπὴν ἐπιδείξασθαι.—Chrys. in Joh. xxi.

† Κριταὶ οἰκουμενικοὶ, καὶ τῆς ὕψ' ἡλίου καθηγηταί.—Cyril. γλαφ. in Gen. vii.

‡ Τὴν ἀποστολὴν, πρᾶγμα μυστῶν ἀγαθῶν γέρον, τῶν χαρισμάτων ἀπάντων καὶ μείζον, καὶ περιεκτικῶν.—Chrys. in Rom. i. Or. 1, tom. viii. p. 114.

§ Acts xv. 28.

constitute apostles, equal to themselves in authority, privileges, or gifts; for, "Who knoweth not" (saith St. Austin) "that principate of apostleship to be preferred before any episcopacy?"* and "the bishops" (saith Bellarmine†) "have no part of the true apostolical authority?"‡

Wherefore St. Peter, who had no other office mentioned in scripture, or known to antiquity, beside that of an apostle, could not have properly and adequately any successor to his office; but it naturally did expire with his person, as did that of the other apostles.

5. Accordingly, whereas the other apostles, as such, had no successors, the apostolical office not being propagated, the primacy of St. Peter (whatever it were, whether of order or jurisdiction, in regard to his brethren) did cease with him; for when there were no apostles extant, there could be "no head or prince of the apostles" in any sense.

6. If some privileges of St. Peter were derived to popes, why were not all? why was not Pope Alexander VI. as holy as St. Peter? why was not Pope Honorius as sound in his private judgment? why is not every pope inspired? why is not every papal epistle to be reputed canonical? why are not all popes endowed with power of doing miracles? why doth not the pope by a sermon convert thousands? (why indeed do popes never preach?) why doth not he cure men by his shadow? (he is, say they, himself his shadow:) what ground is there of distinguishing the privileges, so that he shall have some, not others? where is the ground to be found?

7. If it be objected, that the Fathers commonly do call bishops successors of the apostles; to assoil that objection we may consider, that whereas the apostolical office virtually did contain the functions of teaching and ruling God's people; the which, for preservation of Christian doctrine and edification of the church,

were requisite to be continued perpetually in ordinary standing offices, these indeed were derived from the apostles, but not properly in way of succession, as by univocal propagation, but by ordination, imparting all the power needful for such offices; which therefore were exercised by persons during the apostles' lives concurrently, or in subordination to them; even as a dictator at Rome might create inferior magistrates, who derived from him, but not as his successors; for, as Bellarmine himself telleth us, "there can be no proper succession, but in respect of one preceding; but apostles and bishops were together in the church."*
 The Fathers therefore so in a large sense call all bishops successors of the apostles; not meaning that any one of them did succeed into the whole apostolical office, but that each did receive his power from some one (immediately or mediately) whom some apostle did constitute bishop, vesting him with authority to feed the particular flock committed to him in way of ordinary charge; according to the sayings of that apostolical person, Clemens Romanus: "The apostles preaching in regions and cities, did constitute their first converts, having approved them by the Spirit, for bishops and deacons of those who should afterward believe," and "having constituted the foresaid" (bishops and deacons), "they withal gave them further charge, that if they should die, other approved men successively should receive their office:"† thus did the bishops supply the room of the apostles, "each in guiding his particular charge,"‡ all of them together, by mutual aid, conspiring to govern the whole body of the church.

8. In which regard it may be said, that not one single bishop, but all bishops together through the whole church, do

* Non succeditur proprie nisi præcedenti, at simul fuerunt in ecclesia apostoli et episcopi.—*Bell. de Pont. R.* iv. 25.

† Κατὰ χώρας καὶ πόλεις κηρύσσοντες καθίστανον τὰς ἀρχαίους αὐτῶν, δοκιμάσαντες τῷ πνεύματι, εἰς ἐπισκόπους καὶ διακόνους τῶν μελλόντων πιστεῖν.—*Clem. ad Corinth. i.* p. 54. Κατέστησαν τοὺς προετηρημένους, καὶ μετὰ ἐπινοήσασαν ἐπιθεωροῦσιν, ὅπως εἰν κοιμηθῶσι, διαδέξωνται ἑτέροι δοδοκιμασμένοι ἄνδρες τὴν λειτουργίαν αὐτῶν.—*Ibid.* p. 57.

‡ Singulis pastoribus portio gregis adscripta est, quam regat unusquisque et gubernet.—*Cypr. Ep.* 55.

* Quis nescit illum apostolatus principatum cullibet episcopatu præferendum?—*Aug. de Bapt. cont. Don.* ii. 1.

† Episcopi nullam habent partem veræ apostolicæ auctoritatis.—*Bell.* iv. 25.

‡ The apostles themselves do make the apostolate a distinct office from pastors and teachers, which are the standing offices in the church.—*Eph.* iv. 11; 1 *Cor.* xii. 28.

succeed St. Peter, or any other apostle; for that all of them, in union together, have an universal sovereign authority, commensurate to an apostle.

9. This is the notion which St. Cyprian doth so much insist upon, affirming that the bishops do succeed St. Peter and the other apostles, "by vicarious ordinations;"* that "the bishops are apostles;"† that there is but "one chair by the Lord's word built upon one Peter;‡ one undivided bishopric, diffused in the peaceful numerosity of many bishops, whereof each bishop doth hold his share;|| one flock, whom the apostles by unanimous agreement did feed;" and "which afterwards the bishops do feed;" having "a portion thereof allotted to each, which he should govern."§

So the synod of Carthage, with St. Cyprian.¶

So also St. Chrysostom saith, that "the sheep of Christ were committed by him to Peter, and to those after him,"** that is, in his meaning to all bishops.

10. Such, and no other power, St. Peter might devolve on any bishop ordained by him in any church which he did constitute or inspect; as in that of Antioch, of Alexandria, of Babylon, of Rome.

The like did the other apostles communicate, who had the same power with St.

* Præpositos, qui apostolis vicaria ordinatione succedunt.—*Ep.* 69, 42, 75.

† Apostolos, id est, episcopos et præpositos Dominus elegit.—*Ep.* 65.

‡ Cathedra una super Petrum Domini voce fundata.—*Ep.* 40, et *Ep.* 73, et *de Unit. Eccl.*

|| Episcopatus unus, episcoporum multorum concordia numerositate diffusus.—*Ep.* 52. Episcopatus unus, cujus a singulis in solidum pars tenetur.—*De Unit. Eccl.*

§ Et pastores sunt omnes, sed grex unus ostenditur qui ab apostolis omnibus unanimes consensione pascatur.—*De Unit. Eccl.* Nam etsi pastores multi sumus, unum tamen gregem pascimus, et oves universas, &c.—*Ep.* 67. For though we are many pastors, yet we feed one flock, and all the sheep, &c.

¶ Manifesta est sententia Domini nostri Jesu Christi apostolos suos mittentis, et ipsis solis potestatem a patre sibi datam permittentis quibus nos successimus, eadem potestate ecclesiam Domini gubernantes. The mind and meaning of our Lord Jesus Christ is manifest in sending his apostles, and allowing the power given him of the Father to them alone, whose successors we are, governing the church of God by the same power.

** Τα πρόβατα—ἂ τῷ Πέτρῳ καὶ τοῖς μετ' αὐτῶν ἐνεχείρισεν.—*Chrys. de Sacerd.* 1.

Peter in founding and settling churches; whose successors of this kind were equal to those of the same kind, whom St. Peter did constitute; enjoying in their several precincts an equal part of the apostolical power, as St. Cyprian often doth assert.

11. It is in consequence observable, that in those churches, whereof the apostles themselves were never accounted bishops, yet the bishops are called successors of the apostles; which cannot otherwise be understood, than according to the sense which we have proposed; that is, because they succeeded those who were constituted by the apostles; according to those sayings of Irenæus and Tertullian, "We can number those who were instituted bishops by the apostles and their successors;"* and, "All the churches do shew those, whom, being by the apostles constituted in the episcopal office, they have as continuers of the apostolical seed."†

So, although St. Peter was never reckoned bishop of Alexandria, yet because it is reported that he placed St. Mark there, the bishop of Alexandria is said to succeed the apostles.‡

And because St. John did abide at Ephesus, inspecting that church, and "appointing bishops there," the bishops of that see did "refer their origin to him."§

So many bishops did claim from St. Paul.

So St. Cyprian and Firmilian do assert themselves "successors of the apostles,"§ who yet perhaps never were at Carthage or Cæsarea.

* Habemus annumerare eos, qui ab apostolis instituti sunt episcopi, et successores eorum usque ad nos.—*Iren.* iii 3

† Proinde utique et cæteræ exhibent, quos ab apostolis in episcopatum constitutos apostolici seminis traduces habent. *Tert. de Præscr.* 22.

‡ Τέταρτος ἀπὸ τῶν ἀποστόλων τὴν τῶν αὐτῶν λειτουργίαν κληροῦται Πρῶτος.—*Eus. Hist.* iv. 1. Primus is the fourth from the apostles who was the bishop of that place, or obtained the ministry there.

§ "Ὅπου μὲν ἐπισκόπους καταστήσων, ὅπου δὲ ἐκείνη ἐκκλησίας ἄρξουσιν, &c.—*Clem. Alex.* apud *Eus.* iii. 23. Ordo episcoporum ad originem recessus in Joannem stabit autorem.—*Tert. in Marc.* iv. 5; *Tert. de Præscr.* xxxii.

§ Unitatem a Domino et per apostolos nobis successoribus traditam.—*Cyprian.* *Ep.* 42. Adversarii nostri qui apostolis successimus.—*Firmilian.* *In Cyprian.* *Ep.* 75.

¶ Hier. ad Evagr.

So the church of Constantinople is often, in the Acts of the Sixth General Council, called "this great apostolic church," being such churches as those of whom Tertullian saith, that "although they do not produce any of the apostles or apostolical men for their author, yet conspiring in the same faith, are no less, for the consanguinity of doctrine, reputed apostolical."^{*}

Yea, hence St. Jerome doth assert a parity of merit and dignity sacerdotal to all bishops; because, saith he, "all of them are successors to the apostles,"^o having all alike power by their ordination conferred on them.

12. Whereas our adversaries do pretend that indeed the other apostles had an extraordinary charge as legates of Christ,^o which had no succession, but was extinct in their persons; but that St. Peter had a peculiar charge, as ordinary pastor of the whole church, which surviveth:

To this it is enough to rejoin, that it is a mere figment, devised for a shift, and affirmed precariously: having no ground either in holy scripture or in ancient tradition; there being no such distinction in the sacred or ecclesiastical writings; no mention occurring there of any office which he did assume, or which was attributed to him, distinct from that extraordinary one of an apostle; and all the pastoral charge imaginable being ascribed by the ancients to all the apostles in regard to the whole church, as hath been sufficiently declared.

13. In fine, if any such conveyance of power (of power so great, so momentous, so mightily concerning the perpetual state of the church, and of each person therein) had been made, it had been (for general direction and satisfaction, for voiding all doubt and debate about it, for stifling these pretended heresies and schisms) very requisite that it should have been expressed in some authentic record, that a particular law should have been extant concerning it, that all posterity should be

warned to yield the submission grounded thereon.

Indeed a matter of so great consequence to the being and welfare of the church could scarce have escaped from being clearly mentioned somewhere or other in scripture, wherein so much is spoken touching ecclesiastical discipline; it could scarce have avoided the pen of the first Fathers (Clemens, Ignatius, the Apostolical Canons and Constitutions, Tertullian, &c.), who also so much treat concerning the function and authority of Christian governors.

Nothing can be more strange, than that in the Statute-book of the New Jerusalem, and in all the original monuments concerning it, there should be such a dead silence concerning the succession of its chief magistrate.

Wherefore, no such thing appearing, we may reasonably conclude no such thing to have been, and that our adversaries' assertion of it is wholly arbitrary, imaginary, and groundless.

14. I might add, as a very convincing argument, that if such a succession had been designed, and known in old times, it is morally impossible that none of the Fathers (Origen, Chrysostom, Augustine, Cyril, Jerome, Theodoret, &c.), in their exposition of the places alleged by the Romanists for the primacy of St. Peter, should declare that primacy to have been derived and settled on St. Peter's successor: a point of that moment, if they had been aware of it, they could not but have touched, as a most useful application, and direction for duty.

SUPPOSITION III.

They affirm, "That St. Peter was Bishop of Rome."

CONCERNING which assertion we say, that it may with great reason be denied, and that it cannot anywise be assured; as will appear by the following considerations.

1. St. Peter's being bishop of Rome would confound the offices which God made distinct; for *God did appoint first apostles, then prophets, then pastors and teachers*; ^p wherefore St. Peter, after he was an apostle, could not well become a

* — ab illis ecclesiis, quæ licet nullum ex apostolis, vel apostolicis auctorem suum proferrant, ut multo posteriores, quæ denique quotidie instituuntur, tamen in eadem fide conspirantes, non minus apostolicæ deputantur, pro consanguinitate doctrinæ.— *Tert. de Præscr.* 32.

^a Hier. ad Evagr.

^b Bell. iv. 25, &c.

^p 1 Cor. xii. 28; Eph. iv. 11.

bishop; it would be such an irregularity as if a bishop should be made a deacon.

2. The offices of an apostle and of a bishop are not in their nature well consistent; for the apostleship is an extraordinary office, charged with instruction and government of the whole world, and calling for an answerable care ("the apostles being rulers," as St. Chrysostom saith, "ordained by God; rulers not taking several nations and cities, but all of them in common intrusted with the whole world;")* but episcopacy is an ordinary standing charge, affixed to one place, and requiring a special attendance there; bishops being pastors, who, as St. Chrysostom saith, "do sit, and are employed in one place."† Now he that hath such a general care can hardly discharge such a particular office; and he that is fixed to so particular attendance can hardly look well after so general a charge: either of those offices alone would suffice to take up a whole man, as those tell us who have considered the burden incumbent on the meanest of them; the which we may see described in St. Chrysostom's discourses concerning the priesthood.

Baronius saith of St. Peter, that it was his office not to stay in one place, but, as much as it was possible for one man, to travel over the whole world, and to bring those who did not yet believe to the faith, but thoroughly to establish believers:‡ if so, how could he be bishop of Rome, which was an office inconsistent with such vagrancy?

3. It would not have beseemed St. Peter, the prime apostle, to assume the charge of a particular bishop; it had been a degradation of himself, and a disparagement to the apostolical majesty, for him to take upon him the bishopric of Rome; as if the king should become mayor of London; as if the bishop of London should be vicar of Pancras.

* Ἄρχοντες εἰσιν ὑπὸ τοῦ Θεοῦ χειροτονθέντες οἱ ἀπόστολοι· ἄρχοντες οὐκ ἔθνη καὶ πόλεις διαφόρους λαμβάνοντες ἀλλὰ πάντες κοινῇ τὴν οἰκουμένην ἐπιτευθέντες.—Chrys. tom. viii. p. 115.

† Οἱ καθήμενοι καὶ περὶ ἕνα τόπον ἡσχολημένοι.—Chrys. in Eph. iv. 11.

‡ Non erat ejus officii in uno loco consistere, sed quantum homini licuisset universum peragere orbem, et nondum credentes ad fidei reducere, credentes vero in fide penitus stabilire.—Baron. ann. lviii. § 51.

4. Wherefore it is not likely that St. Peter, being sensible of that superior charge belonging to him, which did exact a more extensive care, would vouchsafe to undertake an inferior charge.

We cannot conceive that St. Peter did affect the name of a bishop, as now men do, allured by the baits of wealth and power, which then were none: if he did affect the title, why did he not in either of his Epistles (one of which, as they would persuade us, was written from Rome) inscribe himself bishop of Rome?

Especially considering that, being an apostle, he did not need any particular authority, that involving all power, and enabling him in any particular place to execute all kinds of ecclesiastical administrations: there was no reason that an apostle (or universal bishop) should become a particular bishop.

5. Also St. Peter's general charge of converting and inspecting the Jews, dispersed over the world (*his apostleship*, as St. Paul calleth it, *of the circumcision*),* which required much travel, and his presence in divers places, doth not well agree to his assuming the episcopal office at Rome.

Especially at that time, when they first make him to assume it; which was in the time of Claudius, who, as St. Luke and other histories do report,† did banish all the Jews from Rome, as Tiberius also had done before him: he was too skilful a fisherman to cast his net there, where there were no fish.

6. If we consider St. Peter's life, we may well deem him incapable of this office, which he could not conveniently discharge; for it, as history doth represent it, and may be collected from divers circumstances of it, was very unsettled; he went much about the world, and therefore could seldom reside at Rome.

Many have argued him to have never been at Rome; which opinion I shall not avow, as bearing a more civil respect to ancient testimonies and traditions; although many false and fabulous relations of that kind having crept into history and common vogue, many doubtful reports having passed concerning him,‡

* Ἀποστολὴ περιτομῆς.—Gal. ii. 8.

† Acts xviii. 2; Sueton. in Claud. 25, in Tib. 36.

‡ Euseb. iii. 3.

many notorious forgeries having been vented about his travels and acts (all that is reported of him out of scripture having a smack of the legend), would tempt a man to suspect any thing touching him which is grounded only upon human tradition; so that the forger of his Epistle to St. James might well induce him saying, "If while I do yet survive, men dare to feign such things of me, how much more will they dare to do so after my decease?"*

But at least the discourses of those men have evinced, that it is hard to assign the time when he was at Rome; and that he could never long abide there; for,

The time which old tradition assigneth of his going to Rome is rejected by divers learned men, even of the Roman party.[†]

He was often in other places; sometimes at Jerusalem, sometimes at Antioch, sometimes at Babylon, sometimes at Corinth, sometimes probably at each of those places unto which he directeth his catholic Epistles; among which Epiphanius saith, that "Peter did often visit Pontus and Bithynia."[‡]

And that he seldom was at Rome, may well be collected from St. Paul's writings; for he writing at different times one Epistle to Rome, and divers Epistles from Rome (that to the Galatians, that to the Ephesians, that to the Philippians, that to the Colossians, and the second to Timothy), doth never mention him, sending any salutation to him, or from him.

Particularly St. Peter was not there when St. Paul mentioning Tychicus, Onesimus, Aristarchus, Marcus, and Justus, addeth, *These alone my fellow-workers unto the kingdom of God, who have been a comfort unto me.*[§]

He was not there when St. Paul said,

* *Εἰ δὲ ἐμὸς ἔτι περίωντος τοιαῦτα τομῶσιν καταψέσθαι, πῶσω γε μᾶλλον μετ' ἐμὲ ποιεῖν οἱ μετ' ἐμὲ τομῶσονται;*—Petr. ad Jacob.

† Πέτρος πολλάκις Πόντον καὶ Βιθυνίαν ἐπισκέψατο.—Eriph. Hær. 27.

‡ Scal in Euseb. p. 189; Onuph. apud Bell. ii. 6; Vales in Euseb. ii. 15.

§ Acts xi. 2; xv. 7; Gal. i. 18; ii. 9, 11; 1 Pet. v. 13; 1 Cor. i. 12; Euseb. ii. 25; 2 Pet. iii. 2; 1 Pet. i. 1.

¶ Col. iv. 11.

At my first defence no man stood with me, but all men forsook me.[¶]

He was not there immediately before St. Paul's death (when the time of his departure was at hand,) when he telleth Timothy, that *all the brethren did salute him*, and naming divers of them, he omitteth Peter.*

Which things being considered, it is not probable that St. Peter would assume the episcopal chair of Rome, he being little capable to reside there, and for that other needful affairs would have forced him to leave so great a church destitute of their pastor.

7. It was needless that he should be bishop, for that by virtue of his apostleship (involving all the power of inferior degrees) he might, whenever he should be at Rome, exercise episcopal functions and authority. What need a sovereign prince to be made a justice of peace?

8. Had he done so, he must have given a bad example of non-residence; a practice that would have been very ill relished in the primitive church, as we may see by several canons interdicting offences of kin to it* (it being, I think, then not so known as nominally to be censured), and culpable upon the same ground; and by the savings of Fathers condemning practices approaching to it.

Even later synods, in more corrupt times and in the declension of good order, yet did prohibit this practice.†

* Οὐδὲς ἀναγνοὺς τὰς γραφὰς, ἤλκον ἐστὶ δὴ ἔγκλημα καταλιμπάνειν ἐπίσκοπον τὴν ἐκκλησίαν, καὶ ἀμελεῖν τῶν τοῦ Θεοῦ ποιημάτων.—Athan. Apol. 1. Having read the scriptures, you know how great an offence it is for a bishop to forsake his church, and to neglect the flocks of God. Operet enim episcopos curis secularibus expeditis curam suorum agere populorum, nec ecclesiis suis abesse diutius.—P. Paschal. II. Ep. 22. For bishops ought to be disentangled from secular cares, and to take charge of their people, and not to be long absent from their churches.

† Præcipimus ne conductitiis ministris ecclesiæ committantur, et unaquæque ecclesia, cui facultas suppetit, proprium habeat sacerdotem.—Conc. Lat. 2, (sub. Innoc. II.) can. 10. We enjoin that churches be not committed to hired ministers, but that every church, that is of ability, have its proper priest. Cum igitur ecclesia vel ecclesiasticum ministerium committi debuerit, talis ad hoc persona quaeratur, quæ residere in loco, et curam ejus per seipsum valet exercere; quod si aliter fuerit actum, et qui

¶ 2 Tim. iv. 16. * 2 Tim. iv. 6, 21.
* Conc. Nic. can. 16; Conc. Ant. can. 3; Conc. Sard. can. 11, 12; Conc. Trul. can. 80.

Epiphanius, therefore, did well infer, that it was needful the apostles should constitute bishops resident at Rome: "It was" (saith he) "possible, that, the apostles Peter and Paul yet surviving, other bishops should be constituted; because the apostles often did take journeys into other countries, for preaching Christ: but the city of Rome could not be without a bishop."*

9. If St. Peter were bishop of Rome, he thereby did offend against divers other good ecclesiastical rules, which either were in practice from the beginning, or at least the reason of them was always good, upon which the church did afterward enact them; so that either he did ill in thwarting them, or the church had done it in establishing them, so as to condemn his practice.

10. It was against rule,⁷ that any bishop should desert one church, and transfer himself to another; and indeed against reason, such a relation and endearment being contracted between a bishop and his church, which cannot well be dissolved.

But St. Peter is by ecclesiastical historians reported (and by Romanists admitted) to have been bishop of Antioch for seven years together.†

He therefore did ill to relinquish that church, "that most ancient and truly apostolic church of Antioch"‡ (as the Constantinopolitan Fathers called it), and to place his See at Rome.

recepit, quod contra canctos canones accepit, amittat.—*Conc. Lat. 3. (sub Alexandro III.) cap. 13.* Therefore when a church, or the ecclesiastical ministry, be to be committed to any man, let such a person be found out for this purpose, who can reside upon the place, and discharge the cure by himself: but if it prove otherwise, then let him who has received lose that which he has taken contrary to the holy canons.

* Πλὴν ἀλλὰ καὶ οὕτως ἠδύνατο εἶτι περιόντων τῶν ἀποστόλων, φησὶ δὲ τῶν περὶ Πέτρον καὶ Παῦλον, ἐπισκόπους ἄλλους καθίστασθαι, διὰ τὸ τοὺς ἀποστόλους πολλὰς ἐπὶ τὰς ἄλλας πατριῶδας τὴν πορείαν στέλλεσθαι, διὰ τὸ κήρυγμα τοῦ Χριστοῦ μὴ δύνασθαι διὰ τὴν τῶν Ῥωμαίων πόλιν ἄνευ ἐπισκόπου εἶναι.—*Eriph. Hier. 27.*

† Τοῦ μεγάλου Πέτρον θρόνον ἡ Ἀντιοχείων μεγαλόπολις ἔχει.—*Theodor. Ep. 86.* The great city of the Antiochians hath the throne of the great St. Peter.

‡ Τὴν προσφωτῆτην καὶ ὄντως ἀποστολικὴν ἐκκλησίαν.—*Theod. v. 6.*

⁷ *Apost. Can. 14.*

This practice was esteemed bad, and of very mischievous consequence; earnestly reprov'd, as heinously criminal, by great Fathers; severely condemn'd by divers synods.

Particularly a transmigration from a lesser and poorer to a greater and more wealthy bishopric (which is the present case), was checked by them, as rankly savouring of selfish ambition or avarice.

The synod of Alexandria (in Athanasius), in its Epistle to all catholic bishops, doth say, that Eusebius, by passing from Berytus to Nicomedia, "had annulled his episcopacy," making it "an adultery," worse than that which is committed by marriage upon divorce:* "Eusebius" (say they) "did not consider the apostle's admonition, *Art thou bound to a wife? do not seek to be loosed*: for if it be said of a woman, how much more of a church; of the same bishopric; to which one being tied, ought not to seek another, that he may not be found also *an adulterer*, according to the holy scripture?"† Surely when they said this, they did forget what St. Peter was said to have done in that kind; as did also the Sardican Fathers in their synodical letter, extant in the same Apology of Athanasius, condemning "translations from lesser cities unto greater dioceses."‡

The same practice is forbidden by the synods of Nice I., of Chalcedon, of Antioch, of Sardica, of Arles I., &c.†

In the synod under Mennas, it was laid to the charge of Anthimus, that having been bishop of Trabisond, he had "adulterously snatched the see of Constantinople, against all ecclesiastical laws and canons."||

Yea, great popes of Rome (little con-

* Ἀκυρώσας αὐτήν.—*Athanas. Apol. ii. p. 726.*

† Οὗ συνορῶν τὸ παράγγελμα, δέδισαι γυναῖκα, μὴ ζῆτει ἄλλην· εἰ δὲ ἐπὶ γυναῖκος τὸ ῥητόν, πόσος μᾶλλον ἐπὶ ἐκκλησίας ἐκ τῆς αὐτῆς ἐπισκοπῆς, ἢ ὁ συνωμότης ἄλλην οὐκ ὀφείλει ζητεῖν, ἵνα μὴ καὶ μοιχὸς παρὰ τοῖς θεαῖς εἰρήσκειται γραφαῖς.—*Syn. Alex. apud Athan. p. 727.*

‡ Τὰς μεταθέσεις ἀπὸ μικρῶν πόλεων εἰς μείζους παροικίας.—*Ibid. p. 765.*

|| — ἠδυνήθη μοιχικῶς τὸν τῆσδε τῆς πόλεως ἀρχιερατικὸν θρόνον παρὰ πάντας τοὺς ἐκκλησιαστικὸς θεσμοὺς καὶ κενώσας.—*Conc. sub. Menn. p. 9.*

* *Syn. Nic. can. 15; Syn. Chalc. can. 5; Syn. Ant. can. 21; Syn. Sard. can. 1; Syn. Arol. can. 22; Grat. Caus. viii. qu. 1, cap. 4; P. Jul. I. apud Athan. in Apol. ii. p. 744.*

sidering how peccant therein their predecessor Pope Peter was), Pope Julius and Pope Damasus, did greatly tax this practice; whereof the latter, in his synod at Rome, did excommunicate all those who should commit it.*

In like manner Pope Leo I.†

These laws were so indispensable, that in respect to them Constantine M., who much loved and honoured Eusebius, (acknowledging him in the common judgment of the world deserving to be bishop of the whole church), did not like that he should accept the bishopric of Antioch, to which he was invited; and commended his waving it, as an act not only "consonant to the ecclesiastical canons," but "acceptable to God, and agreeable to apostolical tradition:"‡ so little aware was the good emperor of St. Peter being translated from Antioch to Rome.

In regard to the same law, Gregory Nazianzen (a person of so great worth, and who had deserved so highly of the church at Constantinople) could not be permitted to retain his bishopric of that church, to which he had been called from that small one of Sasima. "The synod," (saith Sozomen), "observing the ancient laws and the ecclesiastical rule, did receive his bishopric from him, being willingly offered, nowise regarding the great merits of the person;‡ the which synod

surely would have excluded St. Peter from the bishopric of Rome: and it is observable that Pope Damasus did approve and exhort those Fathers to that proceeding.*

We may indeed observe that Pope Pelagius II. did excuse the translation of bishops by the example of St. Peter: "For who ever dareth to say," argueth he, "that St. Peter, the prince of the apostles, did not act well, when he changed his see from Antioch to Rome?"†

But I think it more advisable to excuse St. Peter from being author of a practice judged so irregular, by denying the matter of fact laid to his charge.

11. It was anciently deemed a very irregular thing, "contrary" (saith St. Cyprian) "to the ecclesiastical disposition, contrary to the evangelical law, contrary to the unity of catholic institution;‡" § "a symbol" (saith another ancient writer) "of dissension, and disagreeable to ecclesiastical law;"|| which therefore was condemned by the synod of Nice by Pope Cornelius, by Pope innocent I., and others, that two bishops preside together in one city.‡

This was condemned with good reason; for this on the church's part would be a kind of spiritual polygamy; this would render a church a monster with two heads; this would destroy the end of episcopacy, which is unity and "prevention of schisms."§

But if St. Peter was bishop of Rome,

* Τοὺς δὲ ἀπὸ ἐκκλησιῶν εἰς ἑτέρας ἐκκλησίας μεταβάνας ἔχει τοσοῦτον ἀπὸ τῆς ἡμετέρας κοινωνίας ἀλλοτριῶν ἔχομεν, ἔχει οὐ πρὸς αὐτὰς ἐπιπέλωσι τῆς πόλεως, ἐν αἷς πρῶτον ἐχειροτονήθησαν.—Theod. v. 11. Those that pass from their own churches to other churches, we esteem so long excommunicate (or strangers from our communion), till such time as they return to the same cities where they were first ordained.

† Si quis episcopus, mediocritate civitatis suæ despecta, administrationem loci celebrioris ambiert, et ad majorem se plebem quacunque occasione transtulerit, non solum a cathedra quidem pellatur aliena, sed carebit et propria, &c.—P. Leo. I. Ep. lxxxiv. cap. 4. If any bishop, despising the meanness of his city, seeks for the administration of a more eminent place, and upon any occasion whatsoever transfers himself to a greater People, he shall not only be driven out of another's see, but also lose his own, &c.

‡ Ἄλλ' ὅμως ἡ σύνοδος καὶ τοὺς πατριῶν νόμους, καὶ τὴν ἐκκλησιαστικὴν τάξιν φυλάττουσα, ὃ δέδωκε αὐτῷ ἰκόντος ἀπειθήσει, μηδὲν αἰδεσθίσα τῶν τοῦ ἀντιφύσι πλεονεκτημάτων.—Sozom. vii. 7.

§ Euseb. de Vit. Const. iii. 61.

* Illud præterea commoneo dilectionem vestram, ne patiamini aliquem contra statuta majorum nostrorum de civitate alia ad aliam transduci, et deserere plebem sibi commissam, &c.—P. Damasi Epist. apud Holsten. p. 41, et R. Marc. v. 21. Moreover this I advise you, that out of your charity you would not suffer any one, against the decrees of our ancestors, to be removed from one city to another, and to forsake the people committed to his charge, &c.

† Quis enim unquam audeat dicere S. Petrum apostolorum principem non bene egisse, quando mutavit sedem de Antiochia in Romam?—Pelag. II. Ep. 1.

‡ Contra ecclesiasticam dispositionem, contra evangelicam legem, contra institutionis catholicæ unitatem.—Cypr. Ep. 44, (ut et Ep. 46, 52, 55, 58.)

§ Ὁ διχονομία σὺμβολὸν ἐστὶ καὶ ἐκκλησιαστικὸς θεσμοὺς ἀλλότριον.—Soz. iv. 15.

§ In remedium schismatis.—Hier.

‡ Syn. Nic. can. 8; Corn. ap. Eus. vi. 43; Cypr. Ep. 46; P. Innoc. ap. Sozom. viii. 26; Opt. I. Cathedra una.

this irregularity was committed : for the same authority upon which St. Peter's episcopacy of Rome is built, doth also reckon St. Paul bishop of the same ; the same writers do make both founders and planters of the Roman church, and the same call both bishops of it : wherefore if episcopacy be taken in a strict and proper sense, agreeable to this controversy, that rule must needs be infringed thereby.

Irenæus saith, " that the Roman church was founded and constituted by the two most glorious apostles, Peter and Paul ;"* Dionysius of Corinth calleth it " the plantation of Peter and Paul ;"† Epiphanius saith, that " Peter and Paul were first at Rome both apostles and bishops ;"‡ so Eusebius implieth, saying, that Pope Alexander " derived a succession in the fifth place from Peter and Paul."||

Wherefore both of them were Roman bishops, or neither of them : in reason and rule neither of them may be called so in a strict, and proper sense ; but in a larger and improper sense, both might be so styled.

Indeed, that St. Paul was in some acception bishop of Rome (that is, had a supreme superintendence or inspection of it) is reasonable to affirm ; because he did for a good time reside there, and during that residence could not but have the chief place, could be subject to no other : *He, saith St. Luke) did abide two whole years in his own hired house, and received all that entered in unto him preaching the kingdom of God, and teaching those things which concern the Lord Jesus Christ with all confidence, no man forbidding him.**

It may be inquired, if St. Peter was bishop of Rome, how he did become such ? Did our Lord appoint him such ? did the apostles all or any constitute him ? did the people elect him ? did he put himself into it ? Of none of these things

* — a gloriosissimis duobus apostolis Petro et Paulo Romæ fundata et constituta ecclesia.—Iren. iii. 3. iii. 1.

† Τὴν ἀπὸ Πέτρων καὶ Παύλου φυτεῖαν.—Dionys. Corinth. apud Euseb. ii. 25.

‡ Ἐν Ῥώμῃ γεγενῆσσι πρῶτοι Πέτρος καὶ Παῦλος ἀπόστολοι αὐτοὶ καὶ ἐπίσκοποι.—Epiiph. Hær. 27.

|| Πέμπτην ἀπὸ Πέτρων καὶ Παύλων κατὰ γὰρ διαδοχὴν.—Euseb. iv. 1.

* Acts xxviii. 30.

there is any appearance, nor any probability : *non constat.*

SUPPOSITION IV.

They affirm, " That St. Peter did continue bishop of Rome after his translation, and was so at his decease."

AGAINST which assertions we may consider :

1. Ecclesiastical writers do affirm, that St. Peter (either alone, or together with St. Paul) did constitute other bishops ; wherefore St. Peter was never bishop, or did not continue bishop there.

Irenæus saith, that " the apostles, founding and rearing that church, delivered the episcopal office into the hands of Linus ;"* if so, how did they retain it in their own hands, or persons ? could they give, and have ?

Tertullian saith, that " St. Peter did ordain Clement."†

In the Apostolical Constitutions (a very ancient book, and setting forth the most ancient traditions of the church), the apostles ordering prayers to be made for all bishops, and naming the principal, do reckon, not St. Peter, but Clement : " Let us pray for our bishop James, for our bishop Clemens, for our bishop Euodius," &c.

These reports are consistent, and reconciled by that which the Apostolical Constitutions affirm, that " Linus was first ordained bishop of the Roman church by Paul ; but Clemens after the death of Linus by Peter in the second place."‡

Others between Linus and Clemens do interpose Cletus, or Anacletus (some taking these for one, others for two persons), which doth not alter the case.||

* Θεμελιώσαντες οὖν καὶ οἰκοδομήσαντες οἱ μακάριοι ἀπόστολοι τὴν ἐκκλησίαν, Δίονος τῆς ἐπισκοπῆς λειτουργίαν ἐνεχείρισαν. Iren. apud Euseb. v. 6.

† Romanorum ecclesiæ Clementem a Petro ordinatum edit.—Tert. de Præscr. 32.

Ex quibus electum magnum plebique probatum, Hac cathedra, Petrus qua sederat ipse, locatum Maxima Roma Linum primum considere jussit.

Tert. in Marc. iii. 9.

‡ Τῆς δὲ Ῥωμαίων ἐκκλησίας Δίονος μὲν ὁ Κλεοδίας πρῶτος ἐπὶ Παύλου, Κλήμης δὲ μετὰ τὸν Δίονος θάνατον ἐπ' ἐμοῦ Πέτρον δεύτερος χειροτονήσεται.—Const. Ap. vii. 46.

|| Euseb. iii. 4, 13 ; Aug. Ep. 165 ; Epiiph. Hær. 27 ; Opt. 2 ; Tertull. poem. in Marc. iii. 9 ; Phot. Cod. 112, (p. 290.) N. Eusebius (iii. 2.) saith, that Linus did sit bishop after the

Now hence we may infer, both that St. Peter never was bishop; and upon supposition that he was, that he did not continue so. For,

2. If he had ever been bishop, he could not well lay down his office, or subrogate another, either to preside with him, or to succeed him; according to the ancient rules of discipline, and that which passed for right in the primitive church.

This practice Pope Innocent I. condemned as irregular, and never known before his time: "We" (saith he in his Epistle to the clergy and people of Constantinople) "never have known these things to have been adventured by our fathers, but rather to have been hindered; for that none hath power given him to ordain another in the place of one living*:" he did not (it seems) consider, that St. Peter had used such a power.

Accordingly the synod of Antioch (to secure the tradition and practice of the church, which began by some to be infringed) did make this sanction, that "it should not be lawful for any bishop to constitute another in his room to succeed him; although it were at the point of death."†

3. But supposing St. Peter were bishop once, yet, by constituting Linus or Clemens in his place, he ceased to be so, and divested himself of that place; for it had been a great irregularity for him to continue bishop together with another.

That being, in St. Cyprian's judgment, the ordination of Linus had been void and null; for, "Seeing" (saith that holy martyr) "there cannot after the first be any second, whoever is after one, who ought to be sole bishop, he is not now second, but none."‡

Upon this ground, when the Emperor

martyrdom of St. Peter: but this is not so probable, as that which the author of the Constitutions doth affirm, which reconcileth the dissimilarities of writers.

* Οὐδέ γὰρ πώποτε παρὰ τῶν πατέρων ταῦτα τελεῖσθαι ἐγνώκαμεν· ἀλλὰ μᾶλλον κεκωλυθῆναι, τῷ μηδὲ εἰς τόπον ζωῆτος χειροτονεῖν ἄλλον δεδῶσθαι ἔξουσιν.—P. Inn I. apud Soz. viii. 26.

† Ἐπισκέπῳ μὴ ἐξεῖναι ἀνθ' ἑαυτοῦ καθίστασθαι ἕτερον, κἂν περὶ τῆ τελευταῖα τοῦ βίου τυγχάνῃ.—Syn. Ant. Can. 23.

‡ Cum post primum secundus esse non possit; quisquis post unum, qui solus esse debeat, non jam secundus ille, sed nullus est.—Cypri. Ep. 62.

Constantius would have procured Felix to sit bishop of Rome together with Pope Liberius, at his return from banishment (after his compliance with the Arians), the people of Rome would not admit it, exclaiming, "One God, one Christ, one bishop;" and whereas Felix soon after that died, the historian remarketh it as "a special providence of God, that Peter's throne might not suffer infamy, being governed under two prelates;"* he never considered that St. Peter and St. Paul, St. Peter and Linus, had thus governed that same church.

Upon this account St. Austin, being assumed by Valerius with him to be bishop of Hippo, did afterwards discern and acknowledge his error.†

In fine, to obviate this practice, so many canons of councils (both general and particular) were made, which we before did mention.

4. In sum, when St. Peter did ordain others (as story doth accord in affirming), either he did retain the episcopacy, and then (beside need, reason, and rule) there were concurrently divers bishops of Rome, at one time; or he did quite relinquish, and finally divorce himself from the office, so that he did not die bishop of Rome, the which overturneth the main ground of the Romish pretence.‡ Or will they say that St. Peter, having laid aside the office for a time, did afterward before his death resume it? Then what became of Linus, of Cletus, of Clemens? were they dispossessed of their place, or deposed from their function? would St. Peter "succeed them in it?"

* Theod. Hist. ii. 17.—Ταβηρη πη τοῦ Θεοῦ διοικήσαντος, ὥστε τὸν Πέτρον θρόνον μὴ ἀδοξεῖν ὑπὸ δύο ἡγεμόσιν ἰθυυόμενον.

† Adhuc in corpore posito beatæ memoriæ patre et episcopo meo sene Valerio episcopus ordinatus sum, et sedi cum illo; quod concilio Niceno prohibitum fuisse nesciebam, nec ipse sciebat.—Aug. Ep. 110. While my father and bishop of blessed memory, old Valerius, was yet living, I was ordained bishop, and held the see with him; which I knew not, nor did he know, to be forbidden by the council of Nice.

‡ Ipse sublimavit sedem, in qua etiam quiescere, et præsentem vitam finire dignatus est.—Greg. I. Ep. vi. 37; Innoc. I. Ep. 21; P. Nic. I. Ep. ix. p. 509; Grat. Caus. viii. q. i. cap. 1. He advanced that see, wherein he vouchsafed both to set up his rest, and also to end this present life.—Bell. ii. 12, § At vero.—

This in Bellarmine's own judgment "had been plainly intolerable."^{*}

5. To avoid all which difficulties in the case, and perplexities in story, it is reasonable to understand those of the ancients who call Peter bishop of Rome, and Rome the place, the chair, the see of Peter, as meaning that he was bishop or superintendent of that church, in a large sense; because he did found the church by converting men to the Christian faith; because he did erect the chair by ordaining the first bishops; because he did, in virtue both of his apostolical office and his special parental relation to that church, maintain a particular inspection over it, when he was there: which notion is not new; for of old Ruffinus affirmeth that he had it, not from his own invention, but from tradition of others: "Some" (saith he) "inquire how, seeing Linus and Cletus were bishops in the city of Rome before Clement, Clement himself, writing to James, could say, that the see was delivered to him by Peter: whereof this reason has been given us; viz. that Linus and Cletus were indeed bishops of Rome before Clement, but Peter being yet living; viz. that they might take the episcopal charge, but he fulfilled the office of the apostleship."[†]

6. This notion may be confirmed by divers observations.

It is observable, that the most ancient writers, living nearest the fountains of tradition, do not expressly style St. Peter bishop of Rome, but only say that he did found that church, instituting and ordaining bishops there;[‡] as the other apostles did in the churches which they settled; so that the bishops there in a large sense did succeed him, as deriving their power from his ordination, and supplying his room in the instruction and governance

of that great church. Yea, their words, if we well mark them, do exclude the apostles from the episcopacy.* Which words the later writers (who did not foresee the consequence, nor what an exorbitant superstructure would be raised on that slender bottom, and who were willing to comply with the Roman bishops, affecting by all means to reckon St. Peter for their predecessor) did easily catch, and not well distinguishing, did call him bishop, and St. Paul also, so making two heads of one church.

7. It is also observable, that in the recensions of the Roman bishops, sometimes the apostles are reckoned in, sometimes excluded.

So Eusebius calleth Clemens "the third bishop of Rome,"[†] yet before him he reckoneth Linus and Anacletus.

And of Alexander he saith, that "he deduced his succession in the fifth place from Peter and Paul,"[‡] that is, excluding the apostles.

And Hygnius is thus accounted sometime the eighth, sometime the ninth bishop of Rome.[§]

The same difference in reckoning may be observed in other churches; for instance, although St. Peter is called no less bishop of Antioch than of Rome by the ancients, yet Eusebius saith, that "Euodius was first bishop of Antioch;" and another "bids the Antiocheans remember Euodius, who was first intrusted with the presidency over them by the apostles."[¶]

Other instances may be seen in the notes of Cotelerius upon the Apostolical Constitutions, where he maketh this general observation:

"It is an usual custom with the apostles, according to their power, ordinary or

* Petrum apostolum successisse in episcopatu Antiocheno alicui ex discipulis, quod est, plene intolerandum.—*Bell.* ii. 6.

† Quidam enim requirunt quo modo, cum Linus et Cletus in urbe Roma ante Clementem hunc fuerint episcopi, ipse Clemens ad Jacobum scribens, sibi dicat a Petro docendi cathedram traditam; cujus rei hanc accepimus esse rationem, quod Linus et Cletus fuerunt quidem ante Clementem episcopi in urbe Roma, sed superstitie Petro; videlicet ut illi episcopatus curam gererent, ipse vero apostolatus imperaret officium.—*Ruffin. in Pref. ad Clem. Recogn.*

‡ *Const. Apost.* vii. 46; *Iren.* iii. 3; *Tertull.*

* Fundantes igitur, et instruentes beati apostoli ecclesiam Lino episcopatum administrande ecclesie tradiderunt.—*Iren.* iii. 3. The blessed apostles therefore founding and instructing the church, delivered the episcopal power of ordering and governing the church to Linus.

† Πίμπρη από Πέτρου και Παύλου κατάγωγε διαδοχόν.—*Euseb.* iv. 1.

‡ 'Αντιοχέων εκκλησίας πρώτος επίσκοπος Ευδιδιος έχρημάτισε.—*Euseb.* Chron. p. 7; *Hist.* iii. 22. Μνημονεύετε Ευδιδιον, δε πρώτον ενεχειρίσθη από τού αποστόλου ημετέραν προσασίαν. *Pseud. Ignat. ad Ant.* Eusebius counteth Anianus the first bishop of Alexandria, iii. 21.

§ *Euseb.* iii. 4, 13, 15; *Iren.* iii. 3.

¶ *Iren.* i. 28; iii. 3, 4; *Euseb.* iv. 10.

extraordinary, episcopal or apostolical, to prefix,* &c.: but it was needless to suppose these two powers when one was sufficient, it virtually containing the other.

This is an argument that the ancients were not assured in opinion that the apostles were bishops, or that they did not esteem them bishops in the same notion with others.

8. It is observable, that divers churches did take denomination from the apostles, and were called "apostolical thrones" or "chairs,"† not because the apostles themselves did sit bishops there, but because they did exercise their apostleship in teaching, and "in constituting bishops there," who, as Tertullian saith, "did propagate the apostolical seed."‡

So was Ephesus esteemed,|| because St. Paul did found it, and ordained Timothy there; and because St. John did govern and appoint bishops there.

So was Smyrna accounted, because Polycarpus "was settled there by the apostles, or by St. John."§

So Cyril, bishop of Jerusalem, "had a controversy about metropolitanical rights

with Acacius, bishop of Cæsarea, as presiding in an apostolical see."*

So Alexander was deemed, because St. Mark was supposed by the appointment of St. Peter to sit there.

So were Corinth, Thessalonica, Philippi, called by Tertullian, because St. Paul did found them, and furnish them with pastors; in which respect peculiarly the bishops of those places were called successors of the apostles.¶

So Constantinople did assume the title of an apostolical church;‡ probably because, according to tradition, St. Andrew did found that church, although Pope Leo I. would not allow that appellation.

Upon the same account might Rome at first be called an apostolical see; although afterward the Roman bishops did rather pretend to that denomination, upon account of St. Peter being bishop there: and the like may be said of Antioch.‡

9. It is observable, that the author of the Apostolical Constitutions, reciting the first bishop's constituted in several churches, doth not reckon any of the apostles; particularly not Peter, or Paul, or John.‡

10. Again, any apostle, wherever he did reside by virtue of his apostolical office, without any other designation or assumption of a more special power, was qualified to preside there, exercising a superintendency comprehensive of all episcopal functions; so that it was needless that he should take upon himself the character or style of a bishop.

This (beside the tenor of ancient doctrine) doth appear from the demeanour of St. John, who never was reckoned "bish-

* Celebris mos est apostolos pro potestate eorum ordinaria vel extraordinaria, episcopali vel apostolica indiculis antistitum præfigere, aut ex iis eximere.—Cotel. Not. p. 299.

† Apostolicæ Ecclesiæ.—Tert. de Præscr. 32. Ἀποστολικὸν θρόνον.—Soz. i. 17; 2 Tim. i. 6.

‡ In canonicis autem scripturis ecclesiarum catholicarum quamplurimum auctoritatem sequatur, inter quas sane illæ sunt, quæ apostolicas sedes habere, et epistolas accipere meruerunt.—Aug. de Doc. Ch. ii. 8. Let him follow the authority of those many catholic churches in the canonical scriptures, among which surely are those which had the honour to have apostolical sees, and to receive epistles from the apostles. Proinde utique et cæteræ exhibent quos ab apostolis in episcopatum constitutos apostolici seminis traduces habent.—Tertull. de Præscr. 32.

|| Sed et quæ est Ephesi ecclesia a Paulo quidem fundata, Johanne autem permanente apud eos usque ad Trajani tempora, &c.—Iren. iii. 3. And also the church of Ephesus, which was founded by St. Paul, St. John continuing with them till the time of Trajan, &c. Ordo episcoporum ad originem recens in Johanne stabit auctorem.—Tertull. in Marc. iv. 5. Τῆς δὲ Ἐφέσου Τιμόθεος μὲν ὑπὸ Παύλου, Ἰωάννης δὲ τῆς ἐκείνου.—Apost. Const. vii. 46.

§ Ab apostolis in ea quæ est Smyrnis ecclesia constitutus episcopus.—Iren. iii. 3. Smyrnezorum ecclesia habens Polycarpum ab Johanne conlocatum.—Tertull. de Præscr. 32; Euseb. iii. 36. Τῆς κατὰ Σμύρναν ἐκκλησίας πρὸς τὸν ἀποστόλων, καὶ ἀποστόλων τοῦ Κυρίου τὴν ἐπισκοπὴν ἰσχυροποιήσας.—Euseb. iii. 36.

* Περὶ μητροπολιτικῶν δικαίων διεφέρετο πρὸς Ἀκάκιον τὸν Καισαρείας, ὡς ἀποστολικὸν θρόνον ἠγοούμενος.—Sozom. iv. 25.

‡ Ἀποστολικὸν τοῦτον θρόνον καταφρονεῖς.—Syn. Chalc. Act. x. p. 379, 284. Thou despisest this apostolical throne. —Ἐφ' ᾧ καὶ πρῶτον ἐπίσκοπον τὸν θεῖον Στάχυν καταστήσας, ἐν ἐκκλησίᾳ ἢν ἐκεῖσε πρῶτος οὗτος ἐπέζητο.—Niceph. ii. 39. Forasmuch as having appointed holy Stachys the first bishop, in the church which he first settled there. Non dedignetur regiam civitatem, quam apostolicam non potest facere sedem.—P. Leo. I. Ep. 54. Let him not disdain the royal city, which he cannot make an apostolic see.

‡ Memento quia apostolicam sedem regis.—Greg. M. Ep. iv. 37. Remember you rule an apostolic see.

Tertull. de Præscr. 36. Const. Apost. vii. 46.

op of Ephesus ;” nor could be, without displacing Timothy, who by St. Paul was constituted bishop there, or succeeding in his room ; yet he, abiding at Ephesus, did there discharge the office of a metropolitan ;*—“ governing the churches, and in the adjacent churches here constituting bishops, there forming whole churches, elsewhere allotting to the clergy persons designed by the Spirit.”†

Such functions might St. Peter execute in the parts of Rome or Antioch, without being a bishop ; and as the bishops of Asia did, saith Tertullian, “ refer their original to St. John,” so might the bishops of Italy, upon the like ground, “ refer their original to St. Peter.”‡

It is observable, that whereas St. Peter is affirmed to have been bishop of Antioch seven years before his access to Rome, that is, within the compass of St. Luke’s story, yet he passeth over a matter of so great moment ;¹ as St. Jerome observeth.||

I cannot grant, that if St. Luke had thought Peter sovereign of the church, and his episcopacy of a place a matter of such consequence, he would have slipped it over, being so obvious a thing, and coming in the way of his story.

He therefore, I conceive, was no bishop of Antioch, although a bishop at Antioch. §

11. If in objection to some of these discourses it be alleged, that St. James, our Lord’s near kinsman, although he

* Ἀπὸ τοῦ ἁγίου Τιμοθέου μέχρι νῦν κτ’ ἐπίσκοποι ἐγένοντο πάντες ἐν Ἐφέσῳ χειροτονήθησαν.—Syn. Chal. Act. 11 ; 2 Tim. i. 6. From holy Timothy till now there have been seven and twenty bishops, and all ordained at Ephesus. Johanne autem permanente apud eos, &c.—Iren. iii. 3.

† Τὰς αὐτῶν διέτιν ἐκκλησίας—ἔπου μὲν ἐπίσκοπος καταστήσῃν ἔπου δὲ ὅλας ἐκκλησίας ἀρμόσων ἔπου δὲ κληρῖο ἕνα γε τινὰ κληρῖσων τῶν ὑπὸ τοῦ Πνεύματος σηματομένων.—Euseb. Hist. iii. 23.

‡ Ordo episcoporum ad originem recensum in Joannem stabit auctorem.—Tertull. in Marc. iv. 5.

|| Denique primum episcopum Antiochenæ ecclesiæ Petrum fuisse accepimus, et Romam exinde translatum, quod Lucas penitus omisit.—Hier. in Gal. 2. Lastly, we have received by tradition that Peter was the first bishop of Antioch, and from thence translated to Rome : which Luke has altogether omitted.

§ It is the distinction of a pope. Rex Etruriæ, et rex in Etruria.

¹ An. Ch. 39, Baron. § 8 ; Acts ix. 32 ; xi. 20.

was an apostle, was made bishop of Jerusalem ; and that for the like reason St. Peter might assume the bishopric of Rome ;

I answer :

1. It is not certain that St. James the bishop of Jerusalem was an apostle (meaning an apostle of the primary rank ;) for Eusebius (the greatest antiquary of the old times) doth reckon him “ one of the seventy disciples.”*

So doth the author of the Apostolical Constitutions in divers places suppose.†

Hegesippus (that most ancient historian) was of the same mind, who saith that “ there were many of this name,” and that this “ James did undertake the church with the apostles.”‡

Of the same opinion was Epiphanius,¹ who saith, that St. James was the son of Joseph by another wife.

The whole Greek church doth suppose the same, keeping three distinct solemnities for him and the two apostles of the same name.

Gregory Nyssen, St. Jerome, and divers other ancient writers, do concur herein, whom we may see alleged by Grotius, Dr. Hammond (who themselves did embrace the same opinion), Valesius, Blondel,^k &c.

Salmasius (after his confident manner) saith, “ it is certain that he was not one of the twelve :”|| I may at least say, it is not certain that he was, and consequently the objection is grounded on an uncertainty.

2. Granting that St. James was one of the apostles (as some of the ancients seem to think, § calling him an apostle ; and as divers modern divines conceive,

* Εἰς δὲ καὶ οὗτος τῶν φερομένων τοῦ σωτῆρος μαθητῶν, ἀλλὰ μὴν καὶ ἀδελφῶν ἦν.—Euseb. i. 12.

† Apost. Const. vi. 12, 14 ; ii. 55 ; vii. 46, &c. Ἡμεῖς οἱ δώδεκα ἅμα τῷ Ἰακώβῳ—vi. 12. We the twelve apostles together with James.

‡ Διαδέχεται δὲ τὴν ἐκκλησίαν μετὰ τῶν ἀποστόλων ὁ ἀδελφὸς τοῦ Κυρίου Ἰάκωβος.—Euseb. ii. 23.

|| Certum est non fuisse unum ex duodecim.—Sal. Mess. p. 20.

§ Hierosolymitanam, quam primus apostolus Jacobus episcopatu suo rexit—Aug. Conf. Cresc. ii. 37. The church of Jerusalem, which James the apostle first governed by his episcopal power.

¹ Epiph. Hær. 78.

^k Grot. in Jac. i. 1 ; Hamm. Dissert. Ignat. iv. 3 ; Vales. in Euseb. i. 12 ; Blondel. in Epist. Clem. ad Jacob.

grounding chiefly upon these words of St. Paul, *But other of the apostles saw I none, save James the Lord's brother,*¹ and taking *apostles* there in the strictest sense), I answer :

That the case was peculiar, and there doth appear a special reason, why one of the apostles should be designed to make a constant residence at Jerusalem, and consequently to preside there like a bishop. For Jerusalem was the metropolis, the fountain, the centre of the Christian religion, where it had birth, where was greatest matter and occasion of propagating the gospel, most people disposed to embrace it resorting thither ; where the church was very numerous, consisting, as St. Luke (or St. James in him) doth intimate, *of divers myriads of believing Jews ;*² whence it might seem expedient, that a person of greatest authority should be fixed there for the confirming and improving that church, together with the propagation of religion among the people, which resorted thither ; the which might induce the apostles to settle St. James there, both for discharging the office of an apostle, and the supplying the room of a bishop there.

According to him, saith Eusebius, "The episcopal throne was committed by the apostles ;"³ or, "Our Lord" (saith Epiphanius) "did intrust him with his own throne."⁴

But there was no need of fixing an apostle at other places ; nor doth it appear that any was so fixed ; especially St. Peter was incapable of such an employment, requiring settlement and constant attendance, who, beside his general apostleship, had a peculiar apostleship of the dispersed Jews committed to him ; who therefore was much engaged in travel for propagation of the faith, and edifying his converts every where.

3. The greater consent of the most ancient writers making St. James not to have been one of the twelve apostles, it is thence accountable, why (as we before noted) St. James was called by some ancient writers "the bishop of bishops, the

prince of bishops," &c. because he was the first bishop of the "first See," the mother church ; the apostles being excluded from the comparison.

Upon these considerations we have great reason to refuse the assertion or scandal cast on St. Peter, that he took on him to be bishop of Rome, in a strict sense, as it is understood in this controversy.

SUPPOSITION V.

A further assertion is this, superstructed by consequence on the former, "That the bishops of Rome (according to God's institution, and by original right derived thence) should have an universal supremacy and jurisdiction" (containing the privileges and prerogatives formerly described) "over the Christian church."

THIS assertion to be very uncertain, yea, to be most false, I shall by divers considerations evince.

1. If any of the former suppositions be uncertain or false, this assertion, standing on those legs, must partake of those defects, and answerably be dubious or false. If either Peter was not monarch of the apostles, or if his privileges were not successive, or if he were not properly bishop of Rome at his decease, then farewell the Romish claim ; if any of those things be dubious, it doth totter ; if any of them prove false, then down it falleth.

But that each of them is false, hath, I conceive, been sufficiently declared ; that all of them are uncertain, hath at least been made evident.

The structure therefore cannot be firm which relieth on such props.

2. Even admitting all those suppositions, the inference from them is not assuredly valid. For St. Peter might have an universal jurisdiction, he might derive it by succession, he might be bishop of Rome ; yet no such authority might hence accrue to the Roman bishop, his successor in that see.

For that universal jurisdiction might be derived into another channel, and the bishop of Rome might in other respects be successor to him, without being so in this.

As for instance in the Roman empire,

* *Ὡς πρὸς τῶν ἀποστόλων ὁ τῆς ἐπισκοπῆς ἐγκεχ-
είριστο θρόνος.*—Euseb. ii. 23.

† *Ὡς πεπίστευκε Κύριος τὸν θρόνον αὐτοῦ.*—
Epiph. Hæret. 78.

¹ Gal. i. 19.

² Acts xxi. 20.

before any rule of succession was established therein, the emperor was sovereign governor, and he might die consul of Rome, having assumed that place to himself; yet when he died, the supreme authority did not lapse into the hands of the consul who succeeded him, but into the hands of the senate and people; his consular authority only going to his successor in that office. So might St. Peter's universal power be transferred unto the ecclesiastical college of bishops and of the church; his episcopal inferior authority over the singular *παροικία*, or province of Rome, being transmitted to his followers in that chair.

3. That in truth it was thus, and that all the authority of St. Peter, and of all other apostles, was devolved to the church, and to the representative body thereof, the Fathers did suppose; affirming the church to have received from our Lord a sovereign power.

"This" (saith St. Cyprian) "is that one church, which holdeth and possesseth all the power of its Spouse and Lord; in this we preside; for the honour and unity of this we fight"*—saith he, in his Epistle to Iulianus, wherein he doth impugn the proceedings of Pope Stephanus;" the which sentence St. Austin appropriateth to himself, speaking it absolutely, without citing St. Cyprian. To this authority of the church St. Basil would have all that confess the faith of Christ to submit: "To which end we exceedingly need your assistance, that they who confess the apostolic faith would renounce the schisms which they have devised, and submit themselves henceforth to the authority of the church."†

They (after the holy scripture, which saith, that *each bishop hath a care of God's church*, and is *obliged to feed the church of God*—and is *appointed to edify the body of Christ*)^c do suppose the

* Hæc est una quæ tenet et possidet omnem Sponsi sui et Domini potestatem, in hac præsidemus, pro honore ejus et unitate pugnamus.—*Cypr. Ep. 73.*

† 'Εφ' ἅπασιν καὶ μάλιστα τῆς παρ' ἡμῶν χρῆζομεν βοηθείας, ὥστε τοὺς τὴν ἀποστολικὴν ὁμολογουμένως εἶναι, ἀπὸ ἐπὶ νόσησαν, σχίσματα διαλύσαντας, ὑποταγῆναι πρὸς λοιπὸν τῆ αὐθεντίας τῆς ἐκκλησίας.—*Bas. Epist. 69.*

^a Aug. de Bapt. cont. Don. iv. 1.

^c 1 Tim. iii. 5, 15; Acts xx. 28; Eph. iv. 12.

administration of ecclesiastical affairs concerning the public state of the church, the defence of the common faith, the maintenance of order, peace, and unity, jointly to belong unto the whole body of pastors;* according to that of St. Cyprian to Pope Stephanus himself, "Therefore, most dear brother, the body of priests is copious, being joined together by the glue of mutual concord, and the bond of unity, that if any of our college should attempt to make heresy, and to tear or waste the flock of Christ, the rest may come to succour; and like useful and merciful shepherds may re-collect the sheep into the flock."† And again, "Which thing it concerns us to look after and redress, most dear brother, who bearing in mind the divine clemency, and holding the scales of the church-government,"‡ &c.

So even the Roman clergy did acknowledge, "For we ought all of us to watch for the body of the whole church, whose members are digested through several provinces."||

"Like the Trinity, whose power is one and undivided, there is one priesthood among divers bishops."§

So in the Apostolical Constitutions, the apostles tell the bishops, that "an universal episcopacy is entrusted to them."¶

So the council of Carthage with St. Cyprian—"Clear and manifest is the mind and meaning of our Lord Jesus Christ, sending his apostles, and affording

* Collegium sacerdotum.—*Cypr. Ep. lxvii. 52.* Ὑπὲρ πάσης ἐπισκοπῆς τῆς ἐπὶ τῶν οὐρανῶν.—*Apost. Const. viii. 10.*

† Idcirco enim, frater charissime, copiosum corpus est sacerdotum, concordiae mutuae glutino atque unitatis vinculo copulatum, ut si quis ex collegio nostro hæresin facere, et gregem Christi lacerare et vastare tentaverit, subveniant cæteri, et quasi pastores utiles et misericordes oves Domini in gregem colligant.—*Cypr. Ep. 67.*

‡ Cui rei nostrum est consulere, et subvenire, frater charissime, qui divinam clementiam cogitantes, et gubernandæ ecclesiæ libram tenentes, &c.—*Ibid.*

|| Omnes enim nos decet pro corpore totius ecclesiæ, cujus per varias quasque provincias membra digesta sunt, excubare.—*Cler. Romæ apud Cypr. Ep. 30.*

§ Ad Trinitatis instar, cujus una est atque individa potestas, unum esse per diversos antistes sacerdotium.—*P. Symmachus ad Æmilius Arelat.*

¶ Εἰς ἐπιστηρηγῶν ἡμῶν, τῶν τὴν καθόλου ἐπισκοπὴν πεπιστευμένων.—*Const. Apost. vi. 14.*

to them alone the power given him of the Father; in whose room we succeeded governing the church of God with the same power."*

"Christ our Lord and our God going to the Father, commended his spouse to us."†

A very ancient instance of which administration is the proceeding against Paulus Samosatenus; when "the pastors of the churches, some from one place, some from another, did assemble together against him as a pest of Christ's flock, all of them hastening to Antioch;"‡ where they deposed, exterminated, and deprived him of communion, warning the whole church to reject and disavow him.

"Seeing the pastoral charge is common to us all, who bear the episcopal office, although thou sittest in a higher and more eminent place."||

"Therefore for this cause the holy church is committed to you and to us, that we may labour for all, and not be slack in yielding help and assistance to all."§

Hence St. Chrysostom said of Eustathius his bishop: "For he was well instructed and taught by the grace of the Holy Spirit, that a president or bishop of a church ought not to take care of that church alone, wherewith he is intrusted by the Holy Ghost, but also of the whole church dispersed throughout the world."¶

* Manifesta est sententia Domini nostri Jesu Christi apostolos suos mittentis, et ipsis solis potestatem a Petro sibi datam permittentis, quibus nos successimus, eadem potestate ecclesiam Domini gubernantes.—*Conc. Carth. apud Cypr. p. 405.*

† Christus Dominus et Deus noster ad Patrem proficiscens, sponsam suam nobis commendavit — *Ibid. p. 404.*

‡ Οι λοιποι των εκκλησιων ποιμενες αλλοι αλλοθεν ως επι λυμενωνα της του Χριστου ποιμνης συνιεσαν, οί τινες επι την Αντιόχεια σπεύσαντες.—*Euseb. vii. 27.*

§ Cum communis sit omnibus nobis, qui fungimur episcopatus officio, quamvis ipse in eo præminens celsiore fastigio, specula pastoralis — *Aug. ad Bonif. contra duas Epist. Plag. i. 1.*

¶ Hujus ergo rei gratia vobis et nobis sancta commissa est ecclesia, ut pro omnibus laboremus, et cunctis opem ferre non negligamus — *P. Joh. I. Ep. 1, (ad Zachar.) apud Bin. tom. iii. p. 812.*

¶ Και γαρ ην παιδευμένος καλως παρα της του πατρως χάριτος, οτι της εκκλησιας προσωτα ούκ εινης μόνης κηδεσθαι δεί της παρα του πνεύματος

They consequently did repute schism, or ecclesiastical rebellion, to consist in "a departure from the consent of the body of the priesthood,"* as St. Cyprian in divers places doth express it in his epistles to pope Stephen and others.

They deem all bishops to partake of the apostolical authority, according to that of St. Basil to St. Ambrose: "The Lord himself hath translated thee from the judges of the earth unto the prelacy of the apostles."†

They took themselves all to be vicars of Christ, and judges in his stead; according to that of St. Cyprian: "For heresies are sprung up, and schisms grown from no other ground nor root but this, because God's priest was not obeyed, nor was there one priest or bishop for a time in the church, nor a judge thought on for a time to supply the room of Christ."‡ Where that by *church* is meant any particular church, and by *priest* a bishop of such church, any one not bewitched with prejudice by the tenor of St. Cyprian's discourse will easily discern.||

They conceive that our Saviour did promise to St. Peter the keys in behalf of the church, and as representing it.¶

They suppose the combination of bishops in peaceable consent and mutual aid, to be the *rock* on which the church is built.

They allege the authority granted to St. Peter as a ground of claim to the same in all bishops jointly, and in each bishop singly, according to his *rata pars*, or allotted proportion.

"Which may easily be understood by the words of our Lord, when he says to

εγχειρισθεις αυτω, αλλα και πάσης κατα την οικουμένην κειμένης.—*Chrys. tom. v. Or. 93.*

* A corpore nostri, et sacerdotii consensione discesserit — *Cypr. Ep. 67.* Qui se ab ecclesie vinculo, atque a sacerdotum collegio separat.—*Cypr. Ep. 52.*

† Αυτός σε ο Κύριος από των κριτών της γης επι την προεδριαν των αποστολών μετέθηκεν.—*Basil. Ep. 56.*

‡ Neque enim aliunde hæreses obortæ sunt, aut nata sunt schismata, quam inde quod sacerdoti Dei non obtemperetur, nec unus in ecclesia ad tempus sacerdos, et ad tempus judex vice Christi cogitatur.—*Cypr. Ep. 55.*

|| Episcopus personam habet Christi, et vicarius Domini est.—*Ambr. in 1 Cor. 11.* The bishop sustains the person of Christ, and is the vicar of our Lord.

¶ *Cypr. Ep. 27.*

blessed Peter, whose place the bishops supply, *Whatsoever*,"* &c.

"I have the sword of Constantine in my hands, you of Peter,"† said our great King Edgar.

They do therefore in this regard take themselves all to be successors of St. Peter, that his power is derived to them all, and that the whole episcopal order "is the chair by the Lord's voice founded on St. Peter."‡ Thus St. Cyprian in divers places (before touched) discourseth; and thus Firmilian from the keys granted to St. Peter inferreth, disputing against the Roman bishop: "Therefore" (saith he) "the power of remitting sins is given to the apostles, and to the churches, which they being sent from Christ did constitute, and to the bishops, which do succeed them by vicarious ordination."‡

4. The bishops of any other churches founded by the apostles, in the Fathers' style are successors of the apostles, in the same sense, and to the same intent, as the bishop of Rome is by them accounted successor of St. Peter; the apostolical power, which in extent was universal, being in some sense, in reference to them, not quite extinct, but transmitted by succession: yet the bishops of apostolical churches did never claim, nor allowedly exercise, apostolical jurisdiction beyond their own precincts; according to those words of St. Jerome, "Tell me, what doth Palestine belong to the bishop of Alexandria?"||

This sheweth the inconsequence of their discourse; for in like manner the pope might be successor to St. Peter, and St. Peter's universal power might be successive, yet the pope have no singular claim thereto, beyond the bounds of his particular church.

5. So again, for instance, St. James

* Quod ex verbis Domini facile intelligi potest, quibus B. Petro, cujus vicem episcopi gerunt, ait, Quodcumque, &c. *Capit. Caroli M. lib. v. cap. 163.*

† Ego Constantini, vos Petri gladium habetis in manibus.

‡ *Præsertim ergo remittendorum peccatorum apostolorum una est, et ecclesiis quas illi a Christo missi constituerunt, et episcopis qui eis ordinatione vicaria succedunt.*—*Firmil. apud Cypri. Ep. 75.*

§ Responde mihi, ad Alexandrinum episcopum Palaestina quid pertinet?—*Hier. ad Pammach. Ep. lxi. 15.*

(whom the Roman church, in her liturgies, doth avow for an apostle) was bishop of Jerusalem more unquestionably than St. Peter was bishop of Rome; Jerusalem also was the root, and "the mother of all churches"* (as the Fathers of the second general synod, in their letter to Pope Damasus himself, and the occidental bishops did call it, forgetting the singular pretence of Rome to that title.)

Yet the bishops of Jerusalem, successors of St. James, did not thence claim I know not what kind of extensive jurisdiction; yea, notwithstanding their succession, they did not so much as obtain a metropolitical authority in Palestine, which did belong to Cæsarea (having been assigned thereto in conformity to the civil government), and was by special provision "reserved thereto" in the Synod of Nice;‡ whence St. Jerome did not stick to affirm, that the bishop of Jerusalem was subject to the bishop of Cæsarea;‡ for, speaking to John bishop of Jerusalem, who for compurgation of himself from errors imputed to him had appealed to Theophilus bishop of Alexandria, he saith, "Thou hadst rather cause molestation to ears possessed, than render honour to thy metropolitan,"|| that is, to the bishop of Cæsarea.

By which instance we may discern what little consideration sometimes was had of personal or topical succession to the apostles in determining the extent of jurisdiction: and why should the Roman bishop upon that score pretend more validity than others?

6. St. Peter, probably ere that he came at Rome, did found divers other churches, whereof he was paramount bishop, or did retain a special superintendency over them;‡ particularly "An-

* *Τῆς μητρὸς ἀπαρχῶν τῶν ἐκκλησιῶν, τῆς ἐν Ἱερουσαλὴμοις.*—Theodor. v. 9. Mater Christiani nominis.—*Imper. Just. ad P. Hormisd. apud Bin. tom. iii. p. 794.* The mother of the Christian name.

† *Τῷ μητροπόλει σωζομένου τοῦ οἰκείου ἀξιώματος.*—*Conc. Nic. Can. 7.*

‡ *Ibi dicitur, ut Palaestina metropolis Cæsarea sit.*—*Hier. Ep. lxi. 15.* It is there decreed, that Cæsarea should be the metropolis of Palestine.

§ *Maluisti occupatis auribus molestias facere, quam debitum metropolitano tuo honorem reddere.*—*Hier. ad Pammach. Ep. lxi. 15.*

¶ *Hier. ad Galat. 2; P. Pelag. II. Ep. 1.*

tiocli was anciently called his See,"* and he is acknowledged to have sat there seven years before he was bishop of Rome.

Why therefore may not the bishop of Antioch pretend to succeed Peter in his universal pastorship, as well as his younger brother of Rome? why should Eudodius, ordained by St. Peter at Antioch, yield to Clemens, afterward by him ordained at Rome?

Antioch was the firstborn of Gentile churches, where the name of Christians was first heard; Antioch was (as the Constantinopolitan Fathers called it) "the most ancient and truly apostolical church."†

Antioch, by virtue of St. Peter's sitting there, or peculiar relation to it, was (according to their own conceits) the principal See.‡

Why therefore should St. Peter be so unkind to it, as not only to relinquish it, but to debase it; not only transferring his See from it, but divesting it of the privilege which it had got?

Why should he prefer before it the city of Rome, the mystical Babylon, *the mother of abominations of the earth*, the throne of Satan's empire, the place which did then most persecute the Christian faith, and *was drunk with the blood of the saints*?||

7. The ground of this preference was, say they, St. Peter's will:† and they have reason to say so; for otherwise if St. Peter had died intestate, the elder son of Antioch would have had the best right to all his goods and dignities.§

* — θρόνον τῆς Ἀντιοχείου μεγαλοπδλεων, τὸν τοῦ ἀγίου Πέτρου.—Syn. Chalced. Act. vii p. 264.

† Προσβυτάτη καὶ ὄντως ἀποστολικὴ ἐκκλησία.—Theod. v. 9.

‡ Ubi imperator, ibi Roma. Where the emperor is, there is Rome.

|| Sic et Babylon apud Joannem nostrum Romanæ urbis figura est, proinde et magnæ et regno superbæ, et sanctorum debellatrici.—Tertull. adv. Jud. cap. 9. So also Babylon in our St. John is a type of the city of Rome, and therefore of a great, royal, and proud city, and a subduer of the saints.

§ Potuisset Petrus nullam sedem particularem sibi unquam eligere, sicut fecit primis quinque annis.—Ibid. Peter might have chosen to himself no particular city, as he did the first five years.

† Acts xi. 26.

* Rev. xvii. 5, 6.

† Bell. ii. 12.

But how doth that will appear? in what tables was it written? in what registers is it extant? in whose presence did he nuncupate it? it is nowhere to be seen or heard of.

Neither do they otherwise know of it, than by reasoning it out; and in effect they say only that it was fit he should will it: but they may be mistaken in their divinations; and perhaps, notwithstanding them, St. Peter might will as well to his former See of Antioch, as to his latter of Rome.

8. Indeed Bellarmine sometimes positively and briskly enough doth affirm, that "God did command St. Peter to fix his see at Rome:"* but his proofs of it are so ridiculously fond and weak, that I grudge the trouble of reciting them; and he himself sufficiently confuteth them, by saying elsewhere, "It is not unprobable, that our Lord gave an express command, that Peter should so fix his See at Rome, that the bishop of Rome should absolutely succeed him."†

He saith it is not improbable; if it be no more than so, it is uncertain; it may be a mere conjecture or a dream.

It is much more not unprobable, that if God had commanded it, there would have been some assurance of a command so very important.

9. Antioch hath at least a fair plea for a share in St. Peter's prerogatives; for it did ever hold the repute of an apostolical church, and upon that score some deference was paid to it: why so, if St. Peter did carry his see with all its prerogatives to another place? But if he carried with him only part of his prerogative, leaving some part behind at Antioch, how much then, I pray, did he leave there? why did he divide unequally, or leave less than half? If perchance he did leave half, the bishop of Antioch is equal to him of Rome.

10. Other persons also may be found, who according to equal judgment might have a better title to the succession of Peter in his universal authority than the pope; having a nearer relation to him

* Jubente Domino, ii. 1. Deus ipse jussit Romæ figi apostolicam Petri sedem. iv. 4.

† Non est improbabile Dominum etiam aperte jussisse, ut sedem suam Petrus ita figeret Romæ, ut Romanus episcopus absolute ei succederet.—Bell. ii. 12, § Et quoniam.

than he (although his successor in one charge), or upon other equitable grounds.

For instance, St. John, or any other apostle who did survive St. Peter: for if St. Peter was the father of Christians (which title yet our Saviour forbiddeth any one to assume), St. John might well claim to be his eldest son; and it had been a very hard case for him to have been postponed in the succession; it had been a derogation to our Lord's own choice, a neglect of his special affection, a disparagement of the apostolical office, for him to be subjected to any other; neither could any other pretend to the like gifts for management of that great charge.

11. The bishop of Jerusalem might with much reason have put in his claim thereto, as being successor of our Lord himself, who unquestionably was the High Priest of our profession, and Archbishop of all our souls; whose See was the mother of all churches; wherein St. Peter himself did at first reside, exercising his vicarship: if our Lord, upon special accounts out of course, had put the sovereignty into St. Peter's hands, yet after his decease it might be fit that it should return into its proper channel.

This may seem to have been the judgment of the times, when the author of the Apostolical Constitutions did write, who reporteth the apostles to have ordered prayers to be made first for James, then for Clement, then for Euodius.

12. Equity would rather have required, that one should by common consent and election of the whole church be placed in St. Peter's room, than that the bishop of Rome, by election of a few persons there, should succeed into it.

As the whole body of pastors was highly concerned in that succession, so it was reasonable that all of them should concur in designation of a person thereto; it is not reasonable to suppose that either God would institute, or St. Peter by will should devise a course of proceeding in such a case so unequal and unsatisfactory.

If therefore the church, considering this equity of the case, together with the expediency of affairs in relation to its good, should undertake to choose for itself another monarch (the bishop of another Sec, who should seem fitter for the

place), to succeed into the prerogatives of St. Peter, that person would have a fairer title to that office than the Pope; for such a person would have a real title, grounded on some reason of the case; whereas the Pope's pretence doth only stand upon a positive institution, whereof he cannot exhibit any certificate. This was the mind of a great man among themselves; who saith, *that "if possibly the bishop of Triers should be chosen for head of the church. For the church has free power to provide itself a head."

Bellarmino himself confesseth, that "if St. Peter" (as he might have done if he had pleased) "should have chosen no particular See, as he did not for the first five years, then after Peter's death, neither the bishop of Rome nor of Antioch had succeeded, but he whom the church should have chosen for itself."† Now if the church upon that supposition would have had such a right, it is not probable that St. Peter "by his fact" would have deprived it thereof, or willingly done any thing in prejudice to it; there being apparently so much equity, that the church should have a stroke in designation of its pastor.

In ancient times there was not any small church which had not a suffrage in the choice of its pastor; and was it fitting that all the church should have one imposed on it without its consent?‡

If we consider the manner in ancient time of electing and constituting the Ro-

* Quod si per possibile Trevirensis eligeretur pro capite ecclesiæ. Habet enim ecclesia potestatem liberam sibi de capite providendi — *Card. Cus. de Conc. Cath.* ii. 13 —

† Nam potuisset Petrus nullam sedem particularem sibi unquam eligere, sicut fecit primis quinque annis, et tunc moriente Petro, non episcopus Romanus, neque Antiochenus successisset, sed is quem ecclesia sibi elegisset. — *Bell.* ii. 12.

‡ Nulla ratio sinit, ut inter episcopos habeantur, qui nec a clericis sunt electi, nec a plebis expetiti, nec a comprovincialibus episcopis cum metropolitani judicio consecrati. — *P. Leo I.* Ep. 92. No reason will admit, that they should be esteemed bishops, who are neither chosen by the clergy, nor desired by the people, nor consecrated by the bishops of the same province, with the consent of the metropolitan. Nullus in vitis detur episcopus: cleri, plebis, et ordinis consensus requiratur. — *P. Celest. I.* Ep. 2. *Grat. Dist.* 61, cap. 13. Let there be no bishop imposed on any against their wills: let the consent of the clergy and people, and his own order be required.

ishop, we may thence discern not he improbability, but iniquity of pretence: how was he then chosen? by a general synod of bishops, or delegates from all parts of Christendom, whereby the common interest might appear, and whereby the might be satisfied that one was fit for that high office? No; he chosen, as usually then other participations were, by the clergy and people of Rome; none of the world being us of the proceeding, or bearing share therein.

Was it equal that such a power of giving a sovereign on all the grave, and on all the good people of the Christian world, should be granted to him?

Is it fitting that such a charge, impeding advancement above all pastors, being intrusted with the welfare of the Church in Christendom, should be the subject of an election liable to so many and corruptions; which assuredly, if not almost constantly, would be produced by ambition, bribery, or partiality, could be managed by popular factions and tumults?

As observed generally of such elections by Nazianzen, that "prelacies were rather by virtue than by naughtiness, and that episcopal thrones did not belong to the more worthy, than to the more powerful."*

declaring his mind or wish, that such of bishops should "rest only on the best men; not in the wealthiest; or in the impetuous and unreasonableness of the people, among them in those who are most bought and bribed;" whereby he declares the common practice, and subjoins, "But now I can hardly avoid that the popular (or civil) government are better ordered than ours, and are reputed to have divine grace given them."†

ὅτι ἐξ ἀρετῆς, μᾶλλον, ἢ κακοῦργίας ἢ προσηγοριῶν ἀξιοτέρων μᾶλλον, ἢ δυνατωτέρων οἱ Naz. Or. xx. p. 335.

οἷς ἔδει τῆς τοιαύτης προβολῆς κείσθαι μάλιστα—ἀλλὰ μὴ τοῖς εὐπορωτάτοις τε σπῆραις, ἢ φορᾷ δῆμον καὶ ἀλογίᾳ, καὶ τούτων μάλιστα τοῖς εὐνοῦτάτοις· οὐδὲν δὲ κινδυνεύουσαν ἀρχὴν εὐτακτωτέρας ὑπολαμβάνειν τῶν αἰῶν ἢ θείᾳ χάριτι ἐπιφημιζέται.—Greg. xix. p. 310.

And that the Roman elections in that time were come into that course, we may see by the relation and reflections of an honest pagan historian concerning the election of Pope Damasus (contemporary of Gregory Nazianzen:) "Damasus" (saith he) "and Ursinus, above human measure burning with desire to snatch the episcopal See, and, with divided parties, most fiercely conflict:"* in which conflict, upon one day, in the very church, an hundred and thirty persons were slain; so did that great pope get into the chair: thus, as the historian reflecteth, "the wealth and pomp of the place naturally did provoke ambition"† by all means to seek it, and did cause fierce contentions to arise in the choice; whence commonly, wise and modest persons being excluded from any capacity thereof, any ambitious and cunning man, who had the art or the luck to please the multitude, would by violence obtain it: which was a goodly way of constituting a sovereign to the church.

Thus it went within three ages after our Lord; and afterwards, in the declensions of Christian simplicity and integrity, matters were not like to be mended, but did indeed rather grow worse; as beside the reports and complaints of historians, how that commonly by ambitious presentations, by simoniacal corruptions, by political bandying, by popular factions, by all kinds of sinister ways, men crept into the place, doth appear by those many dismal schisms, which gave the church many pretended heads, but not one certain one; as also by the result of them, being the choice of persons very unworthy and horribly flagitious.‡

* Damasus et Ursinus supra humanum modum ad rapiendam episcopalem sedem ardentibus scissis studiis acerrime conflictabantur.—Am. Marcell. lib. 27.

† Neque ego ab uno ostentationem rerum considerans urbanarum, hujus rei cupidus, &c.—Id. Ibid.

‡ Damasus II. pontificatum per vim occupat, nullo cleri populi que consensu; adeo enim inoleverat hic mos, ut jam cuique ambitioso liceret Petri sedem invadere.—Plat. (p. 314.) Damasus II. invades the popedom by force, without any consent of the clergy and people; for so was it now grown into custom, that any ambitious man might invade Peter's see. Eo enim tum pontificatus devenerat, ut qui plus largitione et ambitione, non dico sanctitate vitæ
* Sozom. vi. 23.

If it be said that the election of a pope in old times was wont to be approved by the consent of all bishops in the world, according to the testimony of St. Cyprian, who saith of Cornelius, that "he was known by the testimony of his fellow bishops, whose whole number through all the world did with peaceful unanimity consent :"*

I answer, that this consent was not in the election, or antecedently to it; that it was only by letters or messages declaring the election, according to that of St. Cyprian; † that it was not anywise pecu-

et doctrina valeret, is tantummodo dignitatis gradum bonis oppressis et rejectis obtineret: quem morem utinam aliquando non retinuisset nostra tempora.—*Plat. in Silv.* 3 For the business of the papacy was come to that pass, that whoever by bribery and ambition, I say not by holiness of life and learning, got the start of others, he alone obtained that degree of dignity, good men in the mean being depressed and rejected: which custom I would to God our times had not retained. Cum jam eo devenissent ecclesiastici, ut non coacti ut antea, sed sponte et largitionibus pontificium munus obirent—*Plat. in Steph.* 6. *Baron. ann.* 112. § 8. Whenas now ecclesiastical persons are come to that pass, that they execute the papal office, not being compelled unto it, as heretofore, but of their own accord, and by bribing for it. Videbat enim Imperator eo licentiæ factiosum quemque et potentem, quamvis ignobilem devenisse, ut corruptis suffragiis tantam dignitatem consequeretur, &c.—*Plat in Clem.* ii. (p. 313.) For the emperor saw that every factious and powerful person, though base and ignoble, was grown to that height of licentiousness, that he obtained so great dignity by corruption and buying of suffrages. Omne papale negotium manus agunt: quem dabis mihi de tota maxima urbe, qui te in papam receperit, pretio seu spe pretii non interveniente?—*Bern. de Consid.* iv. 2. The whole business of making a pope is managed by gifts: whom can you shew me, in all this great city, who took you into the papacy without being bribed and corrupted with reward, or at least with hope of it?

* — co-episcoporum testimonio, quorum numerus universus per totum mundum concordii unanimitate consentit.—*Cypr. Ep.* 52. Cum Fabiani locus, id est cum locus Petri, et gradus cathedræ sacerdotalis vacaret, quo occupato de Dei voluntate atque omnium nostrum consensione —. *Ibid.* When Fabianus's place, i. e. when the place of Peter, and the degree of the sacerdotal chair was vacant, which being obtained by the will of God and all our consents —.

† Satis erat ut tu te episcopum factum literis nunciasses. &c.—*Cypr. Ep.* 42. It was enough that you declared by letters that you were made bishop.

liar to the Roman bishop, but such was yielded to all Catholic bishops, each of whom "was to be approved" (as St. Cyprian saith) "by the testimony and judgment of his colleagues;"* that it was in order only to the maintaining fraternal communion and correspondence, signifying that such a bishop was duly elected by his clergy and people, was rightly ordained by his neighbour bishops, did profess the Catholic faith, and was therefore qualified for communion with his brethren; such a consent to the election of any bishop of old was given (especially upon occasion, and when any question concerning the right of a bishop did intervene), whereof now in the election of a pope no footstep doth remain.

We may also note, that the election of Cornelius being contested, he did more solemnly acquaint all the bishops of the world with his case, and so did obtain their approbation in a way more than ordinary.†

13. If God had designed this derivation of universal sovereignty, it is probable that he would have prescribed some certain, standing, immutable way of election, and imparted the right to certain persons, and not left it at such uncertainty to the chances of time, so that the manner of election hath often changed, and the power of it tossed into divers hands.

"And though in several times there have been observed several ways as to the election of the Roman pontiffs, according as the necessity and expediency of the church required."‡

Of old it was (as other elections) managed by nomination of the clergy, and suffrage of the people.

Afterward the emperors did assume to themselves the nomination or approbation of them.

"For then nothing was done by the clergy in the choice of the pope, unless

* Episcopo semel facto, et collegarum ac plebis testimonio et judicio comprobato—*Cypr. Ep.* 41.

† Et licet diversis temporibus diversi modi super electione Romanorum pontificum observati sunt, prout necessitas, et utilitas ecclesiæ exposcebat —. *Conc. Bas. sess. xxxvii. p.* 98. Vide *Grat. Dist.* 63. per tot.

‡ Euseb.

the emperor had approved his election."*

"But he, seeing the prince's consent was required, sent messengers with letters, to entreat Mauritius that he would not suffer the election made by the clergy and people of Rome in that case to be valid."†

"Leo VIII. being tired out with the inconstancy of the Romans, transferred the whole power and authority of choosing the pope from the clergy and people of Rome to the emperor."‡

At some times the clergy had no hand in the election; but popes were intruded by powerful men or women at their pleasure.||

Afterwards the cardinals (that is, some of the chief Roman clergy) did appropriate the election to themselves, by the decree of Pope Nicholas II. in his Lateran synod.▼

Sometimes, out of course, general synods did assume the choice to themselves; as at Constance, Pisa, and Basil.

14. From the premises, to conclude the pope's title to St. Peter's authority, it is requisite to show the power demised by him to be according to God's institution and intent, immutable and indefectible; for power built upon the like, but far more certain principles, hath in course of times, and by worldly changes, been quite lost, or conveyed into other channels than those wherein it was first put; and that irrecoverably, so that it cannot anywise be retrieved, or reduced into the first order.

For instance, Adam was by God constituted universal sovereign of mankind;

* Nil enim tum a clero in eligendo pontifice actum erat, nisi ejus electionem imperator approbasset.—*Plat. in Pelag. II.*

† Is autem, cum principis consensus requireretur, nuncios cura literis miserat qui Mauritium obsecrarent, ne pateretur electionem cleri et populi Romani ea in re valere.—*Plat. in Greg. M. Vide Grat. Dist. 63.*

‡ Conc. tom. vii. p. 182. Leo VIII. Romanorum inconstantiam pertæsus, auctoritatem omnem eligendi pontificis a clero, propuloque Romano ad imperatorem transtulit.—*Plat. in Leo VIII. (p. 291.)*

|| Nusquam cleri eligentis, vel postea consentientis aliqua mentio.—*Baron. ann. 112, s. 8; ann. 131, s. 1.* There was nowhere any mention of the clergy electing, or afterwards consenting.

▼ *Grat. Dist. xxiii. cap. 1, Plat. in Nic. II.*

and into that power his eldest son of right did succeed; and so it of right should have been continually propagated.

Yet soon did that power fail, or was diverted into other courses; the world being cantonized into several dominions; so that the *heir at law* among all the descendants of Adam cannot so easily be found, as *a needle in a bottle of hay*, he probably is a subject, and perhaps is a peasant.

So might St. Peter be monarch of the church, and the pope might succeed him; yet by revolutions of things, by several defaults and incapacities in himself, by divers obstructions incident, by forfeiture upon encroaching on other men's rights, according to that maxim of a great pope, "He loseth his own, who coveteth more than his due,"* his power might be clipped, might be transplanted, might utterly decay and fail; to such fatalities other powers are subject; nor can that of the pope be exempt from them, as elsewhere we shall more largely declare.

15. Indeed that God did intend his church should perpetually subsist united in any one political frame of government, is a principle which they do assume and build upon, but can nowise prove. Nor indeed is it true. For,

If the unity of the church designed and instituted by God were only an unity of faith, of charity, of peace, of fraternal communion and correspondence between particular societies and pastors, then in vain it is to seek for the subject and seat of universal jurisdiction. Now that God did not intend any other unity, than such as those specified, we have good reason to judge, and shall, we hope, elsewhere sufficiently prove.

16. We may consider, that really the sovereign power (such as it is pretended) hath often failed, there having been for long spaces of time no Roman bishop at all, upon several accounts; which is a sign that the church may subsist without it.

As, 1. When Rome was demolished by the Goths, Vandals, and Lombards
2. In times when the Romans would not suffer popes to live with them

* *Properia parit qui indoluit multiplicat*
P. Leo I. Ep. 11

▼ *Vide Baron. Ep. 440, 441, 442, 443*

3. In case of discontinuance from Rome, when the popes (so calling themselves) did for above seventy years abide in France; when they indeed, not being chosen by the Roman people, nor exercising pastoral care over them, were only titular, not real bishops of Rome (they were popes of Avignon, not of Rome; and successors of God knows who, not of St. Peter;) no more than one continually living in England can be bishop of Jerusalem.

4. In times of many long schisms (twenty-two schisms), when either there was no true pope, or, which in effect was the same, no certain one.*

5. When popes were intruded by violence, whom Baronius himself positively affirmeth to have been no popes:† how then could a succession of true popes be continued from them by the clergy, which they in virtue of their papal authority did pretend to create?

6. When elections had a flaw in them, were uncanonical, and so null.

7. When popes were simoniacally chosen; who by their own rules and laws are no true popes; being heretics, heresiarchs.†

The which was done for long courses of time very commonly, and in a manner constantly.‡

8. When popes have been deposed (as some by the emperors, others by general councils;) in which case, according to papal principles, the successors were illegal; for the pope being sovereign, he

* — Inopem me copia fecit.

† P. Greg. VII. Ep. iii. 7; P. Jul. in Conc. Lat. sess. v. p. 57. Non solum hujusmodi electio vel assumptio eo ipso nulla existat — &c.—Vide sup. s. 12. Such an election or assumption, let it not only be upon that account void and null.

‡ Vide quæso quantum isti degeneraverint a majoribus suis; illi enim utpote viri sanctissimi dignitatem ultro oblatam contemnebant, orationi et doctrinæ Christianæ vacantes; hi vero largitione et ambitione pontificatum quarrentes, et adepti, posthabito divino cultu, &c.—Plat. in Serg. 3 (p. 279;) vide — in Brentd. IV. p. 277. See, I beseech you, how much they have degenerated from their ancestors; for they as being very holy men did contemn that dignity when freely offered, giving themselves wholly to prayer and the doctrine of Christ; but these by bribery and ambition seek and obtain the papacy.

† Baron. ad an. 112, s. 8.

could not be judged or deposed; and his successor is an usurper.

9. When popes were heretical, that is (say they) no popes.

10. When atheists, sorcerers, —

Elections in some of these cases being null, and therefore the acts consequent to them invalid, there is probably a defaultance of right continued to posterity.*

And probably, therefore, there is now no true pope.

For (upon violent intrusion, or simoniacal choice, or any usurpation) the cardinals, bishops, &c. which the pope createth, are not truly such; and consequently their votes not good in the choice of another pope; and so successively.

These considerations may suffice to declare the inconsequence of their discourses, even admitting their assertions, which yet are so false, or so apparently uncertain.

I shall in the next place level some arguments directly against their main conclusion itself.

I. My first argument against this pretence shall be, that it is destitute of any good warrant, either from divine or human testimony; and so is groundless. As will appear by the following considerations.

1. If God had designed the bishop of Rome to be for the perpetual course of times sovereign monarch of his church, it may reasonably be supposed that he would expressly have declared his mind in the case;† it being a point of greatest importance of all that concern the administration of his kingdom in the world. Princes do not use to send their viceroys unfurnished with patents, clearly signifying their commission, that no man, out of ignorance or doubt concerning that point, excusably may refuse compliance;

* Plat. in Joh. x (p. 275.) Pontifices ipsi a Petri vestigiis discesserant. The popes had swerved from the examples of Peter. Possessor malæ fidei ullo tempore non præscribit.—Reg. Jur. 2, in Sixto. He that has no right to the thing he possesses, cannot prescribe or plead any length of time to make his possession lawful.

† Nec vero simile sit, ut rem tam necessariam ad ecclesiæ unitatem continendam Christus Dominus apostolis suis non revelarit.—Melch. can. vi. 8. Neither is it likely that our Lord Christ would not have revealed to his apostles a thing so necessary for preserving the unity of the church.

and in all equity promulgation is requisite to the establishment of any law, or exacting obedience. But in all the pandects of divine revelation, the bishop of Rome is not so much as once mentioned, either by name, or by character, or by probable intimation; they cannot hook him in otherwise, than by straining hard, and framing a long chain of consequences, each of which is too subtle for to constrain any man's persuasion: they have indeed found the pope in the first chapter of Genesis; for (if we believe Pope Innocent III.) he is one of the "two great luminaries" there;* and he is as plainly there, as any where else in the Bible.

Wherefore, if upon this account we should reject this pretence, we might do it justly; and for so doing we have the allowance of the ancient Fathers; for they did not hold any man obliged to admit any point of doctrine, or rule of manners, which is not in express words, or in terms equivalent, contained in holy scripture; or which at least might not thence be deduced by clear and certain inference: this their manner of disputing with heretics and heterodox people doth shew; this appeareth by their way of defining and settling doctrines of faith; this they often do avow in plain words applicable to our case: for, "If" (saith St. Austin) "about Christ, or about his church, or about any other thing, which concerneth our faith and life, I will not say we, who are nowise comparable to him who said, *Although we*; but even as he going on did add, *If an angel from heaven should tell you, beside what you have received in the legal and evangelical scriptures, let him be anathema;*"† in which words we have St.

* Ad firmamentum igitur cœli, hoc est universalis ecclesiæ, fecit Deus duo magna luminaria, id est, duas instituit dignitates, quæ sunt Pontificalis auctoritas, et regalis potestas; sed illa quæ præest diebus, id est, spiritualibus, major est; quæ vero carnalibus, minor, &c.—*Innoc. III. in Decret. Greg. I. xxxiii. 6.* For the firmament therefore of heaven, *i. e.* of the universal church, God made two great lights; *i. e.* he ordained two dignities or powers, which are the pontifical authority, and the regal power: but that which rules the days, *i. e.* spiritual matters, is the greater; but that which governs carnal things is the lesser, &c.

† Proinde sive de Christo, sive de ejus ecclesia, sive de quacunque alia re, quæ pertinet

Austin's warrant, not only to refuse, but to detest this doctrine, which being nowhere extant in law or gospel, is yet obtruded on us, as nearly relating both to Christ and his church, as greatly concerning both our faith and practice.

2. To enforce this argument, we may consider that the evangelists do speak about the propagation, settlement, and continuance of our Lord's kingdom; that the apostles do often treat about the state of the church and its edification, order, peace, unity; about the distinction of its officers and members; about the qualifications, duties, graces, privileges of spiritual governors and guides; about prevention and remedy of heresies, schisms, disorders: upon any of which occasions how is it possible that the mention of such a spiritual monarch (who was to have a main influence on each of those particulars) should wholly escape them, if they had known such an one instituted by God.

In the Levitical law, all things concerning the high priest, not only his designation, succession, consecration, duty, power, maintenance, privileges, but even his garments, marriage, mourning, &c. are punctually determined and described: and is it not wonderful, that in the many descriptions of the new law, no mention should be made concerning any duty or privilege of its high priest, whereby he might be directed in the administration of his office, and know what observance to require?

3. Whereas also the scripture doth inculcate duties of all sorts, and doth not forget frequently to press duties of respect and obedience toward particular governors of the church, is it not strange, that it never should bestow one precept whereby we might be instructed and admonished to pay our duty to the universal pastor; especially considering, that God, who directed the pens of the apostles, and who intended that their writings should continue for the perpetual instruction of Christians, did foresee how re-

ad fidem vitamque nostram, non dicam nos, nequaquam comparandi ei qui dixit, *Licet si nos*, sed omnino quod sequutus adjecit, *Si angelus de celo vobis annuntiaverit*, præterquam quod in scripturis legalibus ac evangelicis accepistis, anathema sit.—*Aug. Contr. Petil. iii. 6*

* Exod. xxviii. 1, 4; Levit. xxi.

quisite such a precept would be to secure that duty? for if but one such precept did appear, it would do the business, and void all contestation about it.

4. They who so carefully do exhort to honour and obey the temporal sovereignty, how come they so wholly to wave urging the no less needful obligations to obey the spiritual monarch? while they are so mindful of the emperor, why are they so neglectful of the pope; insomuch, that divers popes afterward, to ground and urge obedience to them, are fain to borrow those precepts which command obedience to princes, accommodating them by analogy and inference to themselves?*

5. Particularly St. Peter, one would think, who doth so earnestly enjoin to obey *the king as supreme*, and to *honour him*,^b should not have been unmindful of his successors; or quite have forborne to warn Christians of the respect due to them: surely the popes afterward do not follow him in this reservedness; for in their Decretal Epistles they urge nothing so much as obedience to the apostolical see.

6. One might have expected something of that nature from St. Paul himself, who did write so largely to the Romans, and so often from Rome; that at least some word, or some intimation, should have dropped from him concerning these huge rights and privileges of this *see*, and of the regard due to it. Particularly then, when he professedly doth enumerate the offices, instituted by God, for standing use and perpetual duration; for *the perfecting of the saints, for the work of the ministry, for the edifying of the body of Christ; till we all come in the unity of faith*,* &c.

He commendeth them for their faith, which *was spoken of through the whole world*; yet "giving them no advantage above others;"[†] as St. Chrysostom observeth on those words, *for obedience to*

the faith among all nations, among whom also are ye.[‡] "This" (saith St. Chrysostom) "he saith to depress their conceit, to void their haughtiness of mind, and to teach them (to deem others equal in dignity with them)."[§]

When he writeth to that church (which was some time after St. Peter had settled the popedom), he doth only style them *κλητοι ἄγιοι* (called *saints*), and *ἀγαπητοὶ Θεοῦ* (*beloved of God*), which are common adjuncts of all Christians; he saith, their faith was spoken of generally, but of the fame of their authority being so spread he taketh no notice; that *their obedience had come abroad to all men*,[¶] but their commands had not (it seemeth) come anywhere.

He wrote divers Epistles from Rome, wherein he resolveth many cases debated, yet never doth urge the authority of the Roman church for any point, which now is so ponderous an argument.

7. But, however, seeing the scripture is so strangely reserved, how cometh it to pass that tradition is also so defective, and staunch in so grand a case? We have in divers of the Fathers (particularly in Tertullian, in St. Basil, in St. Jerome) catalogues of traditional doctrines and observances, which they recite to assert tradition in some cases supplemental to scripture; in which their purpose did require that they should set down those of principal moment; and they are so punctual as to insert many of small consideration: how then came they to neglect this, concerning the papal authority over the whole church, which had been most pertinent to their design, and in consequence did vastly surpass all the rest which they do name?

8. The designation of the Roman bishop by succession to obtain so high a degree in the church, being above all others a most remarkable and noble piece of history, which it had been a horrible fault in an ecclesiastical history to slip over, without careful reporting and re-

* Quorum laudum et gloriae degenerem fuisse, maximum crimen est.—*Cl. Rom. ad Cyp. Ep. 31.* To degenerate from which praise and glory is an exceeding great crime.

† Οὐδὲν πλὴν αὐτοῖς δίδωται τὸν λαὸν ἰδεῖν.

‡ P. Nic. I. Ep. 10, P. Leo IX. Ep. 1; P. Greg. VII. Ep. 4. 22.

§ 1 Pet. ii. 13-17.

¶ Eph. iv. 11, 12, 13; 1 Cor. xii. 28.

* Ταῦτα δὲ ποιεῖ καθαιρῶν αὐτῶν τὸ φρόνημα, καὶ κενῶν τὸ φρόνημα τῆς διακονίας, καὶ διδάσκων αὐτοὺς τῆν πρὸς ἄλλους ἰσοτιμίαν.

‡ Rom. i. 5, 8.

¶ (Vide Chrys. Theo. Hier.) Paron. an. 58, § 46, &c.; Rom. i. 7, 8. † Rom. xvi. 19.

§ Tertull. de Cor. Mil. 3; Basil. de Sp. S. 27; Hier. advers. Lucif. 4.

fecting upon it; yet Eusebius, that most diligent compiler of all passages relating to the original constitution of the church, and to all transactions therein, hath not one word about it! who yet studiously doth report the successions of the Roman bishops, and all the notable occurrences he knew concerning them, with favourable advantage.

9. Whereas this doctrine is pretended to be a point of faith, of vast consequence to the subsistence of the church and to the salvation of men, it is somewhat strange that it should not be inserted into any one ancient summary of things to be believed (of which summaries divers remain, some composed by public consent, others by persons of eminency in the church), nor by fair and forcible consequence should be deducible from any article in them;^b especially considering that such summaries were framed upon occasion of heresies springing up which disregarded the pope's authority, and which by asserting it were plainly confuted. We are therefore beholden to Pope Innocent III. and his Lateran synod, for first synodically defining this point, together with other points no less new and unheard of before.^c The creed of Pope Pius IV., formed the other day, is the first, as I take it, which did contain this article of faith.

10. It is much that this point of faith should not be delivered in any of those ancient expositions of the creed (made by St. Austin, Ruffin, &c.), which enlarge it to necessary points of doctrine connected with the articles therein, especially with that of the catholic church, to which the pope's authority hath so close a connection; that it should not be touched in the catechetical discourses of Cyril, Ambrose, &c.; that in the systems of divinity composed by St. Austin, Lactantius, &c. it should not be treated on: the world is now changed; for the Catechism of Trent doth not overlook so material a point; and it would pass for a lame body of theology which should omit to treat on this subject.

11. It is more wonderful, that this point should never be defined, in down-

right and full terms, by any ancient synod; it being so notoriously in those old times opposed by divers who dissented in opinion, and discorded in practice from the pope; it being also a point of that consequence, that such a solemn declaration of it would have much conduced to the ruin of all particular errors and schisms, which were maintained then in opposition to the church.

12. Indeed had this point been allowed by the main body of orthodox bishops, the pope could not have been so drowsy or stupid as not to have solicited for such a definition thereof; nor would the bishops have been backward in compliance thereto; it being in our adversaries conceit so compendious and effectual a way of suppressing all heresies, schisms, and disorders (although indeed later experience hath shewed it no less available to stifle truth, justice, and piety:) the popes after Luther were better advised, and so were the bishops adhering to his opinions.

13. Whereas also it is most apparent, that many persons disclaimed this authority, not regarding either the doctrines or decrees of the popes, it is wonderful that such men should not be reckoned in the large catalogues of heretics, wherein errors of less obvious consideration, and of far less importance, did place men; if Epiphanius, Theodoret, Leontius, &c. were so negligent or unconcerned, yet St. Austin, Philastrius,—western men, should not have overlooked this sort of desperate heretics: Aerius, for questioning the dignity of bishops, is set among the heretics; but who got that name for disavowing the pope's supremacy, among the many who did it? (it is but lately that such as we have been thrust in among heretics.)

14. Whereas no point avowed by Christians could be so apt to raise offence and jealousy in pagans against our religion as this, which setteth up a power of so vast extent and huge influence; whereas no novelty could be more surprising or startling than the erection of an universal empire over the consciences and religious practices of men; whereas also this doctrine could not but be very conspicuous and glaring in ordinary practice, it is prodigious that all pagans should not loudly exclaim against it.

^b Const. Apost. vii, 41. (a full Creed at baptism.)

^c Conc. Lat. iv. cap. 5, an. 1215.

It is strange that pagan historians (such as Marcellinus, who often speaketh of popes, and blameth them for their luxurious way of living and pompous garb;* as Zozimus, who bore a great spite at Christianity; as all the writers of the imperial history before Constantine) should not report it, as a very strange pretence newly started up.

It is wonderful, that the eager adversaries of our religion (such as Celsus, Porphyry, Hierocles, Julian himself) should not particularly level their discourse against it, as a most scandalous position and dangerous pretence, threatening the government of the empire.

It is admirable, that the emperors themselves, inflamed with emulation and suspicion of such an authority (the which hath been so terrible even to Christian princes), should not in their edicts expressly decry and impugn it; that indeed every one of them should not with extremest violence implacably strive to extirpate it.

In consequence of these things it may also seem strange, that none of the advocates of our faith (Justin, Origen, Tertullian, Arnobius, Cyril, Austin) should be put to defend it, or so much as forced to mention it, in their elaborate apologies for the doctrines and practices which were reprehended by any sort of adversaries thereto.

We may add, that divers of them, in their apologies and representations concerning Christianity, would have appeared not to deal fairly, or to have been very inconsiderate, when they profess for their common belief, assertions repugnant to that doctrine; † as when Tertullian saith, "We reverence the emperor as a man

* — procedantque vehiculis insidentes, circumspicte vestiti, epulas curantes profusas, adeo ut eorum convivia regales superent mensas.—*Marcell. lib. xxvii. p. 338.* They travel sitting in chariots, curiously appa- ralleled, procuring profuse dainties, insomuch as their meals exceed the feasts of kings.

† Sentiant enim Deum esse solum, in cujus solius potestate sunt, a quo sunt secundi, post quem primi, ante omnes et super omnes deos. Quidni? cum super omnes homines, qui utique vivunt, et mortuis antistant.—*Tertull. Apolog. cap. 30.* For they think it is God alone in whose power they are, next to whom they are the chief, before all, and above all gods. And why not? when they are above all men alive, and surpass the dead.

second to God, and less only than God; † when Optatus affirmeth, that "above the emperor there is none beside God, who made the emperor; † and, that "Donatus by extolling himself" (as some now do) "above the emperor, did in so doing, as it were, exceed the bounds of men, that he did esteem himself as God, not as a man." ‡ When St. Chrysostom asserteth "the emperor to be the crown and head of all men upon earth," || and saith, that "even apostles, evangelists, prophets, any men whoever, § are to be subject to the temporal powers; when St. Cyril calleth the emperor "the supreme top of glory among men, elevated above all others by incomparable difference," ¶ &c. When even popes talk at this rate; as Pope Gregory I., calling the emperor his "lord, and lord of all: †** telling the emperor, that his competitor, by assuming the title of universal bishop, "did set himself above the honour of his imperial majesty;" which he supposeth a piece of great absurdity and arrogance: and even Pope Gregory II. doth call that emperor (against whom he afterward rebelled) "the head of Christians." ††

* Colimus imperatorem ut hominem a Deo secundum, et solo Deo minorem.—*Tertull. ad Scap. 2.*

† Cum super imperatorem non sit nisi solus Deus qui fecit imperatorem.—*Opt. lib. 3.*

‡ —dum se Donatus super imperatorem extollit, jam quasi hominum excesserat modum, ut se ut Deum, non hominem aestimaret.—*Id. Ibid.*

|| Βασιλεὺς γὰρ κορυφὴ καὶ κεφαλὴ τῶν ἐπὶ τῆς γῆς ἰσὺν ἀπάντων.—*Chrys. 'Aνθρ. ii. p. 463.*

§ Κἄν ἀπόστολος ᾗς, κἄν εὐαγγελιστὴς, κἄν προφήτης, κἄν οὐσιασθῶν, &c.—*Chrys. in Rom. xiii. 1.* Οὐ γὰρ ἰσὺν ὁ ὑβρισθεὶς ὑβριμιθὸν τινα ἔχων ἐπὶ τῆς γῆς, βασιλεὺς γὰρ —. *Chrys. supra.* For he that is thus wronged has not his equal upon earth, for he is king, &c.

¶ Τῆς μὲν ἐν ἀνθρώποις ἐκκλησίας τὸ ἀνώτατον καὶ ἀσυγκρίτοις διαφοραῖς τῶν ἄλλων ἀπάντων ἀνεστηχὸς καὶ ὑπερκείμενον, ἡμεῖς, ὧ φιλόχριστοι βασιλεῖς, καὶ κληρὸς ὑμῖν ἐξαιρέτως τε καὶ πρέπον παρὰ Θεοῦ τῆς ἐνούσης αὐτῶ κατὰ πάντων ὑπεροχῆς.—*Cyril. ad Teod. in Conc. Eph. part. i. cap. 3, p. 20.*

** P. Greg. M. Ep. ii 62. Quia sereniss. domine ex illo jam tempore dominus meus fuisti, quando adhuc dominus omnium non eras —. Ego quidem jussioni subjectus —. *Ibid.* Ad hoc enim potestas dominorum meorum pietati cœlitus data est super omnes homines, &c. —*Ibid.* Ego indignus famulus vester.—*Ibid.* Qui honori quoque imperii vestri se per privatum vocabulum superponit.—*P. Greg. I. Ep. iv. 32.*

†† Ὡς βασιλεὺς καὶ κεφαλὴ τῶν Χριστιανῶν.—*I. Greg. II. in Epist. 1; ad Leon. Isaur. apud*

Whereas, indeed, if the pope be monarch of the church, endowed with the regalities which they now ascribe to him, it is plain enough that he is not inferior to any man living in real power and dignity: wherefore the modern doctrines of Rome are far more sincere or considerate in their heraldry than were those of old fathers of Christendom, who now stick not downrightly to prefer the pope before all princes of the world; not only in doctrine and notion, but in the sacred offices of the church: for to the very canon of their mass, the pope (together with the bishop of the diocese, one of his ministers) is set before all Christian princes;* every Christian subject being hereby taught to deem the pope superior to his prince. Now we must believe for one pope hath written it, another hath put it in his decretals, and it is current law) that the papal authority doth no less surpass the royal than the sun doth outshine the moon.†

Now it is abundantly "declared" by papal "definition, as a point necessary to salvation," that "every human creature" (neither king nor Cæsar excepted) "is subject to the Roman high priest."‡

Now the mystery is discovered, why popes, when summoned by emperors, declined to go in person to general synods; because "it was not tolerable that the emperor" (who sometime would be present in synods) "should sit above the pope;"|| as in the pride of his heart he might per-

Bin. tom. v. p. 502. As king and head of Christians.

* — una cum famulo tuo papa nostro N. et anistite nostro N. et rege nostro N. et omnibus orthodoxis, &c. Together with thy servant our pope N. and our bishop N. and our king N. and all orthodox, &c.

† Fiat autem oratio pro dignitate regia post orationem factam pro papa quia potestas suprema sacerdotalis excedit regiam antiquitate, dignitate, et utilitate, &c.—*Gab. Biel. in Can. mis.* Let prayer be made for the king after prayer made for the pope; because the supreme sacerdotal power exceeds the kingly in antiquity, dignity, and utility, &c.

‡ Subesse Romano pontifici omni humanæ creature declaramus, dicimus, definimus et pronunciamus omnino esse de necessitate salutis.—*P. Bunif. VIII. in Extrav. com. lib. i. tit. 38.*

|| At quamvis utcumque tolerabile sit, ut principes seculares in concilio sedeant ante alios episcopos, tamen nullo modo convenit, ut ante ipsum summum pontificem, &c.—*Bell. de Conc. i. 19.*

haps offer to do. (I cannot forbear to note what an ill conceit Bellarmine had of Leo I. and other popes, that they did forbear coming at synods out of their villanous pride and haughtiness.)

15. One would admire, that Constantine, if he had smelt this doctrine, or any thing like it in Christianity, should be so ready to embrace it; or that so many emperors should in those times do so; some princes then probably being jealous of their honour, and unwilling to admit any superior to them.

It is at least much, that emperors should with so much indulgence foster and cherish popes, being their so dangerous rivals for dignity; and that it should be true, which Pope Nicholas doth affirm, that "the emperors had extolled the Roman See with divers privileges, had enriched it with gifts, had enlarged it with benefits;"* had done I know not how many things more for it: surely they were bewitched thus to advance their concurrent competitor for honour and power; one who pretended to be a better man than themselves. Bellarmine (in his Apology against King James) saith, that "the pope was (*vellet, nollet*) constrained to be subject to the emperors, because his power was not known to them;"† it was well it was not: but how could it be concealed from them, if it were a doctrine commonly avowed by Christians? It is hard keeping so practical a doctrine from breaking forth into light. But to leave this consideration.

Furthermore, we have divers ancient writings, the special nature, matter, scope whereof did require, or greatly invite giving attestation to this power, if such an one had been known and allowed in those times; which yet do afford no countenance, but rather much prejudice thereto.

16. The apostolical Canons, and the Constitutions of Clement,^k which describe

* Quapropter attendat clementia vestra; quantum fuerit erga sedis apostolicæ reverentiam antecessorum vestrorum, piorum duntaxat imperatorum — amor, et studium; qualiter eam diversis privilegii extulerint, donis ditaverint, beneficiis ampliaverint; qualiter eam literis suis honoraverint, ejus votis annuerint, &c.—*P. Nich. I. Epist. ad Mich. Imp.*

† Apo!l. Bell. p. 202.

^k Const. Apost. viii. 4, &c.

the state of the church, with its laws, customs, and practices current in the times of those who compiled them (which times are not certain, but ancient, and the less ancient the more it is to our purpose), wherein especially the ranks, duties, and privileges of all ecclesiastical persons are declared or prescribed, do not yet touch the prerogatives of this universal head, or the special respects due to him, nor mention any laws or constitutions framed by him: which is no less strange, than that there should be a body of laws, or description of the state of any kingdom, wherein nothing should be said concerning the king, or the royal authority: it is not so in our modern canon law, wherein the pope doth make *ultramque paginam*; we read little beside his authority, and decrees made by it.

The Apostolical Canons particularly do prescribe, that "the bishops of each nation should know him that is first among them, and should esteem him the head, and should do nothing considerable" (or extraordinary) "without his advice;" as also that "each one" (of those head bishops) "should only meddle with those affairs which concerned his own precinct, and the places under it:" also, that "no such primate should do any thing without the opinion of all; that so there may be concord."* Now, what place could be more opportune to mention the pope's sovereign power? How could the canonist, without strange neglect, pass it over? Doth he not indeed exclude it, assigning the supreme disposal (without further resort) of all things to the arbitration of the whole body of pastors, and placing the maintenance of concord in that course?

17. So also the old writer, under the name of Dionysius the Areopagite, treating in several places about the degrees of the ecclesiastical hierarchy, was monstrosously overseen in omitting the sovereign thereof: † in the fifth chapter of his

ecclesiastical hierarchy he professeth carefully to speak of those orders, but hath not a word of this supereminent rank, but averreth "episcopacy to be the first and highest of divine orders, in which the hierarchy is consummated;" and in his Epistle to Demophilus, there is a remarkable place, wherein he could hardly have avoided touching the pope, had there been then one in such vogue as now: for advising that monk to gentleness and observance toward his superiors, he thus speaketh: "Let passion and reason be governed by you; but you by the holy deacons, and these by the priests, and the priests by the bishops, and the bishops by the apostles, or by their successors" (that is, saith Maximus, those which we "now call patriarchs;") "and if perhaps any one of them shall fail of his duty, let him be corrected by those holy persons who are co-ordinate to him."† Why not in this case let him be corrected by the pope, his superior? But he knew none of an order superior to the apostles' successors.

18. Likewise, Ignatius in many Epistles frequently describeth the several ranks of the ecclesiastical hierarchy, extolleth their dignity and authority to the highest pitch, mightily urgeth the respect due to them, yet never doth he so much as mention or touch this sovereign degree, wherein the majesty of the clergy did chiefly shine.

In his very Epistle to the Romans he doth not yield any deference to their bishop, nor indeed doth so much as take notice of him. Is it not strange he should so little mind the sovereign of the church? or was it, for a sly reason, because being bishop of Antioch he had a pique to his brother Jacob, who had supplanted him, and got away his birthright?

της καθ' ἡμᾶς ἱεραρχίας διακόσμησης.—Dionys. de Hier. Eccl. cap. 5.

* Ἐπειδὴ τὰς ἱερατικὰς τάξεις καὶ ἀποκληρώσεις, δυνάμεις τε αὐτῶν καὶ ἐνεργείας εἰρήκαμεν ὡς ἑβὼν ἐπικτόν.—De Eccl. Hier. cap. 5.

† Αὐτὸς μὲν οὖν ἐπιθυμία καὶ θυμῷ καὶ λόγῳ τὴν καθ' ἀξίαν ἀφόριξε· σοὶ δὲ οἱ θεοὶ λειτουργοὶ· καὶ τοῖς τοῖς ἱερεῖς· ἱεράρχαι δὲ τοῖς ἱερεῦσι· καὶ τοῖς ἱεράρχαις οἱ ἀπόστολοι καὶ οἱ τῶν ἀποστόλων διάδοχοι· οἱ εἶπον τις καὶ ἐν ἐκείνοις τοῦ ποιοῦντος ἀνεφαλέτου παρὰ τῶν ἁποστόλων ἁγίων ἵκανορθωθῆσεται. &c.—Dionys. Ar. Ep. 8. Ἀποστόλων δὲ διαδέχους τῶν οὖν πατριάρχων ἡγοῦμαι εἶναι.—Max. Schol. ibid.

* Τοὺς ἐπισκόπους ἐκείνου ἔθνους εἰδέναι καὶ τὸν ἐν αὐτοῖς πρῶτον, καὶ ἡγεῖσθαι αὐτὸν ὡς κεφαλὴν, καὶ μηδὲν τι πράττειν περιττὸν ἄνευ τῆς ἐκείνου γνώμης· ἐκεῖνα δὲ μόνον πράττειν ἕκαστον, ὅσα τῇ αὐτοῦ παρουσίᾳ ἐπιβάλλει, καὶ ταῖς ὑπ' αὐτὴν χρίσεσι· ἀλλὰ μετὰ ἐκείνου ἄνευ τῆς πάντων γνώμης ποιεῖται τι· οὕτω γὰρ ὁμοῖα ἴσται.—Ar. C. an. 31.

† Ἢ θεοὶ τῶν ἱεροκλήων τάξεις πρώτη μὲν ἴσται τῶν θεοπικῶν τάξεων, ἀκοσμήτη δὲ καὶ ἐσχάτη ἡ αὐτή· καὶ γὰρ εἰς αὐτὴν ἀποκλείεται καὶ ἀποκληροῦται πῖσα

The counterfeiter therefore of Ignatius did well personate him, when he saith, that "in the church there is nothing greater than a bishop;"* and that "a bishop is beyond all rule and authority;"† for in the time of Ignatius there was no domineering pope over all bishops.

19. We have some letters of popes though not many; for popes were then not very scribatiuous, or not so pragmatikal; whence, to supply that defect, lest popes should seem not able to write, or to have slept almost four hundred years, they have forged divers for them, and those so wise ones, that we who love the memory of those good popes disdain to acknowledge them authors of such idle stuff; we have yet some letters of, and to popes, to and from divers eminent persons in the church, wherein the former do not assume, nor the latter ascribe any such power; the popes do not express themselves like sovereigns, nor the bishops address themselves like subjects; but they treat one another in a familiar way, like brethren and equals: this is so true, that it is a good mark of a spurious epistle (whereof we have good store, devised by colloquing knaves, and fathered on the first popes), when any of them talketh in an imperious strain, or arrogateth such a power to himself.

20. Clemens, bishop of Rome, in the apostolical times unto the church of Corinth, then engaged in discords and factions, wherein the clergy was much affronted (divers presbyters, who had well and worthily behaved themselves, were ejected from their office in a seditious manner), did write a very large Epistle; wherein, like a good bishop, and charitable Christian brother, he doth earnestly, by manifold inducements, persuade them to charity and peace;‡ but nowhere doth he speak imperiously, like their prince:

* Οὗτε Θεοῦ τις κρείττων, ἢ παραλήσιος ἐν παντί τις ἴσται, οὐδὲ δὲ ἐν ἐκκλησίᾳ ἐπισκόπου τι μείζον.—Pseud. Ignat. ad Smyrn.

† Τί γάρ ἐστιν ἐπίσκοπος, ἀλλ' ἡ πασης ἀρχῆς καὶ ἰσχυρίας ἐπέκεινα, &c.—Id. ad Trall.

‡ Ὁρώμεν γὰρ ὅτι ἐνίοις ἡμεῖς μεταγάγετε καλῶς πολιτευομένους ἐκ τῆς ἀμέμπως αὐτοῖς περιμημένης λειτουργίας.—Clem. ad Corinth. Ep. i. p. 58, Jun. For we see that you have removed some, who behaved themselves well in their office, out of their ministry blamelessly discharged by them. Στρατίζειν πρὸς τοὺς κραιβυτέρους.

in such a case one would think, if ever, for quashing such disorders and quelling so "perverse folks," who spurned the clergy, it had been decent, it had been expedient, to employ his authority, and to speak like himself, challenging obedience, upon duty to him, and at their peril.* How would a modern pope have ranted in such a case? how thundering a bull would he have despatched against such outrageous contemners of the ecclesiastical order? how often would he have spoken of the apostolic see and its authority? We should infallibly have heard him swagger in his wonted style, "Whoever shall presume to cross our will, let him know that he shall incur the indignation of Almighty God, and his blessed apostles Peter and Paul."† But our popes, it seemeth, have more wit or better mettle than Pope Clement; that good pope did not know his own strength, or had not the heart to use it.

21. Among the Epistles of St. Cyprian there are divers Epistles of him to several popes (to Cornelius, to Lucius, to Stephanus),¹ in the which, although written with great kindness and respect, yet no impartial eye can discern any special regard to them, as to his superiors in power, or pastors in doctrine, or judges of practice;‡ he reporteth matters to them, he conferreth about points with all freedom; he speaketh his sense and giveth his advice without any restraint or awe; he spareth not upon occasion to reprove their practices, and to reject their opinions; he, in his addresses to them, and discourses of them, styleth them "brethren" and "colleagues;" and he continually treateth them as such upon even terms: "When," saith he to the clergy of Rome, "dearest brethren, there was among us an uncertain rumour con-

* Πρόσωπα προσπετῆ καὶ ἀθάδη. p. 2.

† Si quis voluntati nostræ contraire præsumperit, indignationem omnipotentis Dei, ac beatorum Petri et Pauli apostoli se noverit incursum. In such terms usually the pope's bulls do end.

‡ Et quamquam sciam, frater charissime, pro mutua dilectione, quam debemus et exhibemus invicem nobis, florentissimo illic clero tecum præsidenti, &c.—Ep. 58. And although I know, most dear brother, out of the mutual love and respect which we owe and yield one to another, &c.

¹ Cypr. Ep. 41, 42, 43, 45, 47, 49, 54, 55, 57, 58, 67, 72.

cerning the decease of the good man my colleague, Fabianus:”* upon which words Rigaltius had cause to remark, “How like an equal and fellow-citizen doth the bishop of Carthage mention the bishop of Rome, even to the Roman clergy!”† But would not any man now be deemed rude and saucy, who should talk in that style of the pope?

Pope Cornelius also to St. Cyprian hath some Epistles,^m wherein no glimpse doth appear of any superiority assumed by him. But of St. Cyprian's judgment and demeanour towards popes, we shall have occasion to speak more largely, in a way more positively opposite to the Roman pretences.

Eusebius citeth divers long passages out of an Epistle of Cornelius to Fabius, bishop of Antioch, against Novatus; wherein no mark of this supremacy doth appear; although the magnitude and flourishing state of the Roman church is described, for aggravation of Novatus's schism and ambition.

Pope Julius hath a notable long Epistle, extant in one of Athanasius's Apologies, unto the bishops assembled at Antioch; wherein he had the fairest occasion that could be to assert and insist upon this sovereign authority, they flatly denying and impugning it; questioning his proceedings as singular, supposing him subject to the laws of the church no less than any other bishop; and downrightly affirming each of themselves to be his equal; about which point he thought good not to contend with them; but waving pretences to superiority, he justifieth his actions by reasons grounded on the merit of the cause, such as any other bishop might allege: but this Epistle I shall have more particular occasion to discuss.

Pope Liberius hath an Epistle to St. Athanasius, wherein he not only (for his direction and satisfaction) doth inquire his opinion about the point; but professeth, in compliment perchance, that he shall obediently follow it: “Write,” saith

* Cum de excessu boni viri collegæ mei, rumor apud nos incertus esset, collegæ charissimè.—Cyp. Ep. 4.

† Quam ex æquo, et civilis mentio episcopi Romani ab episcopo Carthaginis apud clerum?—Rigalt. ibid.

^m Cyp. Ep. 46, 48.

ⁿ Euseb. vi. 43.

he, “whether you do think as we do, and just so, about the true faith, that I may be undoubtedly assured about what you think good to command me.”* Was not that spoken indeed like a courteous sovereign, and an accomplished judge in matters of faith?° The same pope in the head of the western, doth write to a knot of eastern bishops, whom they call “their beloved brethren and fellow ministers;” and in a brotherly strain, not like an emperor.

In the time of Damasus, successor to Liberius, St. Basil hath divers Epistles to the western bishops,† wherein, having represented and bewailed the wretched state of the eastern churches, then overborne with heresies and unsettled by factions, he craveth their charity, their prayers, “their sympathy, their comfort, their brotherly aid;” by affording to the orthodox and sound party the countenance of their communion, by joining with them in contention for truth and peace; for that the communion of so great churches would be of mighty weight to support and strengthen their cause; giving credit thereto among the people, and inducing the emperor to deal fairly with them, in respect to such a multitude of adherents; especially of those which were at such a distance, and not so immediately subject to the eastern emperor; for, “If” (saith he) “very many of you do concur unanimously in the same opinion, it is manifest that the multitude of consenters will make the doctrine to be

* Γράψον, εἰ οὕτω φρονεῖς καθὼς καὶ ἡμεῖς, καὶ τὸ ἴσα ἐν ἀληθινῇ πίστει· ἵνα καὶ γὰρ πεποιθὸς ᾖ ἀδελφότητος περὶ ὧν ἀξιοῖς κελύσειν μοι.—Liber. ad Ath. tom. i. p. 243.

† Ὑμῶς παρακαλοῦμεν συμπαιεῖσα ἡμῶν ταῖς ἐπιμέραις.—Ep. 61. Ἐἴτι οὖν παραμύθιον ἀγάπης· εἰ τις κοινωνία πνεύματος, εἴτινα σπλάγγνα καὶ οἰκτιρομὴ, κινήθητε πρὸς πᾶν ἀντιλήψιν ἡμῶν.—Ibid. We beseech you to have a fellow-feeling of our distractions. If there be any comfort of love, any fellowship of the Spirit, any bowels and mercies, be ye moved with pity and commiseration to help us. Δότε χεῖρα ταῖς εἰς γόνυ ἐκθεῖται· συγκαινήτω ἐφ' ἡμῶν τὰ ἀδελφικά ὑμῶν σπλάγγνα· προχρηθήτω δάκρυα συμπαιεῖας.—Ep. 69. Ἐπιησώμεθα τὴν ὑπερίαν ἀγάπην εἰς τὴν ἀντιλήψιν ἡμῶν καὶ συμπαιεῖαν.—Ep. 70. Ἐλθεῖν ταῖς παρ' ἡμῶν εἰς ἐπίσκεψιν καὶ παραμύθιον τῶν θλιβομένων.—Ibid. Vide Ep. 71. (εἰ μὴν διορθοῦντο, οὐκ κοινωνοῦντες, &c.)

° Soer. iv. 12.

† Ep. 61. 69. 70. 74. 182.

received without contradiction;”* and, “I know” (saith he again, writing to Athanasius about these matters, “but one way of redress to our churches, the conspiring with us of the western bishops;”† the which being obtained, “would probably yield some advantage to the public, the secular power revering the credibility of the multitude, and the people all about following them without repugnance;”‡ and, “You,” saith he to the western bishops, “the further you dwell from them, the more credible you will be to the people.”§||

This indeed was according to the ancient rule and practice in such cases, that any church being oppressed with error, or distracted with contentions, should from the bishops of other churches receive aid to the removal of those inconveniences. That it was the rule, doth appear from what we have before spoken, and of the practice there be many instances; for so did St. Cyprian send two of his clergy to Rome, to compose the schism there, moved by Novation against Cornelius; so was St. Chrysostom called to Ephesus (although out of his jurisdiction), to settle things there; so (to omit divers instances occurring in history) St. Basil himself was called by the church of Iconium, “to visit it, and to give it a bishop;” although it did not belong to his ordinary inspection; and he doth tell the bishops of the coasts (*παρικλιώται*), that they should have done well “in sending” some to “visit” and assist his churches “in their distresses.”§

* Ἐάν δὲ καὶ συμφώνως πλείους ἡμοῦ τὰ αὐτὰ δογματίσητε, ὄλλον ὅτι τὸ πλῆθος τῶν δογματισάντων ἀναντιρρήτου πᾶσι τὴν παραδοχὴν κατασκευάσει τοῦ δόγματος.—Ep. 74. (Ep. 293.)

† — μίαν ἐπιγνοῦς ὁδὸν βασιλείας ταῖς καθ’ ἡμᾶς ἐκκλησίαις, τὴν παρὰ τῶν δυτικῶν ἐπισκόπων σύμπνοιαν —, Ep. 48.

‡ Τάχα ἂν τι γένοιτο τοῖς κοινῶς ὄφελος, τῶν τε κρατούντων τὸ ἀξιώσιμον τοῦ πλήθους δυσωπουμένων, καὶ τῶν ἑκασταχοῦ λαῶν ἀκολούθων αὐτοῖς ἀναντιρρήτως.—Ib.

§ Ὑμεῖς δὲ ὅσον μακρὰν αὐτῶν ἀπωκισμένοι τυγχάνετε, τοσοῦτον πλεον παρὰ τοῖς λαοῖς ἀξιώσιμον ἔχετε.—Ep. 74.

§ Quod servis Dei, et maxime sacerdotibus justis et pacificis congruebat, frater charissime, miseram nuper collegas nostros Caldonium et Fortunatum, ut non tantum persuasione litterarum nostrarum, sed presentia sua, et consilio omnium vestrum eniterentur, quantum possent, et elaborarent, ut ad catholicæ ecclesiæ unitatem scissi corporis membra componeret

But now how, I pray, cometh it to pass, that in such a case he should not have a special recourse to the pope; but in so many addresses should only wrap him up in a community? Why should he not humbly petition him to exert his sovereign authority for the relief of the eastern churches, laying his charge, and inflicting censures on the dissenters? Why should he lay all the stress of his hopes on the consent of the western bishops? Why doth he not say a word of the dominion resident in them over all the church? These things are unconceivable, if he did take the pope to be the man our adversaries say he is.

But St. Basil had other notions: a for indeed, being so wise and good a man, if he had taken the pope for his sovereign, he would not have taxed him as he doth, and so complain of him: when speaking of the western bishops (whereof the pope was *the ringleader*, and most concerned), he hath these words (occasioned, as I conceive, by the bishop of Rome’s rejecting that excellent person, Meletius, bishop of Antioch:) “What we should write, or how to join with those that write, I am in doubt—for I am apt to say that of Diomedes, You ought not to request, for he is a haughty man; for in truth observance doth render men of proud manners more contemptuous than otherwise they are.”*—“For if the Lord be propitious to us, what other addition do we need? but if the anger of God continue, what help can we have from the western superciliousness? who in truth neither know nor endure to learn; but being prepossessed with false suspicions, do now do those things which they

— Cypr. Ep. 42, ad Cornel. Pallad. As it became the servants of God, especially righteous and peaceable priests, most dear brother, we lately sent our colleagues Caldonius and Fortunatus, that they might, not only by the persuasion of our letters, but also by their presence, and the advice of you all, endeavour to their utmost and strive to reduce the members of that divided body to the unity of the catholic church. Ἀπὴν καλεῖ καὶ ἡμᾶς εἰς ἐπίσκεψιν, ὥστε αὐτῇ δοῦναι ἐπίσκοπον.—Bas. Ep. 8. Ἀκόλουθον ἦν παρὰ τῆς ὑμετέρας ἀγάπης καὶ τῶν γνησίων τινῶς ἀποστέλλεσθαι συνεχῶς, εἰς ἐπίσκεψιν ἡμῶν τῶν καταπονομένων.—Ep. 77.

* Τῶ ὄντι γὰρ θεραπεύμενα τὰ ὑπερφάνα ἦθη ἐαντῶν ὑπεροπτικώτερον γίνεσθαι πέφυκε.—Bas. Ep. 10, ab Euseb. Samos. Ep.

a Vide Epist. 272, 273, 321, 325, 329.

did before in the cause of Marcellus ; affecting to contend with those who report the truth to them ; and establishing heresy by themselves.* Would that excellent person (the greatest man of his time in reputation for wisdom and piety) have thus, embowelling his mind in an epistle to a very eminent bishop, smartly reflected on the qualities and proceedings of the western clergy, charging them with pride and haughtiness, with a suspicious and contentious humour, with incorrigible ignorance, and indisposition to learn ; if he had taken him, who was the leader in all these matters, to have been his superior and sovereign ? Would he have added the following words immediately touching him : “ I would in the common name have written to there ringleader, nothing indeed about ecclesiastical affairs, except only to intimate, that they neither do know the truth of things with us, nor do admit the way by which they may understand it ; but in general about their being bound not to set upon those who were humbled with afflictions ; nor should judge themselves dignified by pride, a sin which alone sufficeth to make one God’s enemy.”† Surely this great man knew better what belonged to government and manners, than in such rude terms to accost his sovereign : nor would he have given him that character, which he doth elsewhere ; where speaking of his brother, St. Gregory Nyssen, he saith he was an unfit agent to Rome, because, “ although his address with a sober man would find much reverence and esteem ; yet to a haughty and reserved man, sitting I know not where above, and thence not able to hear those below speaking the truth to him, what profit can there be to the public from the converse of such a man, whose disposition is averse from

illiberal flattery ?”* But these speeches suit with that conceit which St. Basil (as Baronius, I know not whence, reporteth) expressed by saying, “ I hate the pride of that church ;” which humour in them that good man would not be guilty of fostering by too much obsequiousness.

St. Chrysostom^s having, by the practices of envious men, combined against him in a packed assembly of bishops, upon vain surmises, being sentenced and driven from his see, did thereupon write an epistle to Pope Innocent I. bishop of Rome, together with his brethren the bishops of Italy ; therein representing his case, complaining of the wrong, vindicating his innocence, displaying the iniquity of the proceedings against him, together with the mischievous consequences of them toward the whole church, then requiring his succour for redress : yet (although the sense of his case, and care of his interest, were likely to suggest the greatest deference that could be) neither the style, which is very respectful, nor the matter, which is very copious, do imply any acknowledgment of the pope’s supremacy : he doth not address to him as to a governor of all, who could by his authority command justice to be done, but as to a brother, and a friend of innocence, from whose endeavour he might procure relief ;† he had “ recourse,” not to his sovereign power, but “ to his brotherly love ;” he “ informed his charity,” not appealed to his bar ;‡ he in short did no more than implore his assistance in an ecclesiastical way ; that he would express his resentment of so irregular dealings ; that he would avow communion with him, as with an orthodox bishop innocent and abused ; that he would procure his cause to be brought to a fair trial in a synod of bishops, lawfully called and indifferently

* — Ποία βοήθεια ἡμῖν τῆς δικτικῆς ὀφρῦος ; οἱ τῶν ἀληθῶν οὔτε ἰσασιν οὔτε μαθεῖν ἀνέχονται, ψευδοῦσι δὲ ὑπονοίαις προσηλημμένοι, ἐκεῖνα ποιοῦσι νῦν, ἃ πρότερον ἐπὶ Μαρκελλῶν πρὸς τοὺς τὴν ἀλήθειαν αὐτοῖς ἀπαγγέλλοντας φιλονεικῆσαντες τὴν δὲ αἴρεσιν δι’ ἑαυτῶν βεβαιώσαντες.—Ibid.

† Ἐγὼ μὲν γὰρ αὐτὸς ἄνω τοῦ κοινοῦ σχήματος βουλομένη αὐτῶν ἐπιστεῖλαι τῷ κορυφαίῳ, περὶ μὲν τῶν ἐκκλησιαστικῶν οὐδὲν, εἰ μὴ ὅσον ταρανίξασθαι, ὅτι οὔτε ἰσασιν τῶν παρ’ ἡμῖν τὴν ἀλήθειαν, οὔτε τὴν βῆδον δι’ ἧς ἂν μάθοιεν καταδέχονται καθόλου δὲ περὶ τοῦ μὴ δεῖν τοῖς ὑπὸ τῶν πειρασμῶν ταπεινωθεῖσιν ἐπιτίθεσθαι, μηδὲ δέξιμα κρίνειν ὑπερηφανίαν, ἀμάρτηρα, καὶ μόνον ἄρκουδν ἔχθραν ποιεῖσθαι εἰς Θεόν.—Ibid.

* Καὶ εὐγνώμονι μὲν ἀνδρὶ αἰδέσιμον αὐτοῦ καὶ πολλοῦ ἀξίαν τὴν συντυχίαν ὑψηλῶ δὲ καὶ μετῴρῳ, ἔπειτα καὶ καθήμενῳ καὶ διὰ τοῦτο ἀκούειν τῶν χαρῶν αὐτοῦ τὴν ἀλήθειαν φθεγγόμενον μὴ δυναμένῳ, εἰ ἂν γίνετο ὄφελος τοῖς κοινοῖς, παρὰ τῆς τοῦ τοῖούτου ἀνδρὸς ἐπιβουλίας, δεξιῶν ἄλλοτριον ἔχει θωπεῖας ἀνελευθέρῳ τὸ ἦθος ; Bas. Ep. 250.

† Πρὸς τὴν ὑπετέραν ἀναδραμεῖν ἀγάπην.

‡ Διδάσκον ἡμῶν τὴν ἀγάπην.

† Anast. ad Joh. Hier. apud Hier.

• Tom. vii. Epist. 122.

† Vide Laun. Epist. i. 3.

affected.* Had the good man had any conceit of the pope's supremacy, he would, one would think, have framed his address in other terms, and sued for another course of proceeding in his behalf: but it is plain enough that he had no such notion of things, nor had any ground for such a one. For indeed Pope Innocent, in his answer to him, could do no more than exhort him to patience; in another, to his clergy and people, could only comfort them, declare his dislike of the adversaries' proceedings and grounds; signify his intentions to procure a general synod, with hopes of a redress thence; his sovereign power, it seems, not availing to any such purposes: "But what" (saith he) "can we do in such cases? A synodical cognizance is necessary, which we heretofore did say ought to be called; the which alone can allay the motions of such tempest."[†]

It is true, that the later popes (Siricius, Anastasius, Innocent, Zozimus, Bonifacius, Celestinus, &c.) after the Sardican Council, in their epistles to the western bishops, over whom they had encroached, and who were overpowered by them, &c., do speak in somewhat more lofty strain; but are more modest toward those of the east, who could not bear, &c.

22. Further; it is most prodigious, that in the disputes managed by the Fathers against heretics (the Gnostics, Valentinians, Marcionites, Montanists, Manichees, Paulianists, Arians, &c.) they should not, even in the first place, allege and urge the sentence of the universal pastor and judge, as a most evidently conclusive argument, as the most efficacious and compendious method of convincing and silencing them. Had this point been well proved and pressed, then, without any more concertations from scripture, tradition, reason, all heretics

had been quite defeated; and nothing then could more easily have been proved, if it had been true, when the light of tradition did shine so brightly; nothing indeed had been to sense more conspicuous than the continual exercise of such an authority.

We see now among those who admit such an authority, how surely, when it may be had, it is alleged, and what sway it hath, to the determination of any controversy: and so it would have been then, if it had been then as commonly known and avowed.

23. Whereas divers of the Fathers purposely do treat on methods of confuting heretics, it is strange they should be so blind or dull, as not to hit on this most proper and obvious way of referring debates to the decision of him to whose office of universal pastor and judge it did belong: particularly, one would wonder at Vincentius Lirinensis, that he on set purpose, with great care, discoursing about the means of settling points of faith, and of overthrowing heresies, should not light upon this notable way, by having recourse to the pope's magisterial sentence; yea, that indeed he should exclude it; for he ("after most intense study, and diligent inquiry, consulting the best and wisest men),"* could find but two ways of doing it: "I" (saith he) "did always, and from almost every one, receive this answer—That if I or any other would find out the frauds and avoid the snares of upstart heretics, and continue sound and upright in the true faith, he should guard and strengthen his faith, God helping him, by these two means: viz. first, by the authority of the divine law, and then by the tradition of the catholic church."[†] And again, "We before have said that this hath always been, and is at present, the custom of catholics, that they prove their faith

* — Ἡμᾶς δὲ τοὺς οὐχ ἁλόγους, οὐκ ἐλεγχόμενους, οὐκ ἀποδειχθέντας ὑπευθύνους, τῶν γραμμάτων τῶν ἡμετέρων δόξε ἀπολαβεῖν συνεχῶς, καὶ τῆς ἀγάπης, καὶ πάντων τῶν ἄλλων, ὡς περ καὶ ἐμπροσθεν. But as for us, we who are not condemned, nor convicted, nor proved guilty, let us continually enjoy the benefit of your letters, and love, and all other things as before.

† Ἀλλὰ τί κατὰ τῶν τοιοῦτων νῦν ἐν τῷ παρόντι ποιούμεν; ἀναγκαῖα ἐστὶ διάγνωσις συνοδική ἢ καὶ ἄλλαι ἔφημεν εὐναθροιστέαν μονή γάρ ἐστιν, ἥτις δύναται τὰς κινήσεις τῶν τοιοῦτων καταστῆλαι καταιγίλων. — Soz. viii. 26.

* Sæpe igitur magno studio, et summa attentione perquirens a quamplurimis sanctitate et doctrina præstantibus viris, &c. p. 316. (in edit. Balus.)

† Hujusmodi semper responsum ab omnibus fere retuli, quod sive ego, sive quis alius vellet exurgentium hæreticorum fraudes deprehendere, laqueosque vitare, et in fide sana sanus atque integer permanere, duplici modo munire fidem suam Domino adjuvante deberet; primo scilicet divinæ legis auctoritate, tum deinde ecclesiæ catholicæ traditione — p. 317.

by these two ways: first, by authority of the divine canon; then by the tradition of the universal church.*

Is it not strange, that he (especially being a western man, living in those parts where the pope had got much sway, and who doth express great reverence to the apostolic see) should omit that way of determining points, which of all (according to the modern conceits about the pope) is most ready and most sure?

24. In like manner Tertullian professeth the catholics in his time to use such compendious methods of confuting heretics: "We," saith he, "when we would despatch against heretics for the faith of the gospel, do commonly use these short ways, which do maintain both the order of times prescribing against the lateness of impostors, and the authority of the churches patronising apostolical tradition."† But why did he skip over a more compendious way than any of those; namely, standing to the judgment of the Roman bishop?‡

25. It is true, that both he, and St. Irenæus before him, disputing against the heretics of their times,|| who had introduced pernicious novelties of their own devising, when they allege the general consent of churches (planted by the apostles, and propagated by continual successions of bishops from those whom the apostles did ordain) in doctrines and practices opposite to those devices, as a good argument (and so indeed it then was, next to a demonstration) against them, do produce the Roman church as a principal one among them, upon several obvious accounts; and this indeed argueth the Roman church to have been then one competent witness, or credible retainer of tradition; as also were the other

* Diximus in superioribus hanc fuisse semper et esse hodie catholicorum consuetudinem ut fidem veram duobus his modis adprobent; primum divini canonis auctoritate, deinde ecclesie catholice traditione — p. 364.

† His fere compendiis utimur, quum de evangelii fide adversus hæreticos expeditur, defendentibus et temporum ordine posteritati falsariorum præscribentem, et auctoritatem ecclesiarum traditioni apostolorum patrocinantem.—*Tertull. in Marc. iv. 5.*

‡ Solemus hæreticis compendi gratia de posteritate præscribere.—*Tertull. contra Heret. mag. cap. 1.*

|| The like discourse against heretics doth Clemens Alexandrinus use.—*Strom. vii. p. 519.*

apostolical churches, to whose testimony they likewise appeal. But what is this to the Roman bishop's judicial power in such cases? Why do they not urge that in plain terms? They would certainly have done so, if they had known it, and thought it of any validity.

Do but mark their words, involving the force of their argumentation: "When" (saith Irenæus) "we do again" (after allegation of scripture) "appeal to that tradition which is from the apostles, which by successions of presbyters is preserved in the churches:"* and, "That" (saith Tertullian) "will appear to have been delivered by the apostles, which hath been kept as holy in the apostolical churches: let us see what milk the Corinthians did draw from Paul; what the Philippians, the Thessalonians, the Ephesians do read: what also the Romans, our nearer neighbours, do say, to whom both Peter and Paul did leave the gospel sealed with their blood: we have also the churches nursed by John,"† &c. Again, "It is therefore manifest" (saith he, in his Prescriptions against Heretics) "that every doctrine which doth conspire with those apostolical churches, in which the faith originally was planted, is to be accounted true; as undoubtedly holding that which the churches did receive from the apostles, the apostles from Christ, and Christ from God; but all other doctrine is to be prejudged false, which doth think against the truth of the churches, and of the apostles, and of Christ, and of God."‡ Their argumentation then, in

* Cum autem ad eam iterum traditionem, quæ est ab apostolis, quæ per successores presbyterorum in ecclesiis custoditur, provocamus — *Iren. iii. 2.*

† Constat id esse ab apostolis traditum quod apud ecclesias apostolicas fuerit sacrosanctum; videamus quod iac a Paulo Corinthii hauserint; quid legant Philippenses, Thessalonicenses, Ephesii; quid etiam Romani de proximo sonent; quibus evangelium et Petrus et Paulus sanguine quoque suo signatum reliquerunt; habemus et Johannis alumnas ecclesias, &c.—*Adv. Marc. iv. 5.*

‡ Constat proinde omnem doctrinam, quæ cum illis ecclesiis apostolicis matricibus et originalibus fidei conspirat, veritati deputandam, id sine dubio teneantem quod ecclesie ab apostolis, apostoli a Christo, Christus a Deo suscepit; reliquam vero doctrinam de mendaco præjudicandam, quæ sapiat contra veritatem ecclesiarum, et apostolorum, et Christi, et Dei.—*Tert. de Præscr. 21.*

short, is plainly this: that the conspiring of the churches in doctrines contrary to those which the heretics vented, did irrefragably signify those doctrines to be apostolical: which discourse doth nowise favour the Roman pretences, but indeed, if we do weigh it, is very prejudicial thereto; it thereby appearing, that Christian doctors then, in the canvassing of points and assuring tradition, had no peculiar regard to the Roman church's testimony, no deference at all to the Roman bishop's authority (not otherwise at least than to the authority of one single bishop yielding attestation to tradition.)

26. It is odd, that even old popes themselves, in elaborate tracts disputing against heretics (as Pope Celestine against Nestorius and Pelagius, Pope Leo against Eutyches—), do content themselves to urge testimonies of scripture, and arguments grounded thereon; not alleging their own definitive authority, or using this parlous argumentation: "I, the supreme doctor of the church, and judge of controversies, do assert thus; and therefore you are obliged to submit your assent."

27. It is matter of amazement, if the pope were such as they would have him to be, that in so many bulky volumes of ancient Fathers, living through many ages after Christ, in those vast treasures of learning and knowledge, wherein all sorts of truth are displayed, all sorts of duty are pressed, this momentous point of doctrine and practice should nowhere be expressed in clear and peremptory terms (I speak so, for that by wresting words, by impertinent application, by obtaining consequences, the most ridiculous positions imaginable may be deduced from their writings.)

It is strange, that somewhere or other, at least incidentally, in their commentaries upon the scripture, wherein many places concerning the church and its hierarchy do invite to speak of the pope; in their treatises about the priesthood, about the unity and peace of the church, about heresy and schism; in their epistles concerning ecclesiastical affairs; in their historical narrations about occurrences in the church; in their concertations with heterodox adversaries, they should not frequently touch it, they should not sometimes largely dwell upon it.

Is it not marvellous, that Origen, St. Hilary, St. Cyril, St. Chrysostom, St. Jerome, St. Austin, in their commentaries and tractates upon those places of scripture [*Tu es Petrus. Pasce oves*] whereon they now build the papal authority, should be so dull and drowsy as not to say a word concerning the pope?

That St. Austin, in his so many elaborate tractates against the Donatists (wherein he discourseth so prolixly about the church, its unity, communion, discipline), should never insist upon the duty of obedience to the pope, or charge those schismatics with their rebellion against him, or allege his authority against them?

If we consider that the pope was bishop of the imperial city, the metropolis of the world; that he thence was most eminent in rank, did abound in wealth, did live in great splendour and reputation; had many dependencies, and great opportunities to gratify and relieve many of the clergy; that of the Fathers whose volumes we have, as well affected towards him, divers were personally obliged to him for his support in their distress (as Athanasius, Chrysostom, Theodoret;) or as to their patrons and benefactors (as St. Jerome;) divers could not but highly respect him as patron of the cause wherein they were engaged (as Basil, Gregory, Nazianzen, Hilary, Gregory Nyssen, Ambrose, Austin;) some were his partisans in a common quarrel (as Cyril;) divers of them lived in places and times wherein he had got much sway (as all the western bishops;) that he had then improved his authority much beyond the old limits; that all the bishops of the western or Latin churches had a peculiar dependence on him (especially after that by advantage of his station, by favour of the court, by colour of the Sardican canons, by voluntary deferences and submissions, by several tricks, he had wound himself to meddle in most of their chief affairs;)* that hence divers bishops were tempted to admire, to court, to flatter him; that divers aspiring popes were apt

* Τῆς Ῥωμαίων ἐπισκοπῆς ὁμοίως τῇ Ἀλεξανδρείᾳ πέρα τῆς ἱερουσόλης ἐπὶ δύνασταιν ἦδη πάλαι προελθούσας.—Socr. vii. 11. The bishopric of Rome is like to that of Alexandria, having now long ago arrived to that height of power above and beyond the priesthood.

to encourage the commendators of their authority, which they themselves were apt to magnify and inculcate; considering, I say, such things, it is a wonder that in so many voluminous discourses so little should be said favouring this pretence, so nothing that proveth it [so much that crosseth it, so much indeed, as I hope to shew, that quite overthroweth it.]

If it be asked how we can prove this, I answer, that (beside who carefully peruse those old books, will easily see it) we are beholden to our adversaries for proving it to us, when they least intended as such a favour: for that no clear and cogent passages for proof of this pretence can be thence fetched, is sufficiently evident from the very allegations which, after their most diligent raking in old books, they produce; the which are so few, and fall so very short of their purpose, that without much stretching they signify nothing.

28. It is monstrous, that in the code of the catholic church (consisting of the decrees of so many synods, concerning ecclesiastical order and discipline) there should not be one canon directly declaring his authority; nor any mention made of him, except thrice accidentally;¹ once upon occasion of declaring the authority of the Alexandrine bishop, the other upon occasion of assigning to the bishop of Constantinople the "second place of honour," and "equal privileges" with him.

If it be objected, that these discourses are negative, and therefore of small force; I answer, that therefore they are most proper to assert such a negative proposition: for how can we otherwise better shew a thing not to be, than by shewing it to have no footstep there, where it is supposed to stand? How can we more clearly argue a matter of right to want proof, than by declaring it not to be extant in the laws grounding such right; not taught by the masters who profess to instruct in such things; not testified in records concerning the exercise of it? Such arguments indeed in such cases are not merely negative, but

rather privative; proving things not to be, because not affirmed there, where in reason they ought to be affirmed; standing therefore upon positive suppositions, that holy scripture, that general tradition are not imperfect and lame toward their design; that ancient writers were competently intelligent, faithful, diligent; that all of them could not conspire in perpetual silence about things, of which they had often fair occasion and great reason to speak: in fine, such considerations, however they may be deluded by sophistical wits, will yet bear great sway, and often will amount near to the force of demonstration, with men of honest prudence. However, we shall proceed to other discourses more direct and positive against the popish doctrine.

II. Secondly, we shall shew that this pretence, upon several accounts, is contrary to the doctrine of holy scripture.

1. This pretence doth thwart the holy scripture, by assigning to another the prerogatives and peculiar titles appropriated therein to our Lord.

The scripture asserteth him to be our only Sovereign Lord and King: *To us, saith it, there is one Lord; and, One King shall be king over them; who shall reign over the house of David for ever; and of his kingdom there shall be no end; who is the only Potentate, the King of kings and Lord of lords; the one Lawgiver, who is able to save and to destroy.*²

The scripture speaketh of one *Arch-pastor, and great Shepherd of the sheep*, exclusively to any other; for, *I will* (said God in the prophet) *set up one shepherd over them, and he shall feed the sheep; and, There* (saith our Lord himself) *shall be one fold, and one shepherd: who that shall be he expresseth, adding, I am the good shepherd: the good shepherd giveth his life for the sheep*³ (by Pope Boniface's good leave, who maketh St. Peter or himself this shepherd.)⁴

The scripture telleth us, that we have

¹ 1 Cor. viii. 6; xii. 5; Eph. iv. 5; Ex. xxxvii. 22; Luke i. 33; 1 Tim. vi. 15; James iv. 12.

² 1 Pet. v. 4; ii. 25; Heb. xiii. 20; Ezek. xxxiv. 23; John x. 16, 11, 14.

³ Extrav. Com. lib. i. tit. 8. c. 1.

⁴ Conc. Nic. can. 6; Conc. Const. can. 2; Conc. Chal. can. 28.

the High Priest of our profession,² an-
 verable to that one in the Jewish church,
 a type.

The scripture informeth us, that there
 is but one supreme Doctor, Guide, Father
 of Christians, prohibiting us to acknowl-
 edge any other for such: *Ye are all
 brethren: and call ye not any one father
 upon earth; for one is your Father, even
 he that is in heaven: neither be ye called
 masters; for one is your Master, even
 Christ.*⁷ Good Pope Gregory (not the
 seventh of that name) did take this for a
 good argument; for, "What, therefore,
 dearest brother," said he to John of
 Constantinople, "wilt thou say in that
 terrible trial of the Judge who is coming;
 who dost affect to be called not only Fa-
 ther, but general Father in the world?"⁸

The scripture representeth the church
 as a building whereof Christ himself is
 the chief corner-stone;⁹ as a family,
 whereof he being the Pater-familias, all
 others are fellow-servants; as one body,
 having one head; whom God hath given
 to be head over all things to the church,
 which is his body.¹⁰

He is the one spouse of the church;
 which title one would think he might
 leave peculiar to our Lord; there being
 no vice-husbands; yet hath he been bold
 even to claim that, as may be seen in the
 Constitutions of Pope Gregory X. in one
 of their general synods.¹¹

It seemeth therefore a sacrilegious ar-
 rogance (derogating from our Lord's hon-
 our) for any man to assume or admit
 those titles of "Sovereign of the Church,
 Head of the Church, our Lord, Arch-
 pastor, highest Priest, chief Doctor,
 Master, Father, Judge of Christians;"
 upon what pretence, or under what dis-
 tinction soever: these "pompatic, fool-

ish, proud, perverse, wicked, profane
 words;" these "names of singularity,
 elation, vanity, blasphemy" (to borrow
 the epithets with which Pope Gregory I.
 doth brand the titles of "Universal Bish-
 op," and "Œcumenical Patriarch," no
 less modest in sound, and far more inno-
 cent in meaning, than those now ascribed
 to the pope), are therefore to be rejected;
 not only because they are injurious to all
 other pastors, and to the people of God's
 heritage, but because they do encroach
 upon our only Lord, to whom they do
 only belong; much more to usurp the
 things which they do naturally signify,
 is a horrible invasion upon our Lord's
 prerogative.

Thus hath that great pope taught us
 to argue, in words expressly condemning
 some, and consequently all of them to-
 gether with the things which they signi-
 fy: "What?"¹² (saith he, writing to the
 bishop of Constantinople, who had ad-
 mitted the title of Universal Bishop or
 Patriarch) "wilt thou say to Christ, the
 head of the universal church, in the trial
 of the last judgment, who by the appella-
 tion of *Universal* dost endeavour to sub-
 ject all his members to thee? Whom, I
 pray, dost thou mean to imitate in so
 perverse a word, but him who, despising
 the legions of angels constituted in fel-
 lowship with him, did endeavour to break
 forth unto the top of singularity, that he
 might both be subject to none, and alone
 be over all? who also said, I will ascend
 into heaven, and will exalt my throne
 above the stars—for what are thy
 brethren, all the bishops of the univer-
 sal church, but the stars of heaven; to
 whom while by this haughty word thou
 desirest to prefer thyself, and to trample
 on their name in comparison to thee,

² Quid ergo, frater charissime, in illo terri-
 bili examine venientis Judicis dicturus es, qui
 non solum Pater, sed etiam generalis Pater in
 mundo vocari appetis?—Greg. M. Epist. iv. 38.

⁷ Heb. iii. 1; ix. 7, 24.

⁸ Matt. xxiii. 8, 9.

⁹ Eph. ii. 20; 1 Pet. ii. 4.

¹⁰ Heb. iii. 6; Matt. x. 25; Eph. iv. 4; ii.
 16; Rom. xii. 5; 1 Cor. xii. 13; Eph. i. 22;
 iv. 15; v. 23; Col. i. 18; Hos. i. 11; One
 head, John iii. 29; Eph. v. 23; 2 Cor. xi. 2,
ubi dicitur.

¹¹ Sext. Decret. lib. i. tit. vi. cap. 3; Baron.
 an. 34, § 208; vide Greg. I. Epist. lib. iv. Ep.
 32, 34, 36, 38, 39; lib. vi. Ep. 24, 28, 30, 31;
 lib. vii. Ep. 70.

* Tu quid Christo universalis ecclesie capiti
 in extremi judicii dicturus examine, qui cuncta
 ejus membra tibi met coneris Universalis appel-
 latione supponere? Quis rogo in hoc tam per-
 verso vocabulo nisi ille ad imitandum proponi-
 tur, qui despectis angelorum legionibus secum
 socialiter constitutis ad culmen conatus est sin-
 gularitatis erumpere, ut et nulli subesse, et so-
 lus omnibus præesse videtur? qui etiam dixit,
 In cælum conscendam, super astra cæli exal-
 tabo solum meum—quid enim fratres tui
 omnes universalis ecclesie episcopi, nisi astra
 cæli sunt? quibus dum cupis temetipsum vo-
 cabulo elationis præponere, eorumque nomen
 tui comparatione calcare.—Greg. Ep.
 iv. 38.

what dost thou say, but, I will climb into heaven?"—

And again, in another epistle to the bishops of Alexandria and Antioch, he taxeth the same patriarch for "assuming to boast so that he attempteth to ascribe all things to himself, and studieth by the elation of pompous speech to subject to himself all the members of Christ, which do cohere to one sole head, namely to Christ."*

Again, "I confidently say, that whoever doth call himself Universal Bishop, or desireth to be so called, doth in his elation forerun Antichrist, because he pridingly doth set himself before all others."†

If these argumentations be sound, or signify any thing, what is the pretence of *universal sovereignty and pastorship* but a piece of *Luciferian arrogance*? Who can imagine that even this pope could approve, could assume, could exercise it? If he did, was he not monstrously senseless, and above measure impudent, to use such discourses, which so plainly, without altering a word, might be retorted upon him; which are built upon suppositions, that it is unlawful and wicked to assume superiority over the church, over all bishops, over all Christians; the which indeed (seeing never pope was of greater repute, or did write in any case more solemnly and seriously) have given to the pretences of his successors so deadly a wound, that no balm of sophistical interpretation can be able to heal it.

We see that according to St. Gregory M. our Lord Christ is "the one only head of the church;"‡ to whom for

* Jactantiam sumpsit ita ut universa sibi tentet adscribere, et omnia quæ soli uni capiti coherent, videlicet Christo, per elationem pompatici sermonis ejusdem Christi sibi studeat membra subjugare.—*Gr. M. Ep. iv. 36.* The same words we have in the epistle of pope Pelagius (predecessor of St. Gregory) to the bishops of Constantinople. (P. Pelagii Ep. 8.)

† Ego autem fidenter dico, quia quisquis se Universalem Sacerdotem vocat, vel vocari desiderat, in elatione sua Antichristum præcurrit quia superbiendo se cæteris præponit.—(*Greg. I. lib. vi. Ep. 30.*) Mec dispari superbia ad errorem ducitur; quia sicut perversus ille Deus videri vult super omnes homines; ita quisquis est, qui solus sacerdos appellari appetit, super cæteros sacerdotes se extollit.—(*ad Mauric. Aug.*)

‡ Vide P. Pelag. Ep. 3.

company let us adjoin St. Basil M. (that we may have both Greek and Latin for it), who saith, that (according to St. Paul) "we are the body of Christ, and members one of another, because it is manifest that the one and sole truly head, which is Christ, doth hold and connect each one to another unto concord."*

To decline these allegations of scripture, they have forged distinctions, of several kinds of churches, and several sorts of heads; the which evasions I shall not particularly discourse, seeing it may suffice to observe in general, that no such distinctions have any place or any ground in scripture, nor can well consist with it; which simply doth represent the church as one kingdom, a *kingdom of heaven, a kingdom not of this world*; all the subjects whereof have *their πολιτευμα in heaven*,^a or are considered as members of a city there; so that it is vain to seek for a sovereign thereof in this world: the which also doth to the catholic church sojourning on earth usually impart the name and attributes properly appertaining to the church most universal (comprehensive of all christians in heaven and upon earth),^b because that is a visible representative of this, and we by joining in offices of piety with that do communicate with this; whence that which is said of one (concerning the unity of its king, its head, its pastor, its priest) is to be under

* Κρατούσης δηλονότι καὶ συναπτουμένης ἕκαστῷ ἄλλῳ πρὸς ὑμόνοιαν τῆς λιᾶς καὶ μόνης ἀληθοῦς φιλῆς, ἥτις ἐστὶν ὁ Χριστός.—*Bas. M. de Div. tom. ii. p. 261.* Totus Christus caput corpus est; caput unigenitus Dei Filius, et corpus ejus ecclesiæ, sponsus et sponsa, de carne una. Quicunque de ipso capite abscisuris sanctis dissentiant, etiam in omnibus locis inveniuntur in quibus ecclesia designata est, non sunt in ecclesia, &c.—*Aug. de Eccl. cap. 4; vide contra Petil. iii. 42.* Christ is the head and the body; the head only begotten Son of God, and and his the church, the bridegroom and the spouse two in one flesh. Whoever disagree about head itself from the holy scriptures, they are found in all places in which the church is designed, they are not in the church, &c. — was unhappily expressed by Bellarmine — Ecclesia secluso etiam Christo unum caput habere debet.—*De pont. R. i. 9 §.* Ac ne The church, even Christ himself, being aside, ought to have one head.

^a John xviii. 36; Phil. iii. 20; Heb. xii. 22; Acts xx. 28; Matt. xvi. 18; 1 Cor. xii. 12; Gal. i. 13.

stood of the other ;^f especially considering that our Lord, according to his promise, is ever present with the church here, governing it by the efficacy of his Spirit and grace, so that no other corporeal or visible head of this spiritual body is needful.*

It was to be sure a visible headship which St. Gregory did so eagerly impugn and exclaim against ; for he could not apprehend the bishop of Constantinople so wild, as to affect a jurisdiction over the church mystical, or invisible.

2. Indeed, upon this very account, the Romish pretence doth not well accord with holy scripture,^g because it transformeth the church into another kind of body than it was constituted by God, according to the representation of it in scripture : for there it is represented as a spiritual and heavenly society, compacted by the bands of *one faith, one hope, one spirit* of charity :^h but this pretence turneth it into a worldly frame ; united by the same bands of interest and design ; managed in the same manner, by terror and allurements ; supported by the same props of force, of policy, of wealth, of reputation and splendour, as all other secular corporations are.†

You may call it what you please ; but it is evident, that in truth the papal monarchy is a temporal dominion, driving on worldly ends by worldly means ; such as our Lord did never mean to institute : so that the subjects thereof may with far more reason than the people of Constantinople had, when their bishop Nestorius did stop some of their priests from contradicting him, say, “ We have a king ; a bishop we have not :” ‡ so that

* *Christus arbitrio et nutu ac presentia sua et præpositis ipsos, et ecclesiam cum præpositis gubernat.*—*Cypr. Ep.* 69. Christ, by his own arbitrement, and power, and presence, governs both the bishops themselves, and the church with the bishops.

† *Caput nostrum, quod Christus est, ad hoc sua esse membra nos voluit, ut per compagem charitatis et fidei unum nos in se corpus efficeret.*—*Greg. M. Ep.* vii. 111. Our head, which is Christ, would therefore have us to be his members, that by the conjunction of charity and faith he might make us to be one body.

‡ *Βασιλεία ἔχομεν, ἐπίσκοπον οὐκ ἔχομεν.*—*Conc. Eph. Part. cap.* 30.

^f *Matt. xxviii. 20.*

^g *John xviii. 36.*

^h *Eph. iv. 4, 5 ; 2 Cor. x. 4.*

upon every pope we may charge that whereof Anthimus was accused, in the synod of Constantinople, under Menas : “ That he did account the greatness and dignity of the priesthood to be, not a spiritual charge of souls, but as a kind of politic rule.”*

This was that which seeming to be affected by the bishop of Antioch, in encroachment upon the church of Cyprus, the Fathers of the Ephesine synod did endeavour to nip ; enacting a canon against all such invasions, “ lest under pretext of holy discipline the pride of worldly authority should creep in.”† And what pride of that kind could they mean beyond that which now the popes do claim and exercise ?‡ Now, do I say, after that the papal empire hath swollen to such a bulk : whereas so long ago, when it was but in its bud and stripling age, it was observed of it by a very honest historian, “ that the Roman episcopacy had long since advanced into a high degree of power beyond the priesthood.”||

3. This pretence doth thwart the scripture by destroying that brotherly co-ordination and equality, which our Lord did appoint among the bishops and chief pastors of his church : he did (as we before shewed) prohibit all his apostles to assume any domination, or authoritative superiority over one another ; the which command, together with others concerning the pastoral function, we may well suppose to reach their successors : so did St. Jerome suppose, collecting thence that all bishops by original institution are equals, or that no one by our Lord's order may challenge superiority over another : “ Wherever” (saith he) “ a bishop is, whether at Rome or at Evgubium, at Constantinople or at Rhegium, at Alexandria or at Thanis, he is of the

* *Τὸ τῆς ἀρχιερωσύνης μέγεθος καὶ ἀξίωμα οὐ πνευματικὴν ψυχῶν ἐπιστοσίαν εἶναι λογισάμενος, ἀλλ' οἶόν τινα πολιτικὴν ἀρχὴν, &c.*—*Conc. sub. Men. Act. i. pag.* 49.

† *Μηδὲ ἐν Ἱερουσόλῃς προσχῆματι ἕξουσίας κοσμητικῆς τύπος παρεισδύηται.*—*Can. Eph. i. can.* 8.

‡ This was that which, about the same time, the Fathers of the African synod do request P. Celestine to forbear ; — *nec permittere, ut fumosum mundi fastum Christi ecclesie inducere videamur.*—*Conc. Afr. ad P. Celest. 1.*

|| *Τῆς Ῥωμαίων ἐπισκοπῆς ὁμοίως τῇ Ἀλεξανδρείῳ πέρα τῆς ἱερουσόλης ἐπὶ δυναστείας πάλαι παρελθούσης.*—*Socr. vii. 11.*

same worth, and of the same priesthood; the power of wealth or lowness of poverty do not make a bishop higher or lower; but all are successors of the apostles.* Where doth not he plainly deny the bishop of Eugubium to be inferior to him of Rome, as being no less a successor of the apostles than he? Doth he not say these words in way of proof, that the authority of the Roman bishop or church was of no validity against the practice of other bishops and churches?† (upon occasion of deacons there taking upon them more than in other places, as cardinal deacons do now;) which excludeth such distinctions, as scholastical fancies have devised, to shift off his testimony; the which he uttered simply, never dreaming of such distinctions.

This consequence St. Gregory did suppose, when he therefore did condemn the title of Universal Bishop, because it did "imply an affectation of superiority" and dignity in one bishop above others; of "abasing the name of other bishops in comparison of his own," of extolling "himself above the rest of priests,"‡ &c.

This the ancient popes did remember, when usually in their compellation of any bishop they did style them "brethren, colleagues, fellow-ministers, fellow-bishops,"|| not intending thereby compliment or mockery, but to declare their sense of the original equality among bishops; notwithstanding some differences in order and privileges, which their See had obtained. And that this was the general sense of the Fathers we shall afterward shew.

Hence, when it was objected to them,

* Ubiunque fuerit episcopus sive Romæ, sive Eugubii, sive Constantinopoli, sive Rhegii, sive Alexandriæ, sive Thanis, ejusdem meriti, ejusdem et sacerdotii; potentia divitiarum et paupertatis humilitas vel sublimiorem vel inferiorem episcopum non facit; cæterum omnes apostolorum successores sunt.—*Hier. Ep. 85. (ad Evagr.)*

† Si auctoritas quæritur, orbis major est urbe; Ubiunque, &c.

‡ Illud appetunt unde omnibus digniores videantur.—*Gr. Ep. iv. 34.* Quia superbiendo se cæteris præponit.—*Ep. vi. 38.* Super cæteros sacerdotes se extollit.—*Ibid.* Cupis episcoporum nomen tui comparatione calcare.—*Ep. iv. 38.* Cuncta ejus membra tibimet conaris supponere.—*Ibid.*

|| (Invigiletur ergo ut omnibus coepiscopis nostris et fratribus innotescat.—*P. Corn. apud Cyp. Ep. 48.*)

that they did affect superiority, they did sometimes disclaim it: so did Pope Gelasius I.* (a zealous man for the honour of his See.)

4. This pretence doth thwart the holy scripture, not only by trampling down the dignity of bishops (which according to St. Gregory doth imply great pride and presumption), but as really infringing the rights granted by our Lord to his church, and the governors of it.†

For to each church our Lord hath imposed a duty, and imparted a power of maintaining divine truth, and so approving itself a pillar and support of truth; of deciding controversies possible and proper to be decided with due temper, ultimately without further resort; for that he, who will not obey or acquiesce in its decision, is to be as a heathen or publican; of censuring and rejecting offenders (in doctrine or demeanour;) *Those within* (saith St. Paul to the church of Corinth) *do not ye judge? But them that are without, God judgeth: wherefore put away from among yourselves that wicked person:* of preserving order and decency, according to that rule prescribed to the church of Corinth, *Let all things be done decently and in order*‡ of promoting edification; of deciding causes.

All which rights and privileges the Roman bishop doth bereave the churches of, snatching them to himself; pretending that he is the sovereign doctor, judge, regulator of all churches; overruling and voiding all that is done by them, according to his pleasure.

The scripture hath enjoined and em-

* Hic non tam optamus præponi aliis (sicut prædicat), quam cum fidelibus cunctis sanctum et Deo placitum habere consortium.—*P. Gelas. I. Ep. 9. (ad Euphem. Ep. CP.)* Here we do not so much desire to be advanced above others, as together with all the faithful to make up a consort holy and well-pleasing to God.

† — Vobis subtrahitur, quod alteri plus quam ratio exigit præbetur.—*Greg. vii. 30. (I. 451.)* What is yielded to another more than reason requires, is taken from you. *Προσγ. — τῆς πάντων ἐλευθερίας ἀντὶμενον.*—*Syn. Ep. I. can. 8.* A thing that entrencheth upon the freedom of all others.

‡ Rev. ii. et iii.; 1 Tim. iii. 15; Matt. *xvii. 17, ἐὰν δὲ παρανοήσῃ, &c.* Οὐχὶ τοὺς ἕω ἑμῶν κτίvere;

‡ 1 Cor. v. 12, καὶ ἐκαίρε—vide v. 4, 5; Rev. ii. 20; 1 Cor. xiv. 40; 1 Thess v. 14; Rom. xiv. 19; 1 Cor. vi. 1.

owered all bishops to feed, guide, and rule their respective churches, as the ministers, stewards, ambassadors, angels of God; for the perfecting of the saints, for the work of the ministry, for the edification of the body of Christ:^a to whom God hath committed the care of their people, so that they are responsible for their souls.

All which rights and privileges of the episcopal office the pope hath invaded, doth obstruct, cramp, frustrate, destroy; pretending (without any warrant) that their authority is derived from him; forcing them to exercise it no otherwise than as his subjects, and according to his pleasure.* But of this point more afterward.

5. This pretence doth thwart the scripture, by robbing all Christian people of the liberties and rights with which by that divine charter they are endowed,† and which they are obliged to preserve inviolate.

St. Paul enjoineth the Galatians to stand fast in the liberty wherewith Christ hath made us free, and not to be entangled again with the yoke of bondage.¹ There is therefore a liberty which we must maintain, and a power to which we must not submit: and against whom can we have more ground to do this, than against him who pretendeth to dogmatize, to define points of faith, to impose doctrines (new and strange enough) on our consciences, under a peremptory obligation of yielding assent to them; to prescribe laws, as divine and necessary to be observed, without warrant, as those

* Dei et apostolicæ sedis gratia.—Vide post. Superbum nimis est et immoderatum ultra fines proprios tendere, et antiquitate calcata aliam jus velle præripere, atque ut unius crescat dignitas, tot metropolitanorum impugnare primatus, &c.—P. Leo I. Ep. 55. It is too proud and unreasonable a thing for one to stretch himself beyond his bounds, and mau-
re all antiquity to snatch away other men's right; and that the dignity of one may be en-
anced, to oppose the primacies of so many
metropolitans.

† Sanctæ ecclesiæ universali injuriam facit.—Greg. I. Ep. i. 24. It does wrong to the holy catholic church. Plebis majestas.—Cypri. Ep. 55. (ad Corn. P.) p. 117.

¹ Acts xx. 28; Heb. xiii. 17; 1 Pet. v. 2. 1 Tim. iii. 15; Tit. i. 7; 1 Cor. xii. 28; Eph. iv. 11; Rev. ii. &c.; Eph. iv. 12; Heb. xiii. 17.

¹ Gal. v. 1.

dogmatists did, against whom St. Paul biddeth us to maintain our liberty?^m (so that if he should declare "virtue to be vice, and white to be black, we must believe him," some of his adherents have said, consistently enough with his pretences :) for,—

Against such tyrannical invaders we are bound to maintain our liberty, according to that precept of St. Paul; the which if a pope might well allege against the proceedings of a general synod,ⁿ with much more reason may we thereby justify our non-submission to one man's exorbitant domination.

This is a power which the apostles themselves did not challenge to themselves; for, *We* (saith St. Paul) *have not dominion over your faith, but are helpers of your joy.*^o

They did not pretend that any Christian should absolutely believe them in cases wherein they had not revelation (general or special) from God; in such cases referring their opinion to the judgment and discretion of Christians.^p

They say, *Though we, or an angel from heaven, preach any other gospel unto you than that which we have preached unto you, let him be accursed: If any man, &c.*; which precept, with many others of the like purport (enjoining us to examine the truth, to adhere unto the received doctrine, to decline heterodoxies and novelties), doth signify nothing, if every Christian hath not allowed to him a judgment of discretion, but is tied blindly to follow the dictates of another.

St. Austin (I am sure) did think this liberty such, that without betraying it, no man could be obliged to believe any thing not grounded upon canonical authority: for to a Donatist, his adversary, citing the authority of St. Cyprian against him, he thus replieth: "But now seeing it is not canonical which thou recitest, with that liberty to which the Lord hath called us, I do not receive the opinion, differing from scripture, of that man whose praise I cannot reach, to whose great learning I do not compare my writings, whose wit I love, in whose speech I delight,

^m Gal. v. 1; Col. ii. 16, 18.

ⁿ P. Leo I. Ep. 28.

^o 2 Cor. i. 24. ^p 1 Cor. x. 15; vii. 12, 25, 40.

¹ Gal. i. 8.

whose charity I admire, whose martyrdom I reverence.”*

This liberty, not only the ancients, but even divers popes, have acknowledged to belong to every Christian; as we shall hereafter shew, when we shall prove, that we may lawfully reject the pope, as a patron of error and iniquity.

6. It particularly doth thwart scripture by wronging princes, in exempting a numerous sort of people from subjection to their laws and judicature; whereas, by God's ordination and express command, every soul is subject to them;† not excepting the popes themselves (in the opinion of St. Chrysostom, except they be greater than any apostle.)

By pretending to govern the subjects of princes without their leave; to make laws without his permission or confirmation; to cite his subjects out of their territories, &c.; which are encroachments upon the rights of God's unquestionable ministers.

III. Further, because our adversaries do little regard any allegation of scripture against them (pretending themselves to be the only masters of its sense, or of common sense, judges and interpreters of them), we do allege against them, that this pretence doth also cross tradition, and the common doctrine of the Fathers. For,

1. Common usage and practice is a good interpreter of right; and that sheweth no such right was known in the primitive church.

2. Indeed the state of the primitive church did not admit it.

3. The Fathers did suppose no order in the church, by original right or divine institution, superior to that of a bishop; whence they commonly did style a bishop the highest priest, and episcopacy the top of ecclesiastical orders.*

“The chief priest,” saith Tertullian,

* Nunc vero quoniam canonicum non est quod recitas, ea libertate ad quam nos vocavit Dominus, ejus viri, cujus laudem consequi non valeo, cujus nullis literis scripta mea non comparo, cujus ingenium diligo, cujus ore delector, cujus charitatem miror, cujus martyrium veneror, hoc quod aliter sapuit non accipio.—*Aug. contr. Cres.* ii. 32.

* Ἀπὸ τοῦ Κυρίου διδαχθέντες ἀκολουθίαν πραγμάτων τοῖς μὲν ἐπισκόποις τὰ τῆς ἀρχιερωσύνης ἐνεύμαμεν, &c.—*Const. Apost.* viii. 46.

† *Rom.* xiii. 1.

“that is, the bishop, hath the right of giving baptism.”*

“Although” (saith St. Ambrose) “the presbyters also do it, yet the beginning of the ministry is from the highest priest.”†

Optatus calleth bishops “the tops and princes of all.”‡

“The divine order of bishops” (saith Dionysius) “is the first of divine orders; the same being also the extreme and last of them; for into it all the frame of our hierarchy is resolved and accomplished.”||

This language is common even among popes themselves, complying with the speech then current;§ for, “Presbytera,” saith Pope Innocent I., “although they are priests, yet have they not the top of high-priesthood.”

“No man,” saith Pope Zozimus I., “against the precepts of the Fathers, should presume to aspire to the highest priesthood of the church.”¶

“It is decreed” (saith Pope Leo. I.) “that the chorepiscopi, or presbyters, who figure the sons of Aaron, shall not presume to snatch that which the princes of the priests (whom Moses and Aaron

* Dandi quidem jus habet summus sacerdos, qui est episcopus.—*Tert. de Bapt.* cap. 17.

† Licet enim et presbyteri faciant, tamen exordium ministerii est a summo sacerdote.—*Ambr. de Sacr.* iii. 1. Suscepisti gubernacula summi sacerdotii.—*Id.* Ep. 5.

‡ Apices et principes omnium sacerdotes.—*Opt.* 1. Ecclesie salus in summi sacerdotis dignitate pendet.—*Hier. contr. Lucif.* 4. The safety of the church depends upon the dignity of the high priest. Ego dignus summo sacerdotio decernebar.—*Id.* Ep. 99. (*ad Asell.*) In episcopo omnes ordines sunt, quia primus sacerdos est, hoc est princeps sacerdotum, et propheta et evangelista, et cætera adimplenda officia ecclesie in ministerio fidelium.—*Ambr. in Eph.* iv. 11. In the bishop there are all orders, because he is the first priest; i. e. the prince of priests, and prophet, and evangelist, and all other offices of the church, to be fulfilled in the ministry of the faithful.

|| Ἡ θεία τῶν ἱεραγῶν τάξις, &c. supr. Pontifex princeps sacerdotum est, quasi via sequentium; ipse et summus sacerdos, ipse et pontifex maximus nuncupatur.—*Isid. Hisp. apud Grat. Dist.* xxi. cap. 1.

§ Nam presbyteri, licet sint sacerdotes, pontificatus tamen apicem non habent.—*P. Innoc. I.* Ep. 1. (*ad Decent.*) — dum facile impo- nuntur manus, dum negligenter summus sacerdos eligitur.—*Id.* Ep. 12, (*ad Aurel.*)

¶ Ne quis contra Patrum præcepta — ad summum ecclesie sacerdotium aspirare præsumeret.—*P. Zos.* 1. Ep. 1. (*ad Hesych.*)

lid typify) are commanded to do.”* [Note, by the way, that seeing, according to this pope's mind (after St. Jerome), Moses and Aaron did in the Jewish policy represent bishops, there was none there to prefigure the pope.]

In those days the bishop of Nazianzum (a petty town in Cappadocia) was an high priest (so Gregory calleth his father).† And the bishop of a poor city in Afric is styled “Sovereign Pontiff of Christ, most blessed Father, most blessed Pope;”‡ and the very Roman clergy doth call St. Cyprian “most blessed and most glorious pope:”|| which titles the pope doth now so charily reserve and appropriate to himself.

But innumerable instances of this kind might be produced: I shall only therefore add two other passages, which seem very observable, to the enforcement of this Discourse.

St. Jerome, reprehending the discipline of the Montanists,§ hath these words: “With us the bishops do hold the places of the apostles; with them a bishop is in the third place: for they have for the first rank the patriarchs of Pepusa in Phrygia; for the second, those whom they call cenones; so are bishops thrust down into the third, that is, almost the last place; as if thence religion became more state-ly, if that which is first with us be the

* Ideoque id quod tantum facere principibus sacerdotum jussu est, quorum typum Moses et Aaron tenuerunt, omnino decretum est, ut chorepiscopi vel presbyteri qui filiorum Aaron gestant figuram, arripere non præsumant.—*P. Leo* Ep. 88. Pontificatus apicem non habent.—*Ibid.* vide Ep. lxxxiv. cap. 5; *S. Hier. ad Evagr.* Ut sciamus traditiones apostolicas sumptas de Veteri Testamento, Quod Aaron et filii ejus atque Levitæ in templo fuerunt, hoc sibi episcopi, presbyteri et diaconi vindicant in ecclesia.—*Or. xix.* p. 309.

† A bishop called ἀρχιεπίσκοπος. *Apost. Const.* vii. 10, 12.

‡ Summus Christi pontifex Augustinus.—(*Paulin. apud Aug.* Ep. 36;) *Aug.* Ep. 35. Beatissimo papæ Augustino.—*Hieron.* (*Aug.* Ep. 11, 13, 14, &c.)

|| Optamus te beatiss. et gloriosissime papa in Domino semper valere.—*Ep.* 31.

§ Apud nos apostolorum locum episcopi tenent, apud eos episcopus tertius est; habent enim primos de Pepusa Phrygiæ patriarchas, secundos quos appellant cenones; atque ita in tertium, id est pene ultimum locum episcopi devolvuntur; quasi exinde ambitiosior religio fiat, si quod apud nos primum est, apud illos novissimum sit.—*Hier. (ad Marcellam), Ep.* 54.

last with them.” Now doth not St. Jerome here affirm, that every bishop hath the place of an apostle, and the first rank in the church? Doth not he tax the advancement of any order above this? May not the popish hierarchy most patly be compared to that of the Montanists, and is it not equally liable to the censure of St. Jerome? Doth it not place the Roman pope in the first place, and the cardinals in the second, detruing the bishops into a third place? Could the Pepusian patriarch, or his cenones, either more overtop in dignity, or sway by power over bishops, than doth the Roman patriarch and his cardinals?

Again, St. Cyprian telleth Pope Cornelius, that in episcopacy doth reside “the sublime and divine power of governing the church;” it being “the sublime top of the priesthood.”* “He” (saith the blessed man concerning Pope Cornelius) “did not suddenly arrive to episcopacy; but being through all ecclesiastical offices promoted, and having in divine administrations often merited of God, did by all the steps of religion mount to the sublimest pitch of priesthood.”† Where it is visible, that St. Cyprian doth not reckon the papacy, but the episcopacy of Cornelius, to be that top of priesthood (above which there was nothing eminent in the church), unto which he passing through the inferior degrees of the clergy had attained.

In fine, it cannot well be conceived that the ancients constantly would have spoken in this manner, if they had allowed the papal office to be such as now it doth bear itself; the which indeed is an order no less distant from episcopacy than the rank of a king differeth from that of the meanest baron in his kingdom.

Neither is it prejudicial to this discourse (or to any preceding), that in the primitive church there were some distinctions and subordinations of bishops (as of pa-

* — actum est de episcopatus vigore, et de ecclesiæ gubernandæ sublimi ac divina potestate.—*Cypr.* Ep. 55. (*ad P. Cornel.*)

† Non iste ad episcopatum subito pervenit, sed per omnia ecclesiastica officia promotus, et in divinis administrationibus Dominum sæpe promeritus, ad sacerdotii sublimi fastigium cunctis religionis gradibus ascendit.—*Cypr.* Ep. 52.

triarchs, primates, metropolitans, common bishops),* for,

These were according to prudence constituted by the church itself for the more orderly and peaceable administration of things.

These did not import such a difference among the bishops, that one should domineer over others, to the infringing of primitive fraternity, or common liberty; but a precedence in the same rank, with some moderate advantages for the common good.

These did stand under authority of the church; and might be changed or corrected, as was found expedient, by common agreement.

By virtue of these, the superiors of this kind could do nothing over their subordinates in an arbitrary manner, but according to the regulation of canons, established by consent in synods; by which their influence was amplified or curbed.†

When any of these did begin to domineer, or exceed his limits, he was liable to account and correction; he was exclaimed against as tyrannical.‡

When primates did begin to swell and encroach, good men declared their displeasure at it, and wished it removed; as is known particularly by *the famous wish of Gregory Nazianzen.*||

But we are discoursing against a superiority of a different nature, which foundeth itself in the institution of Christ, imposeth itself on the church, is not alterable or governable by it, can endure no check or control, pretendeth to be endowed with an absolute power to act without or against the consent of the church, is limited by no certain bounds but its own pleasure, &c.¶

* The Africans had a particular care that this primacy should not degenerate into tyranny.

† Conc. Ant. can. 9; *vide* Apost. can. 34; Conc. Carth. apud Cypr. Cod. Afr. can. 39; Nestorius, Dioscorus.

‡ Οὐά τῆ τυραννίδας τὰς φιλαρχίας ἐκθίμως διεκδικούντες.—Euseb. viii. 1. So Eusebius complaineth of the bishops in his time. So Isidor. Pelusiot.—*Ep.* xx. 125; iv. 219.

|| Ὡς ἄρελον γε μηδὲ ἦν προεδρία, μηδὲ τις τόπου προτίμησις, καὶ τυραννικὴ προνομία.—Greg. Naz. Orat. 28. O that there were not at all any presidency, or any preference in place, and tyrannical prerogative!

¶ So Socrates of the bishop (not only of Rome, but) of Alexandria.—Liv. vii. cap 11. *So St. Chrysostom* in 1 Tim. iii. 1, in Ep. Orat.

IV. Further, this pretence may be impugned by many arguments springing from the nature and reason of things abstractedly considered; according to which the exercise of such an authority may appear unpracticable, without much iniquity and great inconvenience, in prejudice to the rights of Christian states and people, to the interests of religion and piety, to the peace and welfare of mankind: whence it is to be rejected, as a pest of Christendom.

I. Whereas all the world in design and obligation is Christian (the *utmost parts of the earth* being granted *in possession* to our Lord; and his gospel extending to every creature under heaven),¹¹ and may in effect become such, when God pleaseth, by acceptance of the gospel; whereas it may easily happen, that the most distant places on the earth may embrace Christianity; whereas really Christian churches have been and are dispersed all about the world; it is thence hugely incommodious, that all the church should depend upon an authority resident in one place, and to be managed by one person: the church, being such, is too immense, boundless, uncircumscribed, unwieldy a bulk, to be guided by the inspection, or managed by the influence, of one such authority or person.

If the whole world were reduced under the government of one civil monarch, it would necessarily be ill governed, as to policy, to justice, to peace: the skirts, or remoter parts from the metropolis or centre of the government, would extremely suffer thereby; for they would feel little light or warmth from majesty shining at such a distance: they would live under small awe of that power, which was so far out of sight: they must have very difficult recourse to it, for redress of grievances, and relief of oppressions; for final decision of causes, and composure of differences; for correction of offences, and dispensation of justice, upon good information, with tolerable expedition: it would be hard to preserve peace, or quell seditions, and suppress insurrections, that might arise in distant quarters.

11. So Greg. Naz. complained of *τυραννικὴ προνομία*.—*Ibid.*

¹¹ Psal. ii. 8; Col. i. 23; Luke xxiv. 4^o Matt. xxviii. 19.

What man could obtain the knowledge or experience needful skilfully and justly to give laws or administer judgment to so many nations different in humour, in language, and customs? What mind of man, what industry, what leisure, could serve to sustain the burden of that care, which is needful to the wielding such an office? How and when should one man be able to receive all the addresses, to weigh all the cases, to make all the resolutions and dispatches requisite for such a charge? * If the burden of one small kingdom be so great that wise and good princes do groan under its weight, what must that be of all mankind? To such an extent of government there must be allowed a majesty, and power correspondent, the which cannot be committed to one hand, without its degeneration into extreme tyranny. The words of Zosimus to this purpose are observable; who saith, that the Romans, by admitting Augustus Cæsar to the government, did do very perilously; for "If he should choose to manage the government rightly and justly, he would not be capable of applying himself to all things as were fit, not being able to succour those who do lie at greatest distance; nor could he find so many magistrates as would not be ashamed to defeat the opinion conceived of them; nor could he suit them to the differences of so many manners: or if, transgressing the bounds of royalty, he should warp to tyranny, disturbing the magistracies, overlooking misdemeanours, bartering right for money, holding the subjects for slaves (such as most emperors, or rather near all, have been, few excepted;) then it is quite necessary that the brutish authority of the prince should be a public calamity: for then flatterers being by him dignified with gifts and honours, do invade the greatest commands; and those who are modest and quiet, not affecting the same life with them, are consequently displeased, not enjoying the same advantages; so that from hence cities are filled with seditions and troubles. And the civil and military employments being delivered up to avaricious persons, do both render a peaceable life sad and grievous to men

* Cum tot sustineas, et tanta negotia solus, &c.—*Hor. Ep. ii. 1.*

of better disposition, and do enfeeble the resolution of soldiers in war."*

Hence St. Austin was of opinion, that "it were happy for mankind if all kingdoms were small, enjoying a peaceful neighbourhood."†

It is commonly observed by historians, that "Rome, growing in bigness, did labour therewith,"‡ and was not able to support itself; many distempers and disorders springing up in so vast a body, which did throw it into continual pangs, and at length did bring it to ruin; for "Then" (saith St. Austin concerning the times of Pompey) "Rome had subdued Afric, it had subdued Greece; and widely also ruling over other parts, as not able to bear itself, did in a manner by its own greatness break itself."||

Hence that wise prince, Augustus Cæsar, did himself forbear to enlarge the Roman dominion, and did in his testament advise the senate to do the like. §

* Εἶτε γὰρ ἄρθως, &c.—*Zos. Hist. i., (p. 4. Ste.)*

† Felicioribus sic rebus humanis, omnia regna parva essent, concordi vicinitate lætantia.—*Aug. de Civ. D. iv. 15.* "Ἔστι τι καὶ πόλις μεγέθους μέτρον, ὡς περ καὶ τῶν ἄλλων πάντων, ζώων, φυτῶν, ὀργάνων· καὶ γὰρ τοῦτων ἕκαστον οὐτὲ λίαν μικρὸν, οὐτὲ κατὰ μέγεθος ὑπερβάλλον ἔχει τὴν αὐτοῦ δύναμιν.—*Arist. Pol. vii. 4.* There is a certain measure of greatness fit for cities and commonwealths, as well as for all other things, living creatures, plants, instruments; for every one of these hath its proper virtue and faculty, when it is neither very little, nor yet exceeds in bigness. Τίς γὰρ στρατηγὸς ἔσται τοῦ λίαν ὑπερβάλλοντος πλήθους, ἢ τις κήρυξ μὴ στενωρόρειος;—*Ibid.* For who would be a captain of an excessive huge multitude? &c.

‡ Suis et ipsa Roma viribus ruit.—*Hor. Ep. 16.*—quæ ab exiguis initiis creverit, ut jam magnitudine laboret sua.—*Liv. I.* Ac nescio an satius fuerit populo Romano Sicilia et Africa contentos fuisse, aut his etiam ipsis carere dominantibus in Italia sua, quam eo magnitudinis crescere, ut viribus suis conficeretur.—*Flor. iii. 12.*

|| Tunc jam Roma subjugaverat Africam, subjugaverat Græciam, lateque etiam aliis partibus imperans tanquam seipsam ferre non valens, se sua quodammodo magnitudine fregerat.—*Aug. de Civ. D. xviii. 45; Tac. Hist. ii. p. 476.*

§ Γνώμην τε αὐτοῖς ἔδωκε τοῖς τε παροῦσιν ἀρκουθῆναι, καὶ μετὰ αὐτῶν ἐπὶ τὸ πλεῖστον τὴν ἀρχὴν ἐπαυθῆσαι ἐθέλησαι· δυσφύλακτόν τε γὰρ αὐτὴν εἶσθαι εἶρη τοῦτο γὰρ καὶ αὐτὸς ἔντως ἀεὶ ποτε οὐ λόγῳ μόνον, ἀλλὰ καὶ ἔργῳ ἐτήρησε· παρὸν γούνη αὐτῷ πολλὰ ἐκ τοῦ βαρβαρικοῦ προσηκῆσθαι, οὐκ ἠθέλησε.—*Dion. lib. lvi. Tac. Ann. 1.* He advised them to be content with what they had, and by no means to endeavour the enlargement of their empire; for, said he, it will be hardly kept: and this he

To the like inconveniences (and much greater in its kind; temporal things being more easily ordered than spiritual, and having secular authority, great advantages of power and wealth, to aid itself) must the church be obnoxious, if it were subjected to the government of one sovereign, unto whom the maintenance of faith, the protection of discipline, the determination of controversies, the revision of judgments, the discussion and final decision of causes upon appeal, the suppression of disorders and factions, the inspection over all governors, the correction of misdemeanours, the constitution, relaxation, and abolition of laws, the resolution of all matters concerning religion and the public state, in all countries must be referred.

Τίς πρὸς ταῦτα ἰκάρῳ; ; What shoulders can bear such a charge without perpetual miracle? (and yet we do not find that the pope hath any promise of miraculous assistance, nor in his demeanour doth appear any mark thereof.) What mind would not the care of so many affairs utterly distract and overwhelm? who could find time to cast a glance on each of so numberless particulars? What sagacity of wit, what variety of learning, what penetrancy of judgment, what strength of memory, what indefatigable vigour of industry, what abundance of experience, would suffice, for enabling one man to weigh exactly all the controversies of faith and cases of discipline perpetually starting up in so many regions?*

What reach of skill and ability would serve for accommodation of laws to the different humours and fashions of so many nations? Shall a decrepit old man, in the decay of his age, parts, vigour (such as popes usually are), undertake this? May we not say to him, as Jethro did to Moses, *Ultra vires tuas est negotium; The thing thou doest is not good: thou wilt surely wear away, both thou and this people that is with*

himself observed, not in word only, but in deed: for when he might have gotten more from the barbarous nations, yet he would not.

*Ipsa nocet moles, utinam remeare liceret
Ad veteres fines, et mœnia pauperis anci, &c.
Claud. de Ballo Gildon.*

* The synod of Basil doth well describe the duty of a pope; but it is infinitely hard to practise it in any measure.—(*Conc. Bas. sess. xxiii. p. 64, &c.*—)

thee: for this thing is too heavy for thee; thou art not able to perform it thyself alone.†

If the care of a small diocese hath made the most able and industrious bishops (who had a conscience and sense of their duty) to groan under its weight, how insupportable must such a charge be!

The care of his own particular church, if he would act the part of a bishop indeed, would sufficiently take up the pope; especially in some times; when Pope Alexander saith,—"Ut intestina nostræ specialis ecclesiæ negotia vix possemus ventilare, nedum longinqua ad plenum extricare."^a

If it be said that St. Paul testifieth of himself, that he had a care of all the churches incumbent on him;† I answer, that he (and other apostles had the like) questionless had a pious solicitude for the welfare of all Christians, especially of the churches which he had founded, being vigilant for occasions to edify them. But what is this, to bearing the charge of a standing government over all the churches diffused through the world? That care of a few churches then was burdensome to him: what is the charge of so many now; to one seldom endowed with such apostolical graces and gifts as St. Paul was?

How weak must the influence of such an authority be upon the circumferential parts of its œcumenical sphere!

How must the outward branches of the churches faint and fade for want of sap from the root of discipline, which must be conveyed through so many obstructions to such a distance!

How discomposed must things be in each country for want of seasonable resolution, hanging in suspense till information do travel to Rome, and determination come back thence!*

* *Tanta me occupationum onera depriment, ut ad superna animus nullatenus erigatur, &c.*—*Greg. I. lib. i. Ep. 7. 25. 5.* Such a weight of employment presses me down, that my mind can by no means be raised to things above. *Si administratio illius temporis mare fuit, quid de presentis papatu dicendum erit?*—*Calv. Inst. iv. cap. 7. 22.* If the ordering of
† *Exod. xviii. 17, 18.*
† *P. Alex. II. (Epist. ad Ger. Rhem. Bin. p. 284.)* † *2 Cor. xi. 28.*

How difficult, how impossible will it be for him there to receive faithful information or competent testimony, whereupon to ground just decisions of causes!

How will it be in the power thence of any malicious and cunning person to raise trouble against innocent persons! for any like person to decline the due correction laid on him, by transferring the cause from home to such a distance!

How much cost, how much trouble, how much hazard, must parties concerned be at to fetch light and justice thence!

Put case a heresy, a schism, a doubt or debate of great moment, should arise in China: how should the gentlemen in Italy proceed to confute that heresy, to quash that schism, to satisfy that doubt, to determine that cause! how long must it be ere he can have notice thereof! to how many cross accidents of weather and way must the transmitting of information be subject! how difficult will it prove, to get a clear and sure knowledge concerning the state of things!

How hard will it be to get the opposite parties to appear, so as to confront testimonies and probations requisite to a fair and just decision! how shall witnesses of infirm sex or age ramble so far! how easily will some of them prepossess and abuse him with false suggestions and misrepresentations of the case! how slippery therefore will the result be, and how prone he to award a wrongful sentence!*

How tedious, how expensive, how troublesome, how vexatious, how hazardous, must this course be to all parties!† Certainly causes must needs proceed slowly, and depend long; and in the end the resolution of them must be very uncertain.

What temptation will it be for any one (how justly soever corrected by his immediate superiors) to complain; hoping thereby to escape, to disguise the truth,

affairs in those times was a boundless sea, what shall we say of the present papacy?

* Nunquid mirandum est de tam longinquis terris episcopos tuos tibi narrare impune quod volunt?—*Aug. contra Crescon.* iii. 34. What marvel if the bishops from so remote countries tell you what they please without check or control?

† De lungas vias luengas mentiras.—*Hisp. Prov. Syn. Basil.* sess. xxxi. p. 86.

&c. who being condemned will not appeal to one at a distance, hoping by false suggestions to delude him?

This necessarily will destroy all discipline, and induce impunity or frustration of justice.*

Certainly much more convenient and equal it should be, that there should be near at hand a sovereign power, fully capable, expeditely and seasonably to compose differences, to decide causes, to resolve doubts, to settle things, without more stir and trouble.

Very equal it is, that laws should rather be framed, interpreted, and executed in every country, with accommodation to the tempers of the people, to the circumstances of things, to the civil state there, by persons acquainted with those particulars, than by strangers ignorant of them, and apt to mistake about them.

How often will the pope be imposed upon, as he was in the case of Basilides, of whom St. Cyprian saith, "Going to Rome he deceived our colleague Stephen, being placed at distance, and ignorant of the fact, and concealed truth, aspiring to be unjustly restored to the bishopric, from which he was justly removed."*

As he was in the case of Marcellus, who gulled Pope Julius by fair professions, as St. Basil doth often complain.†

As he was in aiding that versatile and troublesome bishop, Eustathius of Sebastia, to the recovery of his bishopric.*

As he was in rejecting "the man of God, and most admirable bishop, Meletius;"‡ and admitting scandalous reports about him, which the same saint doth often resent; blaming sometimes the fallacious misinformation, sometimes the wilful presumption, negligence, pride of the Roman church in the case.¶

* Romam pergens Stephanum collegam nostrum longe positum, et gestæ rei, ac tacitæ veritatis ignarum fefellerit; ut exambiret reponi se injuste in episcopatum, de quo fuerat juste depositus.—*Cypr. Ep.* 67.

† 'Εκεῖνα ποιῶσι νῦν, ἃ πρότερον ἐπὶ Μαρκελλῶ, πρὸς μὲν τὴν ἀλήθειαν ἀποτοῖς ἀπαγγέλλοντας φιλονεικῆσαντες, &c.—*Basil Ep.* 10.

‡ Τοῦ ἀνθρώπου τοῦ Θεοῦ Μελετίου — τὸν θαυμασιώτατον ἐπίσκοπον τῆς ἀθηνῆς τοῦ Θεοῦ ἐκκλησίας Μελέτιον — *Bas. Ep.* 349.

¶ Οἱ μὲν γὰρ ἀγνοοῦσι παντελῶς τὰ ἐνταῦθα· οἱ δὲ κ' ἰδοκῶντες εἰδένα φιλονεικότερον μᾶλλον ἢ ἀληθεύω — *Vide Bern. Ep.* 178, de Consid.

* *Bas. Ep.* 73, 74.

As he was in the case of Pelagius and Celestius, who did cajole Pope Zosimus to acquit them, to condemn Eros and Lazarus their accusers, to reprove the African bishops for prosecuting them.†

How many proceedings should we have like to that of Pope Zosimus I. concerning that scandalous priest, Apiarius; whom, being for grievous crimes excommunicated by his bishop, that pope did admit to communion, and undertake to patronise; but was baffled in his enterprise.*

This hath been the sense of the Fathers in the case.

St. Cyprian therefore saith, that "seeing it was a general statute among the bishops, and that it was both equal and just that every one's cause should be heard there, where the crime was committed; and that each pastor had a portion of the flock allotted to him, which he should rule and govern, being to render unto the Lord an account of his doing."‡

St. Chrysostom thought it "improper that one out of Egypt should administer justice to persons in Thrace."† (And why not, as well as one out of Italy?)

τερον αυτοις εξηγουνται.—Ibid. Some are altogether ignorant of what is here done; others, that think they know them, declare them unto us more contentiously than truly. Ἐλπεί ημῶν λέγων τοῖς Ἀρειομανίταις συγκαταριθμεῖσθαι τοὺς θεοφιλεστάτους ἀδελφοὺς ἡμῶν Μελέτιον καὶ Εὐσέβιον.—Epist. 321, ad Pet. Alex. He grieved us when he said, that our godly brethren, Meletius and Eusebius, were reckoned among the Arians. Ποῖα βόηθεια ἡμῖν τῆς δυτικῆς ἁφροσύνης, οἱ τῶς ἀληθείας οὐτε ἴσασι, οὐτε μαθεῖν ἀνέχονται;—Bas. Ep. 10. What help can we have from the pride of the Africans, who neither know the truth, nor endure to learn it?

* Deinde quod inter tantam hominum multitudinem adeo pauci sunt episcopi, et amplæ singulorum parochiæ, ut in subjectis plebibus curam episcopalis officii nullatenus exequi, aut rite administrare valeant.—P. Greg. VII. Ep. ii. 73. And then because in so great a multitude of people there are so few bishops, and every one's diocese very large, that they are in no wise able to execute or rightly perform the charge of the episcopal office among the people over whom they are set.

† Οὐδὲ γὰρ ἀκόλουθον ἦν τὸν ἐξ Αἰγύπτου τοῖς ἐν Θρήκῃ δικάζειν.—Chrys. Ep. 102. (ad P. Innoc. I.) Ἐἰ γὰρ τοῦτο κρατῆσαι τὸ ἴδιον, καὶ ἐξὸν γένοιτο τοῖς βουλομένοις, εἰς ἀλλοτρίας ἀπίνοι παροικίας ἐκ πασῶντων ἐπιστημάτων, καὶ ἐβάλλειν οὓς ἂν ἐθελοί τις. ἵστε ὅτι πάντα οὐχίσταται, &c. For if this

† P. Zus. I. Ep. 3, 4.

* Cyp. Ep. lv. (p. 116.)

The African synod thought "the Nicene Fathers had provided most prudently and most justly that all affairs should be finally determined there where they did arise."**

They thought "a transmarine judgment could not be firm," because "the necessary persons for testimony, for the infirmity of sex or age, or for many other infirmities, could not be brought thither."†

Pope Leo himself saw how dilatory this course would be; and that "longinquity of region doth cause the examination of truth to become over dilatory."‡

Pope Liberius for such reasons did request Constantius, that Athanasius's cause should be tried at Alexandria; where—(saith he||) "he that is accused, and the accusers are, and the defender of them; and so we may, upon examination had, agree in our sentence about them."

Therefore divers ancient canons of synods did prohibit that any causes should be removed out of the bounds of provinces or dioceses; as elsewhere we show.§

custom prevail, and if they that will may go to other men's dioceses at so great a distance and eject whom any man pleases, know that all will go to wrack, &c.

* Decreta Nicæna sive inferioris gradus clericos, sive ipsos episcopos suis metropolitanis apertissime commiserunt; prudentissime enim justissimeque viderunt (providerunt) quæcumque negotia in suis locis, ubi orsa sunt, finienda.—Ep. Conc. Afric. ad P. Celest. I. (in *sup Cod. Afric.*) vel apud Dion. Ezig.

† Aut quomodo ipsum transmarinum iudicium ratum erit, ad quod testium necessary personæ vel propter sexus, vel propter senectutis infirmitatem, vel multis aliis impedimentis adduci non poterunt.—Ibid.

‡ Ne ergo (quod inter longinquas regiones accidere solet) in nimias dilaciones tenderent veritatis examina.—P. Leo I. Ep. 34.

|| Τότε ἐπὶ τῆν Ἀλεξανδρίων οἱ πάντες ἀπαρίσταντες ἐνθα ὁ ἐγκαλούμενος καὶ οἱ ἐγκαλοῦντες εἶναι, καὶ ὁ ἀντιποιοῦμενος αὐτῶν, ἐξετάσαντες τὰ περὶ αὐτῶν συμπεριεχούμεν.—Theod. ii. 16.

§ Inoleverunt autem hactenus intolerabilium vexationum abusus permulti, dum nimium frequenter a remotissimis etiam partibus ad Romanam curiam, et interdum pro parvis et minutis rebus ac negotiis quamplurimi citari ac evocari consueverunt, &c.—Vide Conc. Bas. sess. xxxi. (p. 86.) But hitherto very many intolerable vexatious abuses have prevailed, while too often men have been used to be cited and called out even from the remotest parts to the court of Rome, and sometimes for slight and trivial businesses and occasions.

2. Such an authority, as this pretence claimeth, must necessarily (if not withheld by continual miracle) throw the church into sad bondage. All the world must become slaves to one city, its wealth must be derived thither, its quiet must depend on it. For it (not being restrained within any bounds of place or time, having no check upon it of equal or co-ordinate power, standing upon divine institution, and therefore immutably settled) must of its own nature become absolute and unlimited.*

Let it be, however, of right limited by divine laws or human canons, yet will it be continually encroaching and stretching its power until it grows enormous and boundless. It will not endure to be pinched by any restraint. It will draw to itself the collation of all preferments, &c.*

It will assume all things to itself, trampling down all opposite claims of right and liberty; so that neither pastor nor people shall enjoy or do any thing otherwise than in dependence on it, and at its pleasure.

It will be always forging new prerogatives, and interpreting all things in favour of them, and enacting sanctions to establish them; which none must presume to contest.†

It will draw to itself the disposal of all places; the exaction of goods. All princes must become his ministers, and executors of his decrees.‡

It will mount above all law and rule; not only challenging to be uncontrollable and unaccountable, but not enduring any reproof of its proceedings, or contradiction of its dictates: a blind faith must be yielded to all its assertions as infallibly

* *Vide Hist. Conc. Trid. p. 61.* Privilegia istius sedis perpetua sunt, divinitus radicata, atque plantata, impingi possunt, transferri non possunt; trahi possunt, evelli non possunt.—*P. Nich. I. ad Mich. Imp.* The privileges of this see are perpetual, rooted, and founded upon divine authority; they may be dashed against, they cannot be removed; they may be drawn aside, they cannot be plucked up.

† *Licet apostolica prærogativa possimus de qualibet ecclesia clericum ordinare.—P. Steph. apud Grat. Caus. 9, qu. iii. cap. 20.* Though by our apostolical prerogative we may ordain a clergyman of any church.

‡ *Hist. Conc. Trid. p. 60, so they pretend.—Conc. Later. 4. (sub Innoc. III.)*

* *Vide Conc. Bas. sess. xxxi. p. 87.*

true; and a blind obedience to all its decrees as unquestionably holy: whosoever shall anyway cross it in word or deed, shall certainly be discountenanced, condemned, ejected from the church;* so that the most absolute tyranny that can be imagined will ensue: all the world hath groaned and heavily complained of their exactions, particularly our poor nation; it would raise indignation in any man to read the complaints.†

This is consequent on such a pretence, according to the very nature of things; and so in experience it hath happened.‡ For,

It is evident, that the papacy hath devoured all the privileges and rights of all orders in the church, either granted by God, or established in the ancient canons.‡

The royalties of Peter are become immense; and, consistently to his practice, the pope doth allow men to tell him to his face, “that all power in heaven and in earth is given unto him.”

It belongeth to him “to judge of the whole church.”||

He hath “a plenitude” (as he calleth it) “of power,” by which he can infringe any law, or do any thing that he pleaseth.§

It is the tenor of his bulls, “that whoever rashly dareth to thwart his will shall incur the indignation of Almighty God,

* *Sitque alienus a divinis et pontificalibus officiis, qui noluit præceptis apostolicis obtemperare.—Greg. IV. (Dist. xix. cap. 5.)* And let him have nothing at all to do with divine and pontifical offices, who would not obey apostolical precepts. *Oportet autem gladium esse sub gladio, et temporalem autoritatem spirituali subjici potestati.—Bonif. VIII. Extrav. Com. i. 8, 1.* But there must be a sword under a sword, and temporal authority subject to spiritual.

† — chesia piu offeio di pontefici aggiungere con l'armi, et col sorgue de Christiani, &c. *Guic. xi. p. 858.*

‡ *Quid hodie erant episcopi, nisi umbra quædam? quid plus eis restabat quam baculus et mitra? &c.—An. Sylv. de Gesis. Syn. Bas. lib. i.* What were bishops now but a kind of shadows? what had they left more than a staff and a mitre? &c.

|| *Conc. Lat. v. sess. 11, p. 129.* De omni ecclesia jus habet judicandi.—*(P. Gelas. Grat. Caus. ix. q. 3, cap. 18.)*

§ *Secundum plenitudinem potestatis de jure possumus supra jus dispensare.—Greg. Decret. lib. iii. tit. 8, cap. 4.*

* *Vide Mat. Paris.*

and" (as if that were not enough) "of St. Peter and St. Paul also."

"No man must presume to tax his faults, or to judge of his judgment."*

"It is idolatry to disobey his commands," against their own sovereign lord.†

There are who dare in plain terms call him omnipotent, and who ascribe *infinite* power to him. And that he is infallible is the most common and plausible opinion: so that at Rome the contrary "is erroneous, and within an inch of being heretical."‡

We are now told, that "if the pope should err by enjoining vices or forbidding virtues, the church should be bound to believe vices to be good, and virtues evil, unless it would sin against conscience."||

The greatest princes must stoop to his will; otherwise he hath power to cashier and depose them.

Now what greater inconvenience, what more horrible iniquity can there be, than that all God's people (that *free people*, who are *called to freedom*) should be subject to so intolerable a yoke and miserable a slavery?

That tyranny soon had crept into the Roman church, Socrates telleth us.§

They have rendered true that definition of Scioppius: "the church is a stall,

* Hujus culpas isthic redarguere præsumit mortalium nullus.—*Grat. Dist. xl. cap. 6.* (Si papa—) Neque cuiquam licere de ejus judicare judicio.—*Caus. ix. qu. 3, cap. 10.*

† Cum enim obedire apostolicæ sedi superbe contemnunt, scelus idololatriæ, teste Samuele, incurrun.—*Greg. VII. Ep. iv. 2.* Nulli fas est vel velle, vel posse transgredi apostolicæ sedis præcepta.—*Greg. IV. apud Grat. Dist. xix. cap. 5.* No man may nor can transgress the commands of the apostolic see.— ab omnibus quicquid statuit, quicquid ordinat, perpetuo et irrefragabiliter observandum est.—*Ibid. cap. 4. (P. Steph.)*— Whatever he decrees, whatever he ordains, must always and inviolably be observed by all.

‡ Erronea, et hæresi proxima.—*Bell. de P. iv. 2.*

|| Si autem papa erraret præcipiendo vitia, vel prohibendo virtutes, teneretur ecclesia credere vitia esse bona, et virtutes malas, nisi vellet contra conscientiam peccare.—*Bell. de Pont. iv. 5.*

§ Papa occupavit omnia jura inferiorum ecclesiarum, ita quod inferiores prelati sunt pro nihilo.—*Card. Zab. de Sch. Inno. VII. p. 560.* The pope hath invaded all the rights of inferior churches, so that all inferior prelates are nothing set by.

* Gal. v. 1, 13; 1 Pet. ii. 16.

or a herd, or multitude of beasts, or asses."*

"They bridle us, they harness us, they spur us, they lay yokes and laws upon us."†

The greatest tyranny that ever was invented in the world is the pretence of infallibility: for Dionysius and Phalaris did leave the mind free (pretending only to dispose of body and goods according to their will:) but the pope, not content to make us do and say what he pleaseth, will have us also to think so; denouncing his imprecations and spiritual menaces, if we do not.

3. Such an authority will inevitably produce a depravation of Christian doctrine, by distorting it in accomodation of it to the promoting its designs and interests. It will blend Christianity with worldly notions and policies.

It certainly will introduce new doctrines, and interpret the old ones so as may serve to the advancement of the power, reputation, pomp, wealth, and pleasure, of those who manage it, and of their dependents.

That which is called *καπηλείον τὸν λόγον τοῦ Θεοῦ*,^d to make a trade of religion will be the great work of the teachers of the church. It will turn all divines into mercenary, slavish, designing flatterers.‡

This we see come to pass, Christianity by the papal influence being from its original simplicity transformed into quite another thing than it was? from a divine philosophy designed to improve the reason, to moderate the passions, to correct the manners of men, to prepare men for conversation with God and angels, modelled to a system of politic devices (of notions, of precepts, of rights), serving to exalt and enrich the pope, with his court and adherents, clients and vassals.||

What doctrine of Christian theology.

* Ecclesia est mandra sive grex aut multitudo jumentorum sive asinorum.—*Ecd. cap. 47.*

† Illi nos frænant, nos lore alligant, nos stimulant, nobis jugum et onus imponunt.—*Ibid.*

‡ 1 Tim. vi. 5; Νομιζόντων κερδοσὴν εἶναι τὴν εὐαγγελίαν. Supposing that gain is godliness. Ἐν προφάσει πλεονεξίας.—1 Thess. ii. 5. A cloak of covetousness; κηδεία. Eph. iv. 14.

|| Pasce, id est, regio more impera. Ecce duos gladios.—Oravi ne deficeret. Feed i. e. rule as a king. Behold two swords.

^d 2 Cor. ii. 17.

as it is interpreted by their schools, hath not a direct aspect, or doth not squint that way? especially according to the opinions passant and in vogue among them.

To pass over those concerning the pope (his universal pastorship, judgeship in controversies, power to call councils, presidency in them, superiority over them; right to confirm or annul them; his infallibility; his double sword, and dominion (direct or indirect) over princes; his dispensing in laws, in oaths, in vows, in matrimonial cases, with all other the monstrous prerogatives, which the sound doctors of Rome, with encouragement of that chair, do teach.)

What doth the doctrine concerning the exempting of the clergy from secular jurisdiction, and immunity of their goods from taxes, signify, but their entire dependence on the pope, and their being closely tied to his interests?

What is the exemption of monastical places from the jurisdiction of bishops, but listing so many soldiers and advocates to defend and advance the papal empire?

What meaneth the doctrine concerning that middle region of souls, or cloister of purgatory, whereof the pope holdeth the keys; opening and shutting it at his pleasure, by dispensation of pardons and indulgences; but that he must be master of the people's condition, and of their purse?

What meaneth the treasure of merits and supererogatory works, whereof he is the steward, but a way of driving a trade, and drawing money from simple people to his treasury?

Whither doth the entangling of folks in perpetual vows tend, but to assure them in a slavish dependence on their interests, eternally, without evasion or remedy; except by favourable dispensation from the pope?

Why is the *opus operatum* in sacraments taught to confer grace, but to breed a high opinion of the priest, and all be doth?

Whence did the monstrous doctrine of transubstantiation (urged with so furious zeal) issue, but from design to magnify the credit of those, who by saying of a few words can make our God and Saviour? and withal to exercise a notable

instance of their power over men, in making them to renounce their reason and senses?

Whither doth tend the doctrine concerning the mass being a propitiatory sacrifice for the dead, but to engage men to leave in their wills good sums to offer in their behalf?

Why is the cup withholden from the laity, but to lay it low by so notable a distinction, in the principal mystery of our religion, from the priesthood?

Why is saying private mass (or celebrating the communion in solitude) allowed, but because priests are paid for it, and live by it?

At what doth the doctrine concerning the necessity of auricular confession aim, but that thereby the priests may have a mighty awe on the consciences of all people, may dive into their secrets, may manage their lives as they please?

And what doth a like necessary particular absolution intend, but to set the priest in a lofty state of authority above the people, as a judge of his condition and dispenser of his salvation?

Why do they equal ecclesiastical traditions with scripture, but that on the pretence of them they may obtrude whatever doctrines advantageous to their designs?

What drift hath the doctrine concerning the infallibility of churches or councils, but that, when opportunity doth invite, he may call a company of bishops together to establish what he liketh, which ever after must pass for certain truth, to be contradicted by none; so enslaving the minds of all men to his dictates, which always suit to his interest.

What doth the prohibition of holy scripture drive at, but a monopoly of knowledge to themselves, or a detaining of people in ignorance of truth and duty; so that they must be forced to rely on them for direction, must believe all they say, and blindly submit to their dictates; being disabled to detect their errors, or contest their opinions?

Why must the sacraments be celebrated, and public devotions exercised, in an unknown tongue, but that the priests may seem to have a peculiar interest in them, and ability for them?

Why must the priesthood be so indispensably forbidden marriage, but that i

may be wholly untacked from the state, and rest addicted to him, and governable by him; that the persons and wealth of priests may be purely at his devotion?

To what end is the clogging religion by multiplication of ceremonies and formalities, but to amuse the people, and maintain in them a blind reverence toward the interpreters of the dark mysteries couched in them; and by seeming to encourage an exterior show of piety (or form of godliness) to gain reputation and advantage, whereby they might oppress the interior virtue and reality of it, as the Scribes and Pharisees did, although with less designs?

Why is the veneration of images and relics, the credence of miracles and legends, the undertaking of pilgrimages and voyages to Rome, and other places, more holy than ordinary; sprinklings of holy water, consecrations of baubles (with innumerable foppish knacks and trinkets), so cherished, but to keep the people in a slavish credulity and dotage, apt to be led by them whither they please, by any sleeveless pretence, and in the mean while to pick various gains from them by such trade?

What do all such things mean, but obscuring the native simplicity of Christianity, whereas it being represented intelligible to all men, would derogate from that high admiration, which these men pretend to from their peculiar and profound wisdom? And what would men spend for these toys, if they understood they might be good Christians, and get to heaven without them?

What doth all that pomp of religion serve for, but for ostentation of the dignity of those who administer it? It may be pretended for the honour of religion, but it really conduceth to the glory of the priesthood, who shine in those pageantries.

Why is monkery (although so very different from that which was in the ancient times) so cried up as a superlative state of perfection, but that it filleth all places with swarms of lusty people, who are vowed servants to him, and have little else to do but to advance that authority by which they subsist in that dronish way of life?

* *Vide* Sleid. p. 673.

In fine, perusing the controversies of Bellarmine, or any other champion of Romanism, do but consider the nature and scope of each doctrine maintained by them; and you may easily discern that scarce any of them but doth tend to advance the interest of the pope, or of his sworn vassals.

Whereas, indeed, our Lord had never any such design, to set up a sort of men in such distance above their brethren; to perk over them, and suck them of their goods by tricks; it only did charge people to allow their pastors a competent maintenance for a sober life, with a moderate respect, as was needful for the common benefit of God's people; whom they were, with humility and meekness, to instruct and guide in the plain and simple way of piety.

This is a grievous inconvenience; there being nothing wherein the church is more concerned, than in the preservation of its doctrine pure and incorrupt from the leaven of hurtful errors, influential on practice.

4. The errors in doctrine, and miscarriages in practice, which this authority in favour to itself would introduce, would be established immoveably, to the irrecoverable oppression of truth and piety; any reformation becoming impossible while it standeth, or so far as it shall be able to oppose and obstruct it.

While particular churches do retain their liberty, and pastors their original co-ordination in any measure, if any church or bishop shall offer to broach any novel doctrine or practice of bad import, the others may endeavour to stop the settlement or progress of them; each church at least may keep itself sound from contagion.

But when all churches and bishops are reduced into subjection to one head, supported by the guards of his authority, who will dare to contest, or be able to withstand, what he shall say or do? It will then be deemed high presumption, contumacy, rebellion, to dissent from his determinations, how false soever, or unthe practices countenanced by him, however irregular and culpable.

He will assume to himself the privilege not to be crossed in any thing; and soon will claim "infallibility, the mother of incorrigibility."

or can be so palpable which rity will not protect and shroud atation ; no practice so enormous it will not palliate, and guard oof.

will be legions of mercenary speak, and stipendiary pens in defence of its doctrines and

so that whoever will under- pose it shall be voted down whelmed with noise, and shall the discouragement and per- naginable. So poor truth will utterly defenceless, wretched titute of succour or patronage. so in speculation, and we see it

by experience : for when, influence of this power (as rian VI. did ingeniously con- pparent degeneracy in doctrine, ine, in practice, had seized ndom, all the world feeling it, g out loudly for reformation, stiff a repugnance did the ad- o this interest make thereto ! industry and craft did popes to decline all means of rem-

will not this party do rather than lge themselves mistaken or error ?* what palliations, what ot they use ? what evidence of ey not outface ?

same will induce a general of manners.

chief clergy, partaking of its nd protected by its interest (re- supporting it, and being shel- it from any curb or control), into great pride and haughti- l be tempted to scrape and wealth by rapine, extortion, will come to enjoy ease and l be immersed in sensuality r, and will consequently neglect ge.

eriors will become enamoured tious of dignity, and will use and arts to attain it.†

n gravamina.
psum Greg. VII. Ep. i. 42 ; ii. 45.
cription of them in S. Bernard. in . 33 : *Guicciard. in Suppl.*
ib. iv. p. 82 ; lib. xii. p. 322 ; Hist. p. 24 ; *vide Riv. in Castig. Nol. p.*

Thence emulation, discord, sycophant- rry will spring.

Thence all ecclesiastical offices will become venal ; to be purchased by bribes, flattery, favour.—

The higher ranks will become fastu- ous, supercilious, and domineering. The lower will basely crouch, cog.—

What then must the people be, the guides being such ?

Were such guides like to edify the people by their doctrine ? Were they not like to damnify them by their ex- ample ?‡

That thus it hath happened, experi- ence doth shew, and history doth abund- antly testify. This was soon observed by a pagan historian, Am. Marcellin. By St. Basil, *ἄρρως δουτική.*

What mischief this, what scandal to religion, what detriment to the church, what ruins of souls it produceth, is visible.

The descriptions of Rome and of that church, by Mantuan, do in a lively man- ner represent the great degeneracy and corruptions of it.

6. This authority, as it would induce corruption of manners, so it would per- petuate it ; and render the state of things incorrigible.

For this head of the church, and the supporters of his authority, will often need reformation, but never will endure it.

That will happen of any pope, which the Fathers of Basil complained of in Pope Eugenius.*

If the pope would (as Pope Adrian VI.), yet he will not be able to reform ; the interests of his dependents crossing it.†

If there hath happened a good pope, who desired to reform ; yet he hath been ridiculous when he endeavoured it ; and

* — Nulla unquam monitione, nulla ex- hortatione induci jam largo tempore potuit, ut aliquam errorum emendationem Christo placentem, aut notissimorum abusuum correctionem in ecclesia sancta Dei efficere satageret.— *Conc. Bas. sess. xxiii. (p. 76), sess. xxxi. p. 89.* He could never be brought in this long time by any advice or exhortation, seriously to set upon any amendment of errors or correction of the most gross abuses in the holy church of God.

‡ Alv. Pelag. in Riv. Castig. N. cap. 8 ; *vide Bern. Convers. S. Paul. Serm. i. p. 87.*

† *Vide Conc. Trid. p. 22.*

found it impossible to reform even a few particulars in his own house, the incorrigible Roman court.

The nature and pretended foundation of this spiritual authority doth encourage it with insuperable obstinacy to withstand all reformation: for whereas, if any temporal power doth grow intolerable, God's providence by wars and revolutions of state may dispense a redress, they have prevented this by supposing that in this case God hath tied his own hands; this authority being immoveably fixed in the same hands, from which no revolution can take it: whence from its exorbitances there can be no rescue or relief.

7. This authority will spoil him in whom it is seated; corrupting his mind and manners; rendering him a scandal to religion, and a pernicious instrument of wickedness, by the influence of his example.*

To this an uncontrollable power (bridled with no restraint) and impunity doth naturally tend, and accordingly hath it been—.

How many notorious reprobates, monsters of wickedness, have been in that See!†

If we survey the lives of popes, written by historians most indifferent, or (as most have been) partial in favour to them, we shall find, at first good ones, martyrs, confessors, saints; but after this exorbitant power had grown, how few good ones! how many extremely bad! The first popes before Constantine were holy men: the next were tolerable, while the papacy kept within bounds of modesty; but when they having shaken off their master, and renounced allegi-

* It will certainly render him a tyrant, according to the definition of Aristotle.—*Pol.* iv. 10. Cui plus licet quam par est, plus vult quam licet. Unde sicut languescente capite, reliquum postea corpus morbus invadat.—*Conc. Bas.* sess. xxiii. (p. 64.) Whence it comes to pass, that if the head be sick, the rest of the body afterward grows diseased.—*Vide Conc. Bas.* p. 87; *Conc. Const.* p. 1110.

† *Vide Dist.* xl. cap. 6, (hujus culpas, etsi.)—*Vide Alv. Pelag.* apud Riv. Cath. Orth. p. 141. Baron. Pope Marcellus II. doubted whether a pope could be saved.—*Thuan.* lib. xv. (p. 566.) From John VIII. to Leo IX. what a rabble of rake-hells and sots did sit in that chair!—*Machiavel, Hist.* lib. xvi. p. 1271; *Baron.* ann. 912, § 8.

ance to the emperor (*i. e.* after Gregor II.), few tolerable; generally they were either rake-hells, or intolerably arrogant, insolent, turbulent, and ravenous.

Bellarmino and Baronius do bob off this, by telling us, that hence the providence of God is most apparent.*

But do they call this preserving the church; the permission of it to continue so long in such a condition, under the prevalence of such mischiefs? When hath God deserted any people, if not then when such impiety more than pagan doth reign in it?†

But what in the meantime became of those souls which by this means were ruined? what amends for the vast damage which religion sustained? for the introducing so pernicious customs hardly to be extirpated?‡—

To what a pass of shameless wickedness must things have come, when such men as Alexander VI., having visibly such an impure brood, should be placed in this chair!

Even after the reformation began to curb their impudence, and render them more wary, yet had they the face to set Paul the Third there.

How unfit must such men be, to be the guides of all Christendom; to be oracles of truth, to enact laws of sanctity!

How improper were those vessels of Satan to be organs of that *holy spirit of discipline, which will flee deceit, and remove from thoughts that are without understanding, and will not abide where unrighteousness cometh in!*§

It will engage the pope to make the ecclesiastical authority and engine of advancing the temporal concerns of his

* Baron. ann. 897. § 5.—It was said of Vespasian, Solus imperantium melior—so apt is power to corrupt men. Solus omnium ante principium in melius mutatus est.—*Tac. Hist.* i. (p. 451.)

† How vain is that which Pope Gregory VII. citeth out of Pope Symmachus, B. Petrus peccatorem meritum dotem cum hæreditate innocentie misit ad posteros.—*Greg. VII. Ep.* viii. 21.

‡ Quod Romanus pontifex, si canonicè fuerit ordinatus, meritis B. Petri indubitanter efficitur sanctus; was one of Pope Gregory VII.'s dictates. That the Roman pontiff, if canonically elected, is undoubtedly made holy by the merits of blessed Peter.

§ *Wisd.* i. 5.

own relations (his sons, his nephews.)

What indeed is the popedom now, but a ladder for a family to mount unto great estate?^j

What is it, but introducing an old man into a place, by advantage whereof a family must make hay while the sun shines?^k

8. This pretence, upon divers obvious accounts, is apt to create great mischief in the world, to the disturbance of civil societies, and destruction or debilitation of temporal authority, which is certainly God's ordinance, and necessary to the well-being of mankind; so that supposing it, we may in vain *pray for kings, and all that are in authority; that we may lead a quiet and peaceable life in all godliness and honesty.*^k

For suppose the two powers (spiritual and temporal) to be co-ordinate, and independent each of other; then must all Christians be put into that perplexed state of repugnant and incompatible obligations, concerning which our Lord saith, *No man can serve two masters: for either he will hate the one, and love the other; or else he will hold to the one, and despise the other.*^l

They will often draw several ways, and clash in their designs, in their laws, in their decisions; one willing and commanding that which the other disliketh and prohibiteth.

It will be impossible by any certain bounds to distinguish their jurisdiction, so as to prevent contest between them;^m all temporal matters being in some respects spiritual (as being referrible to spiritual ends, and in some manner allied to religion), and all spiritual things becoming temporal, as they conduce to the secular peace and prosperity of states: there is nothing which each of these powers will not hook within the verge of

its cognizance and jurisdiction; each will claim a right to meddle in all things; one pretending thereby to further the good of the church, the other to secure the interest of the state: and what end or remedy can there be of the difference hence arising; there being no third power to arbitrate or moderate between them?

Each will prosecute its cause by its advantages; the one by instruments of temporal power, the other by spiritual arms of censures and curses.

And in what a case must the poor people then be! how distracted in their consciences, how divided in their affections, how discordant in their practices! according as each pretence hath influence upon them, by its different arguments or peculiar advantages.

How can any man satisfy himself in performing or refusing obedience to either? How many (by the intricacy of the point, and contrary pulling) will be withdrawn from yielding due compliance on the one hand or the other!

What shall a man do, while one in case of disobedience to his commands doth brandish a sword, the other thundereth out a curse against him; one threateneth death, the other excision from the church; both denounce damnation?

What animosities and contentions, what discomposures and confusions must this constitution of things breed in every place! and how can a *kingdom so divided in itself stand, or not come into desolation?*ⁿ

Such an advantage infallibly will make popes affect to invade the temporal power.

It was the reason which Pope Paschal alleged against Henry IV. because he did *ecclesie regnum auferre.*^o

It is indeed impossible that a co-ordination of these powers should subsist; for each will be continually encroaching on the other; each for its own defence and support will continually be struggling and clambering to get above the other: there will never be any quiet, till one come to subside and truckle under the other; whereby the sovereignty of the one or the other will be destroyed. Each of them soon will come to claim

* — Cum non ob religionem, et Dei cultum appetere pontificatum nostri sacerdotes videantur, sed ut fratrum vel nepotum, vel familiarium ingluviem et avaritiam expleant.—*Plat. in Joh. XVI.* (p. 298.) Whereas our priests seem to desire the popedom, not for religion and the worship of God, but that they may fill the ravening appetite and covetousness of their brethren, or nephews, or familiars.

^j Vide Guicciard. Machiav. Hist. Fl. p. 19; Conc. Bas. (p. 65.)

^k 1 Tim. ii. 1, 2.

^l Matt. vi. 24.

^m Bell. v. 6. (p. 1415.)

ⁿ Matt. xii. 25.

^o P. Pasch. II. Ep. 7.

a supremacy in all causes, and the power of both swords; and one side will carry it.

It is indeed necessary, that men for a time continuing possessed with a reverence to the ecclesiastical authority, as independent and uncontrollable, it should at last overthrow the temporal, by reason of its great advantages above it; for,

The spiritual power doth pretend an establishment purely divine; which cannot by any accidents undergo any change, diminutions, or translation, to which temporal dominions are subject: its power therefore being perpetual, irreversible, depending immediately of God, can hardly be checked, can never be conquered.*

It fighteth with tongues and pens, which are the most perilous weapons.

It can never be disarmed, fighting with weapons that cannot be taken away, or deprived of their edge and vigour.

It worketh by most powerful considerations upon the consciences and affections of men, upon pain of damnation, promising heaven, and threatening hell; which upon some men have an infinite sway, upon all men a considerable influence; and thereby will be too hard for those who only can grant temporal rewards or inflict temporal punishments. It is surely a notable advantage that the pope hath above all princes, that he commandeth not only as a prince, but as a guide; so that whereas we are not otherwise bound to obey the commands of princes, than as they appear concordant with God's law, we must observe his commands absolutely, as being therefore lawful, because he commandeth them, that involving his assertion of their lawfulness, to which (without further inquiry or scruple) we must submit our understanding, his words sufficiently authorizing his commands for just. We are not only obliged to obey his commands, but to embrace his doctrines.

It hath continual opportunities of conversing with men; and thereby can insinuate and suggest the obligation to obey it,

* *Vide* Mach. Hist. Flor. p. 18.—Impeti possunt humanis presumptionibus quae divino sunt iudicio constituta, vinci autem quorumlibet potestate non possunt.—*P. Gal. Ep. 8: Felix. P. Ep. i. (p. 597.)*

with greatest advantage, in secrecy, in the tenderest seasons.

It claimeth a power to have its instruction admitted with assent: and will it not instruct them for its own advantage? All its assertions must be believed—is not this an infinite advantage?

By such advantages the spiritual power (if admitted for such as it pretendeth) will swallow and devour the temporal; which will be an extreme mischief to the world.

The very pretence doth immediately crop and curtail the natural right of princes, by exempting great numbers of persons (the participants and dependents of this hierarchy) from subjection to them; by withdrawing causes from their jurisdiction; by commanding in their territories, and drawing people out of them to their judicatories; by having influence on their opinion; by draining them of wealth, &c.*

To this discourse experience abundantly doth yield its attestation;† for, how often have the popes thwarted princes in the exercise of their power, challenging their laws and administrations as prejudicial to religion, as contrary to ecclesiastical liberty!‡

Bodin (l. 9.) observeth, that if any prince were a heretic (that is, if the pope could pick occasion to call him so,) or a tyrant (that is, in his opinion), or anywise scandalous, the pope would excommunicate him; and would not receive him to favour, but upon his acknowledging himself a feudatory to the pope: so he drew in most kingdoms to depend on him.¶

How often have they excommuni-

* *Non enim volumus aut propter principum potentiam ecclesiasticam minui dignitatem, aut pro ecclesiastica dignitate principum potentiam mutilari.—P. Pasch. II. Ep. 28, 29.* For we will not that either the ecclesiastical dignity should be diminished, by reason of the prince's power, or that the prince's power should be curtailed for the ecclesiastical dignity.

† *Arietes furiosos.—Bell. v. 7.*

‡ In vain did St. Bernard (*de Consid. 1.*) cry, *Quid fines alienos invaditis? quid falces vestram in alienam messam extenditis? Why do you invade other men's territories? why thrust you your sickle into other men's harvest!*

¶ *Vide* Tort. T. p. 216; Greg. VII. Ep. i. 7; cxii 13, 63.

cated them, and interdicted their people from entertaining communion with them!

How many commotions, conspiracies, rebellions, and insurrections against princes, have they raised in several countries!*

How have they inveigled people from their allegiance! How many massacres and assassinations have they caused! How have they depressed and vilified the temporal power!

Have they not assumed to themselves superiority over all princes? The emperor himself (the chief of Christian princes) they did call their vassal, exacting an oath from them, whereof you have a form in the canon law, and a declaration of Pope Clement V. that it is an oath of fealty.²

Have they not challenged propriety in both swords; *Ecce duo gladii*?

How many princes have they pretended to depose, and dispossess of their authority †

Consider the pragmatial sanctions, provisors, compositions, concordats, &c. which princes have been forced to make against them, or with them, to secure their interest.

Many good princes have been forced to oppose them, as Henry the Second of England, King Lewis the Twelfth of France (that just prince, *pater patriæ*), *Perdam Babylonis nomen.*³

How often have they used this as a pretence of raising and fomenting wars! confiding in their spiritual arms; interdicting princes that would not comply with their designs, for advancing the in-

terests not only of their See, but of their private families!*

Bodin observeth,⁴ that Pope Nicholas I. was the first who excommunicated princes. Platina doth mention some before him: but it is remarkable, that although Pope Leo I. (a high-spirited pope, *fortissimus Leo*), as Liberatus calleth him) was highly provoked against Theodosius junior; Pope Gelasius, and divers of his predecessors and followers; Pope Gregory II. against Leo; Vigilius against Justinian, &c.; yet none of them did presume to excommunicate the emperors.

All these dealings are the natural result of this pretence; and, supposing it well grounded, are capable of a plausible justification: for is it not fit (seeing one must yield) that temporal should yield to spiritual?

Indeed, granting the papal supremacy in spirituals, I conceive the high-flying zealots of the Roman church, who subject all temporal powers to them, have great reason on their side; for co-ordinate power cannot subsist, and it would be only an eternal seminary of perpetual discords.

The quarrel cannot otherwise be well composed, than by wholly disclaiming the fictitious and usurped power of the pope: for,

Two such powers (so inconsistent and cross to each other, so apt to interfere, and consequently to breed everlasting mischiefs to mankind between them) could not be instituted by God.—

He would not appoint two different vicegerents in his kingdom at the same time.—

But it is plain that he hath instituted the civil power, and endowed it with a sword.⁵ That princes are his lieutenants.†

* Abutente Christianorum pastore Christianorum principum viribus, ut privatæ ambitioni, et suorum libidini inserviret.—*Thuan.* lib. i. p. 42. The pastor of Christians abusing the power of Christian princes, that he might gratify his private ambition, and the will and lust of his friends.

† P. Anast. calleth the emperor Anast.—*Vicarium. Epist.* (p. 670), *Eccl. Leod.* p. 522.

² Observ.

³ Tort. T. p. 210.

* *Vide* Plat. de Bonif. VIII. p. 467, Jul. 2.— Non sine suspitione, quod illorum temporum pontifices, qui bella extinguere, discordias tollere debuissent, suscitarent ea potius atque nutrent.—*Episc. Modrus. in Conc. Lat. V. sess. 6.* (p. 72.) Not without suspicion, that the popes of those times, who ought to have extinguished wars, and put an end to dissensions, did rather raise them up and cherish them.—*See Greg. VII. Ep. iv. 2; viii. 21.*

† Auctoritate apostolica de fratrum nostrorum consilio declaramus illa juramenta prædicta fidelitatis existere et censeri debere.—*Clement. lib. ii. tit. 9, cap. unicum.* We declare out of our apostolical authority, by the advice of our brethren, that the foresaid oaths of fealty ought to be, and be so esteemed.

² *Vide* Conc. Lugd. p. 851.

³ *Thuan.* lib. i.

That in ancient times the popes did not claim such authority, but avowed themselves subjects to princes.

9. Consequently this pretence is apt to engage Christian princes against Christianity; for they will not endure to be crossed, to be depressed, to be trampled on.

This popes often have complained of; not considering it was their own insolence that caused it.

10. Whereas now Christendom is split into many parcels, subject to divers civil sovereignties, it is expedient that correspondently there should be distinct ecclesiastical governments, independent of each other, which may comply with the respective civil authorities in promoting the good and peace both of church and state.*

It is fit that every prince should in all things govern all his subjects; and none should be exempted from subordination to his authority: as philosophers, and physicians of the body; so priests and physicians of the soul; not in exercising their function, but in taking care that they do exercise it duly for the honour of God, and in consistence with public good; otherwise many grievous inconveniences must ensue.

It is of perilous consequence that foreigners should have authoritative influence upon the subjects of any prince, or have power to intermeddle in affairs.

Princes have a natural right to determine with whom their subjects shall have intercourse: which is inconsistent with a right of foreigners to govern or judge them in any case, without their leave.

Every prince is obliged to employ the power intrusted to him, to the furtherance of God's service, and encouragement of all good works; as a supreme power, without being liable to obstruction from any other power.

It would irritate his power, if another should be beyond his coercion.

It is observable, that the pope, by intermeddling in the affairs of kingdoms, did so wind himself into them as to get

* Secundum mutationes temporum transferuntur etiam regna terrarum; unde etiam ecclesiasticarum parochiarum fines in plerisque provinciis mutari expedit et transferri.—*P. Pasch. II. Ep. 19.*

a pretence to be master of each; princes being his vassals and feudatories.*

11. Such an authority is needless and useless; it not serving the ends which it pretendeth; and they being better compassed without it.

It pretendeth to maintain truth; but indeed, it is more apt to oppress it.

Truth is rather (as St. Cyprian wisely observeth) preserved by the multitude of bishops, whereof some will be ready to relieve it, when assaulted by others.

Truth cannot be supported merely by human authority; especially that authority is to be suspected which pretendeth dominion over our minds. What controversy, being doubtful in itself, will not after his decision continue doubtful? His sentence may be eluded by interpretation, as well as other testimonies or authorities.

The opinion of a man's great wisdom or skill may be the ground of assent, in defect of other more cogent arguments; but authority of name or dignity is not proper to convince a man's understanding. Men obey, but not believe princes more than others, if not more learned than others.

It pretendeth to maintain order: but how? by introducing slavery; by destroying all rights; by multiplying disorders; by hindering order to be quietly administered in each country.

It pretendeth to be the only means of unity and concord in opinion, by determining controversies: which its advocates affirm necessary.†

But how can that be necessary which

* Vide Bod. de Rep. i. 9. (p. 195.) Car les princes Chrétiens avoient presque tous opinion, que le pape étoit absolument seigneur souverain de tous les royaumes de la Chrétienté.—*Bod. Ibid. p. 196; Tort. Tort. p. 216, &c.*—*Greg. VII. Ep. 1, 7, 2, 13; Alex. II. Ep. 8* 'Ἡ τοσαύτη διαφωνία καὶ μάχη τῶν ἐν τῇ ἐκκλησίᾳ γίνεται, ἕκαστος τῆς μὲν τοῦ Κυρίου ἡμῶν Ι. Χ. διδασκαλίας ἀφισταμένον, λογισμὸς δὲ τινος καὶ ἑρμηνείας ἰδίου ἐκδικούτος ἐξ ἀθετησίας, καὶ μᾶλλον ἀρχὴ ἀπ' ἐναντίας τοῦ Κυρίου, ἢ ἀρχεσθαι ὑπὸ τοῦ Κυρίου βουλομένου.—*Bas. de Jud. Dei, t. ii. p. 259.* great a dissonancy and jarring there is amongst men in the church, while every one swerveth from the doctrine of our Lord Jesus Christ and asserts certain conceits and rules of his own by his own authority, and had rather run contrary to the lord, than be ruled by the Lord. † Necessè est, ut omnes fideles idem sentiant.—*Bell. i. 9.* It is necessary that all the faithful should be of the same opinion.

never was *de facto*, not even in the Roman church?

Hath the pope effected this? Do all his followers agree in all points? Do they agree about his authority? Do not they differ and dispute about infinity of questions? Are all the points frivolous, about which their divines and schoolmen dispute? Why did not the council of Trent itself, without more ado, and keeping such a disputing, refer all to his oracular decision?

Necessary points may and will, by all honest people, be known and determined without him, by the clear testimony of scripture, by consent of Fathers, by general tradition.*—And other points need not be determined.

That he may be capable of that office, he must be believed appointed by God thereto; which is a question itself to be decided without him, to satisfaction. His power is apt no otherwise to knock down controversies, than by depressing truth; not suffering any truth to be asserted, which doth not favour its interests.

Concord was maintained, and controversies decided, without them in the ancient church; in synods, wherein he was not the sole judge, nor had observable influence.

The Fathers did not think such authority needful, otherwise they would have made more use of it.†

A more ready way to define controversies is for every one not to prescribe to others, or to persecute; for then men would more calmly see the truth, and consent.

It pretendeth to maintain peace and unity. But nothing hath raised more fierce dissensions, or so many bloody wars in Christendom, as it.

It is apt, by tyrannical administration, to become intolerable, and so to break the ecclesiastical state; to raise schisms and troubles.

It is like to extinguish genuine charity, which is free and uncompelled.

All the peace and charity which it endureth is by force and compulsion, not out of choice and good affection.

V. The ancients did assert to each bishop a free, absolute, independent au-

thority, subject to none, directed by none, accountable to none on earth, in the administration of affairs properly concerning his particular church.

This is most evident in St. Cyprian's writings; out of which it will not be amiss to set down some passages, manifesting the sense and practice of the church in his time, to the satisfaction of any ingenuous mind.

"The bond of concord abiding, and the sacrament" (or doctrine) "of the Catholic church persisting undivided, every bishop disposeth and directeth his own acts, being to render an account of his purpose to the Lord."** This he writeth when he was pleading the cause of Pope Cornelius against Novatian; but then, it seemeth, not dreaming of his supremacy over others.

"But we know that some will not lay down what once they have imbibed, nor will easily change their mind; but the bond of peace and concord with their colleagues being preserved, will retain some peculiar things, which have once been used by them; in which matter neither do we force any, or give law; whenas every prelate hath in the administration of his church the free power of his will, being to render unto the Lord an account of his acting."† This saith he, writing to Pope Stephanus, and in a friendly manner, "out of common respect and single love"‡ (not out of servile obeisance), acquainting him what he and his brethren in a synod, "by common consent and authority,"|| had established concerning the degradation of clergymen who had been ordained by heretics, or had lapsed into schism.

* Manente concordiae vinculo, et perseverante catholicæ ecclesiæ individuo sacramento, actum suum disponit et dirigit unusquisque episcopus, rationem propositi sui Domino redditurus.—*Cypr. Ep. 52. (ad Antonianum.)*

† Cæterum scimus quosdam quod semel imbibierint nolle deponere, nec propositum suum facile mutare, sed salvo inter collegas, pacis et concordiae vinculo quædam propria, quæ apud se semel sint usurpata, retinere; qua in re nec nos vim cuiquam facimus, aut legem damus; cum habeat in ecclesiæ administratione voluntatis suæ liberum arbitrium unusquisque præpositus, rationem actus sui Domino redditurus.—*Cypr. Ep. 72. (ad Stephanum.)*

‡ Hæc ad conscientiam tuam, frater charissime, et pro honore communis et pro simplici dilectione pertulimus, &c.

|| Consensu et auctoritate communi.

* Ἰκανώτερα ἢ θεία γραφή.—Ath.

† Nemini præscribentes.

“For seeing it is ordained by us all, and it is likewise equal and just, that each man's cause should be there heard where the crime is committed; and to each pastor a portion of the flock is assigned, which each should rule and govern, being to render an account to his Lord: those indeed over whom we preside ought not to ramble about.”* This saith he in his Epistle to Pope Cornelius, upon occasion of some factious clergymen addressing themselves to him with factious suggestions, to gain his countenance.

“These things I have briefly written back, according to our meanness, dear brother; prescribing to none, nor judging, that every bishop should not do what he thinks good, having a free power of his will.”†

“In which matter our bashfulness and modesty doth not prejudice any one; so that every one may not judge as he thinketh, and act, as he judgeth.”‡ prescribing to none, “so that every bishop may not resolve what he thinks good, being to render an account to the Lord,” &c.||

“It remaineth that each of us do utter his opinion about this matter, judging no man, nor removing any man, if he dissenteth, from the right of communion; for neither doth any of us constitute himself bishop of bishops, or by tyrannical terror driveth his colleagues to a necessity of obeying; whenas every bishop hath upon account of his liberty and authority his own free choice, and is no

* Nam cum statutum sit omnibus nobis, et æquum sit pariter ac justum, ut unusquisque causa illic audiatur, ubi est crimen admissum, et singulis pastoribus portio gregis sit adscripta, quam regat unusquisque et gubernet, rationem actus sui Domino redditurus, oportet utique eos quibus præsumus. non circumcursare, &c.—*Cypr. Ep. 55. (ad Cornelium.)*

† Hæc tibi breviter pro nostra mediocritate rescripsimus, frater charissime; nemini præscribentes, aut præjudicantes, quo minus unusquisque episcoporum quod putat faciat, habens arbitrii sui liberam potestatem.—*Cypr. Ep. 73. (ad Jubabaianum.)*

‡ Qua in parte nemini vericundia et modestia nostra præjudicat, quo minus unusquisque quod putat sentiat, et quod senserit faciat.—*Cypr. Ep. 76. (ad Magnum.)*

|| Nemini præscribentes, quo minus statuat quod putat unusquisque præpositus, actus spirationem Domino redditurus; secundum quod apostolus, &c.—*Ibid.*

less exempted from being judged by another, than he is incapable to judge another; but let us all expect the judgment of Lord Jesus Christ, who, and who alone, hath power both to prefer us to the government of his church, and to judge of our acting.”* These words did St. Cyprian speak as prolocutor of the great synod of bishops at Carthage: and what words could be more express, or more full, in assertion of the episcopal liberties and rights, against almost every branch of Romish pretences?

He disavoweth the practice of one bishop excluding another from communion for dissent in opinion about disputable points; he rejecteth the pretence that any man can have, to be a bishop of bishops, or superior to all his brethren; he condemneth the imposing opinions upon bishops, and constraining them to obedience; he disclaimeth any power in one bishop to judge another; he asserteth to each bishop a full liberty and power to manage his own concerns according to his discretion; he affirmeth every bishop to receive his power only from Christ, and to be liable only to his judgment.

We may observe, that St. Austin, in his reflections upon the passages in that synod, doth approve, yea admire that preface, passing high commendations on the smartest passages of it, which assert common liberty, professing his own conformity in practice to them:—“In this consultation,” saith he, “is showed a pacific soul, overflowing with plenty of charity;”^u and, “We have therefore a free choice of inquiry granted to us, by the most mild and most veracious speech

* Superest ut de hac re singuli quid sentiamus proferamus, neminem judicantes, aut a jure communionis aliquem si diversum senserit amoventes; neque enim quisquam nostrum episcopum se esse episcoporum constituit, aut tyrannico terrore ad obsequendi necessitatem collegas suos adigit; quando habeat omnis episcopus pro licentia libertatis et potestatis suæ arbitrium proprium, tamque judicari ab alio non possit, quam nec ipse potest alterum judicare; sed expectemus universi judicium Domini nostri Jesu Christi, qui unus et solus, habet potestatem et præponendi nos in ecclesiæ suæ gubernatione, et de actu nostro judicandi.—*Cypr. in Præf. Conc. Carthag.*

^u Aug. de Bapt. cont. Donat. lib. ii. 3, &c.

. Cyprian* himself;" and "Now if proud and tumid minds of heretics to extol themselves against the holyity of this speech—than which what more gentle, more humble?"† could St. Austin have swallowed sayings, could he have so much approved them, if he had known a just then extant and radiant in the, which they do impeach and sub-

No, I trow; he did not know, much as dream of any such; altho the pope was under his nose he was discussing that point, and would hardly talk, so much of St. Cyprian without thinking of Pope Stephen. However, let any man of sense heed and weigh those passages, concerning who did write them, to whom writ them, upon what occasions he writ them, when he writ them; that he a great primate of the church, a holy, most prudent, most humble meek person; that he addressed himself to bishops of Rome; that

of them were touching the conduct of popes; that he writ them in times of persecution and distress, which were the most sober and serious occasions: then let him, if he can, consider that all Christian bishops were then subject to the pope, or owned such a superiority due to him as he now claimeth. He may add a contemporary testimony of the Roman clergy, addressing to St. Cyprian these words: "Although we are well conscious to itself, and supported by the vigour of evangelical doctrine, and having in heavenly doctrines none a true witness to itself, is wont to be content with God for its only judge; not to desire the praises, nor to desire the accusations of another; yet we are worthy of double praise, who know they owe their praises to God only as judge, yet desire their actions to be approved by their own themselves; the which it is no other that you, brother Cyprian, should

habemus ergo quærendi liberum arbitrius Cypriani nobis mitissimo et veraciter concessum.—Lib. iii. cap. 3. *unc si se audent superbæ et tumidæ certæreticorum adversus sanctam humilitatis sententiæ extollant. Lib. ii. cap. 3. mansuetius, quid humilior?*—Lib. iii.

do, who, according to your modesty and natural industry, would have us not so much judges as partakers of your counsels"——* Then, it seems, the college of cardinals, not so high in the instep as they are now, did take St. Cyprian to be free, and not accountable for his actions to any other judge but God.

That this notion of liberty did continue a good time after in the church, we may see by that canon of the Antiochene synod, "ordaining that every bishop have power of his own bishopric, govern it according to the best of his care and discretion, and provide for all the country belonging to his city, so as to ordain priests and deacons, and dispose things aright."†

The monks of Constantinople, in the synod of Chalcedon, said thus: "We are sons of the church, and have one father, after God, our archbishop:"‡ they forgot their sovereign father the pope.

The like notion may seem to have been then in England, when the church of Canterbury was called "the common mother of all under the disposition of its spouse Jesus Christ."||

VI. The ancients did hold all bishops, as to their office, originally according to divine institution, or abstracting from human sanction framed to preserve order and peace, to be equal: for that all are successors of the apostles; all derive their commission and power in the same tenor from God; all of them are *ambas-*

* *Quanquam bene sibi conscius animus, et evangelicæ disciplinæ vigore subnixus, et verus sibi in decretis cœlestibus testis effectus, soleat solo Deo iudice esse contentus, nec alterius aut laudes petere, aut accusationes pertimescere; tamen geminata sunt laude condigni, qui cum conscientiam scient Deo soli debere se iudici, actus tamen suos desiderant etiam ab ipsis suis fratribus comprobari: quod te, frater Cypriane, facere non mirum est, qui pro tua verecundia, et ingenita industria consiliorum tuorum nos non tam iudices voluisti, quam participes inveniri.— Cler. Rom. ad Cypr. Ep. 31.*

† *καστον γὰρ ἐπίσκοπον ἐξουσίαν ἔχειν τῆς ἐκκλησίας, διοικεῖν κατὰ τὴν ἐκάστου ἐκβάλλουσαν εὐλάβειαν, καὶ πρόνοιαν ποιῆσαι πάσης τῆς χώρας τῆς ὑπὸ τὴν ἐκκλησίαν ὄντων; ὡς καὶ χειροτονεῖν πρεσβυτέρους καὶ διακόνους, καὶ μετὰ κρίσεως ἕκαστα διαλαμβάνειν.— Syn. Ant. Can. 9.*

‡ *Ἡμεῖς δὲ καὶ τέκνα τῆς ἐκκλησίας ἔσμεν, καὶ ἕνα πατέρα μετὰ τὸν Θεόν, τὸν ἀρχιεπίσκοπον ἔχομεν.— Syn. Chalc. Act. i. p. 114.*

|| *Omnium nostrum mater communis sub sponsi sui Jesu Christi dispositione.—Gervas Dorob. (p. 1663), apud Twiss. p. 72.*

sailors, stewards, vicars of Christ, intrusted with the same divine ministries of instructing, dispensing the sacraments, ruling and exercising discipline; to which functions and privileges the least bishop hath right, and to greater the biggest cannot pretend.*

One bishop might exceed another in splendour, in wealth, in reputation, in extent of jurisdiction, as one king may surpass another in amplitude of territory; but as all kings, so all bishops are equal in office and essentials of power derived from God.

Hence they applied to them that in the Psalm, *Instead of thy fathers shall be thy children, whom thou mayest make princes in all the earth.*†

This was St. Jerome's doctrine in those famous words: "Wherever a bishop be, whether at Rome or at Eugubium, at Constantinople or at Rhegium, at Alexandria or at Thanis, he is of the same worth and of the same priesthood; the force of wealth and lowness of poverty doth not render a bishop more high or more low; for that all of them are successors of the apostles:"‡ to evade which plain assertion, they have forged distinctions, whereof St. Jerome surely did never think, he speaking simply concerning bishops, as they stood by divine institution, not according to human models, which gave some advantages over other.

That this notion did continue long in the church, we may see by the elogios of bishops in later synods; for instance, that in the synod of Compeigne: "It is convenient all Christians should know what kind of office the bishop's is,—who, it is plain, are the vicars of Christ, and keep the keys of the kingdom of heaven."†

And that of the synod of Melun: "And though all of us unworthy, yet are the vicars of Christ, and successors of the apostles."‡

* *Ubiunque fuerit episcopus, sive Romæ sive Eugubii, &c.—Hieron. ad Evagr. Ep. 85.*

† *Omnibus in Christiana religione constitutis æquum convenit quale sit ministerium episcoporum—quos constat esse vicarios Christi, et clavigeros regni cælorum, &c.—Syn. Compend. an. Dom. 833. (apud Bin. tom. vi. p. 361.)*

‡ *Nos omnes licet indigni, Christi tamen vicarij. Vide Ep. P. Celest. I. in Conc. Eph. Act. ii. (p. 324.)*

¶ *Baron. an. 57, § 30; Psal. xlv. 16.*

In contemplation of which verity, Gregory Nazianzen, observing the elension from it introduced in his tin by the ambition of some prelates, vent that famous exclamation: "O t there were not at all any presidency, any preference in place, and tyrannic enjoyment of prerogatives!"*—whi earnest wish he surely did not mean level against the ordinance of God, b against that which lately began to be i truded by men. And what would t good man have wished, if he had be aware of those pretences about whi we discourse; which then did only beg to bud and peep up in the world?

1. Common practice is a good inte preter of common sentiments in ar case; and it therefore sheweth, that the primitive church the pope was n deemed to have a right of univers sovereignty: for if such a thing h been instituted by God, or established t the apostles, the pope certainly, wi evident clearness, would have appea to have possessed it; and would hav sometimes (I might say frequently, ye continually) have exercised it in the fir ages: which that he did not at all, w shall make, I hope, very manifest, b reflecting on the chief passages occurri then; whereof, indeed, there is scarc any one which, duly weighed, doth n serve to overthrow the Roman pretence but that matter I reserve to anothe place; and shall propound other co siderations, declaring the sense of th Fathers; only I shall add, that indeed,

2. The state of the most primitiv church did not well admit such an uni versal sovereignty. For that did consis of small bodies incoherently situated and scattered about in very distant places and consequently unfit to be model led into one political society, or to b governed by one head. Especially co sidering their condition under persecutio and poverty. What convenient resor for direction or justice could a few dis tressed Christians in Egypt, Ethiopia Parthia, India, Mesopotamia, Syria, A

carii, et apostolorum ipsius successores.—*Syn. Meldens. ann. Dom. 845. (apud Bin. tom. vi. l. 402.)*

* *Ὡς ἕρελον γε μὴδ ἦν προεδρία, μὴδ τις τῶν προτίμησις, καὶ τυραννικὴ προνομία.—Greg. Naz. Orat. 28.*

menia, Cappadocia, and other parts, have to Rome! What trouble, what burden had it been, to seek instruction, succour, decision of cases thence! Had they been obliged or required to do so, what offences, what clamours, would it have raised! seeing that afterward, when Christendom was connected and compacted together, when the state of Christians was flourishing and prosperous, when passages were open, and the best of opportunities of correspondence were afforded, yet the setting out of these pretences did cause great oppositions and stir; seeing the exercise of this authority, when it had obtained most vigour, did produce so many grievances, so many complaints, so many courses to check and curb it, in countries feeling the inconveniences and mischiefs springing from it.

The want of the like in the first ages is a good argument that the cause of them had not yet sprung up; Christendom could not have been so still, if there had been then so meddlesome a body in it as the pope now is.

The Roman clergy, in their epistle to St. Cyprian, told him, that "because of the difficulty of things and times, they could not constitute a bishop who might moderate things"* immediately belonging to them in their own precincts: how much more in that state of things would a bishop there be fit to moderate things over all the world; when, as Rigaltius truly noteth, "the church being then oppressed with various vexations, the communication of provinces between themselves was difficult and unfrequent."

Wherefore Bellarmine himself doth confess, that in those times, before the Nicene synod, "the authority of the pope was not a little hindered, so that because of continual persecutions he could not freely exercise it."†

* Nobis, post excessum nobilissimæ memoriæ viri Fabiani, nondum est episcopus propter rerum et temporum difficultatem constitutus, qui omnia ista moderetur. — *Cl. Rom. ad Cypr. Ep. 31.*

† Viris tunc ecclesia vexationibus oppressa, difficilis et infrequens erat provinciarum inter sese communicatio. — *Rigalt. in Cypr. Ep. 67.*

‡ Verum enim est impeditam fuisse eo tempore non parum pontificis auctoritatem — propter persecutiones continuas non potuisse Romanos pontifices libere exercere eam, quam

The church, therefore, could so long subsist without the use of such authority, by the vigilance of governors over their flocks, and the friendly correspondence of neighbour churches: and if he would let it alone, it might do so still.

That could be no divine institution, which had no vigour in the first and best times; but an innovation raised by ambition.

VII. The ancients, when occasion did require, did maintain their equality of office and authority, particularly in respect to the Roman bishops; not only interpretatively by practice, but directly and formally in express terms asserting it.

Thus when Felicissimus and his complices, being rejected by St. Cyprian, did apply themselves to Pope Cornelius for his communion and countenance, St. Cyprian affirmed that to be an irregular and unjust course; adjoining, "Except to a few desperate and wicked persons, the authority of the bishops constituted in Afric, who have already judged of them, do seem less;"* that is, inferior to any other authority, particularly to that of Rome, unto which they had recourse: what other meaning could he have? Doth not his argument require this meaning?

Another instance is that of the Fathers of the Antiochene synod† (being ninety-seven bishops), the which St. Hilary calleth "a synod of saints congregated"‡ (the decrees whereof the Catholic church did admit into its code, and the canons whereof popes have called "venerable:"§) these in their Epistle to Pope Julius, complaining of his demeanour in the case of Athanasius, did flatly assert to themselves an equality with him: "They did not," as Sozomen reciteth out of their Epistle, "therefore, think it equal, that they should be thought inferi-

a Christo acceperant auctoritatem, &c. — *Bell. de R. P. ii. 17.*

* Nisi si paucis desperatis et perditis minor esse videtur auctoritas episcoporum in Africa constitutorum, qui jam de illis judicaverunt: —

† Fides quam exposuerunt qui affuerunt episcopi 97. — *Hilar. de Synodis. (p. 367.)*

‡ Congregatam sanctorum synodum. — *Hilar. ibid.*

§ Venerabiles Antiocheni canones. — *P. Nicol. I. Ep. ix. (p. 519.)*

ors, because they had not so big and numerous a church.”*

That pope himself testifieth the same in his Epistle to them, extant in the second Apology of Athanasius: “If” (saith he) “ye do truly conceive the honour of bishops to be equal, and the same; and ye do not, as ye write, judge of bishops according to the magnitude of cities:”† which assertion of theirs, so flatly thwarting papal supremacy, he doth not at all confute, yea, not so much as contradict; and therefore reasonably may be interpreted to yield consent thereto; the rule, “He that holdeth his peace seemeth to consent,”‡ never holding better than in this case, when his copyhold was so nearly touched; indeed, he had been very blameable to waive such an occasion of defending so important a truth, or in letting so pestilent an error to pass without correction or reproof.

After the pope had climbed higher than at that time (upon the ladders of dissension and disorders in the church), yet he was reprov'd by Euphemius, bishop of Constantinople, for preferring himself before his brethren; as we may collect from those words of a zealous pope: “We desire not to be placed above others (as you say), so much as to have fellowship holy and well-pleasing to God with all the faithful.”||

That Pope Gregory I. did not hold himself superior to other bishops, many sayings of his do infer: for in this he placeth the fault of the bishop of Constantinople, which he so often and so severely reprehendeth, that he did “prefer himself before, and extol himself above, other bishops.”§

* Οὐ παρὰ τοῦτο τὰ δευτερεῖα φέρειν ἤξιον, ὅτι μὴ μεγέθει, ἢ πλῆθει ἐκκλησίας πλεονεκτοῦσιν.—SOZ. iii. 8.

† Εἰ οὖν ἀληθῶς ἴσων καὶ τὴν αὐτὴν ἠγεῖσθε τριμῆν τῶν ἐπισκόπων, καὶ μὴ ἐκ τοῦ μεγέθους τῶν πόλεων, ὡς γράφετε, κρίνετε τοὺς ἐπισκόπους.—P. Jul. I. apud Athan. in Apol. ii. (p. 744.)

‡ Qui tacet consentiri videtur.

|| Hic non tam optamus præponi aliis (sicut prædicās) quam cum fidelibus cunctis sanctum et Deo placitum habere consortium.—P. Gelus. I. Ep. I. (ad Euphemium.)

§ — In elatione sua Antichristum præcurrit, quia superbiendo se cæteris præponit.—P. Greg. I. Ep. vi. 30. Super cæteros sacerdotes se extollit.—Ibid. Christi sibi student membra judicare.—Id. Ep. iv. 36. Solus om-

And would he directly assume that to himself which he chargeth on another, although only following his position by consequence?

And when Eulogius, the bishop of Alexandria, had complimentally said, “Sicut jussistis, As ye commanded:” he doth thus express his resentment: “That word of command I desire you let me not hear; because I know who I am, and who ye are: by place ye are my brethren; in goodness, fathers; I did not therefore command; but what seem'd profitable I hinted to you.”*

That many such instances may not be alleged out of antiquity, the reason is, because the ancient popes did not understand this power to belong to them, and therefore give no occasion for bishops to maintain their honour; or were more just, prudent, and modest than to take so much upon them, as their successors did, upon frivolous pretences.

VIII. The style used by the primitive bishops in their applications to the Roman bishop doth signify, that they did not apprehend him their sovereign, but their equal.

“Brother, colleague, fellow-bishop,” are the terms which St. Cyprian doth use in speaking about the Roman bishop, his contemporaries, Fabianus, Cornelius, Lucius, Stephanus; and in his epistles to the three last of them; nor doth he ever use any other, importing higher respect due to them; as indeed his practice demonstrateth he did not apprehend any other due, or that he did take them for his superiors in office. “Know now, brother,”† was the compellation of Dionysius (bishop of Alexandria) to Pope Stephanus. The synod of Antioch, which rejected Paulus Samosatenus, inscribeth its epistle to “Dionysius” (then bishop of Rome) “and Maximus, and all our fellow-ministers through the world.”‡

nibus præesse.—Id. Ep. iv. 38. — quibus (episcopis) cupis temetipsum vocabulo clauonis præponere.—Id. *ibid.*

* Quod verbum jussionis peto a meo auditu removeri; quia scio quis sum, qui estis; loco enim mihi fratres estis, moribus patres, non ergo jussi, sed quæ utilia visa sunt, indicare curavi, &c.—Greg. I. Ep. vii. 30. (ad Eulog. Alex.)

† Ἰσοὶ ἐν δέελφι.—Euseb. vii. 5.

‡ Διονυσίῳ καὶ Μαξίμῳ καὶ τοῖς κατὰ τὴν αἰσθημένην πᾶσι συλλειτουργοῖς ἡμῶν.—Euseb. vii. 30.

* Cypr. Ep. 4, 41, 58, 67, 68, 45, 49, &c.

The old synod of Arles directeth their epistle "to Seignior Sylvester, their brother." Athanasius saith, "These things may suffice, which have been written by our beloved and fellow-minister Damasus, bishop of great Rome."* Marcellus inscribed to Pope Julius, to his "Most blessed fellow-minister."† So Cyril spake of Pope Celestine I., "Our brother and fellow-minister, the bishop of Rome."‡ So St. Basil, and his fellow-bishops of the east, did inscribe their Epistle,|| "To the beloved of God, and our most holy brethren and fellow-ministers, the unanimous bishops through Italy and France." In this style do the Fathers of Sardica salute Pope Julius; those of Constantinople, Pope Damasus;‡ those of Ephesus, Pope Celestine I.: "Our brother and fellow-minister, Celestine;"§ those of Carthage, Pope Celestine I., in the very same terms wherein St. Austin doth salute Maximinus, a Donatist bishop, "Seignior, my beloved and most honoured brother."¶ The oriental bishops, Eustathius, Theophilus, and Silvanus, did inscribe their remonstrance to Pope Liberius, "To seignior, our brother and fellow-minister, Liberius."*** So John of Antioch to Nestorius writeth, "To my master."†† The synod of Illyricum call Elpidius, "Our Seignior, and fellow-minister."‡‡

In which instances, and some others of later date, we may observe that the word *κύριος*, or *dominus*, was then (as it

is now) barely a term of civility, being then usually given to any person of quality, or to whom they would express common respect; so that St. Chrysostom in his epistles commonly doth give it, not only to meaner bishops, but even to priests; and St. Austin doth thus salute even Donatist bishops, reflecting thereon thus: "Since therefore by charity I serve you in this office of writing letters to you, I do not improperly call you master, for the sake of our oue true Master, who has commanded us so to do."* "—my most honoured master."† "—now therefore having with me my most honoured seignior and most reverend presbyter," &c.‡ "—my most honoured master, Asyncritus the elder."||

Pope Celestine himself did salute the Ephesine Fathers, *κύριοι, ἀδελφοί*, "masters, brethren,"§ Even in the sixth council, Thomas, bishop of Constantinople, did inscribe according to the old style, to Pope Vitalianus, "his brother and fellow-minister."¶

The French bishops had good reason to expostulate with Pope Nicholas I. "You may know that we are not, as you boast and brag, your clerks; whom, if pride would suffer, you ought to acknowledge for your brethren and fellow-bishops."¶¶

Such are the terms and titles which primitive integrity, when they meant to speak most kindly and respectfully, did allow to the pope, being the same which all bishops did give to one another (as may be seen in all solemn addresses and reports concerning them:) which is an argument sufficiently plain, that bishops in those times did not take themselves to

* *Ἰκανά μὲν τὰ γραφέντα παρά τε τοῦ ἀγαπητοῦ καὶ συλλειτουργοῦ Δαμάσου.*—Athan. Ep. ad Afr. (p. 931.)

† *Τῷ μακαριωτάτῳ συλλειτουργῷ Ἰουλίῳ.*—Marcell. ad P. Jul. Epiph. Hær. 72.

‡ *Ἀδελφοῦ καὶ συλλειτουργοῦ ἡμῶν τοῦ τῆς Ῥωμαίων ἐκκλησίας ἐπισκόπου.*—Cyril. ad Nest. in Syn. Eph. p. 207.

§ *Τοῖς θεοφιλεστάτοις καὶ δσιωτάτοις ἀδελφοῖς συλλειτουργοῖς κατὰ τὴν Ἰταλίαν καὶ Γαλλίαν ὁμοψύχοις ἐπισκόποις.*—Bas. Ey. 69; Athanas. Apol. ii. (p. 761, 756.)

¶ *Τοῦ ἀδελφοῦ καὶ συλλειτουργοῦ ἡμῶν Κηλεστίνου.*—Syn. Eph. p. 217. *Domino dilectissimo et honoratissimo fratri.*—Conc. Afr.

¶¶ *Domino dilectissimo et honorabili fratri Maximino.*—Aug. Ep. 203.

** *Κυρίου ἀδελφῷ καὶ συλλειτουργῷ Λιβερίῳ Εὐσεβίῳ, Θεόφιλος, Σιλβανὸς ἐν Κυρίῳ χαίρειν.*—Socr. iv. 12.

†† *Τῷ δεσπότῃ μου.*—Conc. Eph. 202.

‡‡ *Τὸν κύριον ἡμῶν καὶ συλλειτουργόν.*—Theod. iv. 9.

¶ Thod. v. 9.

* Cum ergo vel hoc ipso officio literarum per charitatem tibi serviam, non absurde te dominum voco, propter unum et verum Dominum nostrum qui nobis ista præcepit.—Aug. Ep. 103.

† *Δέσποτά μου τιμώτατε.*—Chrys. Ep. 26.

‡ *Νῦν γοῦν ἐπιλαθόμενοι τοῦ κυρίου μου τιμωτάτου καὶ εὐλαβεστάτου πρεσβυτέρου.*—Id. ibid.

§ *Δεσπότην μου τιμώτατον Ἀσύγκριτον τὸν πρεσβύτερον.*—Ep. 68. (71, 75, 77, 84, 91, &c.)

¶ *Κύριοι ἀδελφοί.* P. Celest. I. Ep. ad Syn. Eph. Act. ii. (p. 324).

¶¶ *Scias nos non tuos esse, ut te tactas et extollis, clericos, quos ut fratres et coepiscopos recognoscere, si elatio permitteret, debueras.*—An. Franc. Pith. (an. 858)

* Conc. 6, Act. xiii. p. 224.

be the pope's subjects, or his inferiors in office; but his fellows and mates, coordinate in rank.

Were not these improper terms for an ordinary gentleman or nobleman to accost his prince in? yet hardly is there such a distance between any prince and his peers, as there is between a modern pope and other bishops.

It would now be taken for a great arrogance and sauciness for an underling bishop to address to the pope in such language, or to speak of him in that manner; which is a sign that the world is altered in its notion of him, and that he beareth a higher conceit of himself than his primitive ancestors did. Now nothing but *Beatissimus Pater*, Most blessed Father; and *Dominus noster Papa*, Our Lord the Pope, in the highest sense, will satisfy him.

Now a pope in a general synod, in a solemn oration, could be told to his face, that "the most holy senate" of cardinals had chosen "a brother into a father, a colleague into a lord."* Verily so it is now, but not so anciently.

In the same ancient times, the style of the Roman bishops writing to other bishops was the same; he calling them brethren and fellow-ministers.

So did Cornelius write to Fabius of Antioch, "Beloved brother."† so did he call all other bishops,—“Be it known to all our fellow-bishops and brethren.”‡ So Julius to the oriental bishops, “To our beloved brethren.”|| So Liberius to the Macedonian bishops, “To our beloved brethren and fellow-ministers:”§ and to the oriental bishops, “To our brethren and fellow-bishops.”¶ So Damasus to the bishops of Illyricum.^a So Leo himself frequently in his epistles. So Pope Celestine calleth John of Antioch, “Most

* Vere divina providentia factum consensum est, quod te sacerrimus iste senatus — fratrem, et ita dixerim filium in patrem, collegam in dominum — elegerint, assumpserint. adoraverint.—*Balt. Delrio. in Conc. Later. ad Leonem X. sess. viii.* (p. 85.)

† Ἀδελφὶ ἀγαπῆ.—*Euseb. vi.* 43.

‡ Omnibus coepiscopis nostris et fratribus innotescat.—*P. Cur. apud Cypr. Epist.* 48.

|| Ἀγαπητοῖς ἀδελφοῖς.—*Athan. p.* 739.

§ Ἀγαπητοῖς ἀδελφοῖς καὶ συναϊεροπρεβοῖς.—*Soz. iv.* 12.

¶ Fratribus et coepiscopis.—*III. Frag. p.* 450.

^a Soz. vi. 23.

honoured brother;”* to Cyril and to Nestorius himself, “Beloved brother;”† to the fathers of Ephesus, “Seigniors, brethren.”‡ Pope Gelasius to the bishops of Dardania, “Your brotherhood.” St. Gregory to Cyriacus, “Our brother and fellow-priest, Cyraicus.”||

If it be said, the popes did write so then out of condescension, or humility and modesty; it may be replied, that if really there was such a difference as is now pretended, it may seem rather affectation, and indecency or mockery: for it would have more become the pope to maintain the majesty and authority of his place, by appellations apt to cherish their reverence, than to colloque with them in terms void of reality, or signifying that equality which he did not mean.

But Bellarmine hath found out one instance (which he maketh much of) of Pope Damasus,^b who writing (not as he allegeth, to the Fathers of Constantinople, but) to certain eastern bishops, calleth them *most honoured sons*.§ That whole epistle I do fear to be foisted into Theodoret; for it cometh in abruptly; and doth not much become such a man: and if it be supposed genuine, I should suspect some corruption in the place: for why, if he writ to bishops, should he use a style so unsuitable to those times, and so different from that of his predecessors and successors? Why should there be such a disparity between his own style now and at other times? for, writing to the bishops of Illyricum, he calleth them “beloved brethren:”¶ why then is he so inconstant and partial as to yield these oriental bishops less respect? wherefore perhaps *υἱοὶ* was thrust in for *ἀδελφοὶ*: or perhaps the word *ἐπισκόποις* was intruded, and he did write to laymen; “those who governed the east,” who well might be called “most honoured sons;”** otherwise the epithet doth not seem well to

* Τιμιώτατε ἀδελφε.—*Conc. Eph. p.* 196.

† Τῷ ἀγαπητῷ ἀδελφῷ.—*P.* 179, 183.

‡ Κέριοι ἀδελφοί.—*Act. ii.* p. 324.

|| Fraternitas vestra.—*P. Gelas. Ep.* 12; *Greg. Ep.* vi. 24. Fratrī et consacerdotis nostri Cyriaci —.

§ Vales. in Theod. ib. υἱοὶ τιμιώτατοι.

¶ Ἀγαπητοῖς ἀδελφοῖς.—*Soz. vi.* 23.

** Τοῖς τὴν ἑσπέρην ἰθύνουσι.

^b Bell. ii. 14; Theod. v. 10.

but; but however, a single example of arrogance or stateliness (or of what shall I call it?) is not to be set against so many modest and mannerly ones.

In fine, that this salutation doth not always imply superiority, we may be assured by that inscription of Alexander, bishop of Thessalonica, to Athanasius of Alexandria, "To my beloved son and unanimous colleague, Athanasius."*

IX. The ground of that eminence which the Roman bishop did obtain in the church, so as in order to precede other bishops, doth shake this pretence.

The church of Rome was indeed allowed to be "the principal church,"† as St. Cyprian calleth it: but why? Was it preferred by divine institution? No, surely; Christianity did not make laws of that nature, or constitute difference of places. Was it in regard to the succession of St. Peter? No; that was a slim, upstart device; that did not hold in Antioch, nor in other apostolical churches.

But it was for a more substantial reason; the very same on which the dignity and pre-eminence of other churches was founded; that is, the dignity, magnitude, opulence, opportunity of that city in which the bishop of Rome did preside; together with the consequent numerousness, quality, and wealth of his flock; which gave him many great advantages above other his fellow-bishops: it was, saith Rigaltius, called by St. Cyprian the principal church, "because constituted in the principal city."‡

That church, in the very times of severest persecutions, "by the providence of God" (as Pope Cornelius said in his Epistle to Fabius), "had a rich and plentiful number, with a most great and innumerable people;"|| so that he reckoneth forty-four presbyters, seven deacons (in imitation of the number in the

acts), seven sub-deacons, forty-two acolythi, fifty-two others of the inferior clergy, and above fifteen hundred alms-people.

To that church there must needs have been a great resort of Christians, going to the seat of the empire in pursuit of business; as in proportion there was to each other metropolis; according to that canon of the Antiochene synod, which ordered, that "the bishop of each metropolis should take care of the whole province, because all that had business did resort to the metropolis."*

That church was most able to yield help and succour to them who needed it; and accordingly did use to do it; according to that of Dionysius (bishop of Corinth) in his epistle to bishop Soter of Rome: "This" (saith he) "is your custom from the beginning, in divers ways to do good to the brethren, and to send supplies to many churches in every city, so refreshing the poverty of those who want."†

Whence it is no wonder that the head of that church did get most reputation, and the privilege of precedence without competition.

"To this church" (said Irenæus) "it is necessary that every church (that is, the faithful who are all about) should resort, because of its more powerful principality:"‡ what is meant by that "resort" will be easy to him who considereth how men here are wont to go up to London, drawn thither by interests of trade, law, &c. What he did understand "by more powerful principality,"|| the words themselves do signify, which exactly do agree to the power and grandeur of the imperial city, but do not well suit to the authority of a church; especially then when no church did appear to have either principality or

* Ἀγαπητῷ υἱῷ καὶ ἀποστόλῳ συλλειτουργῷ Ἀθανασίῳ.—Apud Athan. Apol. ii. p. 783.

† Ecclesia principalis.—Cypr. Ep. 55.

‡ Ecclesia principalis, id est in urbe principali constituta.—Rigalt. in Cypr. Ep. 55.

|| Διὰ τῆς τοῦ Θεοῦ προνοίας πλουσιότης τε καὶ πληθύν ἀριθμὸς μετὰ μεγίστου καὶ ἀναριθμήτου λαοῦ.—Euseb. vi. 43. Et quamquam sciam frater, pro mutua dilectione quam debemus et exhibemus invicem nobis florentissimo illic clero tecum presidenti, et sanctissimæ atque umplissimæ plebi, legere te semper literas nostras.—Cypr. Ep. 55. (ad Corin.)

* Καὶ τὴν φροντίδα ἀναδέχασθαι πάσης τῆς ἐπαρχίας. Διὰ τὸ ἐν τῇ μητροπόλει συντρέχειν πάντας τοὺς τὰ πράγματα ἔχοντας.—Syn. Ant. can. 9.

† Ἐξ ἀρχῆς γὰρ ἔμιν ἔθος ἐστὶ τοῦτο, πάντας μὲν ἀδελφοὺς ποικίλως εὐεργετῆν, ἐκκλησίαις τε πολλαῖς ταῖς κατὰ πάσαν πόλιν ἐφόδια πέμπειν, ὧδε μὲν τὴν τῶν δεομένων πενίαν ἀναψύχοντας, &c.—Dionys. Corinth. apud Euseb. iv. 23.

‡ Ad hanc ecclesiam, propter potentiorem principalem, necesse est omnem convenire ecclesiam, hoc est, eos qui sunt ubique fideles.—Iren. iii. 3.

|| (Δυνατωτέρων ἀρχῆν.—I conjecture he said.)

puissance. And that sense may clearly be evinced by the context, wherein it doth appear, that St. Irenæus doth not allege the judicial authority of the Roman church, but its credible testimony, which thereby became more considerable, because Christians commonly had occasions of recourse to it.

Such a reason of precedence St. Cyprian giveth in another case: "Because" (saith he) "Rome for its magnitude ought to precede Carthage."*

For this reason a pagan historian did observe, the Roman bishop "had a greater authority" (that is, a greater interest and reputation) "than other bishops."†

This reason Theodoret doth assign in his Epistle to Pope Leo, wherein he doth highly compliment and cajole him: "For this city" (saith he) "is the greatest, and the most splendid, and presiding over the world; and flowing with multitude of people; and which, moreover, hath produced the empire now governing."—‡

This is the sole ground upon which the greatest of all ancient synods, that of Chalcedon, did affirm the papal eminency to be founded; for, "To the throne" (say they) "of ancient Rome, because that was the royal city, the Fathers reasonably conferred the privileges:"|| the fountain of papal eminence was in their judgment not any divine institution, not the authority of St. Peter deriving itself to his successors; but the concession of the Fathers, who were moved to grant it upon account that Rome was the imperial city.

To the same purpose the Empress Placidia, in her Epistle to Theodosius in behalf of Pope Leo, saith, "It becometh us to preserve to this city (the which is mistress of all lands) a reverence in all things."§

* Quoniam pro magnitudine sua debeat Carthaginem Roma præcedere.—*Cypr. Ep.* 49.

† Auctoritate qua potiores æternæ urbis episcopi.—*Ann. Marcell. lib. xv.* (p. 47.)

‡ Ἡ γὰρ αὐτὴ πασῶν μεγίστη, καὶ γαμπροτάτη, καὶ τῆς οἰκουμένης προκαθημένη, καὶ τῶν πλῆθει τῶν οἰκηθῶν κυμαίνουσα. πρὸς δὲ τούτοις καὶ νῦν κρατούσαν ἡγεμονίαν ἐξλάσθησε.—*Theod. Ep.* 113.

|| Ἡ ὁ ἁγίου τῆς πρεσβυτέρου Ῥώμης διὰ τὸ βασιλεύειν πόλιν ἐκείνην οἱ Πατέρες εὐκρίτως ἀποδεδώκασι τὰ πρεσβεία.—*Syn. Chalc. Act. xvi. can. 28.*

§ Ἡ Ῥώμη ἡμᾶς ταύτη τῇ μεγίστῃ πόλει, ἧτις δέσπονα πασῶν ὑπάρχει τῶν γειῶν, ἐν πᾶσι τὸ σέβας παρφυλάξαι.—*Placid. in Syn. Chalc. p. 27.*

This reason had indeed in it much of equity, of decency, of conveniency; it was equal, that he should have the preference, and more than common respect, who was thence enabled and engaged to do most service to religion. It was decent, that out of conformity to the state, and in respect to the imperial court and senate, the pastor of that place should be graced with repute; it was convenient, that he who resided in the centre of all business, and had the greatest influence upon affairs, who was the emperor's chief counsellor for direction, and instrument for execution of ecclesiastical affairs, should not be put behind others.

Hence did the Fathers of the second general synod advance the bishop of Constantinople "to the next privileges of honour after the bishop of Rome, because it was new Rome,"* and a seat of the empire.

And the Fathers of Chalcedon assigned "equal privileges to the most holy See of new Rome, with good reason" (say they), "judging that the city which was honoured with the royalty and senate, and which" (otherwise) "did enjoy equal privileges with the ancient royal Rome, should likewise in ecclesiastical affairs be magnified as it, being second after it."†

Indeed upon this score the church of Constantinople is said to have aspired to the supreme principality, when it had the advantage over old Rome, the empire being extinguished there; and sometimes was styled "the head of all churches."‡

* Τὸν μέντοι Κωνσταντινουπόλεως ἐπίσκοπον ἴχου τὰ πρεσβεία τῆς τιμῆς μετὰ τὸν τῆς Ῥώμης ἐπίσκοπον διὰ τὸ εἶναι αὐτὴν νέαν Ῥώμην.—*Syn. Const. can. 3.*

† Τὰ ἴσα πρεσβεία ἐπέκειμαν τῷ τῆς νέας Ῥώμης ἀγιωτάτῳ ἁγίου, εὐλόγως κρίναντες τὴν βασιλείαν ἐπισημολογῶν τιμηθεῖσαν πόλιν, καὶ τῶν ἰσῶν ἀκαλοῦσαν πρεσβείων τῇ πρεσβυτέρῃ βασιλεῖδι Ῥώμης, καὶ β τοῖς ἐκκλησιαστικοῖς ὡς ἐκείνη μεγαλύνεσθαι ἐπιμασι, δευτέραν μετ' ἐκείνην ὑπάρχουσαν.—*Syn. Chal. can. 28.*

‡ Sacrosanctam quoque hujus religiosissimæ civitatis ecclesiam, et matrem nostræ pietatis, et Christianorum orthodoxæ religionis omnium, et ejusdem regis urbis sanctissimam sedem. &c.—*Imp. Leo. Cod. lib. i. tit. 2, § 16.* The holy church of this most religious city, the mother of our devotion, and of all orthodox Christians, and the most holy see of that imperial city. Bonifacius III. a Phoca imperatore obtinuit, magna tamen contentione, ut sedes B. Petri apostoli, quæ caput est omnium ecclesiarum, ita et diceretur, et haberetur ab

It is also natural, and can hardly be otherwise, but that the bishop of a chief city (finding himself to exceed in wealth, in power, in advantages of friendships, dependencies, &c.) should not affect to raise himself above the level: it is an ambition that easily will seize on the most moderate, and otherwise religious minds. Pope Leo objected it to Anatolius, and Pope Gregory to John (from his austere life called "the Faster.")

Upon the like account it was that the bishops of other cities did mount to a pre-eminency, "metropolitan, primatical, patriarchal."

Thence it was that the bishop of Alexandria, before Constantine's time, did acquire the honour of second place to Rome; because that city, being head of a most rich and populous nation, did in magnitude and opulency (as Gregory Nazianzen saith) "approach next to Rome, so as hardly to yeild the next place to it."*

Upon that account also did Antioch get the next place; as being the most large, flourishing, commanding city of the east; "the which," as Josephus saith, "for bigness and for other advantages, had without controversy the third place in all the world subject to the Romans;"† and the which St. Chrysostom

omnibus; quem quidem locum ecclesia Constantinopolitana sibi vindicare conabatur: faventibus interdum principibus, affirmantibusque eo loci primam sedem esse debere, ubi imperii caput esset.—*Plat. in Bonif. III.* (p. 161.) Boniface III. (though with a great deal of stir) obtained of the Emperor Phocas, that the see of St. Peter the apostle, which is the head of all churches, should be so called and accounted by all; which dignity the church of Constantinople did indeed endeavour to assert to itself. Princes sometime favouring them, and affirming that there the chief see ought to be, where the head of the empire was. Phocas rogante papa Bonifacio statuit sedem Romanæ ecclesiæ caput esse omnium ecclesiarum, quia ecclesia Constantinopolitana primam se omnium ecclesiarum scribebat.—*Anastas in Bonif. III.* Item *Sabellicus, Blondus, Lætus, &c. tradunt.* Phocas, at the entreaty of Pope Boniface, appointed that the Roman see should be the head of all churches, because the church of Constantinople wrote herself the chief of all churches.

* Ὑμεῖς ἡ μεγάλη πόλις, οἱ μὲν τὴν πρώτην εὐθέως, ἢ μὴδὲ τοῦτο παραχωροῦντες.—*Greg. Naz. Orat. 27.* Ἡ Ἀλεξανδρίων, μεγαλόπολις.—*Evagr. ii. 4, et passim.*

† Ἡ μητρόπολις ἐστὶ τῆς Συρίας, μεγίστους ἔνεκα

calleth "the head of all cities seated in the east."*

St. Basil seemeth to call the church thereof the principal in the world; for, "What" (saith he) "can be more opportune to the churches over the world than the church of Antioch? the which, if it should happen to be reduced to concord, nothing would hinder but that as a sound head it would supply health to the whole body."†

Upon the same account the bishop of Carthage did obtain the privilege to be standing primate of his province (although other primacies there were not fixed to places, but followed seniority), and a kind of patriarch over all the African provinces.

Hence did Cæsarea, as exceeding in temporal advantages, and being the political metropolis of Palestine, overtop Jerusalem, that most ancient, noble, and venerable city, the source of our religion.

It was indeed the general rule and practice to conform the privileges of ecclesiastical dignity in a proportion convenient to those of the secular government, as the synod of Antioch in express terms did ordain; the ninth canon whereof runneth thus: "The bishops in every province ought to know, that the bishop presiding in the metropolis doth undertake the care of all the province; because all that have business do meet together in the metropolis; whence it hath been ordained that he should precede in honour, and that the bishops should do nothing extraordinary without him; according to a more ancient canon holding from our Fathers"† (that is, accord-

καὶ τῆς ἄλλης εὐδαιμονίας τρίτον ἀδριτίως ἐπὶ Ῥωμαίοις οἰκουμένης ἔχουσα τόπον.—*Joseph. de Bello. Jud. iii. 3.*

* Πόλις οὕτω μεγάλη, καὶ τῶν ὑπὸ τὴν ἑω κειμένων ἡ κεφαλὴ—*Chrys. Ἀνθρ. β.*

† Τί δ' ἂν γένοιτο ταῖς κατὰ τὴν οἰκουμένην ἐκκλησίαις τῆς Ἀντιοχείας καριώτερον; ἢν εἰσυνέβη πρὸς ὀνόμιον ἐπιανελεῖν, οὐδὲν ἐκώλυεν, ὥσπερ κεφαλὴν, ἐρρωμένην, παντὶ τῷ σώματι ἐπιχορηγεῖν τὴν βίαιαν.—*Bas. Ep. 48.* (ad Athanas.)

‡ Τοὺς ἐν ἐκάστῃ ἐπαρχίᾳ ἐπισκόπους εἶδεναι χρὴ τὸν ἐν τῇ μητροπόλει προστάτα ἐπίσκοπον, (καὶ) τὴν φροντίδα ἀναδέχεσθαι πάσης τῆς ἐπαρχίας διὰ τὸ ἐν τῇ μητροπόλει συντρέχειν πάντας τοὺς τὰ πράγματα ἔχοντας: ὅθεν ἔδοξε καὶ τῇ τιμῇ προηγείσθαι αὐτὸν, μηδὲν τε πράττειν περιττὸν τοὺς λοιποὺς ἐπισκόπους ἀνευ αὐτοῦ, κατὰ τὸν ἀρχαιότερον κρατήσαντα ἐκ τῶν πατέρων ἡμῶν κανόνα.—*Syn. Ant. can. 9; Syn. Chalch. 17.*

ing to the thirty-fourth canon of the apostles.)

It is true, that the Fathers do sometimes mention the church of Rome being founded by the two great apostles, or the succession of the Roman bishop to them in pastoral charge, as a special ornament of that church, and a congruous ground of respect to that bishop, whereby they "did honour the memory of St. Peter:"* but even some of those who did acknowledge this, did not avow it as a sufficient ground of pre-eminence; none did admit it for an argument of authoritative superiority.

St. Cyprian did call the Roman See "the chair of St. Peter," and "the principal church;"† yet he disclaimed any authority of the Roman bishops above his brethren.

Firmilian did take notice, that Pope Stephanus "did glory in the place of his bishopric, and contend that he held the succession of Peter;"‡ yet did not he think himself thereby obliged to submit to his authority, or follow his judgment; but sharply did reprehend him, as a favourer of heretics, an author of schisms, and one who had cut himself off from the communion of his brethren.

The Fathers of the Antiochene synod "did confess, that in writings all did willingly honour the Roman church, as having been from the beginning the school of the apostles, and the metropolis of religion; although yet from the east the instructors of the Christian doctrine did go and reside there; but from hence they desired not to be deemed inferiors; because they did not exceed in the greatness and numerousness of their church."‡

* Sedis apostolicæ primatum S. Petri meritum (qui princeps est episcopalis coronæ) Romanæ dignitas civitatis, sacræ etiam synodi firmavit autoritas.—*Valentin. Nov. 24. in fin. Cod. Theod.*

† Atque ego in hac parte juste indignor ad hanc tam apertam et manifestam Stephani stultitiam, quod qui sic de episcopatus sui loco gloriatur, et se successionem Petri tenere contendit.—Stephanus qui per successionem cathedram Petri habere se prædicat.—*Firmil. apud Cypr. Ep. 75.*

‡ Φέρειν γὰρ πᾶσι φιλοτιμίαν τὴν Ῥωμαίων ἐκκλησίαν ἐν τοῖς γράμμασιν ὁμολόγουσι, ὡς ἀποστόλων φροντιστήριον, καὶ εὐσεβείας μητρόπολιν ἐξ ἀρχῆς γεγεννημένην· εἰ καὶ ἐξ ἑω ἐνεδήμησαν αὐτῇ οἱ τοῦ ὄγκου ἐξηγηταί· οὐ παρὰ τοῦτο δὲ δὲ δευτερεία φέρειν
• *Cypr. Ep. lv. 52.*

They allowed some regard (though faintly and with reservation) to the Roman church upon account of their apostolical foundation; they implied a stronger ground of pretence from the grandeur of that city; yet did not they therefore grant themselves to be inferiors, at least as to any substantial privilege importing authority.

If by divine right, upon account of his succession to St. Peter, he had such pre-eminence, why are the other causes reckoned as if they could add any thing to God's institution, or as if that did need human confirmation? The pretence to that surely was weak, which did need corroboration, and to be propped by worldly considerations.

Indeed, whereas the apostles did found many churches, exercising apostolical authority over them (eminently containing the episcopal), why in conscience should one claim privileges on that score rather than or above the rest?

Why should the See of Antioch, *that most ancient and truly apostolical church*,* where the Christian name began, where St. Peter at first (as they say) did sit bishop for seven years, be postponed to Alexandria?

Especially why should the church of Jerusalem, "the seat of our Lord himself, the mother of all churches,"† the fountain of Christian doctrine, the first consistory of the apostles, ennobled by so many glorious performances (by the life, preaching, miracles, death, burial, resurrection, ascension of our Saviour; by the first preaching of the apostles, the effusion of the Holy Spirit, the conversion of so many people, and constitution of the first church, and celebration of the first synods),‡ upon these considerations, not obtain pre-eminence to other

ἡξίουσι, ὅτι μὴ μεγάθυμοι ἢ πλεῖστοι ἐκκλησίας πλεονεκτήσιν.—*Soz. iii. 8.*

* Τῆς πρεσβυτάτης καὶ ὄντως ἀποστολικῆς ἐκκλησίας.—*Ep. Synod. Const. Theodoret. H. 1. v. cap. 9, p. 211.* Quæ quantumlibet a tro ante Alexandrinam fuerat instituta, tantum quoniam præfectura Alexandrina Augusti dicta—longe præstabat Syriæ præfectura &c.—*Baron. ann. 39, § 10.*

† *Epiph. Synod. Constant. ibid.—Tῆς δὲ μητρὸς ἀπασῶν τῶν ἐκκλησιῶν ἡ ἐν Ἱεροσολύμοις.*

‡ *Opt. I. vi. (p. 169); Hier. Ep. 61; Conc. Nic. can. 7.*

churches, but in honour be cast behind others; and as to power be subjected to Cæsarea, the metropolis of Palestine?

The true reason of this even Baronius himself did see and acknowledge; for, "That" (saith he) "the ancients observed no other rule in instituting the ecclesiastical sees, than the division of provinces, and the prerogative before established by the Romans, there are very many examples."*

Of which examples that of Rome is the most obvious and notable; and what he so generally asserteth may be so applied thereto, as to void all other grounds of its pre-eminence.

X. The truth is, all ecclesiastical presidencies and subordinations or dependencies of some bishops on others in administration of spiritual affairs, were introduced merely by human ordinance, and established by law or custom upon prudential accounts, according to the exigency of things: hence the prerogatives of other Sees did proceed; and hereto whatever dignity, privilege, or authority the pope with equity might at any time claim, is to be imputed.

To clear which point we will search the matter nearer the quick; propounding some observations concerning the ancient forms of discipline, and considering what interest the pope had therein.

At first each church was settled apart, under its own bishop and presbyters; so as independently and separately to manage its own concerns; each was ἀποκεφαλός, and αυτόνομος, "governed by its own head, and had its own laws." Every bishop, as a prince in his own church, did act freely, according to his will and discretion, with the advice of his ecclesiastical senate, and with the consent of his people (the which he did use to consult), without being controllable by any other, or accountable to any, further than his obligation to uphold the verity of Christian profession, and to maintain fraternal communion in charity and peace with neighbouring churches did require; in which regard, if he

were notable peccant, he was liable to be disclaimed by them as no good Christian, and rejected from communion, together with his church, if it did adhere to him in his misdemeanours. This may be collected from the remainders of state in the times of St. Cyprian.*

But because little, disjointed, and incoherent bodies were like dust, apt to be dissipated by every wind of external assault or intestine faction; and peaceable union could hardly be retained without some ligature of discipline; and churches could not mutually support and defend each other without some method of intercourse and rule of confederacy engaging them: therefore for many good purposes† (for upholding and advancing the common interests of Christianity, for protection and support of each church from inbred disorders and dissensions,

* Cypr. Ep. 52, 55, 72, 73, 76. Omnis hic actus populo erat insinuandus.—*P. Corn. apud Cypr.* Ep. 46. All this business was to have been imparted to the people. Secundum arbitrium quoque vestrum, et omnium nostrum commune consilium—ea quæ agenda sunt disponere.—*Cypr.* Ep. 40. (*Plebi Univ.*) To order what was to be done according to your judgment, and the common advice of us all. Et limanda plenius, ratio non solum cum collegis meis, sed et cum plebe ipsa universa.—*Id.* Ep. 28. And the reason is more thoroughly to be examined, not only with my colleagues, but with the whole people. Præjudicare ego et soli mihi rem communem vindicare non audeo.—*Ep.* 18. I dare not therefore prejudge, nor assume to myself alone a matter which is common to all.

† Hoc enim et verecundiæ et disciplinæ et vitæ ipsi omnium nostrum convenit, ut episcopi plures in unum convenientes, præsentem et stantium plebe (quibus et ipsis pro fide et timore suo honor habendus est), disponere omnia consilii communis religione possimus.—*Cypr.* Ep. 14. For it becomes the modesty, the discipline, and the manner of our living, that many bishops meeting together, the people being also present (to whom respect ought to be had for their faith and fear), we may order all things with the common advice. — quoniam non paucorum, nec ecclesiæ unius aut unius provinciæ, sed totius orbis hæc causa est—*Cypr.* Ep. 14.—because this is the concern, not of a few men, or of one church, or one province, but of the whole world. Idcirco copiosum corpus est sacerdotum—ut si quis ex collegio nostro hæresin facere, et gregem Christi lacerare et vastare tentaverit, subveniant cæteri—*Id.* Ep. 76. Therefore the clergy is a large body—that if any one of our own society should vent an heresy, an attempt to rent and waste the flock of Christ, the rest might come in to their help.

* Majores enim in instituendis sedibus ecclesiarum non aliam iniisse rationem, quam secundum divisionem provinciarum, et prærogativas a Romanis antea stabilitas, quam plurima sunt exempla.—*Id.* *ibid.*

for preserving the integrity of the faith, for securing the concord of divers churches, for providing fit pastors to each church, and correcting such as were scandalously bad or unfaithful*) it was soon found needful that divers churches should be combined and linked together in some regular form of discipline; that if any church did want a bishop, the neighbour bishops might step in to approve and ordain a fit one;† that if any bishop did notoriously swerve from the Christian rule, the others might interpose to correct or void him;‡ that if any error or schism did peep up in any church, the joint concurrence of divers bishops might avail to stop its progress, and to quench it, by convenient means of instruction, reprehension, and censure; that if any church were oppressed by persecution, by indigency, by faction, the others might be engaged to afford effectual succour and relief: for such ends it was needful that bishops in certain precincts should convene, with intent to deliberate and resolve about the best expedients to compass them; and that the manner of such proceeding (to avoid uncertain distraction, confusion, arbitrariness, dissatisfaction, and mutinous opposition) should be settled in an ordinary course, according to rules known and allowed by all.†

In defining such precincts it was most natural, most easy, most commodious, to follow the divisions of territory or jurisdiction already established in the civil state; that the spiritual administrations, being in such circumstances aptly conformed to the secular, might go on more smoothly and expeditely, the wheels of one not clashing with the other; according to the judgment of the two great synods, that of Chalcedon and the Trullane; which did ordain, that "if by royal authority any city be, or should hereafter be re-established, the order of the churches shall be according to the civil and public form."‡

* Particularly in the dispensation of church goods. *Conc. Ant. can. 25.*

† (οἰκονομία ἐκκλησιαστικά.—*Syn. Const. can. 2.*)

‡ Εἰ δὲ καὶ τις ἐκ βασιλικῆς ἐξουσίας ἐκαινοθήκη πόλις, ἢ ἀθίς καινισθῆν τοῖς πολιτικοῖς καὶ ἑμμοσι-οῖς τύποις καὶ τῶν ἐκκλησιαστικῶν παροικῶν ἢ ταξίς ἀπολοθῆτω.—*Conc. Chalced. can. 17, et Conc. Trull. can. 38.*

† *Nov. cxxxvii. cap. 4; cxxiii. cap. 10.*

† *Vide Can. Apost. 33. (al. 30.) de Synodis.*

Whereas therefore in each nation or province subject to one political jurisdiction there was a metropolis, or head city, to which the greatest resort was for dispensation of justice, and despatch of principal affairs emergent in that province;§ it was also most convenient that also the determination of ecclesiastical matters should be affixed thereto; especially considering that usually those places were opportunely seated; that many persons upon other occasions did meet there; that the churches in those cities did exceed the rest in number, in opulence, in ability and opportunity to promote the common interest in all kinds of advantages.

Moreover, because in all societies and confederacies of men for ordering public affairs (for the setting things in motion, for effectual despatch, for preventing endless dissensions and confusions both in resolving upon and executing things), it is needful that one person should be authorised to preside among the rest, unto whom the power and care should be intrusted to convoke assemblies in fit season, to propose matters for consultation, to moderate the debates and proceedings, to declare the result, and to see that what is agreed upon may be duly executed;¶ such a charge then naturally would devolve itself upon the prelate of the metropolis, as being supposed constantly present on the place; as being at home in his own seat of presidence, and receiving the rest under his wing; as incontestably surpassing others in all advantages answerable to the secular advantages of his city; for that it was unseemly and hard, if he at home should be postponed in dignity to others repairing thither; for that also commonly he was in a manner the spiritual father of

* Ad hoc divinæ dispensationis provisio gradus et diversos constituit ordines in se distinctos, ut dum reverentiam minores potioribus exhiberent, et potior res minoribus diligentiam impenderent, una concordia fieret a diversitate contentio et recte officiorum gereretur administratio singulorum. *Joh. VIII. Ep. 95.* To this end Divine Providence hath appointed degrees and divers orders distinct from one another, that while the less reverence the greater, and the greater take care of the less, from this diversity there might arise one frame of concord, and all offices be duly administered.

† *P. Anacl. Dist. xcix. cap. 1; P. Greg. VII. Ep. vi. 35.*

the rest (religion being first planted in great cities, and thence propagated to others), so that the reverence and dependence on colonies to the mother city was due from other churches to his see.

Wherefore, by consent of all churches, grounded on such obvious reason of things, the presidency in each province was assigned to the bishop of the metropolis, who was called the first bishop, the *metropolitan* (in some places the *primate*, the *archbishop*, the *patriarch*, the *pope*) of the province.* The Apostolical Canons call him the first bishop (which sheweth the antiquity of this institution; †) the African synods did appoint that name to him as most modest, and calling him primate in that sense; † other ancient synods style him the metropolitite; and to the metropolitites of the principal cities they gave the title of *archbishop*. The bishops of Rome and Alexandria peculiarly were called *popes*; although that name was sometimes deferred to any other bishop.

During this state of things the whole church did consist of so many provinces, being *αὐτοκέφαλοι*, independent on each other in ecclesiastical administrations; each reserving to itself the constitution of bishops, the convocation of synods, the enacting of canons, the decision of causes, the definition of questions; yet so that each province did hold peaceful and amicable correspondence with others; upon the like terms as before each *παροικία*, or episcopal precinct, did hold intercourse with its neighbours.

And whoever in any province did not comply with or submit to the orders and determinations resolved upon in those assemblies, was deemed a schismatical, contentious, and contumacious person; with good reason, because he did thwart a discipline plainly conducive to public good; because declining such judgments he plainly shewed that he would admit none (there not being any fairer way of determining things than by common advice and agreement of pastors;) because

he did in effect refuse all good terms of communion and peace.

Thus, I conceive, the metropolitical governance was introduced, by human prudence following considerations of public necessity or utility. There are indeed some who think it was instituted by the apostles: but their arguments do not seem convincing; and such a constitution doth not (as I take it) well suit to the state of their times, and the course they took in founding churches.

Into such a channel, through all parts of Christendom (though with some petty differences in the methods and measures of acting), had ecclesiastical administrations fallen of themselves; plain community of reason and imitation insensibly propagating that course; and therein it ran for a good time, before it was by general consent and solemn sanction established.

The whole church then was a body consisting of several confederations of bishops, acting in behalf of their churches under their respective metropolitans, who did manage the common affairs in each province; † convoking synods at stated times and upon emergent occasions; in them deciding causes and controversies incident, relating to faith or practice; * framing rules serviceable to common edification and decent uniformity in God's service; quashing heresies and schisms, declaring truths impugned or questioned; maintaining the harmony of communion and concord with other provinces adjacent or remote.

Such was the state of the church, unto which the Apostolical Canons and Constitutions do refer, answerable to the times in which they were framed; and which we may discern in the practice of ancient synods.

Such it did continue, when the great synod of Nice was celebrated; † which by its authority (presumed to represent the authority of all bishops in the world, who were summoned thereto), backed by the imperial authority and power, did

* *Primas provinciarum. Cod. Afr. can. 19.*

† *Τοῖς ἐπισκόποις ἐκάστου ἔθνους εἶδιναι χρὴ τῶν ἐν αὐτοῖς πρώτων.—Can. Apost. 27.* The bishops of each nation ought to know who is chief among them.

^b *Cod. Afr. can. 39; Dist. xcix. cap. 3.*

ⁱ *Παράταξις.—Syn. Nic. can. 18.*

* *Διὰ τὰς ἐκκλησιαστικὰς χρεῖας καὶ τὰς τῶν ἀμεισθητομένων διαλύσεις.—Syn. Ant. can. 20.*

† *Παλαιὸς τε ὡς τότε θεσμὸς κεκράτηκε, καὶ τῶν ἁγίων ἐν Νικαίᾳ Πατέρων ὅρος.—Syn. Constant. Theod. v. 9.*

^j *Can. Apost. 38; Tertull. de Jej. cap. 13; Syn. Nic. can. 5.*

confirm those orders, as they found them standing by more general custom and received rules in most provinces;* reducing them into more uniform practice; so that what before stood upon reason, customary usage, particular consent, by so august sanction did become universal law; and did obtain so great veneration, as by some to be conceived everlastingly and immutably obligatory; according to those maxims of Pope Leo.

It is here further observable, that whereas divers provinces did hold communion and intercourse; so that upon occasion they did (by their formed letters) render to one another an account of their proceedings, being of great moment, especially of those which concerned the general state of Christianity and common faith; calling, when need was, for assistance one of another, to resolve points of faith, or to settle order and peace; there was in so doing a special respect given to the metropolitans of great cities: and to prevent dissensions, which naturally ambition doth prompt men to, grounded upon degrees of respect, an order was fixed among them, according to which in subscriptions of letters, in accidental congresses, and the like occasions, some should precede others (that distinction being chiefly and commonly grounded on the greatness, splendour, opulency of cities; or following the secular dignity of them;) whence Rome had the *first* place, Alexandria the *second*, Antioch the *third*, Jerusalem the *fourth*, &c.

Afterward, Constantine having introduced a new partition of the empire, whereby divers provinces were combined together into one territory, under the regiment of a vicar, or a lieutenant of a *praefectus-praetorio*, which territory was called a *diocese*; the ecclesiastical state was adapted in conformity thereto; new ecclesiastical systems, and a new sort of spiritual heads, thence springing up; so that in each diocese, consisting of divers provinces, an ecclesiastical exarch† (otherwise sometimes called a *primate*, sometimes a *diocesan*,‡ sometimes a *patri-*

*arch**) was constituted, answerable to the civil exarch of a diocese; who by such constitution did obtain a like authority over the metropolitans of provinces, as they had in their province over the bishops of cities;† so that it appertained to them to call together the synods of the whole diocese, to preside in them, and in them to despatch the principal affairs concerning that precinct, to ordain metropolitans, to confirm the ordinations of bishops, to decide causes and controversies between bishops upon appeal from provincial synods.

Some conceive the synod of Nice did establish it; but that can hardly well be; for that synod was held about the time of that division (after that Constantine was settled in a peaceful enjoyment of the empire), and scarce could take notice of so fresh a change in the state; that doth not pretend to innovate, but professeth in its sanctions specially to regard "ancient custom, saving to the churches their privileges" of which they were possessed;‡ that only mentioneth provinces, and representeth the metropolitans in them as the chief governors ecclesiastical then being; that constituteth a peremptory decision of weighty causes in provincial synods, which is inconsistent with the diocesan authority; that taketh no notice of Constantinople,|| the principal diocese in the east, as seat of the empire (and the synod of Antioch, insisting in the footsteps of the Nicene, doth touch only metropolitans (can. 19), and the synod of Laodicea doth only sup-

* Οι διοικητικοί πατριάρχαι διοικήσεως ἐκείνης — Syn. Chalc. Act. 2. (p. 311.) Ephesi εἰσαγωγαὶ πατριαρχικῶν.—Evag. iii. 6.

† Τινὲς μὲν ἐξάρχους τῶν διοικήσεων τοῦ πατριάρχους φασί.—Zon. ad 28; Can. Chalc. Novell. cxxxvii. cap. 5, et cxliii. cap. 10; P. Greg. I. Ep. 11. 56. Ordo episcoporum quadripartitus est, id est, in patriarchis, archiepiscopis, metropolitanis, atque episcopis.—Isid. Dist. xxi. cap. 1. Dionysius Ex. translates ἐξάρχων. *primatum*. in Syn. Chalc. can. 9, 17.

‡ "Ὅπερ οὐτε ὁ κανὼν, οὐτε ἡ συνθήκη παροίεσται.—Can. 18. Τὰ ἀρχαῖα ἔθη κρατεῖται.—Can. 6. Ἐπειδὴ συνθήκη κεκράτηκε καὶ παλαιῶσι ἀρχαῖς.—Can. 7. (Ὁμοίως ἐὲ καὶ κατὰ τὴν Ἀντιόχειαν, καὶ ἐν ταῖς ἄλλαις επαρχίαις τὰ πρεσβεία σώζονται ταῖς ἐκκλησίαις.—Ibid.

|| Τοὺς ἐπισκόπους κρίσει τῶν μητροπολιτῶν, καὶ τῶν πρὸς ἐπισκόπων καθίστασθαι.—Syn. Laod. can. 12. The bishops should be constituted by the judgment of the metropolitans and the neighbouring bishops.

* Ὑπὸ τοῦ πάντα ἐν πάσῃ παρικῇ ὁμοίᾳ φυλάττεσθαι.—Can. 20.

† Ἐπιτολιούθησα τῷ ἐξίρχῳ μου.—Syn. Chalc. Act. x. p. 388.

‡ Διοικητής.—Epist. Orient. ad Rufum. in Syn. Eph. p. 396; Dist. xvix. cap. 1, 2.

* Zos. lib. ii. p. 63; Sextus Rufus, Brev.

pose that order.) In fine, that synod is not recorded by any old historian to have framed such an alteration; which indeed was so considerable, that Eusebius, who was present there, could not well have passed it over in silence.

Of this opinion was the synod of Carthage, in their Epistle to Pope Celestine I., who understood no jurisdiction but that of metropolitans, to be constituted in the Nicene synod.

Some think the Fathers of the second general synod did introduce it, seeing it expedient that ecclesiastical administrations should correspond to the political; for they did innovate somewhat in the form of government; they do expressly use the new word *diocese*, according to the civil sense, as distinct from a province; they do distinctly name the particular dioceses of the oriental empire, as they stood in the civil establishment; they do prescribe to the bishops in each diocese to act unitedly there, not skipping over the bounds of it; they order a kind of appeal to the synod of the diocese, prohibiting other appeals: the historians expressly do report of them, that they did *distinguish and distribute dioceses*, that they did *constitute patriarchs*, that they did prohibit that any of one diocese should intrude upon another.*

But if we shall attently search and scan passages, we may perhaps find rea-

* Εἰ δὲ συμβαίη ἀδυνατῆσαι τοὺς ἐπαρχιώτας πρὸς διόρθωσιν ἐπιφερομένων ἐγκλημάτων τῷ ἐπισκόπῳ, τότε αὐτοὺς προσίεναι μείζονι συνόδῳ τῶν τῆς διοικήσεως ἐπισκόπων ἐκείνης ὑπὲρ τῆς αἰτίας ταύτης συγκαλουμένων. — Syn. Const. can. 6. But if it so happen that the bishops of any province cannot rectify those things which are laid to the charge of a bishop, they shall then go to a greater synod of the bishops of that diocese, met together for that purpose. The Fathers of Constantinople, in their synodic Epistle, distinguish the province and diocese of Antioch, οἱ τῆς ἐπαρχίας, καὶ τῆς ἀνατολικῆς διοικήσεως συνήφροντες. — Theod. v. 9. Καὶ πατριάρχας κατὰ τὴν διανομήν αὐτοῦ τὰς ἐπαρχίας. — Socr. v. 8. Ἐν ταύτῃ γὰρ τῇ βασιλευσῶσιν πόλει συνεληθόντες οἱ πατέρες συμφώνως τοῖς ἐν τῇ Νικαίᾳ συνήφροντες τὰς διοικήσεις διέκριναν, καὶ ἐκάστη διοίκησιν τῶν ἀνεπιεικῶν ἀπαγορεύοντες ἐξ ἑτέρας τῶν διοικήσεων ἑτέρα μὴ ἐπιέναι. — Theodor. Ep. 86. (ad Flavianum.) For (says Theodor.) the blessed Fathers meeting together in the imperial city, distinguished dioceses agreeably to what the Nicene Fathers had done, and allotted to every diocese what belonged to it: on the contrary, charging that no one of one diocese should encroach upon another.

son to judge that this form did soon after the synod of Nice creep in, without any solemn appointment, by spontaneous assumption and submission, accommodating things to the political course; the great bishops (who by the amplification of their city, in power, wealth, and course of people, were advanced in reputation and interest) assuming such authority to themselves; and the lesser bishops easily complying: and of this we have some arguments.† Cyril, bishop of Jerusalem, being deposed and extruded by Acacius, metropolitan of Palestine, “did appeal to a greater judicatory;” being the first (as Socrates noteth) who ever did use that course; because, it seemeth, there was no greater in being till about that time; which was some years before the synod of Constanople; in which there is mention “of a greater synod of the diocese.”*—

There was a convention of bishops of the Pontic diocese at Tyana (distinguished from the Asian bishops), whereof Eusebius of Cæsarea is reckoned, in the first place, as president, in the time of Valens.‡

Nectarius, bishop of Constanople, is said by the synod of Chalcedon to have presided in the synod of Constantinople.†

A good argument is drawn from the very canon of the synod of Constantinople itself; which doth speak concerning “bishops over dioceses,” as already constituted, or extant; not instituting that order of bishops, but supposing it, and together with an implicit confirmation regulating practice according to it, by prohibiting bishops to leap over the bounds of their diocese, so as to meddle in the affairs of other diocese; and by ordering “appeals to the synod of a diocese.”‡

Of authority gained by such assump-

* Βιβλίον τοῖς καθελοῦσι διαπεψῶμενος μείζον ἐπικαλέσατο δικαστήριον — τοῦτο μὲν οὐν μόνος καὶ πρῶτος παρὰ τῷ σύνθητες ἐκκλησιαστικῆ κανόνι Κύριλλος ἐποίησεν. — Socr. ii. 40.

† Τῶν δὲ Νεκτάρους ὁν Γρηγορίῳ ἡγεμονίαν ἤρατο. — (In prosphonetic ad Imper.)

‡ Τοὺς ὑπὲρ διοικήσεων ἐπισκόπους. — Can. 2. Προσέναι μείζονι συνόδῳ τῶν τῆς διοικήσεως ἐπισκόπων. — Can. 6.

† Theod. ii. 26; Soz. iv. 25.

‡ Soz. vi. 12.

tion and concession, without law, there might be produced divers instances.

As particularly that the See of Constantinople did assume to itself ordination, and other acts of jurisdiction, in three dioceses, before any such power was granted to it by any synodical decree; the which to have done divers instances show; some whereof are alleged in the synod of Chalcedon; as St. Chrysostom, of whom it is there said, "That going into Asia he deposed fifteen bishops, and consecrated others in their room."^{*}

He also deposed Gerontius, bishop of Nicomedia, belonging to the diocese of Pontus.^o

Whence the Fathers of Chalcedon did aver, "That they had in a synod confirmed the ancient custom which the holy church of God in Constantinople had, to ordain metropolitans in the Asian, Pontic, and Thracian dioceses."[†]

The which custom (consistent with reason, and becoming the dignity of the empire, and grateful to the court) that great synod did establish, although the Roman church, out of jealousy, did contest and protest against it.[‡]

But the most pertinent instances are those of the Roman, Alexandrine, and Antiochene churches, having by degrees assumed to themselves such power over divers provinces; in imitation of which churches the other diocesan bishops may well be thought to have enlarged their jurisdiction.

This form of government is intimated in the synod of Ephesus, by those words in which dioceses and provinces are distinguished: "and the same shall be observed in all dioceses and all provinces every where."[†]

^{*} Ἰωάννης δεκαπέντε ἐπισκόπους καθέλειεν, ἀπελθὼν ἐν Ἀσίᾳ, καὶ ἐχειροτόνησεν ἄλλους ἀντ' αὐτῶν.—Syn. Chalc. Act. 11. (p. 411.)

[†] Τὸ γὰρ ἐκ πολλοῦ κρατήσαν ἔθος ὅπερ ἔαχεν ἡ Κωνσταντινουπολιτῶν ἅγια Θεοῦ ἐκκλησία εἰς τὸ χειροτονεῖν μητροπολίτας τῶν διοικήσεων τῆς τε Ἀσιανῆς, καὶ Ποντικῆς, καὶ Θρακικῆς καὶ νῦν κατὰ συνοδικὴν ἐκυρώσαμεν ψήφον.—Syn. Chalc. in Epist. ad P. Leonem.

[‡] Τὸ δὲ αὐτὸ καὶ ἐπὶ τῶν ἄλλων διοικήσεων καὶ τῶν ἀπανταχοῦ ἐπαρχιῶν παραφυλαχθήσεται.—Syn. Eph. can. 8. [There is mention of dioceses in Strabo.]

ⁿ Syn. Chalc. Act. xvi. (p. 463.)

^o Soz. viii. 6.

^p Syn. Chalc. Act. xvi. (p. 462.—

However, that this form of discipline was perfectly settled in the times of the fourth general synod is evident by two notable canons thereof, wherein it is decreed, that "if any bishop have a controversy with his metropolitan of his province, he shall resort to, and be judged by, the exarch of the diocese, or by the See of Constantinople."^{*}

This was a great privilege conferred on the Bishop of Constantinople; the which perhaps did ground (to be sure it did make way for) the plea of that bishop to the title of *Œcumenical Patriarch*, or *Universal Bishop*, which Pope Gregory did so exagitate; and indeed it soundeth so fairly toward it, that the pope hath nothing comparable to it to allege in favour of his pretences; this being the decree of the greatest synod that ever was held among the ancients, where all the patriarchs did concur in making these decrees; which Pope Gregory did reverence as *one of the Gospels*. If any ancient synod did ever constitute any thing like to *universal monarchy*, it was this; wherein a final determination of greatest causes was granted to the See of Constantinople, without any exception or reservation: I mean as to semblance, and the sound of words; for as to the true sense, I do indeed conceive that the canon did only relate to causes emergent in the eastern parts; and probably it did only respect the three dioceses (of Asia, Pontus, and Thrace) which were immediately subjected to his patriarchal jurisdiction.

Pope Nicholas I. doth very jocularly expound this canon; affirming that by the primate of the diocese is understood the pope (*diocese* being put by a notable figure for *dioceses*), and that an appeal is to be made to the bishop of Constantinople only by permission, in case the party will be content therewith.[†]

^{*} Εἰ δὲ πρὸς τὸν τῆς αὐτῆς ἐπαρχίας μετροπολίτην ἐπίσκοπος ἢ κληρικὸς ἀμφισβητοῖ, καταλαβὼν βασιλεὺς τὸν ἐξάρχον τῆς διοικήσεως, ἢ τὸν τῆς βασιλευσούσης Κωνσταντινουπόλεως θρόνον, καὶ ἐν' αὐτῷ δικασέσθαι.—Syn. Chalc. can. 19, 17.

[†] Quem autem primatē dioceseos S. synodus dixerit, præter apostoli primi vicariū nullus penitus intelligitur. — Non can understand whom the holy synod should call primate of a diocese, except the vicar of prime apostle. Tantundem valet dixisse primate

may note, that some provincial
es were by ancient custom ex-
from dependence on any primacy
iarchate.

an one the Cyprian church was
ed to be in the Ephesine synod ;
n the privileges of such churches
confirmed against the invasion of
churches, and to that purpose
eneral law enacted: " Let the
e observed in all dioceses and
es every where—that none of
ops most beloved of God invade
rovince, which did not formerly
to him or his predecessors ; and
one have invaded one, and violent-
ed it, that he restore it."*

a church was that of Britain an-
before Austin did introduce the
uthority here against that canon ;
divers learned pens hath been
l.

was the church of Afric, as by
anons against transmarine ap-
und about all other matters, doth

supposed by some, that discipline
rewed yet. one peg higher, by
up the order of patriarchs higher
rimates, or diocesan exarchs:†
find no ground of this supposal,
in one case ; that is, of the bish-
onstantinople being set above the
s of Ephesus, Cæsarea, and Her-
which were the primates of the
dioceses.

a notable fib which Pope Nicholas
eth, as Gratian citeth him : " That
urch of Rome instituted all patri-
supremacies, all metropolitan pri-
y, episcopal sees, all ecclesiastical
and dignities whatsoever."†

dioceseos. quantum si perhibuisset dice-
—*P. Nich. I. Eph. 8. (p. 607.)* To
primate of a diocese, is as much as to
dioceses.

ὅτι αὐτὸ καὶ ἐπὶ τῶν ἄλλων διοικήσεων καὶ
ὑπαρχοῦ ἐπαρχιῶν παραφυλαχθήσεται—ὥστε
τῶν θεοφιλεστάτων ἐπισκόπων ἐπαρχίαν ἐτέ-
ουσαν ἄνωθεν καὶ ἐξἄρχῆς ὑπὸ τὴν αὐτοῦ
ὄν πρὸ αὐτοῦ χεῖρα καταλαμβάνειν, ἀλλ' εἰ
κατέλαβεν, καὶ ὑπ' αὐτοῦ πεποιήται, βιασάμε-
ον ἀποδιδόναι, &c. Conc. Eph. can. 8.
nnes sive patriarchæ cujuslibet apices,
etropolean primatus, aut episcopatumus
ras, vel ecclesiarum cujuslibet ordinis
des instituit Romana ecclesia.—*Pic. Nic.*
†. xxii. cap. 1.
id. Dist. ii. cap. 1.

Now things standing thus in Christen-
dom, we may, concerning the interest of
the Roman bishop in reference to them,
observe,

1. In all these transactions about
modelling the spiritual discipline, there
was no canon established any peculiar
jurisdiction to the bishop of Rome, only
the

2. Synod of Nice did suppose that he,
by custom, did enjoy some authority
within certain precincts of the west, like
to that which it did confirm to the bish-
op of Alexandria in Egypt, and the
countries adjacent thereto.

3. The synods of Constantinople did
allow him "honorary privileges," or
precedence before all other bishops,
assigning the next place after him to the
bishop of Constantinople.*

4. In other privileges the synod of
Chalcedon did equal the See of Con-
stantinople to the Roman.

5. The canons of the two first and
fourth general synods, ordering all af-
fairs to be despatched, and causes to be
determined in metropolitan or diocesan
synods, do exclude the Roman bishop
from meddling in those concerns.

6. The popes (out of a humour natu-
ral to them, to like nothing but what they
did themselves, and which served their
interests) did not relish those canons, al-
though enacted by synods which them-
selves admitted for œcumenical. "That
subscription of some bishops made above
sixty years since, as you boast, does no
whit favour your persuasion ; a subscrip-
tion never transmitted to the knowledge
of the apostolic see by your predecessors,
which, from its very beginning, being
weak, and long since ruinous, you en-
deavour now, too late and unprofitably,
to revive."†

So doth Pope Leo I. treat the second
great synod, writing to Anatolius ; and
Gregory speaking of the same says,

* Πρεσβεία τιμῆς.—Can. 3. Τὰ πρωτεύια καὶ
ἐξαιρετος τιμῆ.—Syn. Ch. Act. 16. Ἴσα πρε-
βεία.

† Persuasioni enim tuæ in nullo penitus suf-
fragatur quorundam episcoporum ante sexa-
ginta, ut jactas, annos facta subscriptio, nun-
quamque a prædecessoribus tuis ad apostolicæ
sedis transmissa notitiam, cui ab initio sui ca-
duceæ, dudumque collapsæ sera nunc et inutilia
subjicere fomenta voluisti.— *P. Lev. Ep. 53.*
(*ad Anatol.*) vide Ep. 54, 55, 61.

"That the Roman church has not the acts of that synod, nor received its canons."*

7. Wherefore in the west they did obtain no effect, so as to establish diocesan primacies there.

The bishops of cities, which were heads of dioceses, either did not know of these canons (which is probable, because Rome did smother the notice of them), or were hindered from using them; the pope having so winded himself in, and got such hold among them, as he would not let go.†

8. It indeed turned to a great advantage of the pope, in carrying on his encroachments, and enlarging his worldly interests, that the western churches did not, as the eastern, conform themselves to the political frame in embracing diocesan primacies; which would have engaged and enabled them better to protect the liberties of their churches from papal invasions.‡

9. For hence, for want of a better, the pope did claim to himself a patriarchal authority over the western churches; pretending a right of called synods, of meddling in ordinations, of determining causes by appeal to him; of dictating laws and rules to them, against the old rights of metropolitans, and the later constitutions for primacies.

Of this we have an instance in St. Gregory; where he alleging an imperial constitution importing that in case a clergyman should appeal from his metropolitan, "the cause should be referred to the archbishop and patriarch of that diocese, who judging according to the canons and laws should give an end thereto;" doth consequentially assume

* Romana autem ecclesia eosdem canones velgesta synodi illius hactenus non habet, nec accepit.—*Greg. M. Ep. vi. 31 (ad Eulog. Alex.)*

† *N. B.* A Roman synod, anno 378, consisting of Italian bishops, did give the pope such a privilege as the synod of Constantinople did to the bishop of that See.—(*Marc. de Primat. p. 103. ex App. Cod. Theodos. Vide Baron*) But there is difference between a general synod and an Italian synod: and what had an Italian synod to prescribe to all the provinces of the Roman Empire, or rather of the west?—*P. Greg. I. Ep. 7, 8.*

‡ Balusius thinketh that Hilarius of Arles did pretend and offer at this primatical power. *apud Marc. v. 32*; but Pope Leo did mainly check and quash his attempt.

an appeal from a bishop to himself, adjoining, "If against these things it be said that the bishop had neither metropolitan nor patriarch, it is to be said that this cause was to be heard and decided by the apostolical see, which is the head of all churches."*

10. Having got such advantage, and, as to extent, stretched his authority beyond the bounds of "his suburbicarian precincts," he did also extend it in quality far beyond the privileges by any ecclesiastical law granted to patriarchs, or claimed or exercised by any other patriarch; till at length, by degrees, he had advanced it to an exorbitant omnipotency, and thereby utterly enslaved the western churches.

The ancient order did allow a patriarch or primate to call a synod of the bishops in his diocese, and with them to determine ecclesiastical affairs by majority of suffrages: but he doth not do so; but setting himself down in his chair, with a few of his courtiers about him, doth make decrees and dictates, to which he pretendeth all must submit.

The ancient order did allow a patriarch to ordain metropolitans duly elected in their dioceses; leaving bishops to be ordained by the metropolitans in their provincial synods: but he will meddle in the ordination of every bishop, suffering none to be constituted without his confirmation, for which he must soundly pay.

The ancient order did allow a patriarch, with the advice and consent of his synod, to make canons for the well-ordering his diocese: but he sendeth about his decretal letters, composed by an infallible secretary, which he pretendeth must have the force of laws, equal to the highest decrees of the whole church.

The ancient order did suppose bishops, by their ordination, sufficiently obliged to render unto their patriarch due observance, according to the canons, he being liable to be judged in a synod for the transgression of his duty: but he forceth all bishops to take the most slav-

* Contra hæc si dictum fuerit, quia nec metropolitanam habuit nec patriarcham: dicendum est quia a sede apostolica, qua omnium ecclesiarum caput est, causa hæc audienda ac danda fuerat.—*Greg. I. Ep. xi. 36.*

† *Ruffin. Hist. i. 6.*

hs of obedience to him that can
gined.

ancient order did appoint, that
accused for offences should be
n their provinces; or, upon ap-
m them, in patriarchal synods:
receiveth appeals at the first
d determineth them in his court,
calling such a synod in an age
such purpose.

ancient patriarchs did order all
as became good subjects, with
d under submission to the em-
vho as he pleased did interpose
irmation of their sanctions: but
n pretendeth to decree what he
without the leave, and against
of princes.

efore he is not a patriarch of the
churches (for that he acteth ac-
to no patriarchal rule), but a
kind of sovereign lord, or a ty-
oppressor of them.

n all the transactions for model-
church, there never was allowed
ope any dominion over his fel-
riarchs, or of those great pri-
who had assumed that name to
ves;* among whom indeed, for
ity of his city, he had obtained
ty of honour or place: but never
power over them settled by a
law, or by clear and uncontested
.

uch, that if any of them had
faith, or offended in practice, it
uisite to call a general synod to
em; as in the cases of Athana-
Gregory Nazianzen and Maxi-
Theophilus and St. Chrysostom,
orius and of Dioscorus, is evi-

indeed all the oriental churches
p themselves pretty free from his
hments, although, when he had
so big in the west, he sometimes
e occasion to attempt on their
; which they sometimes did wari-
ne, sometimes stoutly did oppose.
is to the main, those flourishing
s constantly did maintain a dis-
ministration from the western
es, under their own patriarchs and
, not suffering him to interlope in
ce to their liberty.[†]

. in Dist. 21, cap. 1.
e de Marc. lib. vii. cap. 4, 5.

They, without his leave or notice, did
call and celebrate synods (whereof all
the first great synods are instances;) their ordinations were not confirmed or touched by him; appeals were not (with public regard or allowance) thence made to him in causes great or little, but they decided them among themselves: they quashed heresies springing up among them, as the second general synod the Macedonians, Theophilus, the Origenists, &c. Little in any case had his worship to do with them, or they with him, beyond what was needful to maintain general communion and correspondence with him; which they commonly, as piety obliged, were willing to do.

And sometimes, when a pert pope, upon some incidental advantage of differences risen among them, would be more busy than they deemed convenient in tampering with their affairs, they did rap his fingers: so Victor, so Stephanus, so Julius and Liberius, of old did feel to their smart: so afterwards Damasus and other popes in the case of Flavianus; Innocent in the case of St. Chrysostom; Felix and his successors in the case of Acacius, did find little regard had to their interposals.

So things proceeded, till at length a final rupture was made between them, and they would not suffer him at all to meddle with their affairs.

Before I proceed any further, I shall briefly draw some corollaries from this historical account which I have given of the original and growth of metropolitanical, primatical, and patriarchal jurisdiction.

1. Patriarchs are an human institution.
2. As they were erected by the power and prudence of men, so they may be dissolved by the same.
3. They were erected by the leave and confirmation of princes; and by the same they may be dejected, if great reason do appear.
4. The patriarchate of the pope beyond his own province or diocese doth not subsist upon any canon of a general synod.
5. He can therefore claim no such power otherwise than upon his invasion or assumption.
6. The primates and metropolitans of the western church cannot be supposed

otherwise than by force, or out of fear, to have submitted to such an authority as he doth usurp.

7. It is not really a patriarchal power (like to that which was granted by the canons and princes), but another sort of power, which the pope doth exercise.

8. The most rightful patriarch, holding false doctrine, or imposing unjust laws, or tyrannically abusing his power, may and ought to be rejected from communion.

9. Such a patriarch is to be judged by a free synod, if it may be had.

10. If such a synod cannot be had by consent of princes, each church may free itself from the mischiefs induced by his perverse doctrine or practice.

11. No ecclesiastical power can interpose in the management of any affairs within the territory of any prince without his concession.

12. By the laws of God, and according to ancient practice, princes may model the bounds of ecclesiastical jurisdiction, erect bishoprics, enlarge, diminish, or transfer them as they please.

13. Wherefore each prince (having supreme power in his own dominions, and equal to what the emperor had in his) may exclude any foreign prelate from jurisdiction in his territories.

14. It is expedient for peace and public good that he should do thus.

15. Such prelate, according to the rules of Christianity, ought to be content with his doing so.

16. Any prelate, exercising power in the dominion of any prince, is *eatenus* his subject; as the popes and all bishops were to the Roman emperors.

17. Those joints of ecclesiastical discipline, established in the Roman empire by the confirmation of emperors, were (as to necessary continuance) dissolved by the dissolution of the Roman empire.

18. The power of the pope in the territories of any prince did subsist by his authority and favour.

19. By the same reason as princes have curbed the exorbitancy of papal power in some cases (of entertaining legates, making appeals, disposing of benefices, &c.) by the same they might exclude it.

20. The practice of Christianity doth

not depend upon the subsistence of such a form instituted by man.

Having shewed at large that this universal sovereignty and jurisdiction of the bishop of Rome over the Christian church hath no real foundation either in scripture or elsewhere, it will be requisite to shew by what ways and means so groundless a claim and pretence should gain belief and submission to it from so considerable a part of Christendom; and that from so very slender roots* (from slight beginnings, and the slimmest pretences one can well imagine) this bulk of exorbitant power did grow, the vastest that ever man on earth did attain, or did ever aim at, will be the less wonderful, if we do consider the many causes which did concur and contribute thereto; some whereof are proposed in the following observations:—

1. Eminency of any kind (in wealth, in honour, in reputation, in might, in place, or mere order of dignity) doth easily pass into advantages of real power and command over those who are inferior in those respects, and have any dealings or common transactions with such superiors.

For to persons endowed with such eminency, by voluntary deference the conduct of affairs is wont to be allowed; none presuming to stand in competition with them, every one rather yielding place to them than to their equals.

The same conduct of things, upon the same accounts, and by reason of their possession, doth continue fast in their hands, so long as they do retain such advantages.

Then from a custom of managing things doth spring up an opinion or a pretence of right thereto; they are apt to assume a title, and others ready to allow it.

Men naturally do admire such things, and so are apt to defer extraordinary respect to the possessors of them.

Advantages of wealth and might are not only instruments to attain, but incentives spurring men to affect the getting authority over their poorer and weaker neighbours: for men will not be content with bare eminency, but will desire real power and sway, so as to obtain their

* De pusillo crescere.—*P. Leo. Ep. 53.*

ver others, and not to be crossed y. Pope Leo had no reason to r that Anatolius, bishop of Conople, was not content with dry .^{*} Men are apt to think their is precarious, and standeth on an ain foundation, if it be not support-h real power; and therefore they ot be satisfied to let their advanie dead, which are so easily imle to power, by inveigling some, caring or constraining others to eir yoke: and they are able to and gratify some, and thereby them willing to submit; those afds become serviceable to bring under, who are disaffected or re-y.

he bishops of Constantinople and usalem, at first, had only privileges our; but afterward they soon l in power.

r the Roman bishops from the be- g were eminent above all other s in all kinds of advantages.

was seated in the imperial city, the of general resort; thence obvious eyes, and his name sounding in all s. He had a most numerous, opu- plendid flock and clergy. He had atest income (from liberal obla- to dispose of. He lived in great- e and lustre. He had opportuni- assist others in their business, and ve them in their wants. He ne- ly thence did obtain great respect eration.[†] Hence, in all common the conduct and presidence were ly devolved on him, without con-

vonder, then, that after some time e did arrive to some pitch of au- over poor Christians, especially who lay nearest to him; improving nency into power, and his pasto- rge into a kind of empire; ac- ; to that observation of Socrates, ong before his time the Roman acy had advanced itself beyond esthood into a potentacy."[‡]

d illi satisfaciet, si tantæ urbis magni- et claritudo non sufficit?—*Leo. Ep*

seb. vi. 43. (an. 254.)—Oblationibus rum ditati. Circumspecte vestiti.—*Iarc. 1. xvii. (p. 337), an. 367, Euseb. 'Ρωμαίων ἐπισηκοῦς πέρα τῆς ἱεροσολύνης ἐπὶ ν ἤδη πάσαι προελθούσης.*—*Socr. vii. 11.*

And the like he observeth to have hap- pened in the church of Alexandria, upon the like grounds, or by imitation of such a pattern.[‡]

2. Any small power is apt to grow and spread itself; a spark of it soon will expand itself into a flame: it is very like to the grain of mustard seed, which indeed is the least of all seeds; but when it is grown, it is the greatest among herbs, and becometh a tree, so that the birds of the air come and lodge in the branches thereof.[‡] "Encroaching" (as Plutarch saith) "is an innate disease of potentacies."^{*} Whoever hath any pit- tance of it, will be improving his stock; having tasted the sweetness of having his will (which extremely gratifieth the na- ture of man), he will not be satisfied without having more; he will take him- self to be straitened by any bounds; and will strive to free himself of all re- straints.

Any pretence will serve to ground at- tempts of enlarging power, and none will be balked. For power is bold, enterprising, restless: it always watcheth, or often findeth, "never passeth oppor- tunities of dilating itself."[†] Every ac- cession doth beget further advantages to amplify it; as its stock groweth, so it with ease proportionably doth increase; being ever out at use. As it groweth, so its strength to maintain and enlarge itself doth grow: it gaining more wealth, more friends, more associates and dependents.

None can resist or obstruct its growth without danger and manifold disadvan- tages: for as its adherents are deemed loyal and faithful, so its opposers are branded with the imputations of rebel- lion, contumacy, disloyalty; and not suc- ceeding in their resistance, they will be undone.

None ever doth enterprise more than to stop its career; so that it seldom loseth by opposition; and it ever gaineth by composition. If it be checked at one

^{*} Τὰ συμφύρον νόσημα ταῖς δυναστείαις, ἡ πλεονε- ξία.—*Plut. in Pyrrh.*

[†] Subrependi occasiones non prætermittit ambitio —. *P. Leo I. Ep. 62. Facilius crescit dignitas quam incipit.*—*Sen. Ep. 101. Primæ dominandi spes in arduo; ubi sis ingressus, adsunt studia et ministri.*—*Tacit. Ann. iv. (p. 143.)*

[‡] *Socr. vii. 7.*

[‡] *Matt. xiii. 31, 32.*

time, or in one place, it will, like the sea, at another season, in another point, break in. If it is sometimes overthrown in a battle, it is seldom conquered in the war.

It is always on its march forward, and gaineth ground; for one encroachment doth countenance the next, and is alleged for a precedent to authorize or justify it. It seldom moveth backward; for every successor thinketh he may justly enjoy what his predecessor did gain, or which is transmitted into his possession; so that there hardly can ever be any restitution of ill-gotten power.

Thus have many absolute kingdoms grown: the first chief was a leader of volunteers; from thence he grew to be a prince with stated privileges; after, he became a monarch invested with high prerogatives; in fine, he creepeth forward to be a grand seignior, usurping absolute dominion: so did Augustus Cæsar first only assume the style of prince of the senate, demeaning himself modestly as such; but he soon drew to himself the administration of all things; and upon that foundation his successors very suddenly did erect a boundless power. If you trace the footsteps of most empires to the beginning, you may perceive the like.

So the pope, when he had got a little power, continually did swell it. The puny pretence of the succeeding St. Peter, and the name of the apostolical see; the precedence, by reason of the imperial city; the honorary privileges allowed him by councils; the authority deferred to him by one synod of revising the causes of bishops; the countenance given to him in repressing some heresies, he did improve to constitute himself sovereign lord of the church.

3. Spiritual power especially is of a growing nature, and more especially that which deriveth from divine institution; for it hath a great awe upon the hearts and consciences of men: which engageth them to a firm and constant adherence. It useth the most subtle arms, which it hath always ready, which needeth no time or cost to furnish, which cannot be extorted from its hand; so that it can never be disarmed. And its weapons make strong impression, because it proposeth the most effectual encouragements to its abettors, and discouragements

to its adversaries; alluring the one with promises of God's favour and eternal happiness, terrifying the other with menaces of vengeance from heaven, and endless misery: the which do ever quell religious, superstitious, weak people; and often daunt men of knowledge and courage.

It is presumed unchangeable and unextinguishable by any human power, and thence is not (as all other power) subject to revolutions. Hence, like Achilles, it is hardly vincible, because almost immortal. If it be sometimes rebuffed or impaired, it soon will recover greater strength and vigour.

The popes derive their authority from divine institution; and their weapons always are sentences of scripture: * they pretend to dispense remission of sin, and promise heaven to their abettors. They excommunicate, curse, and damn the opposers of their designs.

They pretend they never can lose any power that ever did belong to their see: they are always stiff, and they never recede or give back. "The privileges of the Roman church can sustain no detriment."**

4. Power is easily attained and augmented upon occasion of dissension. Each faction usually doth make itself a head, the chief in strength and reputation which it can find inclinable to favour it; and that head it will strive to magnify, that he may be the abler to promote its cause; and if the cause doth prosper, he is rewarded with accession of privileges and authority: especially those who were oppressed, and find relief by his means, do become zealously active for his aggrandizement.

Thus usually in civil broils the captain of the prevalent party groweth a prince, or is crowned with great privileges (as Cæsar, Octavian, Cromwell, &c.)

So upon occasion of the Arian faction, and the oppression of Athanasius, Marcellus, Paulus, and other bishops, the pope (who by their application to him had occasion to head the catholic party) did grow in power; for thereupon the

* Privilegia Romanæ ecclesiæ nullum possunt sustinere detrimentum.—*P. Nic. l. Ep. xxxvi.* (32—.)

** *Dist. xxi. cap. 2, 3.*

Sardican synod did decree to him that privilege, which he infinitely enhanced, and which became the main engine of rearing himself so high.

And by his interposal in the dissensions raised by the Nestorians, the Pelagians, Eutychians, the Acacians, the Monothelites, the Image-worshippers, and mage-breakers, &c., his authority was advanced; for he, adhering in those causes to the prevailing party, was by them extolled, obtaining both reputation and sway.

5. All power is attended by dependencies of persons sheltered under it, and by it enjoying subordinate advantages; which proportionably do grow by its increase.

Such persons, therefore, will ever be inciting their chief and patron to amplify his power; and in aiding him to compass it, they will be very industriously, resolutely, and steadily active, their own interest moving them thereto.

Wherefore their mouths will ever be open in crying him up, their heads will be busy in contriving ways to further his interests, their care and pains will be employed in accomplishing his designs; they with their utmost strength will contend in his defence against all oppositions.

Thus the Roman clergy first, then the bishops of Italy, then all the clergy of the west, became engaged to support, to fortify, to enlarge the papal authority; they all sharing with him in domination over the laity; and enjoying wealth, credit, support, privileges, and immunities thereby. Some of them especially were ever putting him on higher pretences; and furthering him by all means in his acquit and maintenance of them.

6. Hence if a potentate himself should have no ambition, nor much ability to improve his power; yet it would of itself follow, he need only be passive therein; the interests of his partisans would effect it: so that often power doth no less thrive under sluggish and weak potentates, especially if they are void of goodness, than under the most active and able: let the ministers alone to drive on their interest.

7. Even persons otherwise just and good do seldom scruple to augment their power by undue encroachment, or at

least to uphold the usurpations of their foregoers: for even such are apt to favour their own pretences, and afraid of incurring censure and blame, if they should part with any thing left them by their predecessors. They apprehend themselves to owe a dearness to their place, engaging them to tender its own weal and prosperity, in promoting which they suppose themselves not to act for their own private interest; and that it is not out of ambition or avarice, but out of a regard to the grandeur of their office, that they stickle and bustle; and that in so doing they imitate St. Pual, who did *magnify his office*. They are encouraged hereto by the applause of men, especially of those who are allied with them in interest, and who converse with them; who take it for a maxim, *Boni principis est ampliare imperium*; the extenders of empire are admired and commended, however they do it, although with cruel wars, or by any unjust means.

Hence usually the worthiest men in the world's eye are greatest enlargers of power; and such men being appearances of virtue, ability, reputation, to aid their endeavours, do most easily compass designs of this nature, finding less obstruction to their attempts; for men are not so apt to suspect their integrity, or to charge them with ambition and avarice; and the few, who discern their aims and consequences of things, are overborne by the number of those who are favourably conceited and inclined toward them.

Thus Julius I., Damasus I., Innocent I., Gregory I., and the like popes, whom history representeth as laudable persons, did yet confer to the advancement of papal grandeur. But they who did most advance that interest, as Pope Leo I., Gelasius I., Pope Nicholas I., Pope Gregory VII., in the esteem of true zealots, pass for the best popes.* Hence the distinction between a good man, a good prince, a good pope.

8. Men of an inferior condition are apt to express themselves highly in commendation of those who are in a superior rank, especially upon occasion of address and intercourse; which commendations are liable to be interpreted for acknowledgments or attestations of right, and

* Sixtus V.

thence do sometimes prove means of creating it.

Of the generality of men it is truly said, that it "doth fondly serve fame, and is stunned with titles and images,"* readily ascribing to superiors whatever they claim, without scanning the grounds of their title. Simple and weak men, out of abjectness or fear, are wont to crouch, and submit to any thing upon any terms. Wise men do not love brangling, nor will expose their quiet and safety without great reason; thence being inclinable to comply with greater persons. Bad men, out of design to procure advantages or impunity, are prone to flattery and gloze with them. Good men, out of due reverence to them, and in hope of fair usage from them, are ready to compliment them, or treat them with the most respectful terms. Those who are obliged to them will not spare to extol them; paying the easy return of good words for good deeds.

Thus all men conspire to exalt power; the which snatcheth all good words as true, and construeth them to the most favourable sense; and allegeth them as verdicts and arguments of unquestionable right. So are the compliments, or terms of respect, used by Jerome, Austin, Theodoret, and divers others, toward popes, drawn into an argument for papal authority; whenas the actions of such Fathers, and their discourses upon other occasions, do manifest their serious judgment to have been directly contrary to his pretences: wherefore the emperor of Constantinople, in the Florentine synod, had good reason to decline such sayings† for arguments; for, "If" (saith he) "any of the saints doth in an epistle honour the pope, shall he take that as importing privileges?"‡

9. Good men commonly (out of charitable simplicity, meekness, modesty, and humility, love of peace, and averseness from contention) are apt to yeild to the encroachments of those who anywise do excel them; and when such men do

* — qui famæ servit ineptus.
Ac stupet in titulis et imaginibus —.

Hor.

† Κατὰ μὴτὰ τῶν ἁγίων.

‡ Μήπως, φησὶ, τίς τῶν ἁγίων ἐν ἐπιστολῇ τιμᾷ τὸν πᾶπαν, καὶ ἐλάβη τοῦτο ἀντὶ προνομίων.—Syn. Flor. sess. xxv. (p. 845.)

yield, others are ready to follow their example. Bad men have little interest to resist, and no heart to stand for public good; but rather strike in presently, taking advantage by their compliance to drive a good market for themselves. Hence so many of all sorts in all times did comply with popes, or did not obstruct them; suffering them without great obstacle to raise their power.

10. If in such cases a few wise men do apprehend the consequences of things, yet they can do little to prevent them. They seldom have the courage with sufficient zeal to bustle against encroachments; fearing to be overborne by its stream, to lose their labour, and vainly to suffer by it: if they offer at resistance, it is usually faint and moderate: whereas power doth act vigorously, and push itself forward with mighty violence; so that it is not only difficult to check it, but dangerous to oppose it.

Ambiguity of words (as it causeth many debates, so) yieldeth much advantage to the foundation and amplification of power:* for whatever is said of it, will be interpreted in favour of it, and will afford colour to its pretences. Words innocently or carelessly used are by interpretation extended to signify great matters, or what you please. For instance,

The word *bishop* may import any kind of superintendency or inspection: hence St. Peter came to be reckoned bishop of Rome, because in virtue of his apostolic office he had inspection over that church founded by him, and might exercise some episcopal acts.

The word *head* doth signify any kind of eminency; the word *prince*, any priority; the word to *preside*, any kind of superiority or pre-eminence:† hence some Fathers attributing those names to St. Peter, they are interpreted to have thought him sovereign in power over the apostles. And because some did give like terms to the pope, they infer his superiority in power over all bishops; notwithstanding such Fathers did express a contrary judgment.

* Ita de vocabulorum occasionibus plurimum questiones subornantur, sicut et de verborum in communionibus.—Tertull. de Resur. Carn. 51.

† Καὶ ἡγεῖσθαι κεφαλῆν. Can. Apost. 31.

The word *successor* may import any derivation of power: hence because St. Peter is said to have founded the church of Rome, and to have ordained the first bishop there, the pope is called his successor.

The word *authority* doth often import any kind of influence upon the opinions or actions of men (grounded upon eminence of place, worth, reputation, or any such advantage:) hence, because the pope of old sometimes was desired to interpose his authority, they will undertake him to have had right to command and judge in such cases;* although authority is sometimes opposed to command, as where Livy saith, that "Evander did hold those places by authority, rather than by command,"† and Tacitus of the German princes saith, "They are heard rather according to their authority of persuading, than power of commanding."‡ "The word *judge*" (saith Canus) "is frequently used to signify no more than, I do think or conceive;"§ whereby he doth excuse divers popes from having decreed a notable error; (for Alexander III. says of them, "That they judged, that after a matrimony contracted, not consummated, another may be valid, that being dissolved.") Yet if the pope is said to have judged so or so in any case, it is alleged for a certain argument of proper *jurisdiction*.

11. There is a strange enchantment in words; which being (although with no great colour of reason) assumed, do work on the fancies of men, especially of the weaker sort. Of these power doth ever arrogate to itself such as are most operative, by their force sustaining and extending itself.

* Quia duobus episcopis, quorum ea tempestate summa autoritas erat non illuserat. — *Sulp. Sev.* ii. 63. Because he had not deluded the two bishops who had the greatest authority in those times. Non mediocri autoritatis episcopus Carthag. — *Aug. Ep.* 162. The bishop of Carthage was of no mean authority.

† Evander — ea autoritatemagis quam imperio retinebat loca. — *Liv.* 1.

‡ — audiuntur autoritate suadendi potius quam jubendi potestate. — *Tac. de Mor. Ger.* (p. 640.)

§ Verbum *judico* frequenter in ea significatione usurpatur, ut idem sit quod sentio seu opinor. — *Can. loc. vi. cap. 8.* (Comp. lib. vi. 1.)

So divers prevalent factions did assume to themselves the name of *catholic*; and the Roman church particularly hath appropriated that word to itself, even so as to commit a bull, implying Rome and the universe to be the same place; and the perpetual canting of this term hath been one of its most effectual charms to weak people: "I am a catholic," that is, "an universal; therefore all I hold is true:" this is their great argument.

The words *successor of Peter, apostolic see, prima sedes*, have been strongly urged for arguments of papal authority; the which have, beyond their true force (for indeed they signify nothing), had a strange efficacy upon men of understanding and wisdom.

12. The pope's power was much amplified by the importunity of persons condemned or extruded from their places, whether upon just accounts, or wrongfully and by faction; for they finding no other more hopeful place of refuge and redress, did often apply to him:* for what will not men do, whither will not they go in straits?

Thus did Marcion go to Rome, and sue for admission to communion there. So Fortunatus and Felicissimus in St. Cyprian, being condemned in Afric, did fly to Rome for shelter; of which absurdity St. Cyprian doth so complain. So likewise Martianus and Basilides, in St. Cyprian, being outed of their Sees for having lapsed from the Christian profession, did fly to Stephen for succour, to be restored.† So Maximus (the Cynic) went to Rome to get a confirmation of his election at Constantinople. So Marcellus, being rejected for heterodoxy, went thither to get attestation to his orthodoxy (of which St. Basil complaineth.) So Apiarius, being condemned in Afric for his crimes, did appeal to Rome.

And, on the other side, Athanasius being with great partiality condemned by the synod of Tyre;‡ Paulus and other

* — ut ad domini mei tanti pontificis et piissimi patris, omnium ad se confugientium tutissimi defensoris ac protectoris, &c. — *Rothaldi Appell.* (in *P. Nich. I. Ep.* xxxvii. p. 563.) — my lord so great a pontiff, and most pious a father, the safe defender and protector of all those that flee unto him for succour.

† Calendon of Antioch, liber. cap. 18.

‡ *Cypr. Ep.* 55, 68.

bishops being extruded from their Sees for orthodoxy; St. Chrysostom being condemned and expelled by Theophilus and his complices; Flavianus being deposed by Dioscorus and the Ephesine synod; Theodoret being condemned by the same—did cry out for help to Rome.* Chelidonius, bishop of Resanon, being deposed by Hilarius of Arles (for crimes), did fly to Pope Leo. Ignatius, patriarch of Constantinople, being extruded from his See by Photius, did complain to the pope.

13. All princes are forward to heap honour on the bishop of their imperial city; it seeming a disgrace to themselves that so near a relation be an inferior to any other; who is, as it were, their spiritual pastor, who is usually by their special favour advanced. The city itself, and the court, will be restless in assisting him to climb.

Thus did the bishop of Constantinople arise to that high pitch of honour, and to be second patriarch; who at first was a mean suffragan to the bishop of Heraclea: this, by the synods of Constantinople and Chalcedon, is assigned for the reason of his advancement."

And how ready the emperors were to promote the dignity of that bishop, we see by many of their edicts to that purpose; as particularly that of Leo.

So, for the honour of their city, the emperors usually did favour the pope, assisting him in the furtherance of his designs, and extending his privileges by their edicts at home, and letters to the eastern emperors, recommending their affairs.

So in the synod of Chalcedon we have the letters of Valentinian, together with those of Placidia and of Eudoxia, the empresses, to Theodosius, in behalf of Pope Leo, for retraction of the Ephesine synod; wherein they do express themselves engaged to maintain the honour of the Roman See: "Seeing that" (saith Placidia, mother of Theodosius) "it becometh us in all things to preserve the honour and dignity of this chief city, which is the mistress of all others."*

* Ὅπως ἴσται ἡμᾶς ταύτη τῇ μεγίστῃ πόλει, ἥτις δέσποινά πασῶν ὑπάρχει τῶν γεῶν, ἐν πᾶσι τὸ σέβας παραφυλάξαι.—Syn. Chalc. (p. 27.)

† P. Leo Ep. 89; Marc. v. 32; P. Nich. I. Ep. xxxviii. (p. 564.) Rothaldus.

‡ Cod. Lib. i. tit. 2. cap. 16.

So Pope Nicholas confesseth, that the emperors had "extolled the Roman See with divers privileges, had enriched it with gifts, had enlarged it with benefices" (or benefices), &c.

14. The popes had the advantage of being ready at hand to suggest what they pleased to the court, and thereby to procure his edicts (directed or dictated by themselves) in their favour, for extending their power, or repressing any opposition made to their encroachments.

Baronius observeth, that the bishops of Constantinople did use this advantage for their ends: for thus he reflecteth on the edict of the emperor Leo in favour of that see: "These things Leo;† but unquestionless conceived in the words of Acacius, swelling with pride."

And no less unquestionably did the popes conceive words for the emperor in countenance of their authority.‡

Such was that edict of Valentinian in favour of Leo against Hilarius, bishop of Arles (in an unjust cause, as Binius confesseth), who contested his authority to undo what was done in a Gallican synod. And we may thank Baronius himself for this observation: "By this, reader, thou understandest that when the emperors ordained laws concerning religion, they did it by transcribing and enacting the laws of the church, upon the admonition of the holy bishops requiring them to do their duty."‡ It was a notable edict which Pope Hilarius allegeth: "It was also decreed by the laws of Christian princes, that whatsoever the bishop of the apostolic see should upon examination pronounce concerning churches and their

* Qualiter (imperatores) eam diversis beneficiis extulerint, donis ditaverint, beneficia ampliaverint, qualiter illam, &c.—P. Nich. I. Ep. viii. (p. 513.)

—Romanus tempore prisco
Pauper erat præsul, reguli munere crevit, &c.
Gunth. Lig. lib. 6.

† Hæc Leo, sed Acacii fastu tumentis proculdubio verbis concepta, et stylo superbiæ orata.—Baron. ann. 473. § 4.

‡ Ex his intelligis, lector, cum de rebas acris imperatores leges sanxiverint, id ipsorum admonitione ss. præsulum requirementium eorum officium ex scriptis legibus statuissse.—Baron. ann. 458. § 4.

§ Apud Marc. v. 22.

¶ Bin. ad P. Hill. Ep. 11. (p. 576.)

governors, &c. should with reverence be received, and strictly observed,"* &c.

Such edicts, by crafty suggestions, being at opportune times from easy and unwary princes procured, did hold, not being easily reversed: and the power which the pope once had obtained by them, he would never part with; fortifying it by higher pretences of divine immutable right.⁴

The Emperor Gratian, having gotten the world under him, did order the churches to those who would communicate with Pope Damasus.^o This and the like countenances did bring credit and authority to the Roman See.

15. It is therefore no wonder that popes, being seated in the metropolis of the western empire (the head of all the Roman state), should find interest sufficient to make themselves by degrees what they would be: for they not only surpassing the provincial bishops in wealth and repute, but having power in court, who dared to pull a feather with them, or to withstand their encroachments? What wise man would not rather bear much, than contest upon such disadvantages, and without probable grounds of success?

16. Princes who favoured them with such concessions, and abetted their undertakings, did not foresee what such increase of power in time would arise to; or suspect the prejudice thence done to imperial authority. They little thought that in virtue thereof popes would check and mate princes, or would claim superiority over them: for the popes at that time did behave and express themselves with modesty and respect to emperors.

17. Power once rooted doth find seasons and favourable junctures for its growth; the which it will be intent to embrace.

The confusions of things, the eruptions of barbarians, the straits of emperors, the contentions of princes, &c. did all turn to account for him; and in confusion of things he did snatch what he could to himself.

* Christianorum quoque principum lege decretum est, &c.—*P. Hilarius*, Ep. xi (p. 576.)

⁴ P. Nich. I. Ep. 36.

• Theod. v. 2.

The declination and infirmity of the Roman empire gave him opportunity to strengthen his interests, either by closing with it, so as to gain somewhat by its concession; or by opposing it, so as to head a faction against it. As he often had opportunity to promote the designs of emperors and princes, so those did return to him increase of authority; so they trucked and bartered together. For when princes were in straits, or did need assistance (from his reputation at home) to the furtherance of their designs, or support of their interest in Italy, they were content to honour him, and grant what he desired; as in the case of Acacius, which had caused so long a breach, the emperor, to engage Pope Hormisdas, did consent to his will. And at the Florentine synod, the emperor did bow to the pope's terms, in hopes to get his assistance against the Turks.

When the eastern emperors, by his means chiefly, were driven out of Italy, he snatched a good part of it to himself, and set up for a temporal prince.*

When princes did clash, he, by yielding countenance to one side, would be sure to make a good market for himself: for this pretended successor to the fisherman was really skilled to angle in troubled waters.

They have been the incendiaries of Christendom, the kindlers and fomenters of war; and would often stir up wars;† and inclining to the stronger part, would share with the conqueror; as when he stirred up Charles against the Lombards. They would, upon spiritual pretence, be interposing in all affairs.†

He did oblige princes by abetting their cause when it was unjust or weak; his spiritual authority satisfying their conscience: whence he was sure to receive good acknowledgment and recompense. As when he did allow Pepin's usurpation. (An. 752.)

* *Δρυὶς πεσούσης πᾶς ἀνὴρ ἐπιζέται* —. When the oak is fallen, every one gets some wood.

† Non sine suspicione, quod illorum temporum pontifices, qui bella extinguere, discordias tollere debuissent, suscitarent ea potius atque nutrent.—*Modruviensis Episc. in Conc. Lat. sub Leo. X. ses. vi.* (p. 72.)

† Anast. in Vit. Zach. P. Nich. I. Ep. 25, 30, &c.

He pretended to dispose of kingdoms, and to constitute princes; reserving obeisance to himself. Gregory VII. granted to Robert Guiscard Naples and Sicily (An. 1060), *beneficiario jure*. Innocent II. gave to Roger the title of king. (An. 1139.)

There is scarce any kingdom in Europe which he hath not claimed the sovereignty of, by some pretence or other. Princes sometime, for quiet sake, have desired the pope's consent and allowance of things appertaining of right to themselves, whence the pope took advantage to claim an original right of disposing such things.

The proceeding of the pope upon occasion of wars is remarkable: when he did enter league with a prince, to side with him in a war against another, he did covenant to prosecute the enemy with spiritual arms (that is, with excommunications and interdicts), engaging his confederates to use temporal arms. So making ecclesiastical censures tools of interest.

When princes were in difficulties (by the mutinous disposition of princes, the emulation of antagonists), he would, as served his interest, interpose; hooking in some advantage to himself.

In the tumults against our King John, he struck in, and would have drawn the kingdom to himself.

He would watch opportunity to quarrel with princes, upon pretence they did intrench on his spiritual power: as about the point of the investiture of bishops, and receiving homage from them.

Gregory VII. did excommunicate	Hen. III. (an. 1076.)
Calixtus II. - - - - -	Hen. IV. (an. 1120.)
Adrian IV. - - - - -	Fred. (an. 1160.)
Clestinus III. - - - - -	Hen. V. (an. 1195.)
Innocent III. - - - - -	Otho (an. 1219.)
Honorius III. and Gregory IX. } Fred. II. (an. 1220.)	
Innocent IV. in the Lugd. Conc. }	(1245.)

18. The ignorance of times did him great service: for then all the little learning which was, being in his clients and factors, they could instil what they pleased into the credulous people. Then his dictates would pass for infallible oracles, and his decrees for inviolable laws: whence his veneration was exceedingly increased.

19. He was forward to support factious churchmen against princes, upon pretence of spiritual interest and liber-

ty.* And usually by his importunarts getting the better in such case he thereby did much strengthen authority.

20. He making himself the lord of all the clergy, and carrying him for its protector and patron, did thereby innumerable most able tongues, and pens, who were desired to maintain whatever he did, and to do else to do.

21. So great a party he chose with exorbitant liberties, suffering to rule over them, or touch them, himself.

22. He did found divers military bands of spiritual janizaries, to be obedient for his interests; who, coming immediately upon him, subsisted his charters, enjoying exemptions of authority from other jurisdictions sworn to a special obeisance were entirely at his devotion, with all their might to advance his interests, and to maintain all the pretence of their patron and benefactor.

These had great sway amongst the people, upon account of their religious and pretences to extraordinary degrees of sanctimony, austerity, contentment of the world. And learning being confined to them, they were the best teachers and guides of Christendom that no wonder if he did challenge could maintain any thing by the means.

They did cry up his power, as superior to all others. They did attribute him titles strangely high, *Spouse of the church, &c.*, strange pretences of *omnipotency, infallibility*

23. Whereas wealth is a great advantage of power, he did invent divers means drawing great store thereof to himself.

By how many tricks did he draw money from all parts of Christendom as by

Dispensations for marriage which were prohibited, or at uncustomary times;—for vows and oaths; dispensance of fasts and abstinence

* Anselme, anno 1109. Becket, ar *Eadmer. Matt. Par.*

† Pro pallio omnino aliquid dare pro *Greg. I. Ep. iv. 44.*

pluralities and incompatible benefices, non-residences, &c.

Indulgences, and pardons, and freeing souls from the pains of purgatory.

Reservations, and provisions of benefices, not bestowed *gratis*.*

Consecrated presents; *Agnus Dei's*, *roses*, *swords*,† &c.

Confirmation of bishops; sending palls.‡

Appeals to his court.

Tributes of *Peter-pence*, *annates*, *tithes*,—introduced upon occasion of holy wars, and continued.||

Playing fast and loose, tying knots, and undoing them for gain.

Sending legates to drain places of money.

Commutations of penance for money.

Inviting to pilgrimage at Rome.

Hooking in legacies. What a mass of treasure did all this come to! What a trade did he drive!§

24. He did indeed easily, by the help of his mercenary divines, transform most points of divinity in accommodation to his interests of power, reputation, and gain.

25. Any pretence, how slender soever, will in time get some validity; being fortified by the consent of divers authors, and a current of suitable practice.

Any story serving the designs of a party will get credit by being often told, especially by writers bearing a semblance of gravity; whereof divers will never be wanting to abet a flourishing party.

26. The histories of some ages were composed only by the pope's clients, friars and monks, and such people; which therefore are partial to him, addicted to his interests, and under awe of him.

For a long time none dared open his mouth to question any of his pretences, or reprehend his practices, without being called *heretic*, and treated as such.

27. Whereas the pope had two sorts

of opposites to subdue temporal princes and bishops; his business being to overtop princes and to enslave all bishops, or to invade and usurp the rights of both; he used the help of each to compass his designs on the other; by the authority of princes oppressing bishops, and by the assistance of bishops mating princes.

28. When any body would not do as he would have them, he did incessantly clamour or whine that "St. Peter was injured."*

29. The forgery of the Decretal Epistles (wherein the ancient popes are made expressly to speak and act according to some of his highest pretences, devised long after their times, and which they never thought of, good men) did hugely conduce to his purpose; authorizing his encroachments by the suffrage of ancient doctrine and practice: a great part of his canon law is extracted out of these, and grounded on them.

The donation of Constantine, fictitious acts of councils, and the like counterfeit stuff, did help thereto; the which were soon embraced, as we see in Pope Gregory II.—

As also legends, fables of miracles, and all such *deceivableness of unrighteousness*.†

30. Popes were so cunning as to form grants, and impute that to privileges derived from them, which princes did enjoy by right or custom.‡

31. Synods of bishops called by him at opportune seasons, consisting of his votaries or slaves. None dared therein to whisper any thing to the prejudice of his authority. He carried whatever he pleased to propose, without check or contradiction. Who dared to question any thing done by such numbers of pastors, styling themselves the "representative of Christendom?"

32. The having hampered all the clergy with strict oaths of universal obedience to him (beginning about the times of Pope Gregory VII.), did greatly assure his power.

* Vendit plumbum pro auro.

† Taxa camerariæ.—

‡ In the times of Henry I. the Bishop of York did pay £10,000 sterling for his pall.—*Matt. Par.* (p. 274.)

§ Peter-pence.—*Plat.* p. 257.

¶ Quantas nobis divitias perperit hæc fabula Christi?

* Quando et apostolica præceptio ad injuriam B. Petri in illis partibus non observatur, et a te spernitur et violatur.—*P. Nich. I.* Ep. 37.

† Ἀνάθη τῆς ἀδικίας,—2 Thess. ii. 10.

‡ *Twisd.* p. 17. Non necessitatis, sed honoris causa peto. Extortis assentationibus.—*P. Leo. Epist.* (ad Syn. Chal.)

33. When intolerable oppressions and exactions did constrain princes to struggle with him, if he could not utterly prevail, things were brought to composition; whereby he was to be sure for that time a gainer, and gained establishment in some points, leaving the rest to be got afterward in more favourable junctures.

Witness the } Henry II. and P. Alex. III. anno. 1172-
Concordates } Edw. III. and P. Greg. XI. anno 1373.
 between } Henry V. and P. Mart. V. anno 1418.

34. When princes were fain to curb their exorbitances by *Pragmatical Sanctions*, they were restless till they had got those sanctions revoked. And when they found weak princes, or any prince in circumstances advantaging their design, they did obtain their end. So Pope Leo X. got Lewis XI. to repeal the *Pragmatical Sanctions* of his ancestors.

35. The power he did assume to absolve men from oaths and vows, to dispense with prohibited marriages, &c., did not only bring much grist to his mill, but did enable him highly to oblige divers persons (especially great ones) to himself. For to him they owed the quiet of their conscience from scruples; to him they owed the satisfaction of their desires, and legitimation of their issue, and title to their possessions.

36. So the device of indulgences did greatly raise the veneration of him: for who would not adore him, that could loose his bands, and free his soul from long and grievous pains?

SUPPOSITION VI.

The next Supposition is this, "That in fact the Roman bishops continually from St. Peter's time have enjoyed and exercised this sovereign power."

THIS is a question of fact, which will best be decided by a particular consideration of the several branches of sovereign power; that so we may examine the more distinctly whether in all ages the popes have enjoyed and exercised them, or not.

And if we survey the particular branches of sovereignty, we shall find that the pope hath no just title to them, in reason, by valid law, or according to ancient practice; whence each of them doth yield a good argument against his pretences.

I. If the pope were sovereign of the church, he would have power to convocate its supreme councils and judicatories; and would constantly have exercised it.

This power, therefore, the pope doth claim; and indeed did pretend to it a long time since, before they could obtain to exercise it: "It is manifestly apparent," saith Pope Leo X., with approbation of his Lateran synod, "that the Roman bishop for the time being (as who hath authority over all councils) hath alone the full right and power of indicting, translating, and dissolving councils:"* and long before him, "To the apostolical authority," saith Pope Adrian I., "by our Lord's command, and by the merits of St. Peter, and by the decrees of the holy canons, and of the venerable Fathers, a right and special power of convocating synods hath manywise been committed:"† and yet before him, "The authority" (saith Pope Pelagius II.) "of convocating synods hath been delivered to the apostolical see by the singular privilege of St. Peter."‡

But it is manifest that the pope cannot pretend to this power by virtue of any old ecclesiastical canon, none such being extant or produced by him; nor can he allege any ancient custom; there having been no general synod before Constantine: and as to the practice from that time, it is very clear, that for some ages the popes did not assume or exercise such a power, and that it was not taken for their due. Nothing can be more evident, and it were extreme impudence to deny, that the emperors, at their pleasure, and by their authority, did congre-

* Distinct. 17. Cum etiam solum Roman pontificem pro tempore existentem, tanquam auctoritatem super omnia concilia habentem, conciliorum indicendorum, transferendorum ac dissolvendorum plenum jus et potestatem habere — manifeste constat.—*Conc. Lat. sess. xi.* (p. 152), ann.

† — Cui jussione Domini, et meritis B. Petri apostoli, singularis congregandarum synodorum auctoritas, et sanctorum canonum ac verandarum Patrum decretis multipliciter privata tradita est potestas.—*P. Hadrian I. apud Bin. tom. v. p. 565.* (an. 785.)

‡ Cum generalium synodorum convocandi auctoritas apostolice sedi B. Petri singulari privilegio sit tradita — *P. Pelag. II. Ep. 8.* (*Bin. tom. iv. p. 476.*) ann. 557. Quia hæc epistola sit Pelagii II. † Negat Laurentius

gate all the first general synods; for so the oldest historians in most express terms do report, so those princes in their edicts did aver, so the synods themselves did declare. The most just and pious emperors, who did bear greatest love to the clergy, and had much respect for the pope, did call them without scruple; it was deemed their right to do it; none did remonstrate against their practice; the Fathers in each synod did refer thereto, with allowance, and commonly with applause; popes themselves did not contest their right, yea commonly did petition them to exercise it.

These things are so clear and so obvious, that it is almost vain to prove them; I shall therefore but touch them.

In general, Socrates doth thus attest to the ancient practice: "We" (saith he) "do continually include the emperors in our history, because upon them, ever since they became Christians, ecclesiastical affairs have depended, and the greatest synods have been and are made by their appointment:"* and Justinian, in his prefaory type to the fifth general council, beginneth thus: "It hath been ever the care of pious and orthodox emperors, by the assembling of the most religious bishops, to cut off heresies, as they did spring up; and by the right faith, sincerely preached, to keep the holy church of God in peace:"† and to do this was so proper to the emperors, that when Ruffin did affirm St. Hilary to have been excommunicated in a synod, St. Jerome, to confute him, did ask; "Tell me, what emperor did command this synod to be congregated?"‡ implying it to be illegal or impossible that a synod should be congregated without the imperial command.

Particularly Eusebius saith of the first Christian emperor, that "as a com-

* Συνεχῶς καὶ τοὺς βασιλεῖς τῇ ἱστορίᾳ περιλαμβάνομεν, διότι ἀπ' αὐτῶν Χριστιανίζουσι ἤρξαντο, τὰ τῆς ἐκκλησίας πράγματα ἤρτητο ἐξ αὐτῶν, καὶ αἱ μέγιστα σύνοδοι τῇ αὐτῶν γνώμῃ γυγνασθεὶ τε καὶ γίνονται.—Socr. 5, Proœm.

† Semper studium fuit orthodoxis et piis imperatoribus, protempore exortas hæreses per congregationem religiosissimorum episcoporum amputare, et recta fide sincere prædicata in pace sanctam, Dei ecclesiam custodire.—Justin. in Syn. 5, Collat. i. (p. 209), Græce p. 368, magis emphatice.

‡ Doce — quis imperator hanc synodum jusserit congregari?—Hier.

mon bishop appointed by God he did summon synods of God's ministers;" so did he "command a great number of bishops to meet at Arles" (for decision of the Donatists' cause;) so did he also "command" the bishops from all quarters to meet at Tyre, for examination of the affairs concerning Athanasius; and that he did convocate the great synod of Nice (the first and most renowned of all general synods) all the historians do agree, he did himself affirm, the Fathers thereof in their synodical remonstrances did avow; as we shall hereafter, in remarking on the passages of that synod, shew.*

The same course did his son Constantius follow, without impediment; for although he was a favourer of the Arian party, yet did the Catholic bishops readily at his call assemble in the great synods of Sardica,† of Ariminum,‡ of Seleucia,|| of Sirmium,§ of Milan,¶ &c. Which he, out of a great zeal to compose dissensions among the bishops, did convocate.

After him the emperor Valentinian, understanding of dissensions about divine matters, to compose them, did indict a synod in Illyricum.**

A while after, for settlement of the Christian state (which had been greatly disturbed by the persecution of Julian and of Valens, and by divers saiths), Theodosius I. did "command," saith Theodoret, "the bishops of his empire

* Οὐά τις κοινὸς ἐπίσκοπος ἐκ Θεοῦ καθιστάμενος συνόδους τῶν τοῦ Θεοῦ λειτουργῶν συνεκρότει.—Euseb. de Vit. Const. I. 44. Πλείστους ἐκ διαφόρων καὶ ἀμυθῆτων τόπων ἐπισκόπους εἰς τὴν Ἀρελαιήσιον πόλιν συλλεθεῖν ἐκελεύσαμεν.—Euseb. Hist. x. 5, Ep. ad Chrestum. Ad Arelatensium civitatem piissimi imperatoris voluntate adducti, say the Fathers in their Epistle to P. Sylvester himself.—Vide Euseb. de Vit. Const. lib. iv. cap. 41, 42, 43, et Socr. i. 28.

† Προσέταξεν εἰς Σαρδικὴν συνδραμεῖν ἐπισκόπους.—Theod. ii. 4; Soz. iii. 11; Socr. ii. 16, 20; Athan. tom. i. p. 761; Hil. in Fragm. p. Jubet ex toto orbe apud Sardicam episcopos congregari.—Sulp. ii. 52.

‡ Ἐκ τε τῆς τοῦ Θεοῦ κελύσεως, καὶ τῆς σῆς ἐνσεβείας προστάγματος, &c.—Syn. Arim. Ep. ad Const. Socr. ii. 37.

|| Socr. ii. 39. ἤν—γενέσθαι τὸ βασιλεὺς ἐκέλευσε πρόσταγμα.—Ann. 381.

§ Ὁ βασιλεὺς σύνοδον ἐπισκόπων ἐν τῷ Σιρμίου γέσθαι ἐκέλευσε.—Socr. ii. 29; Soz. iv. 6.

¶ Πρόσταγμα δὲ ἦν τοῦ βασιλεὺς ἐν Μεδιολάνῳ πόλει ποιέσθαι τὴν σύνοδον.—Socr. i. 36; Soz. i. 9.

** Ἐν μὲν τῷ Ἰλλυρικῷ σύνοδον γενέσθαι προσέταξε.—Theod. iv. 7.

to be assembled together at Constantinople;”* the which meeting accordingly did make the second general synod: in the congregation of which the pope had so little to do, that Baronius saith it was celebrated against his will.

Afterwards, when Nestorius, bishop of Constantinople, affecting to seem wiser than others in explaining the mystery of Christ's incarnation, had raised a jangle to the disturbance of the church; for removing it, the Emperor Theodosius II. did “by his edict command the bishops to meet at Ephesus;”† who there did celebrate the third general council: in the beginning of each action it is affirmed, that the synod was “convocated by the imperial decree;”‡ the synod itself doth often profess it; the pope's own legate doth acknowledge it; and so doth Cyril the president thereof.||

The same emperor, upon occasion of Eutyches being condemned at Constantinople, and the stirrs thence arising, did indict the second general synod of Ephesus) which proved abortive by the miscarriages of Dioscorus, bishop of Alexandria, as appeareth by his imperial letters to Dioscorus, and the other bishops, summoning them to that synod: “We have decreed, that the most holy bishops meeting together,”§ &c. “Af-

* Σύνοδον ἡμοῶν αὐτῶ συνεκάλεσε.—Socr. vii. 7; Socr. v. 8. Μόνης τῆς οἰκίας βασιλείας τοῦ ἐπισκόπου εἰς τὴν Κωνσταντινούπολιν συναθροισθῆναι προσέταξεν. Theod. v. 7. Repugnante Damasco celebrata. &c.—Baron. ann. 553, § 224.

† Πρόσταγμα τοῦ βασιλέως εἰς τὴν σύνοδον συνίεναι ἐκέλευσεν.—Socr. vii. 34; Evagr. i. 3.

‡ Ἐκ θεοπιστάτου τῶν βασιλέων συγκροτηθεῖσα.

|| Ἡ ἅγια σύνοδος, ἡ χάριτι Θεοῦ κατὰ τὸ θέλημα τῶν εὐσεβεστάτων καὶ φιλοχρίστων ἡμῶν βασιλέων συγκροτηθεῖσα.—Syn. Eph. Act. i. p. 291. The holy synod assembled by the grace of God, according to the decree of our most religious emperors, &c. —ἡ χάριτι Θεοῦ καὶ πνεύματι τοῦ ὑμετέρου κράτους συναχθεῖσα. p. 297. Τὰ προστεταγμένα τῇ ἁγίᾳ συνόδῳ παρὰ τοῦ ὑμετέρου κράτους, &c.—Act. v. p. 347. Τοῖς ἀθροισθεῖσι κατὰ πρόσταγμα τῶν βασιλέων. p. 404. Ἡτινα σύνοδον οἱ Χριστιανικώτατοι καὶ φιλανθρωπώτατοι βασιλεῖς ὤρισαν. Which synod our most Christian and gracious emperors appointed, saith Philip, the pope's legate.—Act. iii. p. 330. Τῇ ἁγίᾳ συνόδῳ τῇ κατὰ Θεοῦ χάριτι καὶ θέμισμα τῶν θεοφιλεστάτων καὶ φιλοχρίστων βασιλέων συναχθεῖσα.—To the holy synod assembled by the grace of God, and the command of our emperors, &c. So do Cyril and Memnon inscribe their Epistle.—Act. iv. p. 337.

§ Ἐθεοπισάμεν κατὰ ταῦτο συνελθόντων ὁσιωτάτων, &c.

ter the same manner the other most reverend bishops were written to, to come to the synod.”* And, as Pope Leo do confess, calling it “the council of bishops, which you” (Theodosius) “commanded to be held at Ephesus.”†

The next general synod of Chalcedon (An. 451) was convocated by the authority of the Emperor Marcian; as is expressed in the beginning of each action,‡ as the emperor declareth, as the synod itself, in the front of its Definition,|| doth avow: “The holy, great, and oecumenical synod, gathered together by the grace of God and the command of our most dread emperors, &c. has determined as follows.”

The fifth general synod (An. 533) was also congregated by the authority of Justinian I.;‡ and the emperors letter authorizing it, beginneth (as we saw before) with an assertion (backed with a particular enumeration), that all former great synods were called by the same power: the Fathers themselves do say, that they had “come together according to the will of God, and the command of the most pious emperor.”§

So little had the pope to do in it, that as Baronius himself telleth us, it was congregated “against his will, or without his resistance.”¶

The sixth general synod at Constantinople was also indicted by the Emperor Constantine Pogonatus; as doth appear by his letters, as is intimated at the entrance of each action, as the synod do acknowledge, as Pope Leo II. (in which time it was concluded) doth affirm. The synod, in its Definition, as also in Epistle to Pope Agatho, doth inscribe

* Τῷ αὐτῷ τύπῳ ἐγράφη καὶ τοῖς ἄλλοις ἐπὶ πάντων ἐπισκόποις ὥστε παραγενέσθαι εἰς τὴν σύνοδον.—Syn. Chalced. pars. i. p. 53.

† Episcopale consilium, quod haberi a Ephesum præcepit.—P. Leo I. Ep. 25. (24.) ad Theod.

‡ Κατὰ θεῖον θέμισμα συναθροισθεῖσα. ἅγιαν ἡμῶν ἠθροίσασεν σύνοδον.—(Act. vi. p. 3)

|| Ἡ ἅγια καὶ μεγάλη καὶ οἰκουμένη σύνοδος κατὰ Θεοῦ χάριτι, καὶ θέμισμα τῶν εὐλαβεστάτων φιλοχρίστων ἡμῶν βασιλέων συναχθεῖσα — ὡς τὰ ὑποτεταγμένα.—Act. vi. 346.

§ Pro Dei voluntate, et jussione piissimi imperatoris ad hanc urbem convenimus.—lat. 8.

¶ Ut quæ resistente Romano pontifice fu congregata.—Baron. ann. 533, § 219.

‡ Act. p. 368; Gr. p. 309, Lat.

self, "The holy and œcumenical synod, congregated by the grace of God, and the altogether religious sanction of the most pious and most faithful great Emperor Constantine:"* and in their Definition they say, "By this doctrine of peace dictated by God, our most gracious emperor, through the divine wisdom being guided, as a defender of the true faith, and an enemy to the false, having gathered us together in this holy and œcumenical synod, has united the whole frame of the church,"† &c. In its acclamatory oration to the emperor, it saith, *Τῆς θεοϊότητος ἡμῶν προστάξι-σιν εἰκοντος διε τῆς πρεσβυτείας καὶ ἀποστολικῆς ἀκροβούλευς ἀρχιερατικώτατος πρόεδρος καὶ ἡμεῖς ἐγάχιστοι, &c.* Act. xviii. p. 271. "We all acquiescing in your most sacred commands; both the most holy president of" (Rome) "the most ancient and apostolical city, and we the least," &c.‡

These are all the great synods which posterity with clear consent did admit as general: for the next two have been disclaimed by great churches (the seventh by most of the western churches, the eighth by the eastern), so that even divers popes after them did not reckon them for general councils;§ and all the rest have been only assemblies of western bishops, celebrated after the breach between the oriental and occidental churches.

Yet even that second synod of Nice, which is called the seventh synod, doth avow itself to have "convened by the emperor's command;"|| and in the front

* Ἡ ἅγια καὶ μεγάλη καὶ οἰκουμένη ὁμόνοια, ἡ κατὰ Θεοῦ χάριν καὶ πανσεβείας θέσπισμα τοῦ εὐσεβεστάτου καὶ πιστοτάτου μεγάλου βασιλέως Κωνσταντίνου συναχθεῖσα.—Act. xviii. p. 255, 265, (in Epist. ad P. Agath.)

† Ταῦτη τῇ θεολέκτῳ τῆς εἰρήνης διδασκαλῆς θεοσώφως ὁ πρῶτατος ἡμῶν βασιλεὺς ὀδηγούμενος, ὁ τῆς μὲν ὀρθοδοξίας ὑπέραρχος, τῆς δὲ κακοδοξίας ἀντίμαχος, τὴν καθ' ἡμᾶς ἁγίαν ταύτην καὶ οἰκουμένην ἀθροΐσας ἐπήγουρι, τὸ τῆς ἐκκλησίας ἅπαν ἦνωσε συγκρομα.—Act. xviii. p. 256, in Definitione Synodica.

‡ Καὶ γὰρ ἐπέγνωμεν ὅτι ἡ ἅγια καὶ μεγάλη καὶ οἰκουμένη ἕκτη ὁμόνοια, ἥτις κατὰ Θεοῦ χάριν, τῷ βασιλικῷ προτάγματι ἐναγχῶς ἐν τῇ βασιλείᾳ συνεθροίσθη πᾶσι.—P. Leo II. in Ep. ad Con. Imp. P. 305.

|| Πᾶσα ἡ ἅγια ὁμόνοια ἡ κατ' εἰδοκίαν Θεοῦ, προστάζει τε τῆς φιλοχρίστου ἡμῶν βασιλείας συνέλευσιν.—Act. vii. p. 831: i. 519; ii. 551; iii.

§ P. Joh. VIII. Ep. 247; P. Nic. I. Ep. 7, 8, 10; P. Hadr. II. Ep. 26.

of each action, as also of their synodical Definition, the same style is retained.

Hitherto it is evident, that all general synods were convoked by the imperial authority; and about this matter divers things are observable.

It is observable in how peremptory a manner the emperors did require the bishops to convene at the time and place appointed by them. Constantine, in his letter indicting the synod of Tyre, hath these words: "If any one presuming to violate our command and sense," &c.

Theodosius II. summoneth the bishops to the Ephesine synod in these terms: "We, taking a great deal of care about these things, will not suffer any one, if he be absent, to go unpunished; nor shall he find excuse either with God or us, who presently without delay does not by the time set appear in the place appointed."*

In like terms did he call them to the second Ephesine synod: "If any one shall choose to neglect meeting in a synod so necessary and grateful to God, and by the set time do not with all diligence appear in the place appointed, he shall find no excuse,"† &c.

Marcian thus indicteth the synod of Nice (after by him translated to Chalcedon): "It properly seemeth good to our clemency, that an holy synod meet in the city of Nice, in the province of Bithynia"‡

Again we may observe, that in the imperial edicts, or epistles, whereby councils effectually were convened, there is nothing signified concerning the pope's having any authority to call them; it is

586; iv. 609; v. 696; vi. 722; vii. 812; Defin. Synod. Act. vii. p. 817.

* Καὶ ἡμεῖς δὲ τούτων πολλὴν ποιούμενοι φροντίδα ἀπολιμπάνεσθαι οὐδένα φορητῶς ἀνεξέμεθα: οὐδεμίαν τε ἕξει πρὸς Θεόν, οὐδὲ πρὸς ἡμᾶς ἀπολογίαν, ὃ μὴ παραχρῆμα κατὰ τὸν προειρημένον καιρὸν, εἰς τὸν ἀφορισθέντα τόπον σπουδαίως παραγενόμενος.—Theod. Jun. Ep. ad Cyril. Conc. Eph. pars. i. p. 2, 6.

† Εἰ δὲ τις τὴν οὕτως ἀναγκαίαν καὶ τῷ Θεῷ φιλῆν παριδεῖν ἔλοιτο ὁμόνοια, καὶ μὴ πάσῃ δυνάμει κατὰ τὸν προειρημένον καιρὸν τὸν ἀφορισθέντα καταλάβει τόπον, οὐδεμίαν ἕξει πρὸς τὸ καίριον, ἢ πρὸς τὴν ἡμετέραν εὐσέβειαν ἀπολογία.—Theod. in Ep. ad Diosc. in Conc. Chalced. Act. i. p. 53.

‡ Τοῦτο ἰδικῶς τῇ ἡμετέρᾳ ἡρεσιν ἡμερότητι, ἵνα ἅγια ὁμόνοια ἐν τῇ Νικαίᾳ πόλει τῆς Βιθυνῶν ἐπαρχίας συγκροτηθῇ.—In Epist. ad Episc. Synod. Chalced. pars. i. p. 34.

§ Euseb. de Vit. Const. iv. 42; (vide in v. p. 30.)

not as by licence from the pope's holiness, but in their own name and authority they act: which were very strange, if the popes had any plea then commonly approved for such a power.

As commonly emperors did call synods by the suggestion of other bishops,* so again there be divers instances of popes applying themselves to the emperors with petitions to indict synods; wherein sometimes they prevailed, sometimes they were disappointed: so Pope Liberius did request of Constantius to indict a synod for deciding the cause of Athanasius. "Ecclesiastical judgment" (said he, as Theodoret reports) "should be made with great equity: wherefore, if it please your piety, command a judicatory to be constituted;"† and in his epistle to Hosius, produced by Baronius, he saith: "Many bishops out of Italy met together, who together with me had beseeched the most religious emperor that he would command, as he had thought fit, the council of Aquileia to meet."‡

So Pope Damasus, having a desire that a general synod should be celebrated in Italy for repressing heresies and factions then in the church, did obtain the imperial letters for that purpose directed to the eastern bishops, as they in their epistle to the western bishops do intimate: "But because expressing a brotherly affection toward us, ye have called us, as your own members, by the most pious emperor's letters, to that synod which by the will of God ye are gathering at Rome."||

It is a wonder that Bellarmine should have the confidence to allege this passage for himself.†

So again Pope Innocent I., being desirous to restore St. Chrysostom, "did" (as

* Κύριλλος — εικότως έδέησε νέμασι τοῦ νέου Θεοδοσίου τὰ σκήπτρα τῆς εὐχας διέποντος τὴν ἐν Ἐφέσῳ πρώτῃν σύνοδον ἀλίσθῃναι.—Euvagi i. 3.

† Διότι εἰ σου δοκεῖ τῇ εὐσεβεῖα κριτήριον συσταθῆναι κέλουσιν.—Theod. ii. 16.

‡ Multi ex Italia episcopi convenerunt, qui mecum religiosissimum imperatorem fuerant deprecati, ut juberet sicut ipsi placuerat, dudum concilium Aquileiense congregari.—Baron. ann. 353, § 19.

|| Ἐπειδὴν μένοι τὴν ἀδελφικὴν περὶ ἡμᾶς ἀγάπην ἐπιδεικνύμενοι, σύνοδον ἐπὶ τῆς Ῥώμης Θεοῦ βουλήσει συγκροτῶντες, καὶ ἡμεῖς ὡς οἰκεῖα μέλη προσεαλίψασθε, διὰ τῶν τῷ Θεοφιλεστάτῳ βασιλέως γραμμάτων.—Theod. v. 9.

† Bell. de Pont. R. ii. 13.

Sozomen telleth us*) "send five bishops and two priests of the Roman church Honorius, and to Arcadius the emperor requesting a synod, with the time and the place thereof:" in which attempt he suffered a repulse; for the courtiers of Arcadius did repel those agents, "troubling another government which was beyond their bounds,"† or wherein the pope had nothing to do that they knew of.

So also Pope Leo I.‡ (whom no pope could well exceed in zeal to maintain the privileges and advance the eminence of his See) did in these terms request of Theodosius to indict a synod: "When if your piety shall vouchsafe consent to our suggestion and supplication, that you would command an episcopal council to be held in Italy; soon, God aiding, may all scandals be cut off."|| Upon this occasion the emperor did appoint a council (not in Italy, according to the pope's desire, but) at Ephesus; the which succeeding well, Pope Leo again address to Theodosius in these words: "All the churches of our parts, bishops with groans and tears, do supplicate your grace, that you would command a general synod to be celebrated within Italy."§ To which request (though backed with the desire of the western emperor) Theodosius would no means consent: for, as Leontius reporteth, "when Valentinian, being interrupted by Pope Leo, did write to Theodosius II. that he would procure another synod to be held for examining whether Dioscorus had judged rightly"

* Πέμπομεν ἐπισκόπους πέντε καὶ πρεσβυτέρους ἐκ τῆς Ῥωμαίων ἐκκλησίας πρὸς Ὀυάριον, καὶ Ἀρκάδιον τὸν βασιλέα, σύνοδον αἰτήσοντας, καὶ καιρὸν καὶ τόπον.—Soz. viii. 28.

† Ὡς ὑπερορίαν ἀρχὴν ἐνοχλήσαντας.—Ibid.

‡ Humiliter ac sapienter exposcite, ut petitioni nostræ, qua plenariam indicii synodici postulamus, clementissimus imperator dignetur annuere (saith Pope Leo, to the clergy and people of Constantinople, Ep. 23.)

|| Unde si pietas vestra suggestioni ac supplicationi nostræ dignetur annuere, ut in Italia haberi jubeatis episcopale concilium cito auxiliante Deo poterunt omnia scandala resecari.—P. Leo I. Ep. 9.

§ Omnes partium ecclesiæ nostrarum, omnia mansuetudini vestre cum gemitibus et lacrimis supplicant sacerdotes, ut generalem synodum jubeatis intra Italiam celebrari.—P. Leo I. Ep. 42.

no, Theodosius did write back to him, saying, I shall make no other synod.*

The same pope did again of the same emperor petition for a synod to examine the cause of Anatolius, bishop of Constantinople: "Let your clemency" (saith he) "be pleased to grant a universal council to be held in Italy; as with me the synod, which for this cause did meet at Rome, doth request." Thus did that pope continually harp upon one string, to get a general synod to be celebrated at his own doors; but never could obtain his purpose, the emperor being stiff in refusing it.

The same pope, with better success (as to the thing, though; not as to the place), did request of the Emperor Marcian a synod;† for he (concurring in opinion that it was needful) "did," saith Liberatus, "at the petition of the pope and the Roman princes, command a general council to be congregated at Nice."‡

Now if the pope had himself a known right to convocate synods, what needed all this supplication, or this application to the emperors? Would not the pope have endeavoured to exercise his authority? would he not have clamoured or whined at any interruption thereof? Would so spiritfull and sturdy a pope as Leo|| have begged that to be done by another, which he had authority to do of himself, when he did apprehend so great necessity for it, and was so much provoked thereto? Would he not at least have remonstrated against the injury therein done to him by Theodosius?

All that this daring pope could adven-

* Οὐαλεντιανῶς ἀγλοῦμενος ὑπὸ Λέοντος τοῦ πάπα γράφει Θεοδοσίῳ τῷ μικρῷ, ἵνα ἐπιτρέψῃ σύνοδον γενέσθαι, εἰς τὸ γνώμαί εἰ καλῶς ἔκρινεν ὁ Διδάκτορος ἢ οὐ· ὁ δὲ Θεοδοσίος ἀντέγραφεν αὐτῷ λέγων, ὅτι οὐ ποιῶ ἄλλην σύνοδον.—Leont. de Sect. Act. 4.

† Sanctum clementiæ vestræ studium, quo ad reparationem pacis ecclesiasticæ synodum habere voluistis, adeo libenter accepi, ut quamvis eam fieri intra Italiam poposcissem, &c.—Leo, Ep. 50. Poposceram quidem a gloriosissima clementia vestra, ut synodum, quam pro reparanda orientalis ecclesiæ pace a nobis etiam petitam necessariam judicastis, aliquantisper differi ad tempus opportunius juberetis.—P. Leo, Ep. 43, 44, 50.

‡ Sed eo defuncto, cum martianus imperii culmen fuisset adeptus, pro illa papæ et principum Romanorum petitione universale concilium in Nicena congregari jussit.—Lib. Brev. cap. 13.

|| Fortissimus Leo.—Liber. cap. 12.

ture at was to wind in a pretence, that the synod of Chalcedon was congregated by his consent; for, "It hath been the pleasure" (of whom? I pray) "that a general council should be congregated, both by the command of the Christian princes and with the consent of the apostolical see,"* saith he very cunningly; yet not so cunningly, but that any other bishop might have said the same for his See.

This power, indeed, upon many just accounts, peculiarly doth belong to princes; it suiteth to the dignity of their state, it appertaineth to their duty, they are most able to discharge it. They are the guardians of public tranquillity, which constantly is endangered, which commonly is violated, by dissensions in religious matters (whence we must pray for them, that by their care *we may lead a quiet and peaceable life in all godliness and honesty*;^k) they alone can authorize their subjects to take such journeys, or meet in such assemblies; they alone can well cause the expenses needful for holding synods to be exacted and defrayed; they alone can protect them, can maintain order and peace in them, can procure observance to their determinations; they alone have a sword to constrain resty and refractory persons (and in no cases are men so apt to be such as in debates about these matters), to convene, to confer peaceably, to agree, to observe what is settled; they, as *nursing fathers of the church*, as *ministers of God's kingdom*, as *encouragers of all good works*,^l as the stewards of God, intrusted with the great talents of power, dignity, wealth, enabling them to serve God, are obliged to cause bishops in such cases to perform their duty; according to the example of good princes in holy scripture, who are commended for proceedings of this nature: for so king Josias did convocate a general synod of the church in his time: *Then* (saith the text) *the king sent, and gathered together all the elders of Judah and Jerusalem*. In this synod he presided, *standing in his place, and making a*

* — in causa fidei, propter quam generale concilium et ex præcepto Christianorum principum, et ex consensu apostolicæ sedis placuit congregari.—Ep. 61.

^k 1 Tim. ii. 2.

^l Isa. xlix. 23; Wisd. vi. 4; Rom. xiii. 3.

covenant before the Lord ; its resolutions he confirmed, causing all that were present in Jerusalem and Benjamin to stand to that covenant: and he took care of their execution, making all present in Israel effectually to serve the Lord their God."

So also did king Hezekiah *gather the priests and Levites together*, did warn, did command them to do their duty, and reform things in the church: *My sons, said he, be not now negligent; for the Lord hath chosen you to stand before him, to serve him, and that ye should minister unto him, and burn incense."*

Beside them none other can have reasonable pretence to such a power, or can well be deemed able to manage it: so great an authority cannot be exercised upon the subject of any prince, without eclipsing his majesty, infringing his natural rights, and endangering his state. He that at his pleasure can summon all Christian pastors, and make them trot about, and hold them when he will, is in effect emperor, or in a fair way to make himself so. It is not fit therefore that any other person should have all the governors of the church at his beck, so as to draw them from remote places whither he pleaseth; to put them on long and chargeable journeys; to detain them from their charge; to set them on what deliberations and debates he thinketh good. It is not reasonable that any one, without the leave of princes, should authorize so great conventions of men, having such interest and sway; it is not safe that any one should have such dependencies on him, by which he may be tempted to clash with princes, and withdraw his subjects from their due obedience. Neither can any success be well expected from the use of such authority by any, who hath not power by which he can force bishops to convene, to resolve, to obey; whence we see that Constantine, who was a prince so gentle and friendly to the clergy, was put to threaten those bishops who would absent themselves from the synod indicted by him at Tyre; and Theodosius (also "a very mild and religious prince") did the like in his summoning

the two Ephesine synods.* We likewise may observe, that when the "pope and western bishops," in a synodical Epistle, "did invite those of the east to a great synod indicted at Rome, these did refuse the journey, alleging that it would be to no good purpose;"† so also when the western bishops did call those of the east, for resolving the difference between Flavianus and Paulinus, both pretending to be bishops of Antioch, what effect had their summons? And so will they always or often be ready to say, who are called at the pleasure of those who want force to constrain them: so that such authority in unarmed hands (and God keep arms out of the pope's hand!) will be only a source of discords.

Either the pope is a subject, as he was in the first times, and then it were too great a presumption for him to claim such a power over his fellow-subjects in prejudice to his sovereign (nor indeed did he presume so far, until he had in a manner shaken off subjection to the emperor; or he is not a subject, and then it is not reasonable that he should have such power in the territories of another prince.

The whole business of general synods was an expedient for peace, contrived by emperors, and so to be regulated by their order. Hence even in times and places where the pope was most revered, yet princes were jealous of suffering the pope to exercise such a power over the bishops their subjects;‡ and to obviate it, did command all bishops not to stir out of their territories without licence; particularly our own nation, in the council at Clarendon, where it was decreed,|| "That they should not go out of the kingdom without the king's leave."

To some things above said, a passage

* Τῇ πραῖτηι καὶ πάντας τοὺς ἀληθῶς ἱερομῆνους ἐνίκα. — ὁ βασιλεὺς Θεοδοσίος πρᾶξι σφόδρα παρὰ πάντας τοὺς ἀνθρώπους τοὺς ὄντας ἐπὶ τῆς γῆς.—SOZ. vii. 42.

† Τὴν ἀποδημίαν παρητήσαντο ὡς οὐδὲν ἔχουσαν κέρδος.—Theod. v. 8. Ἐγραψεν αὐτοῖ τε, καὶ Γρατιανὸς ὁ βασιλεὺς, συγκαλοῦντες εἰς τὴν δύσιν τοὺς ἀπὸ τῆς ἀνατολῆς ἐπισκόπους.—SOZ. vii. 11. Both they and Gratian the emperor wrote, calling the eastern bishops into the west.

‡ Philip of France.—Bin. tom. vii. p. 906. (an. 1302.)

|| Decretum est — non licere — exi regnum absque licentia regis.—Conc. Clarend. vide Matt. Par. ann. 1164.

^m 2 Chron. xxxiv. 29, &c.

ⁿ on. xxix. 4, 15, 20, 21, &c., ver. 11.

may be objected which occurreth in the declaration of the sixth synod to the emperor Constantine Pogonatus; where it is said, that Constantine and Sylvester did collect the synod of Nice; Theodosius I. and Damasus (together with Gregory and Nectarius), the synod of Constantinople; Theodosius II., with Cestine and Cyril, the Ephesine synod;* and so of the rest. To which I answer, that the Fathers mean only for the honour of those prelates to signify, that they their places and ways did concur and cooperate to the celebration of those synods; otherwise we might, as to matter of fact and history, contest the accuracy of their relation; and it is observable, that they join other great bishops, then flourishing, with the popes; so that their suffrage prove any thing, it proveth more than our adversaries would have, viz. that all great bishops and patriarchs have a power or right to convocate synods.

As for passages alleged by our adversaries, that no synod could be called, or ecclesiastical law enacted, without consent of the pope, they are nowise pertinent to this question; for we do not deny that the pope had a right to sit in every general synod; and every other patriarch at least have no less; as all reason and practice do shew; † and as they in the seventh synod do suppose, arguing the synod of Constantinople, which condemned the worship of images, to be a general council, “because it had not the pope’s co-operation, nor the consent of the eastern patriarchs.” ‡ Syncellus, patriarch of Jerusalem’s legate in the eighth synod, says, “For this reason did

the Holy Spirit set up patriarchs in the world, that they might suppress scandals arising in the church of God:” * and Photius is in the same synod told, “That the judgment passed against him was most equal and impartial, as proceeding not from one, but all the four patriarchs.” †

That a general synod doth not need a pope to call it, or preside in it, appeareth by what the synods of Pisa and Constance define, for provision in time of schisms. †

II. It inseparably doth belong to sovereigns in the general assemblies of their states to preside, and moderate affairs; proposing what they judge fit to be consulted or debated; stopping what seemeth unfit to be moved; keeping proceedings within order and rule, and steering them to a good issue; checking disorders and irregularities, which the distemper or indiscretion of any persons may create in deliberations or disputes.

This privilege, therefore, the pope doth claim; not allowing any general council to be legitimate, wherein he in person, or by his legates, doth not preside and sway. “All Catholics” (says Bellarmine) “teach this to be the chief pontiff’s proper office, that either in person or by his legate he preside, and as chief judge moderate all.” †

But for this prerogative no express grant from God, no ancient canon of the church, no certain custom, can be produced.

Nor doth ancient practice favour the pope’s claim to such a prerogative, it appearing that he did not exercise it in the first general synods.

St. Peter himself did not preside in the apostolical synod at Jerusalem, where he was present; but rather St. James, as we before have shewed. †

* Syn. Sext. Act. xviii. p. 272.—Κωνσταντίνος ἡ ἀεισεβαστος, καὶ Σιλβέστρος ὁ αὐτίμος τὴν ἐν αἰῆ μεγάλῃν τε καὶ περιδλεπτον συνέλεγεν σύνοδον. — ἀλλ’ ὁ μέγιστος βασιλεὺς Θεοδοσιος, καὶ ἡμεῖς ὁ δόξμας τῆς πίστεως.—Γρηγόριος τε καὶ Κεράριος τὸν ἐν ταύτῃ τῇ βασιλείᾳ πόλει συνήθροισαν λόγον. Πάλιν Νεστόριος, καὶ πάλιν Κελεστίνος, Κερίλλος, ὁ μὲν γὰρ τὸν Χριστὸν διήρηκε, καὶ κατέχευε, οἱ δὲ τῷ δεσπότην συλλαμβανόμενοι σὺν τῷ ἀσκήπτρῳ δεσπόζοντι τὸν κατατομέα κατέβαλλον.

† Ἀναγνωσθέντων τίνων συνοδικῶν τῶν διαγορευμένων μὴ δεῖν γίνεσθαι ποτὲ σύνοδον οἰκουμένην πατρὸς συμφωνίας τῶν λοιπῶν ἀγιωτάτων πατριάρχων.—Anteacta Syn. Nic. II. p. 518.

‡ Οὐκ ἔσχε συνεργῶν τὸν ἠνικαῖα τῆς Ῥωμῆων ἀρχῆς—καθὼς νόμος ἐστὶ ταῖς συνόδοις; ἀλλ’ οὕτως φρονούντας αὐτὴ τοὺς πατριάρχας τῆς ἑω, &c.—1. 7, Act. vi. p. 725.

* Διὰ τοῦτο τὰς πατριαρχικὰς κεφαλὰς ἐν τῷ κόσμῳ ἔπειρο τὸ Πνεῦμα τὸ ἅγιον, ἵνα τὰ ἐν τῇ ἐκκλησίᾳ τοῦ Θεοῦ ἀναφύομενα σκάνδαλα δι’ αὐτῶν ἀναφανίζωνται.—Syn. 8, Act. i. p. 930.

† Ἀπροσωπὸλητος ἡ κρίσις, ὡς οὐκ ἐξ ἑνὸς μόνου θρόνου, ἀλλὰ τῶν τεσσάρων πατριαρχικῶν γινόμενη.—Act. v. p. 945.

‡ Catholicis omnes id munus proprium esse docent summi pontificis, ut per se, vel per legatos præsideat, et tanquam supremus iudex omnia moderetur.—Bell de Conc. i. 19.

• Sess. xxxix. (p. 1109.)

† Acts xv.

In all the first synods, convocated by emperors, they did either themselves in person, or by honourable persons authorized by them, in effect preside, governing the proceedings.

In the synod of Nice, Constantine was the chief manager, director, and moderator of the transactions;* and under him other chief bishops did preside; but that the pope's legates had any considerable influence or sway there, doth by no evidence appear, as we shall hereafter out of history declare.

In the synod of Sardica (which in design was a general council, but in effect did not prove so, being divided by a schism into two great parts), Hosius, bishop of Corduba, did preside, or (by reason of his age and venerable worth) had the first place assigned to him, and bore the office of prolocutor: so the synod itself doth imply; "All we bishops" (say they in their Catholic Epistle) "meeting together, and especially the most ancient Hosius, who, for his age, and for his confession, and for that he hath undergone so much pains, is worthy all reverence;"† so Athanasius expressly doth call him: "The holy synod," saith he, "the prolocutor of which was the great Hosius, presently sent to them."‡ &c. The canons of the synod intimate the same, wherein he proposeth matters, and asketh the pleasure of the synod: the same is confirmed by the subscriptions of their general Epistle, wherein he is set before Pope Julius himself: ("Hosius from Spain, Julius of Rome, by the presbyters Archidamus and Philoxenus."||) In this all ecclesiastical histories do agree; none speaking

of the pope's presiding there by his legates.

In the second general synod at Constantinople the pope had plainly the first place; the oriental bishops alone did there resolve on matters, "being heard" by their patriarchs (of Alexandria, Antioch, and Jerusalem), as Sozome saith; "being guided by Nectarius and St. Gregory Nazianzen,"* as the council of Chalcedon in its Epistle to the emperor doth aver.

In the third general synod at Ephesus Cyril, bishop of Alexandria, did preside as Pope Leo himself doth testify: he is called "the head of it,"† in the Acts.

We may note, that the bishop of the place where the synod is held did bear a kind of presidency in all synods; so did St. James, bishop of Jerusalem, in the first synod, as St. Chrysostom noteth; so did Protogenes at Sardica, and Nectarius at Constantinople, and Memnon in this of Ephesus.

It is true, that according to the acts of that synod, and the reports of divers historians, Pope Celestine (according to a new politic device of popes) did authorize Cyril to represent his person, and act as his proctor in those affairs; assigning to him, as he saith, "jointly both the authority of his throne" (that is, his right of voting), "and the order of his place" (the first place in sitting;) but it is not consequent thence, that Cyril upon that sole account did preside in the synod.‡ He thereby had the disposal of one so considerable suffrage, or a legal concurrence of the pope with him in his actings; he thereby might pretend to the first place of sitting and subscribing (which kind of advantages it appeareth that some bishops had in synods by the

* Προεδίδον τὸν λόγον τοῖς προέδροις.—Euseb. iii. 13.

† Πάντων ἡμῶν συνελθόντων ἐπισκόπων, καὶ μάλιστα τοῦ εὐνηροτάτου Ὁσίου, τοῦ καὶ διὰ τὸν χρόνον, καὶ διὰ τὴν ὁμολογίαν, καὶ διὰ τὸν τοσούτων κάματον ὑπομενηκέναι, πάσης αἰδοῦς ἄξιον τυγχάνοντος, &c.—Athan. Apol. ii. p. 761.

‡ Εὐθὺς ἡ ἅγια σύνοδος, ἥς προήγυρος ἦν ὁ μέγας Ὁσιος, ἔγραψεν αὐτοῖς, &c.—Athan. ad Solit. p. 819. Ἀμίλει Ὁσίου, καὶ πρωτογένους, οἱ τότε ὑπάρχοντες ἄρχοντας τῶν ἀπὸ τῆς δόσεως ἐν Σαρδικῇ συνελθόντων.—Soz. xii. 13. Τῶν ἐν Σαρδικῇ συνελθόντων πρωτεύσας.—Theod. ii. 15. Τῶν μὲν Ὁσίου ἐξῆρχε τῆς γνώμης.—Syn. Chalced. ad Imp. Marc. p. 468.

|| Ὁσίου ἀπὸ Σπανίας, Ἰουλίος Ῥώμης δι' Ἀρχιδάμου, καὶ Φιλοξίνου πρεσβυτέρων, &c. apud Athan. p. 767.

* Baron. ann. 553, § 224. Ἡγοῦντο. Soz. vii. 7. Τῶν δὲ Νεκταρίου ἐπὶ Γρηγορίου τὴν ἡγεμονίαν ἤρατο.—Conc. Chalced. in Epist. ad Imp. Marc. (p. 469.)

† Prioris Ephesinæ synodi, cui sanctæ memorie Cyrillus episcopus tunc præsedebat.—P. Leo I. Ep. 47. Κεφαλὴ τῶν συνειλεγμένων ἁγιωτάτων ἐπισκόπων Κύριλλος.—Relat. Act. Eph. cap. 60.

‡ Συναφθείσης σοὶ τῆς αὐθεντίας ταῦ ἡμέτερον θρόνου, καὶ τῇ ἡμετέρῃ τοῦ τόπου διαδοχῇ.—Celest. ad Cyril. Relat. cap. 16. N. Yet the Father in their Epistle to Pope Celestine do only take notice of Arcadius, Projectus, and Philippus supplying his place.—Act. p. 353.

¶ Digress.

irtue of the like substitution in place of others), but he thence could have no authoritative presidency; for that the pope himself could by no delegation impart, having himself no title thereto warranted by any law or by any precedent; that depended on the emperor's will, or on the election of the Fathers, or on a tacit regard to personal eminence in comparison to others present: this distinction Evagrius seemeth to intimate, when he saith, that the divine Cyril did "administer it, and the place of Celestine"* (where a word seemeth to have fallen out:) and Zonaras more plainly doth express, saying, that "Cyril, Pope of Alexandria, did preside over the orthodox Fathers, and also did hold the place of Celestine:"† and Photius; "Cyril did supply the seat and the person of Celestine."‡ If any latter historians do confound these things, we are not obliged to comply with their ignorance or mistake.

Indeed as to presidency there we may observe, that sometime it is attributed to Cyril alone, as being the first bishop present, and bearing a great sway; sometimes to Pope Celestine, as being in representation present, and being the first bishop of the church in order; sometimes to both Cyril and Celestine; sometimes to Cyril and Memnon, bishop of Ephesus, who, as being very active, and having great influence on the proceedings are styled the presidents and rulers of the synod.|| The which sheweth,

* Κυρίλλου τοῦ θεσπασίου διέποντος καὶ τῶν Κελεστίνου τόπον.—Evang. i. 4.

† Προσταμένον τῶν ὀρθοδόξων πατέρων τοῦ ἐν ἁγίῳ Κυρίλλου πάπα Ἀλεξανδρείας, ἐπέχοντος δὲ καὶ τὸν τόπον Κελεστίνου.—Zon. in Syn. Eph. can. 1.

‡ Τοῦ Ῥώμης Κελεστίνου ἐπλήρου τὴν καθέδραν ἐπιπράσπον.

|| Ἡς ἡγεῖτο ὁ μακάριος πατὴρ ἡμῶν Κύριλλος.—Cone. Chalc. Act. iv. p. 302. Συνόδου καθηγητής.—Cler. Const. in Syn. Eph. p. 418. Cui presuit Cyrillus.—Syn. Chalc. Act. i. p. 173.

¶ Ἐπὶ ἡγεμονίᾳ τοῦ ἁγιοτάτου Κελεστίνου καὶ Κυρίλλου.—Syn. Chalc. Defin. in Act. v. p. 338; iv. p. 300. The bi-shops of Isauria to the Emperor Leo, say, that Cyril was partaker with Pope Celestine. &c. Dum. B. Celestino in columis ecclesiarum Romanorum particeps —. Part. 3, Syn. Chalc. p. 522. Τῆς συνόδου πρόεδρος.—Eph. Act. iv. p. 338. (p. 420, 422) Πρόεδροι τῆς ἐκκλησίας.—Act. v. p. 317. Ἡμέτεροι πρόεδροι.—Relat. Syn. p. 406. Ἐξαρχοὶ τῆς συνόδου.—Relat. p. 411.

that presidency was a lax thing, and no peculiarity in right or usage annexed to the pope; nor did altogether depend on his grant or representation, to which Memnon had no title.

The pope himself and his legates are divers times in the Acts said *συνεδρεύειν*, "to sit together" with the bishops; which confidence doth not well comport with his special right to presidency.*

Yea, it is observable, that the oriental bishops, which with John of Antioch did oppose the Cyrilian party in that synod, did charge on Cyril, that "he (as if he lived in a time of anarchy) did proceed to all irregularity;"† and that "snatching to himself the authority, which neither was given him by the canons, nor by the emperor's sanctions, did rush on to all kind of disorder and unlawfulness;"‡ whence it is evident, that, in the judgment of those bishops (among whom were divers worthy and excellent persons),|| the pope had no right to any authoritative presidency.

This word "presidency" indeed hath an ambiguity, apt to impose on those who do not observe it; for it may be taken for a privilege of precedence, or for authority to govern things: the first kind of presidence the pope without dispute, when present at a synod, would have had among the bishops, (as being the bishops of the first see,"§ as the sixth synod calleth him; and "the first of priests,"¶ as Justinian calleth him;) and in his absence his legates might take up his chair (for in general synods each see had its chair assigned to it, according to its order of dignity by custom.) And according to

* Σύνοδος ἢ συνεδρεύει καὶ ὁ τῆς μεγάλης Ῥώμης ἀρχιεπίσκοπος.—Relat. ad Imp. p. 422. Συνεδρεύσαντων ἀπὸ τῆς ἰσπερίας, &c.—Act. ii. p. 322. Τὸν ἀποστολικὸν θρόνον συνεδρεύοντα ἡμῖν.—Act. iv. p. 340.

† Ὡς ἐν ἀβουσιλεύτοις καιροῖς χωρεῖ πρὸς πᾶσαν παρανομίαν —.

‡ Ἀρπάσας ἑαυτῷ τὴν ἀβουθενίαν τὴν μήτε παρὰ τῶν κανόνων αὐτῷ δεδομένην, μήτε ἀπὸ τῶν ἡμετέρων θεσπισμάτων, ὁρμᾶ πρὸς πᾶν εἶδος ἀταξίας καὶ παρανομίας.—Relat. ad Imper. Act. Eph. p. 380.

|| The bishops of Syria being then the most learned in the world; as John of Antioch doth imply, p. 377.

§ Πρωτόθρονος τῆς ἐκκλησίας.—Syn. vi. p. 285. Τῶν τε συνθρόνων αὐτῇ μετ' αὐτῆν ἁγιοτάτων πατριαρχῶν.—Ibid. p. 247.

¶ Πρῶτος ἐπέων.—Justin. Cod. tit. 1.

this sense the patriarchs and chief metropolitans are also often (singly or conjunctly) said to preside, as sitting in one of the first chairs.

But the other kind of presidency was (as those bishops in their complaint against Cyril do imply, and as we shall see in practice) disposed by the emperor, as he saw reason; although usually it was conferred on him who, among those present, in dignity did precede the rest: this is that authority, *αὐθεντία*, which the Syrian bishops complained against Cyril for assuming to himself, without the emperor's warrant, and whereof we have a notable instance in the next general synod at Ephesus. For,

In the second Ephesine synod (which in design was a general synod, lawfully convened, for a public cause of determining truth and settling peace in the church; but which by some miscarriages proved abortive), although the pope had his legates there, yet by the emperor's order Dioscorus, bishop of Alexandria, did preside: "We" (saith Theodosius in his Epistle to him) "do also commit to thy godliness the authority and the pre-eminency of all things appertaining to the synod now assembled:"* and in the synod of Chalcedon it is said of him, "he had received the authority of all affairs, and of judgment:"† and Pope Leo I. in his Epistle to the emperor saith, that Dioscorus did "challenge to himself the principal place;"‡ (insinuating a complaint, that Dioscorus should be preferred before him, although not openly contesting his right.)

The emperor had indeed some reason not to commit the presidency to Pope Leo, because he was looked upon as prejudiced in the cause, having declared in favour of Flavianus, against Eutyches; whence Eutyches declined his legate's interesting in the judgement of his cause,

* Καὶ μὴν (συνῆν) καὶ Ἰούλιος ἐπίσκοπος τόπον πλῆρῶν Δείοντος, τοῦ τῆς πρεσβυτέρως Ῥώμης ἐπισκόπου.—Evang. i. 10. Ἀλλὰ καὶ τῶν ἄλλων πάντων τῶν ἀνηκόντων τῇ νῦν συναθροισμένῃ συνῶν τὴν αὐθεντίαν, καὶ τὰ πρωτεία τῆ σὴ θεοσεβείᾳ παρέχουσαν.—Syn. Chalc. Act. i. p. 59.

† Τὴν ἐξουσίαν πάντων εἰληρῶς πραγμάτων καὶ τῆς κτίσεως.—Ibid. p. 160. Ἦς ἕξαρχος καθίστηται Διόσκορος.—Evang. i. 10.

‡ —Si is qui sibi locum principalem vindicabat, sacerdotalem moderationem custodire voluisset —Leo I. Ep. 25, 26, &c.

saying, "They were suspected to him because they were entertained by Flavianus with great regard."* And Dioscorus, being bishop of the next See, was taken for more indifferent, and otherwise a person (however afterward it proved of much integrity and moderation: "E did" (saith the emperor) "shine by the grace of God, both in honesty of life, and orthodoxy of faith;"† and Theodor himself, before those differences arose doth say of him, that he was by common fame "reported a man adorned with many other kinds of virtue, and that especially he was celebrated for his moderation of mind."‡

It is true, that the legates of Pope Leo did take in dudgeon this preference to Dioscorus; and (if we may give credence to Liberatus) "would not sit down in the synod, because the pre-session was not given to their holy See;" and afterwards, in the synod of Chalcedon, the pope's legate, Paschasinus (together with other bishops), did complain that Dioscorus was preferred before the bishop of Constantinople:§ but notwithstanding those ineffectual mutinies, the emperor's will did take place, and accordingly thereto Dioscorus had (although he did not use it so wisely and justly as I should) the chief managery of things.

It is to be observed, that to other chief bishops the presidency in that synod also ascribed, by virtue of the emperor's appointment: "Let the most reverend bishops" (say the imperial commissaries in the synod of Chalcedon), "to whom the authoritative management of affairs was by the royal sovereignty granted speak why the epistle of the most ho-

* Ὑποπτοὶ μοι γεγόνασι, &c.—Syn. Chalc. Act. i. p. 80.

† —τῇ σὴ ἀγιοσύνην ἐλλαμπόση διὰ τὴν Θεοῦ χάριν ἐπὶ τε τῇ τοῦ βίου σεμνότητι, καὶ τῇ θοράτῃ πίστει.—Theod. Ep. ad Diosc. in Syn. Chalc. Act. i. p. 59.

‡ Πολλοὶς μὲν καὶ ἄλλοις εἶδεν ἀρετῆς κοσμεθαι τὴν σὴν ἀγιοσύνην ἀκούομεν—οὐκ ἤκιστα δὲ ἅπτεσ ἄδουσι τὸ τοῦ φρονήματος μέτριον.—Theod. I. 60.

§ Ecclesiae Romanæ diaconi, vices habent P. Leonis assidere non passi sunt, eo quod si data fuerit præsessio sanctæ sedi eorum.—Ber. cap. 12.

¶ Πασχασίνος εἶπεν—ἦδὲ ἡμεῖς Θεοῦ θέλοντες Κύριον τὸν Ἀνατόλιον πρῶτον ἔχομεν οὕτοι πέμπτον ἔτοσαν τὸν μακάριον Φλαυιανόν.—Syn. Chalc. Act. i. p. 62.

Archbishop Leo was not read ;* and "You" (say they again), "to whom the power of judging was given ;"† and of Dioscorus, Juvenalis (bishop of Jerusalem), Thalassius (of Cæsarea), Eusebius (of Ancyra), Eustathius (of Beristus), Basilius (of Seleucia), it is by the same commissioners said, that they "had received the authority, and did govern the synod which was then ;"‡ and Elpidius, the emperor's agent in the Ephesine synod itself, did expressly style them "presidents ;" and Pope Leo himself calleth them "presidents and primates of the synod."||

Whence it appeareth, that at that time, according to common opinion and practice, authoritative presidency was not affixed to the Roman chair.

In the synod of Chalcedon, Pope Leo did indeed assume to himself a kind of presidency by his legates ;§ and no wonder that a man with a stout and ardent spirit (impregnated with high conceits of his See, and resolved with all his might to advance its interests, as his legates themselves did in effect declare to the world) should do so ; having so favourable a time, by the misbehaviour of Dioscorus and his adherents ; against whom the clergy of Constantinople, and other Fathers of the synod, being incensed, were ready to comply with Leo (who had been the champion and patron of their cause), in allowing him extraordinary respect, and whatever advantages he could pretend to.

Yet in effect, the emperor by his commissioners did preside there ;' they pro-

* Οἱ εὐλαβίστατοι ἐπίσκοποι, οἷς ἡ αὐθεντία τότε τῶν πραγμάτων παρὰ τῆς βασιλικῆς εἰδίδουτο κορυφῆς, λείπωσαν —. Ibid. p. 65.

† Ὑμεῖς, οἷς ἡ ἐξουσία τοῦ δικάζειν εἰδέουτο —. Ibid. p. 77.

‡ Τοὺς ἐξουσίαν εὐληφότες, καὶ ἐξάρχοντας τῆς πτὲ συνόδου —. Act. ii. p. 202 ; iv. 288. (Evagr. 24, Ἐξαρχοί.) Κοινῆς ἀπάντων φωνῆς συνθυμῆς τε καὶ εὐφημῆσός τιν ἡμῶν τῶν προεδρῶσαντων ψήφον —. Ibid. p. 70.

§ Siquidem pene omnes, qui in consensum præsentium aut traducti fuerant, aut coacti. —Leo. Ep. 51. Ibi primates synodi nec resistentibus, &c. —P. Leo I. Ep.

¶ In his fratribus—me synodo vestrafraternitas existimet presidere.—P. Leo I. Ep. 47. Ὡς μὲν ὡς κεφαλὴ μελῶν ἡγεμόνευες, ἐν τοῖς τὴν σὴν τάξιν ἐπέχουσι.—Syn. Chalc. Epist. ad Leon. p. 473.

* Act. i. p. 50, 202 ; ii. 211.

pounding and allowing matters to be discussed ; moderating debates by their interlocution, and driving them to an issue ; maintaining order and quiet in proceedings ; performing those things which the pope's legates at Trent or elsewhere, in the height of his power, did undertake.

To them supplicatory addresses were made for succour and redress by persons needing it ; as, for instance, "Command" (said Eusebius of Dorylæum) "that my supplications may be read."*

Of them leave is requested for time to deliberate : "Command" (saith Atticus, in behalf of other bishops) "that respite be given, so that within a few days, with a calm mind, and undisturbed reason, those things may be formed which shall be pleasing to God and the holy Fathers."†

Accordingly they order the time for consultation ; "Let" (say they "the hearing be deferred for five days, that in the mean time your holiness may meet at the house of the most holy Archbishop Anatolius, and deliberate in common about the faith, that the doubtful may be instructed."‡

They were acknowledged judges, and had thanks given them for the issue by persons concerned : "I" (saith Eunomius, bishop of Nicomedia) "do thank your honour for your right judgment."|| And in the cause between Stephanus and Bassianus concerning their title to the bishopric of Ephesus, they having declared their sense, "the holy synod cried, This is right judgment ; Christ hath decided the case, God judgeth by you ;"§ and in the result, upon their declaring their opinion, "the whole synod exclaim-

* Κελεύσατε τὰς δεήσεις τὰς ἐμὰς ἀναγνωσθῆναι.—Act. i. p. 50.

† Κελεύσατε ἐνδοθῆναι ἡμῖν, ὥστε ἐντός ὀλίγων ἡμερῶν ἀκυμάντῳ διανοίᾳ καὶ ἀταραχῶ λογισμῷ τὰ τῶ Θεῷ δοκούντα καὶ τοῖς ἁγίοις πατράσι τυπωθῆναι.—Act. i p. 219.

‡ Ὑπερεθέσται ἡ ἀερασις ἕως ἡμερῶν πέντε, ὥστε ἐν τῷ μεταξὺ συνελθεῖν τὴν ἡμετέραν ἀγιωσύνην εἰς τὸ τοῦ ἁγιωτάτου ἀρχιεπισκόπου Ἀνατολίου, καὶ κοινῶς περὶ τῆς πίστεως βουλευσάσθαι, ἵνα οἱ ἀμφιβάλλοντες διδαχθῶσι.—Act. iv. p. 289.

§ Εὐχαριστῶ τῇ δικαιοκρίσι τῆς μεγαλοπρεπέας ἡμῶν.—Act. xiii. p. 420.

¶ Ἡ ἅγια σύνοδος ἐδόξασεν, Ἀττῆν δίκαια κρίσις, ὃ Χριστὸς ἐδίκασε τῇ ὑποθεσί, ὃ Θεὸς δὲ ἡμῶν δικάζει.—Act. xii. p. 409.

ed, This is a right judgment, this is a pious order.”*

When the bishops, transported with eagerness and passion, did tumultuously clamour, they gravely did check them, saying, “These vulgar exclamations neither become bishops, nor shall advantage the parties.”†

In the great contest about the privileges of the Constantinopolitan see, they did arbitrate and decide the matter, even against the sense and endeavours of the pope’s legates;‡ the whole synod concurring with them in these acclamations, “This is a right sentence; we all say these things; these things please us all; things are duly ordered: let the things ordered be held.”||

The pope’s legates themselves did avow this authority in them; for, “If” (saith Paschasinus, in the case of the Egyptian bishops) “your authority doth command, and ye enjoin that somewhat of humanity be granted to them,”&c. §

And in another case, “If,” said the bishops, “supplying the place of the apostolical see, your honours do command, we have an information to suggest.”¶

Neither is the presidency of these Roman legates expressed in the Conciliar Acts; but they are barely said *συνελθεῖν* (to concur), and *συνεδρεύειν* (to sit together), with the other Fathers: and accordingly, although they sometimes talked high, yet it is not observable that they did much there; their presidency was nothing like that at Trent, and in other like papal synods. It may be noted, that the emperor’s deputies are always named in the first place, at the entrance of the Acts, before the pope’s legates, so that

* Πῖσα ἡ ἀγία σύνοδος ἐβόησεν, Ἄθη δικάια κρίσις, οὕτως εὐσεβῆς τύπος.—Ibid. p. 414.

† Αἱ ἐκβολαὶ αἱ δημοτικαὶ οὐτε ἐπισκόποις πρέπουσιν, οὐτε τὰ μέρη ὠφελήσουσιν.—Act. i. p. 55.

‡ — κατὰ συνοδικὴν ἐκπρώσασαν ψῆφον.—Syn. Chal. ad Leon. Ep. p. 475.

|| Οἱ εὐλαβεστάτοι ἐπίσκοποι ἐβόησαν, ἄθη δικάια ψῆφος, ταῦτα πάντες λέγομεν, ταῦτα πᾶσιν ἀρέσκει, πάντα δεόντως ἐτυπώθη, τὰ τυπωθέντα κρατεῖται.—Act. xvi. p. 464.

§ Εἰ προστάττει ἡ ἡμετέρα ἐξουσία, καὶ κελεύετε εἴ ποτε αὐτοῖς παρασχέσθῃναι φιλανθρωπίας ἐχόμενον.—Act. iv. p. 315.

¶ Οἱ εὐλαβεστάτοι ἐπίσκοποι ἐπιόχοντες τὸν τόπον τοῦ ἀποστολικοῦ θρόνου εἶπον εἰ προστάττει ἡ ἡμετέρα μεγαλειότης, ἔχομεν διδασκαλίαν ὑποβάλλειν.—Act. xvi. p. 451.

* Act. v. vii. viii. p. 366; ix. xi. xiii. xiv.; iii. (p. 230.)

they who directed the notaries were not popish. In effect, the the emperor was president, though not as a judge of spiritual matters, yet as an orderer of the conciliar transactions; as the synod doth report it to Leo: “The faithful emperors” (said they) “did preside” (or govern it) “for good order sake.”*

In the fifth general synod, Pope Vigilius indeed was moved to be present, and (in his way) to preside; but he, out of state or policy, declined it;† wherefore the patriarch of Constantinople was the ecclesiastical president, as in the beginning of every collation doth appear: whence clearly we may infer that the pope’s presidency is nowise necessary to the being of a general council.

In the sixth general synod the emperor in each Act is expressly said to preside, in person, or by his deputies;‡ although Pope Agatho had his legates there.

In the synod of Constance sometimes the cardinal of Cambray, sometimes of Hostia, did preside (by order of the synod itself), and sometimes the king of the Romans did supply that place;|| so little essential was the pope’s presidency to a council deemed even then, when papal authority had mounted to so high a pitch.

Nor is there good reason why the pope should have this privilege, or why this prerogative should be affixed to any one See; so that (if there be cause; as if the pope be unfit, or less fit; if prince or the church cannot confide in him; if he be suspected of prejudice or partiality; if he be party in causes or controversies to be decided; if he do himself need correction) princes may not assign, or the church with allowance of princes may not choose any other president, more proper in their judgment for that charge:

* Βασιλεῖς δὲ πιστοὶ πρὸς εὐκοσμίαν ἐξήρχον.—Relat. Syn. ad Leon. 473.

† Ideo petimus præsidente nobis vestra beatitudine, sub tranquillitate, et mansuetudine sacerdotali, sanc tis propositis evangelii, communi tractatu, &c.—Coll. i. p. 212, (et in Const. Vigil.)

‡ Προκαθημένου τοῦ εὐσεβεστάτου βασιλέως Κωνσταντίνου, &c.

|| Dominus Rom. rex indutus vestibibus regalibus recessit de sede sua solita, et transivit ad aliam sedem positam in fronte altaris, tanquam præsidens pro tunc in concilio.—Syn. Const. sess. xiv. (p. 1044.)

in such cases the public welfare of church and state is to be regarded.

Were an erroneous pope (as Vigilius or Honorius) fit to govern a council, gathered to consult about defining truth in the matter of their error?

Were a lewd pope (as Alexander VI., John XII., Paul III., innumerable such, scandalously vicious) worthy to preside in a synod convocated to prescribe strict laws of reformation?

Were a furious pugnacious pope (as Julius II. —) apt to moderate an assembly drawn together for settlement of peace?

Were a pope engaged in schism (as many have been) a proper moderator of a council designed to suppress schism?

Were a Gregory VII., or an Innocent IV., or a Boniface VIII., an allowable manager anywhere of controversies about the papal authority?

Were now, indeed, any pope fit to preside in any council wherein the reformation of the church is concerned, it being notorious that popes, as such, do most need reformation, that they are the great obstructers of it, that all Christendom hath a long time a controversy with them for their detaining it in bondage?

In this and many other cases we may reject their presidency, as implying iniquity, according to the rule of an old pope, "I would know of them, where they would have that judgment they pretend, examined? What! by themselves? that the same may be adversaries, witnesses, and judges? To such judgment as this even human affairs are not to be trusted, much less the integrity of the divine law?"*

It is not reasonable that any person should have such a prerogative, which would be an engine of mischief: for thereby (bearing sway in general assemblies of bishops) he would be enabled and irresistibly tempted to domineer over the world; to abuse princes and disturb states; to oppress and enslave the church; to obstruct all reformation; to enact laws; to promote and establish er-

* Quæro tamen ab his, judicium quod præ-tendant, ubinam possit agitari, an apud ipsos, ut iidem sint inimici, et testes, et judices? Sed tali judicio nec humana debent committi negotia, nedum divinæ legis integritas.—*P. Gel. Ep. 4.*

rors serviceable to his interests: the which effects of such power, exercised by him in the synod of Trent, and in divers other of the later general synods, experience hath declared.

III. If the Pope were sovereign of the church, the legislative power, wholly or in part, would belong to him; so far, at least, that no synod, or ecclesiastical consistory, could, without his consent, determine or prescribe any thing; his approbation would be required to give life and validity to their decrees; he should at least have a negative, so that nothing might pass against his will: this is a most essential ingredient of sovereignty; and is therefore claimed by the pope, who long hath pretended that no decrees of synods are valid without his consent and confirmation.

"But the decrees made by the holy popes of the chief see of the Roman church, by whose authority and sanction all synods and holy councils are strengthened and established, why do you say, that you do not receive and observe them?"*

"Lastly, as you know nothing is accounted valid, or to be received in universal councils, but what the see of St. Peter has approved; so, on the other side, whatever she alone has rejected, that only is rejected."†

"We never read of any synod that was valid, unless it were confirmed by the apostolic authority."‡

"We trust no true Christian is now ignorant, that no See is above all the rest more obliged to observe the constitution of each council, which the consent of the universal church hath approved, than the prime See, which, by its authority, confirms every synod, and by

* *Decretalia autem, quæ a sanctis pontificibus primæ sedis Romanæ ecclesiæ sunt instituta, cujus auctoritate atque sanctione omnes synodi, et sancta concilia roborantur, et stabilitatem sumunt, cur vos non habere, vel observare dicitis?—Papa Nic. I Ep. 6. (ad Photium.)*

† Denique ut in universalibus conciliis, quid ratum vel quid prorsus acceptum, nisi quod se sedes B. Petri probavit (ut ipsi scitis) habeatur; sicut e contrario quod ipsa sola reprobavit, hoc solummodo consistat hactenus reprobatum.—*P. Nich. I. Ep. 7.*

‡ — Nulla quam synodus rata legatur, quæ apostolica auctoritate non fuerit fulta.—*P. Pelag. ii. Epist. 8. (Dist. 17.)*

† *Nic. II. Lugd. Lat. IV. V.*

continued moderating, preserves them according to its principality,"* &c.

But this pretence, as it hath no ground in the divine law, or in any old canon, or in primitive custom; so it doth cross the sentiments and practice of antiquity; for that in ancient synods divers things were ordained without the pope's consent, divers things against his pleasure.

What particular or formal confirmation did St. Peter yield to the assembly at Jerusalem?

That in some of the first general synods he was not apprehended to have any negative voice, is by the very tenor and air of things, or by the little regard expressed toward him, sufficiently clear. There is not in the synodical Epistles of Nice or of Sardica any mention of his confirmation.

Interpretatively all those decrees may be supposed to pass without his consent, which do thwart these pretences; for if these are now good, then of old they were known and admitted for such; and being such, we cannot suppose the pope willingly to have consented in derogation to them.

Wherefore the Nicene canons establishing ecclesiastical administrations without regard to him, and in authority equalling other metropolitans with him, may be supposed to pass without his consent.

The canons of the second general council, and of all others confirming those; as also the canons of all synods which advanced the see of Constantinople, his rival for authority, above its former state, first to a proximity in order, then to an equality of privileges with the see of Rome, may, as plainly contrary to his interest and spirit, be supposed to pass without his consent: † and so divers

* *Confidimus quod nullus jam veraciter Christianus ignoret uniuscujusque synodi constitutum, quod universalis ecclesie probavit assensus, non aliquam magis exequi sedem præ cæteris oportere, quam primam; quæ et unamquamque synodum sua auctoritate confirmat, et continuata moderatione custodit, pro suo scilicet principatu, &c.*—*P. Gelas. I. Ep. 13. (ad Episc. Dard.) vide p. 647, Tract. de Anath.* God hath promised to bless particular synods.—*Matt. xviii 19.*

† *Persuasioni tuæ in nullo penitus suffragatur quorundam episcoporum ante 60, ut jactas, annos, nunquamque a prædecessoribus tuis ad œstolicæ sedis transmissa notitiam* —.

popes have affirmed. If we may believe Pope Leo (as I suppose), the canons of the second council were not transmitted to Rome: they did therefore pass, and obtain in practice of the catholic church, without its consent or knowledge. Pope Gregory I. saith, "that the Roman Church did not admit them:"* wherein it plainly discorded with the catholic church, which with all reverence did receive and hold them: and in despite to the canon of that synod, advancing the royal city to that eminency, Pope Gelasius I. would not admit it for so much as a metropolitan see. † O proud insolency! O contentious frowardness! O rebellious contumacy against the catholic church and its peace! (Such was the humour of that See, to allow nothing which did not suit with the interests of its ambition.)

But further, divers synodical decrees did pass expressly against the pope's mind and will: I pass over those at Tyre, at Antioch, at Ariminum, at Constantinople, in divers places of the east (the which do yet evince that commonly there was no such opinion entertained of this privilege belonging to the pope), and shall instance only in general synods.

In the synod of Chalcedon "equal privileges" were assigned to the bishop of Constantinople, as the bishop of Rome had; ‡ this, with a general concurrence, "was decreed and subscribed," although the "pope's legates did earnestly resist, clamour, and protest against it;"|| the imperial commissioners and all

Leo Ep. 53. (ad Anat.) Conc. Constant. can. 3; Concil. Chalc. can. 9, 17, 28; Syn. Trull. can. 36.

* *Romana autem ecclesia eosdem canones vel gesta synodi illius hactenus non habet, nec accipit; in hoc autem eandem synodum accepit quod est per eam contra Macedonium definitum.*—*P. Greg. M. Ep. vi. 31.* The same Pope Leo I. doth affirm.—*Ep. 53.*

† — *ejus civitatis quæ non solum inter sedes numeratur, sed nec inter metropolitanorum jura censetur, &c.*—*P. Gelas. I. Ep. 13. (ad Episc. Dard.)*

‡ *Ἰσα πρεσβεία. Πάντα ἡ σύνοδος ἐκέρωσε.*—(in fine Auctorum. p. 464.)

|| *Inde enim fratres nostri, ab apostolice sede directi, qui vice mea synodo præsidebant probabiliter atque constanter illicitis ausibus obstiterunt, aperte reclamantes, &c.*—*Leo I. Ep. 53, 54. Οἱ εὐλαβέστατοι ἐπίσκοποι ἰδόντες οὐδεὶς ἠναγκάσθη.*—(Act. xvi p. 469, against Leo's assertion, that the consent was extorted. *Τὸ ἐκ πολλοῦ τραπίσαν ἔθος*—*τὰ συνοδιτὴν ἐκρώσαμεν ψήφον*, say the Fathers to Pope Leo C

the bishops not understanding or not allowing the pope's negative voice.

And whereas Pope Leo (moved with a jealousy, that he who thus had obtained an equal rank with him should aspire to get above him) did fiercely dispute, exclaim, inveigh, menace against this order, striving to defeat it, pretending to annul it, labouring to depress the bishop of Constantinople from that degree, which both himself and his legates in the synod had acknowledged due to him; "in which endeavour divers of his successors did imitate him: "Eusebiius, bishop of Dorylæum, said, I have willingly subscribed, because I have read this canon to the most holy pope of Rome, the clergy of Constantinople being present, and he received it."*

Yet could not he or they accomplish their design; the veneration of that synod and consent of Christendom overbearing their opposition; the bishop of Constantinople sitting in all the succeeding general synods in the second place, without any contrast; so that at length popes were fain to acquiesce in the bishop of Constantinople's possession of the second place in dignity among the patriarchs.

In the fifth general synod Pope Vigilius did make a constitution, in most express terms, prohibiting the condemnation of the "three chapters" (as they are called), and the anathematization of persons deceased in peace of the church: "We dare not ourselves" (says he) "condemn Theodorus, neither do we yield to have him condemned by any other;"† and in the same constitution he orders and decrees, "That nothing be said or done by any to the injury or discredit of Theodoret, Bishop of Cyrus, a man most approved in the synod of Chalcedon:"‡

475.) By a synodical vote we have confirmed this ancient custom.

* Εὐσέβιος ἐπίσκοπος Δορυλαίου εἶπεν· ἐκὼν ἠπαύειν τὴν ἐκείδαν καὶ τὸν κανόνα τοῦτον τῷ ἀγιωτάτῳ πάτρι ἐν Ῥώμῃ ἐγὼ ἀνέγγων, παρόντων κληρικῶν Ἐκωνσταντινουπόλεως, καὶ ἀποδέξατο αὐτῶν.—Syn. Chal. Act. xvi. (p. 462), supra.

† Eum (Theodorum) nostra non audemus damnare sententia, sed nec ab alio quopiam condemnari concedimus.—*Vig. Const.* p. 186.

‡ Statuimus atque decernimus nihil in injuriam atque obtreactionem probatissimi in Chalcedonensi synodo viri, hoc est Theodoreti

Ep. 63, 54, 55, 61, 62.

"and the same" (says he) "have the decrees of the apostolical see determined, that no man pass a new judgment upon persons dead, but leave them as death found them.* Lastly, by that constitution he specially provides, that (as he had before said) nothing might be derogated from persons dying in the peace and communion of the universal church, by his condemning that perverse opinion."†

Yet did the synod (in smart terms reflecting on the pope, and giving him the lie, not regarding his opinion or authority) decree, that persons deceased were liable to be anathematized; they did anathematize Theodorus, they did expressly condemn each of the "chapters;"‡ they threatened deposition or excommunication on whoever should oppose their constitution; they anathematize whoever doth not anathematize Theodorus.||

But Pope Vigilius did refuse to approve their doctrine and sentence; and therefore (which was the case of many other bishops, as Baronius himself doth con-

episcopi Cyri, sub taxatione nominis ejus a quoquam fieri vel proferri.—*Ibid.*

* Idemque regulariter apostolicæ sedis definiunt constituta, nulli licere noviter aliquid de mortuorum judicare personis; sed in hoc relinqui, in quo unumquemque supremus dies invenit.—*Ibid.*

† Hac præsentis constitutionis dispositione quam maxime providemus, ne (sicut supra diximus) personis, quæ in pace et communione universalis ecclesiæ quieverunt, sub hac damnati a nobis perversi dogmatis occasione aliquid derogetur.—*Ibid.*

‡ Quoniam autem post hæc omnia impietatis illius defensoris injuriis contra Creatorem suum dictis gloriantes dicebant non oportere eum post mortem anathematizare—qui hæc dicunt nullam curam Dei judicatorum faciunt, nec apostolicarum pronunciationum. nec patrum traditionum.—*Coll. viii. p. 289.* Condemnamus autem et anathematizamus una cum omnibus aliis hæreticis et Theodorum.—*Coll. vii. p. 291.* Quod dicitur a quibusdam quod in communicatione et pace, defunctus est Theodorus, mendacium est. et calumnia magis adversus ecclesiam.—*Coll. v. p. 250.* Si quis conatus fuerit contra hæc quæpie disposuimus, vel tradere, vel docere, vel scribere, siquidem episcopus vel clericus sit, iste tanquam aliena a sacerdotibus et statu ecclesiastico faciens, denudabitur episcopatu vel clericatu: si autem monachus vel laicus sit, anathematizabitur.—(*Coll. viii. p. 293.*)

|| Si quis defendit — et non anathematizat eum — anathema sit.—*Ibid.*

fess and argue) was driven into banishment; wherein he did expire.*

Yet posterity hath embraced this synod as a legitimate and valid general synod; and the popes following did profess the highest reverence thereto, equally with the preceding general synods; † so little necessary is the pope's consent or concurrence to the validity of synodical definitions.

Upon this Baronius hath an admirable reflection: "Here stay," saith he, "O reader, and consider the matter attently" (ay, do so, I pray), "that it is no new thing that some synod, in which the pope was not even present by his legates, but did oppose it, should yet obtain the title of an Œcumenical Synod; whereas afterward the pope's will did come in, that it should obtain such a title." ‡

So, in the opinion of this doctor, the pope can easily change the nature of things, and make that become a general synod which once was none; yea which, as it was held, did not deserve the name of any synod at all. || O the virtue of papal magic! or rather, O the impudence of papal advocates!

The canons of the sixth general council, exhibited by the Trullane (or Quinisext) synod, clearly and expressly do condemn several doctrines and practices of Rome: * I ask whether the pope did confirm them? They will, to be sure, as they are concerned to do, answer, No: and indeed Pope Sergius, as Anastasius in his Life reporteth, did refuse them; † yet did they pass for legitimate

* — contra ipsius (pontificis Rom.) decreta ab ea (synodo) pariter sententia dicta — *Baron. ann. 553, § 219.* Non consentientes depositi in exilium missi sunt. — *Lib. cap. 24.*

† Greg. Ep. i. 24. — Quintam quoque synodum pariter veneror, &c. — i. 24; Pelag. II. Ep. — Agatho Syn. vi. Act. 4; Leo. Syn. vi. Act. 18; Hadrian ad Nectar.

‡ Hic siste, lector, atque rem attente considera; non esse hoc novum, ut aliqua synodus, cui nec per legatos ipse pontifex interfuerit, sed adversatus fuerit, titulum tamen obtinuerit œcumenicæ; cum postea ut hujusmodi titulum obtineret, Romani pontificis voluntas accessit. — *Baron. ann. 553, § 224.*

|| Si ad numeros omnes, &c. Plene sententias ipsam non œcumenicæ tantum, sed nec privatæ synodi mereri nomen. — *Id. ann. 553, § 219.*

§ — in quibus diversa capitula Romanæ

Baron. ann. 553, § 223.

* *Can. 2, 7, 13, 36, 55, 58, 67.*

in the whole church; for in their general synod (the second Nicene), without contradiction, one of them is alleged (out of the very original paper, wherein the Fathers had subscribed) as a "canon of the holy general sixth synod;" * and avowed for such by the Patriarch Tarasius, both in way of argument of defence and of profession in his synodical Epistle to the patriarchs (where he saith, that "together with the divine doctrines of the sixth synod, he doth also embrace the canons enacted by it;" † of which Epistle Pope Adrian, in his answer thereto, doth recite a part containing those words, and applaud it for orthodox; ‡ signifying no offence at his embracing the Trullane canons. And all those hundred and two canons are again avowed by the synod in their antithesis to the synod of Constantinople. In fine, if we believe Anastasius, Pope John VII. did, "being timorous, out of human frailty, direct these canons, without amendment, by two metropolites, to the emperor;" || that is, he did admit them so as they stand.

But it may be instanced that divers synods have asked the pope's consent for ratification of their decrees and acts.

So the Fathers of the second general synod, having in an Epistle to Pope Damasus and the western bishops, declared what constitutions they had made, in the close speak thus: "In which things, being legally and canonically settled by us, we do exhort your reverence to acquiesce, out of spiritual charity and fear of the Lord." †

So the synod of Chalcedon did, with much respect, ask from Pope Leo the

ecclesiæ contraria scripta inerant. — *Anast. in Vit. Joh. VII.*

* Κανὼν τῆς ἁγίας καὶ οἰκουμενικῆς ἑκτης συνόδου — Syn. Nic. II. Act. iv. (631.) Προσόντων χάριτος ἐστίν, ἐν ᾧ ὑπέγραψαν οἱ πατέρες. — *Ibid.*

† Τῆς δὲ αὐτῆς ἁγίας ἑκτης συνόδου, μετὰ πάντων τῶν ἐπιπέμων καὶ θειωδῶς ἐκφωρηθέντων δογματικῶν παρ' αὐτῆς, καὶ τοὺς ἐκδοθέντας κανόνας ἀποδέχμασθαι. — Act. iii. p. 592.

‡ Ταύτη τῇ μαρτυρίᾳ τῆς ὀρθοδόξου πίστεως, &c. — *Ibid.* (p. 363.) Act. vi. p. 732. (Dist. xiv. cap. 5, &c.)

|| Sed hic humana fragilitate timidus hoc nequaquam tomos emendans per suprafat. metropolitans direxit ad principem. — *Anast. in Vit. Joh. VII.*

§ Οἷς ὡς ἐπιπέμων καὶ κανονικῶς παρ' ἡμῖν κερπητικοὶ καὶ τὴν ἡμετέραν συγχάριεν παρακαλοῦμεν ἐλάβειαν, τῆς πνευματικῆς μεμιτησεως ἀγάπης, καὶ τοῦ κυριακοῦ φόβου, &c. — *Theod. τ. 9.*

confirmation of its sanctions. "That you may know how that we have done nothing for favour or out of spite, but as guided by the divine direction, we have made known to you the force of all that has been done, for your concurrence, and for the confirmation and approbation of the things done."*

Of the fifth synod, Pope Leo II. saith, "that he agreed to what was determined in it, and confirms it with the authority of the blessed St. Peter."†

To these allegations we reply, that it was indeed the manner of all synods (for notification of things, and promulgation of their orders; for demonstration and maintenance of concord; for adding weight and authority to their determinations; for engaging all bishops to a willing compliance in observing them, for attestation to the common interest of all bishops in the Christian truth, and in the governance and edification of the church), having framed decrees concerning the public state, to demand in fairest terms the consent to them of all Catholic bishops, who were absent from them, to be attested by their subscription.

So did Constantine recommend the Nicene decrees to all bishops, undertaking that they would assent to them.‡

So (more expressly) the synod of Sardica, in their Epistle to all bishops of the Catholic church: "Do ye also, our brethren and fellow-ministers, the more use diligence, as being present in spirit with our synod, to yield consent by your subscription, that concord may be preserved everywhere by all the fellow-ministers."||

So did Pope Liberius request of the

Emperor Constantius, "that the faith delivered at Nice might be confirmed by the subscription of all bishops."*

So did Athanasius "procure a synod at Alexandria to confirm the decrees at Sardica and in Palestine concerning him."†

So the Macedonian bishops are said to have authorized their agents "to ratify the faith of consubstantiality."‡

Many such instances occur in story, by which it may appear that the decrees of synods concerning faith, or concerning any matters of common interest, were presented to all bishops, and their consent requested or required; because, say the Roman clergy in St. Cyprian, "a decree cannot be firm, which has not the consent of many."||

Whence it is no wonder, if any synods did thus proceed toward so eminent a bishop as was he of Rome, that they should endeavour to give him satisfaction; that they should desire to receive satisfaction from him of his conspiring with them in faith, of his willingness to comply in observing good rules of discipline; that (as every vote had force, so) the suffrage of one in so great dignity and reputation might adjoin some regard to their judgment.§

The pope's confirmation of synods, what was it in effect but a declaration of his approbation and assent, the which did confirm by addition of suffrage; as those who were present by their vote, and those who were absent by their subscription, are said to confirm the decrees of councils;¶ every such consent being supposed to increase the authority; whence the number of bishops is sometimes reckoned according to the subscriptions of bishops absent; as the council of Sardica is sometimes related

* *Ἰνα δὲ γνώτε ὡς οὐδὲν πρὸς χάριν, ἢ πρὸς ἀπέχθειαν ποιήκαμεν, ἀλλ' ὡς θεῶν κυβερνώμενοι πνεύματι, πᾶσαν ἑμῶν τῶν πεπραγμένων τὴν δύναμιν ἐγνωρίσαμεν εἰς σὺστασιν ἡμετέραν, καὶ τῶν πεπραγμένων βεβαιώσιν τε καὶ συγκαταθέσιν.*—Syn. Chalc. ad P. Leon. I. p. 476.

† *Τοῖς παρ' αὐτῆς ἰρισθεῖσι συναιεῖ, καὶ τῇ αὐτοῦ μακαρίου Πέτρου βεβαίῳ.*—P. Leo II. Ep. (p. 306.)

‡ *Ἀσμένως δέχεσθε τὴν τοῦ Θεοῦ χάριν καὶ θεῖαν ἐπιθέωσιν ἐντολὴν.*—De Vit. Const. iii. 20. *Καὶ αὐτὸς δὲ τῇ ἡμετέρᾳ ἀγχινοῖα ἀρέσαι ὅπως ἔβη.*—Ib. iii. 19.

§ *Ἐπουδάσατε δὲ μᾶλλον καὶ ἡμεῖς, ἀδελφοὶ καὶ συλλειτουργοί, ὡς τῷ πνεύματι συνόντες τῇ συνόδῳ ἡμῶν συνεπιψήφισατο δι' ὑπογραφῆς ἡμετέρας, ὑπὲρ τοῦ παρὰ πάντων τῶν πανταχοῦ συλλειτουργῶν τὴν ἐπισημίαν διασώζεσθαι.*—Syn. Sard. Epist. apud Athan. in Apol. ii. p. 766.

* *Ἐξήτει δὲ τὴν μὲν ἐν Νικαίᾳ παραθεῖσαν πιστὴν ὑπογραφαίαν τῶν πάντων ἐπισκόπων κρατῦνεσθαι.*—Soz. iv. 11.

† *Σύνοδον γενέσθαι παρεσκεύαζε τῶν ἐξ Αἰγύπτου ἐπισκόπων, καὶ ἐπιψήφισαι τοῖς ἐν Σαρδοὶ καὶ Παλαιστίνῃ περὶ αὐτοῦ δεδογμένοις.*—Id. iv. 1.

‡ *Ἐντεῖλαμένοι—κυρώσαι τὴν τοῦ θεοῦ πιστὴν.*—Soz. iv. 12.

§ —quoniam nec firmum decretum potest esse, quod non plurimorum videbitur habere consensum—Cler. Rom. apud Cyp. Ep. 31.

¶ *Παρακαλοῦμεν τοῖνυν τίμησον ταῖς σαῖς ψήφοις τὴν κρίσιν.*—Syn. Chalc. ad Leon. p. 476.

¶ *Κατὰ τὴν συνοδικὴν ἐκυρώσαμεν ψήφον.*—Epist. Syn. Chalc. ad Leon. p. 476.

to consist of three hundred bishops, although not two hundred were present, the rest concurring by subscription to its definitions.^a

Other bishops, in yielding their suffrage, do express it by, "I confirm, I define, I decree."^b

But the effectual confirmation of synods, which gave them the force of laws, was in other hands, and depended on the imperial sanction.

So Justinian affirmeth generally: "All these things at diverse times following, our above-named predecessors, of pious memory, corroborated and confirmed by their laws what each council had determined, and expelled those heretics who attempted to resist the definitions of the aforesaid four councils, and disturb the churches."^c

So particularly Constantine (as Athanasius himself reporteth) "did by law confirm the decrees of the great synod of Nice;"^d and Eusebius assureth the same: "He" (saith he) "did ratify the decrees of the synod by his authority."|| His letters are extant, which he sent about the world, exhorting and requiring all to conform to the constitutions of that synod.

So Theodosius did confirm the decrees of the second general synod, "adding" (saith Sozomen) "his confirmatory suffrage to their decree;"^e § the which he did at the supplication of the Fathers, addressed to him in these terms: "We therefore do beseech your grace, that by your pious edict the sentence of the synod may be authorized; that as by the letters of convocation you did honour the

assembly, so you would also confirm the result of things decreed."^b

The third general synod was also confirmed by Theodosius II., as Justinian telleth us: "The above-named Theodosius, of pious memory, maintaining what had been so justly determined against Nestorius and his impiety, made his condemnation valid."^f

And this emperor asserted this privilege to himself, as of right and custom belonging to him; writing to the synod in these words: "For all things, so as may please God, without contentiousness and with truth being examined, ought so to be established by our religiousness."^g

The other abortive synod at Ephesus was also confirmed by Theodosius junior, as Dioscorus, in his defence, alleged in these words, which shew the manner of practice in this case: "We then, indeed, did judge the things which were judged; the whole synod did accord with us, and gave verdict by their own votes, and subscribed; and they were referred to the most religious emperor Theodosius, of happy memory; and he did by a general law confirm all things judged by the holy and œcumenical synod."||

So also did the Emperor Marcian confirm the synod of Chalcedon, as himself telleth us in his royal edict: § "We (saith he) "having by the sacred edict of our serenity confirmed the holy synod, did warn all to cease from disputes about

* Δεόμεθα τοίνυν τῆς σῆς ἡμερότητος γράμμασι τῆς σῆς εὐσεβείας ἐπικυρωθῆναι τῆς συνόδου τὴν ψήφον, ἢ ὡς περ τοῖς τῆς κλήσεως γράμμασι τὴν ἐκλήσιαν τετίμηκας, οὕτω καὶ τῶν δοξάντων ἐπισφραγίσῃ τὸ τέλος.—Præf. ad Can. Conc. Const. (apud Bin. p. 660.)

† Sed prædictus piæ recordationis Theodosius vindicans ea, quæ ita recte contra Nestorium, et ejus impietatem fuerant iudicata, fecit firmiter obtinere contra eum factam condemnationem.—Justin. in Quinto Conc. Coll. :

‡ Χρὴ γὰρ πάντα κατὰ τὸ τῷ Θεῷ μέλλον ἀπέσκε δίχα φιλονοκίας καὶ μετὰ ἀληθείας ἐξετασθῆναι ὅτι παρὰ τῆς ἡμετέρας θεοσεβείας βεβαιωθῆναι.—Epi Theod. ad Syn. Eph. in Actis Conc. p. 375.

|| Ἡμεῖς τοίνυν ἐκρίναμεν τὰ κεκριμένα συνήσομεν ἡμῖν πᾶσα ἡ σύνοδος, καὶ κατέθετο οικείας φωναί καὶ ὑπέγραψε καὶ ἀνήνεχθη τῷ εὐσεβεστάτῳ βασιλεὶ τῆς θείας λήξεως Θεοδοσίῳ καὶ ἐβεβαίωσε πάντα κεκριμένα παρὰ τῆς ἁγίας καὶ οἰκουμένης συνόδου ἡμῶ γενικῶ.—Syn. Chalc. Act. i. p. 59.

§ Ἰερῶ τῆς ἡμετέρας ἡμερότητος διατάγματι ἁγίαν βεβαιώσαντες σύνοδον ἐπληρώσαμεν ἅπαντες τῶν περὶ θρησκείας πάσης διαλέξεων.—Coi Chalc. part iii. p. 478.

* Sententias fratrum omnes sequimur, omnes confirmamus, omnes observandas esse decernimus.—Conc. Rom. P. Hil. p. 579.

† His itaque omnibus perdiversa tempora subsequitis, prædicti piæ recordationis nostri patres ea quæ in unoquoque concilio iudicata sunt, legibus suis corroboraverunt, et confirmaverunt: et hæreticos qui definitionibus prædictorum S quatuor conciliorum resistere, et ecclesias conturbare conati sunt, expulerunt.—Justin. in Conc. V. Coll. i. (p. 210.)

‡ Τὰ παρ' ἐκείνων γραφέντα, τοῦ συνεδρίου κοινῶν, ἐκράτουν νόμῳ.—Athanas. apud Theod. ii. 4.

|| Τὰ τῆς συνόδου δόγματα κυρῶν ἐπισφραγίζετο.—Euseb. de Vit. Const. iii. 23. Ὑποδέχεται καὶ διατάττειν ὀφείλετε. Id. iii. 20.

§ Καὶ τὰ μὲν ὡς τῆ συνόδῳ ἔδοξε, καὶ ὁ βασιλεὺς ἐπληρώσατο.—Soz. vii. 9.

* Socr. ii. 20, et Vales. ann. ibid.

religion;" with which Pope Leo signifieth his compliance in these terms: "But because by all means your piety and most religious will must be obeyed, I have willingly approved the synodical constitutions about confirming the catholic faith and condemning heretics, which pleased me.*"

Justinian did with a witness confirm the fifth synod, punishing with banishment all who would not submit to its determinations.

In the sixth synod the Fathers did request the emperor, according to custom, to confirm its definitions, in these very words: "To what we have determined set your seal, your royal ratification by writing, and confirmation of them all by your sacred edicts and holy constitutions, according to custom."†

"We beg that by your sacred signing of it you would give force to what we have defined and subscribed."‡

"We entreat the power of our lord, guided by God's wisdom, to confirm, for the greater strength and security of the orthodox faith, the copies of our determination read in the hearing of your most serene majesty, and subscribed by us, that they may be delivered to the five patriarchal sees with your pious confirmation."§

Accordingly he did confirm that synod by his edict: "All these things being thus ordered by this sixth holy and œcumenical synod; we decree, that none whosoever trouble himself further about this faith, or advance any new inventions about it."¶

* Quia vero omnibus modis obediendum est pietati vestræ, religiosissimæque voluntati, constitutionibus synodalibus, quæ mihi de confirmatione fidei catholicæ et hæreticorum damnatione placuerunt, libens adjeci sententiam meam.—*P. Leo. I. Ep. 59. (ad Mart. Aug.)*

† Καὶ τοῖς παρ' ἡμῶν ὀρισθεῖσι σφραγίδα παράσχου τὴν ἡμῶν ἔγγραφον βασιλικὴν ἐπικύρωσιν, καὶ διὰ θεῶν ἠδίκτων, καὶ τῶν ἐξ ἔθους εὐσεβῶν διατάξεων τὴν τοῦτων ἀπάντων βεβαίωσιν.—*Syn. VI. Act. xviii. p. 275.*

‡ Αἰτούμεν διὰ θείας ἡμῶν ὑποσημειώσεως τὸ κύρος παραχρῆσθαι τῷ παρ' ἡμῶν ἐκφωνηθέντι ἐνυπογράφῳ ἔρω.—*Ibid. p. 283.*

§ Αἰτούμεν τὸ θεόσφορον τοῦ δεσπότητος κράτους πρὸς μίμνησιν τῆς ὀρθοδόξου πίστεως ἀσφάλειάν τε καὶ βεβαίωσιν ἰσοτύπους ἐναπαγράφους ἄρους τοῦ ἀναγνωσθέντος κατὰ παρουσίαν τοῦ γαληνοτάτου ἡμῶν κράτους ἔρω ἐκδοθῆναι τοῖς πέντε πατριαρχικοῖς θρόνοις μετὰ τῆς εὐσεβοῦς ἡμῶν ὑποσημειώσεως.—*Ibid. p. 284.*

¶ Τοῦτων οὕτως ἀπάντων ὑπὸ τῆς ἁγίας ταύτης

So he told Pope Leo II., in his Epistle to him: "This divine and venerable determination the holy synod has made, to which we also have subscribed, and confirmed it by our religious edicts, exhorting all our people, who have any love for Christ, to follow the faith there written."*

Pope Leo tells his namesake Leo the emperor, "that he must always remember that the imperial power was given him, not only to rule the world, but more especially to protect the church."†

So by long prescription, commencing with the first general synod, did the emperor enjoy this prerogative; and with good reason, he having an unquestionable warrant and obligation to promote the welfare of the church, designed by those conventions; he being the guardian of concord among his subjects, and protector of their liberties, which might be nearly concerned in conciliar proceedings; the power of enacting laws being an incommunicable branch of sovereign majesty; he alone having power committed to him, able to enforce the observance of decrees, without which they would in effect signify little.

Because also commonly the decrees of synods did in a manner retrench some part of the royal prerogative, translating or imparting to others causes before appropriate to his jurisdiction (as in the case of appeals, and of prohibiting addresses to court, ordered in the Sardican and other synods; of exempting clergymen from secular jurisdiction, from taxes and common burdens, &c.) which ought not to be done without his license and authority.

So that the oriental bishops had good reason to tell the emperor, that "it was impossible, without his authority, to order

καὶ οἰκουμένης ἔκτῃ συνόδῳ διατυπωθέντων, Sanctimus, ὥστε μηδένα τῶν πάντων ἑτερὸν τι περὶ τὴν πίστιν ἐργάσασθαι, ἢ καινότερον δόγματος ἐφέρομα μηχανήσασθαι, &c.—*Ibid. Edict. Const. p. 214.*

* Θεῖον δὲ σεβάσμιον ἔρω ἡ ἀγία σύνοδος ἐξεβόησεν, ᾧ καὶ συνεγγράψαμεν, καὶ δι' εὐσεβῶν ἡμῶν ἠδίκτων τοῦτων ἐπεκυρώσαμεν προτρέψαντες ἅπαντα τὸν φιλόχριστον ἡμῶν λαὸν τῇ ἐν αὐτοῖς ἐγγεγραμμένῃ πίστει συνέπεσθαι, &c.—*Ibid. p. 298, 302.*

† Debes incunctanter advertere regiam potestatem tibi non solum ad mundi regimen, sed maxime ad ecclesiæ præsidium esse collatam, &c.—*Leo M. Ep. 75.*

the matters under consideration with good law and order.”*

It is nowise reasonable that any other should have this power, it being inconsistent with public peace, that in one state there should be two legislative powers; which might clash the one with the other, the one enacting sanctions prejudicial to the interest and will of the other: wherefore the pope being then a citizen of Rome, and a subject to the emperor, could not have a legislative power, or a negative vote in synods, but that wholly did belong to the imperial authority.

But it is opposed, that some synods have been declared invalid for want of the pope's confirmation; for to the decrees of the synod at Ariminum it was excepted, that they were null, because the bishop of Rome did not consent to them: † “There could not” (say the Roman synod in Theodoret) “be any prejudice from the number of those assembled in Ariminum, it being plain, that neither the Roman bishop, whose suffrage ought first to have been received, nor Vicentius, who for so many years did hold his episcopacy blameless, nor others agreeing to such things.” ‡ To which exception I answer, that,

1. That which is alleged against the synod of Ariminum is not the defect of the pope's confirmation subsequent, but of his consent and concurrence before it or in it; which is very reasonable, because he had a right to be present, and to concur in all such assemblies, especially being so eminent a bishop. ||

2. The same exception every bishop might allege, all having a like right and common interest to vote in those assemblies.

* Ἀδύνατον γὰρ ὡς ἠγοῦμεθα δίχα τοῦ ἡμετέρου κράτους εὐτάκτως καὶ ἐνθέρμως τὰ προκείμενα τυπωθῆναι.—Rel. Orient. ad Imp. Act. Syn. Eph. p. 372.

† Τῶν ἐν Ἀριμίνοι ἀπειναντίων ταύτης ἀκέρων δυνάτων, ὡς μήτε Ῥωμαίων ἐπισκόπου, μήτε τῶν ἄλλων συνθεμένων αὐτοῖς, καὶ ὡς πολλῶν τῶν αὐτῶν συνέληθόντων ἀπαρεσθένων τοῖς τότε παρ' αὐτῶν δεδογμένοις.—Soz. vi. 23.

‡ Οὐδὲ γὰρ πρόκριμά τι ἠδυνήθη γενέσθαι ὑπὸ τοῦ ἀριθμοῦ τῶν ἐν Ἀριμίνοι συναχθέντων, ἐπὶ τῆς συνέσεως, μήτε τῶν Ῥωμαίων ἐπισκόπου, οὐδὲ πρὸ πάντων εἶδει τὴν γνώμην ἐκδέξασθαι, ὅτε Οὐικεντίου δεῖ ἐπι τοσοῦτοις ἔχειν τὴν ἐπισκοπὴν ἀσπίλως ἐφύλαξεν, ὅτε τῶν ἄλλων τοῖς τοιοῦτοις συγκαταθεμένων.—Theod. ii. 22.

|| P. Liberius being absent, detained from it by violence in banishment.

3. Accordingly the dissent of other bishops, particularly of those eminent in dignity or merit, is also alleged in exception; which had been needless, if the pope alone dissent had been of so very peculiar force.

4. The emperor, and many other bishops, did not know of any peculiar necessity of his confirmation.

Again, it may be objected, that popes have voided the decrees of general synods, as did Pope Leo the decrees of the synod of Chalcedon, concerning the privileges of the Constantinopolitan see in these blunt words: “But the agreements of bishops repugnant to the holy canons made at Nice, your faith and piety joining with us, we make void, and by the authority of the blessed apostle St. Peter, by a general determination we disannul;”* and in his Epistle to those of that synod, “For however vain conceit may arm itself with extorted compliances, and think its wilfulness sufficiently strengthened with the name of councils; yet whatever is contrary to the canons of the above-named Fathers will be weak and void.” † Lastly, in his Epistle to Maximus, bishop of Antioch he says, “He has such a reverence for the Nicene canons, that he will not permit or endure that what those holy Fathers have determined be by any novelty violated.” ‡

This behaviour of Pope Leo (although applauded and imitated by some of his successors) I doubt not to except against in behalf of the *synod*, that it was disorderly, factious, and arrogant (proceeding indeed from ambition and jealousy the leading act of high presumption in this kind, and one of the seeds of the

* Consensiones vero episcoporum, sanctorum canorum apud Niciam conditorum regulis repugnantes, unita nobiscum vestrae fidei pietate in irritum mittimus, et per auctoritatem beati Petri apostoli generali prorsus definitione cassamus.—P. Leo I. Ep. 55, (ad Pulcher. Aug.)

† Quantumlibet enim extortis assentationibus sese instruat vanitatis elatio, et appetitus suos conciliorum aestimet nomine roborandae infirmum atque irritum erit, quicquid a praedictorum patrum canonibus discreparit.—Ep. (ad Syn. Chalced.)

‡ Tanta apud me est Nicenorum canonum reverentia, ut ea quae sunt a sanctis patribus constituta nec permiserim nec patiar aliquo novitate violari.—Leo. Ep. 62 (ad Max. Antioch.)

exorbitant ambition, which did at length overwhelm the dignity and liberty of the Christian republic; yet, for somewhat qualifying the business, it is observable, that he did ground his repugnancy and pretended annulling of that decree (or of decrees concerning discipline), not so much upon his authority to cross general synods, as upon the inviolable firmness and everlasting obligation of the Nicene canons; the which he (although against the reason of things, and rules of government) did presume no synod could abrogate or alter. In fine, this opposition of his did prove ineffectual by the sense and practice of the church, maintaining its ground against his pretence.

It is an unreasonable thing, that the opinion or humour of one man (no wiser or better commonly than others) should be preferred before the common agreement of his brethren, being of the same office and order with him; so that he should be able to overthrow and frustrate the result of their meetings and consultations, when it did not square to his conceit or interest; especially seeing there is not the least appearance of any right he hath to such a privilege, grounded in holy scripture, tradition, or custom: for seeing that scripture hath not a syllable about general synods, seeing that no rule about them is extant in any of the first Fathers, till after three hundred years, seeing there was not one such council celebrated till after that time, seeing in none of the first general synods any such canon was framed in favour of that bishop, what ground of right could the pope have to prescribe unto them, or thwart their proceedings? Far more reason there is (in conformity to all former rules and practice), that he should yield to all his brethren, than that all his brethren should submit to him: and this we see to have been the judgment of the church, declared by its practice in the cases before touched.

IV. It is indeed a proper endowment of an absolute sovereignty, immediately and immutably constituted by God, with terms or rules limiting it, that its will should be declared in way of precept, proclama-

tions, concerning the sanction of laws, the abrogation of them, the dispensation with them, should be observed.

This privilege therefore in a high strain the pope challengeth to himself; asserting to his decrees and sentences the force and obligation of laws; so that the body of that canon law, whereby he pretendeth to govern the church, doth in greatest part consist of papal edicts, or decretal epistles, imitating the rescripts of emperors, and bearing the same force.

In Gratian we have these aphorisms from popes concerning this their privilege:

“No person ought to have either the will or the power to transgress the precepts of the apostolic see.”*

—“Those things, which by the apostolic see have at several times been written for the catholic faith, for sound doctrines, for the various and manifold exigency of the church and the manners of the faithful, how much rather ought they to be preferred in all honour, and by all men altogether, upon all occasions whatsoever to be reverently received!”†

“Those decretal epistles which most holy popes have at divers times given out from the city of Rome, upon their being consulted with by divers bishops, we decree that they be received with veneration.”‡

“If ye have not the decrees of the bishops of Rome, ye are to be accused of neglect and carelessness; but if ye have them, yet observe them not, ye are to be chidden and rebuked for your temerity.”||

* Nulli fas est vel velle vel posse transgredi apostolicæ sedis præcepta.—*P. Greg. IV. Dist. xix. cap. 5.*

† — Quanto potius quæ ipsa (sedes apostolica) pro catholica fide, profanis (l. pro sanis) dogmatibus, provaris et multifariis ecclesiæ necessitatibus et fidelium moribus diverso tempore scripsit, omni debent honore præferri, et ab omnibus prorsus in quibuslibet opportunitatibus discretionem vel dispensationem magistra reverenter assumi?—*P. Nic. I. Epist. Dist. xix. cap. 1.*

‡ Decretales epistolas, quas beatissimi papæ diversis temporibus ab urbe Roma pro diversorum patrum consultatione dederunt, venerabiliter suscipiendas decernimus.—*P. Gelas I. (in decreto) lit. a Nic. P. Ep. 42; ad Epist. Gallia. Dist. xix. cap. 1.*

|| Si decreta Romanorum pontificum non habetis, de neglectu atque incuria estis arguendi; si vero habetis et non observatis, de temeritate estis corripiendi et increpandi.—*P. Nic. I. Epist. 6, ad Phot. Dist. xx. cap. 2.*

P. Gelas. Ep. 13 (ad Episc. Dard.) p. 642, Tract. de Anathem. (p. 647;) P. Pelag. p. 5. (ad Eliam.) p. 474.—Greg. M. Ep.

"All the sanctions of the apostolic see are so to be understood, as if confirmed by the voice of St. Peter himself."^{*}

"Because the Roman church, over which by the will of Christ we do preside, is proposed for a mirror and example; whatsoever it doth determine, whatsoever that doth appoint, is perpetually and irrefragably to be observed by all men."[†]

"We who, according to the plenitude of our power, have a right to dispense above law or right."[‡]

"This see—that which it might do by its own sole authority, it is often pleased to define by consent of its priests."^{||}

But this power he doth assume and exercise merely upon usurpation, and unwarantably; having no ground for it in original right or ancient practice.

Originally the church hath no other general lawgiver, beside our *one Lord* and *one Lawgiver*.²

As to practice we may observe,

1. Anciently (before the first general synod) the church had no other laws beside the divine laws; or those which were derived from the apostles by traditional custom; § or those which each church did enact for itself in provincial synods; or which were propagated from one church to another by imitation and compliance: or which in like manner were framed and settled.

Whence, according to different traditions, or different reasons and circum-

* Sic omnes apostolicæ sedis sanctiones accipiendæ sunt, tanquam ipsius divini Petri voce firmatæ sunt.—*P. Agatho*. Dist. xix. cap. 2; *vide Syn. VI. Act. iv. p. 35.*

† Quia in speculum, et exemplum S. Romana ecclesia, cuius Christus præse voluit, proposita est, ab omnibus quicquid statuit, quicquid ordinat, perpetuo et irrefragabiliter observandum est.—*P. Steph.* (Dist. xix. cap. 3), *P. Gelas. I. Ep. 9, De Dispens.* (p. 633.)

‡ Qui secundum plenitudinem potestatis, de jure possumus supra jus dispensare.—*P. Inas. III. Decret. Greg.* lib. iii. tit. 8, cap. 4.

|| Sedes hæc — quod singulari eam auctoritate perficere valet, multorum sæpe sacerdotum decernit definire consensu.—*P. Nich. I. Ep. 18 (ad Carolum. R.)* Leo. I. Ep. i. cap. 5; *P. Hilarius* in Conc. Rom. p. 578; *Caus. 25, qu. i. cap. 4*; *P. Urb. Caus. 25, qu. i. cap. 6*; *P. Anas. ad Imp. Anast. P. Siric. Ep. i. (p. 691.)*

§ —Syn Constantinop. can. 2. *Eph. iv. 5*; *James iv. 12.*

stances of things, several churches differ in points of order and discipline.

The pope then could not impose his traditions, laws, or customs upon any church; if he did attempt it, he was liable to suffer a repulse; as is notorious in the case, when Pope Victor would (although rather as a doctor than as a lawgiver) have reduced the churches of Asia to conform with the Roman, in the time of celebrating Easter; wherein he found not only stout resistance, but sharp reproof.

In St. Cyprian's time every bishop had a free power, according to his discretion, to govern his church; and it was deemed a tyrannical enterprise for one to prescribe to another, or to require obedience from his colleagues; as elsewhere by many clear allegations out of that holy man we have showed: "For none of us" (saith he) "makes himself a bishop of bishops, or by a tyrannical terror compels his colleagues to a necessity of obedience; since every bishop, according to the licence of his own liberty and power, hath his own freedom, and can no more be judged by another, than he himself can judge another."^{*}

If any new law were then introduced, or rule determined for common practice, it was done by the general agreement of bishops, or of a preponderant multitude among them, to whom the rest out of modesty and peaceableness did yield compliance; according to that saying of the Roman clergy to St. Cyprian (upon occasion of the debate concerning the manner of admitting lapsed persons to communion), "That decree cannot be valid that hath not the consent of the major part."[†]

The whole validity of such laws or rules did indeed wholly stand upon presumption of such consent; whereby the common liberty and interest was secured.

* Neque enim quisquam nostrum episcoporum se esse episcoporum constituit, aut tyrannic terrore ad obsequendi necessitatem collegas suos adigit; quando habeat omnis episcopus pro licentia libertatis et potestatis suæ arbitrii proprium; tamque judicari ab alio non possi quam nec ipse potest alterum judicare.—*Cyprian in Conc. Carthag.*

† Quoniam nec firmum decretum potest esse quod non plurimorum videbitur habuisse consensum.—*Cler. Rom. ad Cyprian. (Epist. 21.)*

2. After that by the emperor's conversion the church, enjoying secular protection and encouragement, did reduce itself, as into a closer union and freer communication of parts, so into a greater uniformity of practice; especially by means of great synods, wherein (the governors and representatives of all churches being called unto them, and presumed to concur in them) were ordained sanctions, taken to oblige all;* the pope had indeed a greater stroke than formerly, as having the first place in order, or "privilege of honour," *Πρωτεία τιμῆς*, in ecclesiastical assemblies, where he did concur; yet had no casting vote, or real advantage above others: all things passing by majority of vote. This is supposed as notorious in the acts of the fifth council: "This" (say they) "is a thing to be granted, that in councils we must not regard the interlocution of one or two, but those things which are commonly defined by all, or by the most."†

So also in the fifth council, George, bishop of Constantinople, saith, that "seeing every where the council of the multitude, or of the most, doth prevail, it is necessary to anathematize the persons before mentioned."‡

3. Metropolitan bishops in their provinces had far more power, and more surely grounded, than the pope had in the whole church (for the metropolitans had an unquestioned authority, settled by custom, and confirmed by synodical decrees), yet had not they a negative voice in synodical debates: for it is decreed to the Nicene synod, that in the designation of bishops (which was the principal affair in ecclesiastical administrations), "plurality of votes should prevail."||

It is indeed there said, that none should be ordained *χωρὶς γνώμης*, "without the

opinion of the metropolitan:" but that doth not import a negative voice in him, but that the transaction should not pass in his absence, or without his knowledge, advice, and suffrage; for so the apostolical canon (to which the Nicene Fathers there did alude and refer, meaning to interpret it) doth appoint, that the metropolitan should "do nothing *ἄνευ τῆς πάντων γνώμης*, without the opinion of all,"* that is, without suffrage of the most, concluding all (for surely that canon doth not give to each one a negative voice.) And so the synod of Antioch (held soon after that of Nice, which therefore knew best the sense of the Nicene Fathers, and how the custom went) doth interpret it, decreeing, that "a bishop should not be ordained without a synod, and the presence of the metropolitan of the province;"† in which synod yet they determine, that "plurality of votes should carry it;"‡ no peculiar advantage in the case being granted to the *metropolitan*.

Seeing, therefore, provincial synods were more ancient than general, and gave pattern to them; if we did grant the same privilege to the *pope* in *general* synods, as the *metropolitans* had in *provincial* (which yet we cannot do with any good reason or ground), yet could not the pope thence pretend to an authority of making laws by himself.

4. It was then a passable opinion, that *he*, as one, was in reason obliged to yield to the common judgment of his colleagues and brethren; as the Emperor Constantius told Pope Liberius, that "the vote of the plurality of bishops ought to prevail."||

5. When Pope Julius did seem to cross a rule of the church, by communicating with persons condemned by synods, the Fathers of Antioch did "smartly recriminate against him, shewing that

* Idem enim omnes credimur operati, in quo deprehendimur eadem omnes censuræ et disciplinæ consensione sociati.—*Cler. Rom. ad Cypr.* Ep. 31.

† Illo certe constituto, quod in conciliis non unus vel secundi interlocutionem attendere oportet, sed hæc quæ communiter ab omnibus vel amplioribus definiuntur.—*Concil. v. Collat.* 6, p. 263.

‡ Ἐπειδὴ τοῦ πλήθους, ἦτοι τῶν πολλῶν πανταχοῦ ἡ βούλη κρατεῖ, ἀναγκαῖόν ἐστιν ὀνομασθὶ τὰ λεχθέντα πρόσωπα ἀναθεματισθῆναι.—VI. Syn. Act. xvi. p. 249.

|| Κρατεῖται ἡ τῶν πλειόνων ψήφος.—*Conc. Nic.* can. 6.

* Κατὰ κανόνα ἐκκλησιαστικόν, ἀλλὰ μὴδὲ ἐκεῖνος ἄνευ τῆς τῶν πάντων γνώμης ποιεῖται τι.—*Apost.* Can. 34.

† Ἐπίσκοπον μὴ χειροτονεῖσθαι δίχα συνόδου, καὶ παρουσίας τοῦ ἐν τῇ μητροπόλει τῆς ἐπαρχίας.—*Syn. Act. Can.* 19.

‡ — κρατεῖν τὴν τῶν πλειόνων ψήφον.—*Ibid.* Κρατεῖται ἡ τῶν πλειόνων ψήφος.—*Syn. Nic. can.* 6.

|| Τῶν γὰρ πλειόνων ἐπισκόπων ἡ ψήφος ἰσχύειν ὀφείλει.—*Theod. ii.* 16.

they were not to receive canons from him."*

6. So far was the pope from prescribing laws to others, that he was looked upon as subject to the laws of the church no less than others; as the Antiochene Fathers did suppose, "complaining to Pope Julius of his transgressing the canons:"† the which charge he doth not repel by pretending exemption, but by declaring that he had not offended against the canons, and retorting the accusation against themselves; as the African Fathers supposed, when they told Pope Celestine, that he could not admit persons to communion which had been excommunicated by them, that being contrary to a decree of the Nicene synod;‡ as the Roman church supposed itself, when it told Marcian, that they could not receive him without leave of his father who had rejected him.|| This the whole tenor of ecclesiastical canons sheweth, they running in a general style, never excepting the pope from the laws prescribed to other bishops.

7. The privilege of dispensing with laws had then been a strange hearing, when the pope could in no case dispense with himself for infringing them, without bringing clamour and censure upon him.§

8. It had, indeed, been a vain thing for synods, with so much trouble and solemnity to assemble, if the pope without them could have framed laws, or could with a puff of his mouth have blown away the results of them by dispensation.

9. Even in the growth of papal dominion, and after that the seeds of Ro-

* Γνώμη κοινή σφοδρότερον δι' ἐπιστολῆς ἀντεγκαλοῦσι τῷ Ἰουλίῳ, δηλοῦντες μὴ δεῖν κανονίζεσθαι παρ' αὐτοῦ.—Soer. ii. 15.

† Ὑμεῖς ὡς παρὰ κανόνας ποιήσαντας ἡμᾶς ἐμέμψασθε.—P. Julii Epist. apud Athanas. in Apol. ii. p. 748. Τινὲς εἰσὶν οἱ παρὰ κανόνας πρὶξ-αντες, ἡμεῖς, &c. p. 748.

‡ Μηδὲ τοὺς παρ' ἡμῶν ἀποκοινωνήτους, &c.—Epist. ad P. Celest. i.

|| Οὐ δυνάμεθα ἀνεῖν τῆς ἐπιτροπῆς τοῦ τιμίον πατρὸς σου τοῦτο ποιῆσαι.—Eriph. Hær. 42.

§ It was then a maxim becoming the mouth of a pope, Universæ pacis tranquillitas non aliter poterit custodiri, nisi sua canonibus reverentia intemerata servetur.—P. Leo I. Ep. 62. The tranquility of an universal peace cannot otherwise be kept, unless due reverence be paid to the canons.

man ambition had sprouted forth to a great bulk, yet had not popes the heart or face openly to challenge power over the universal canons, or exemption from them; but pretended to be the chief observers, guardians, defenders, and executors of them; or of the rights and privileges of churches established by them: for while any footsteps of ancient liberty, simplicity, and integrity did remain, a claim of paramount or lawless authority would have been very ridiculous and very odious. Pope Zosimus I. denieth that he could alter the privileges of churches.

10. If they did talk more highly, requiring observance to their constitutions, it was either in their own precinct, or in the provinces where they had a more immediate jurisdiction, or in some corners of the west, where they had obtained more sway; and in some cases, wherein their words were backed with other inducements to obedience; for the popes were commonly wise in their generations, accommodating their discourse to the state of times and places.

11. It is also to be observed, that often the popes are supposed to speak and constitute things by their own authority; which indeed were done by synods, consisting of western bishops more closely adhering to that See, in regard to those regions; the decrees of which synods were binding in those places, not so much by virtue of papal authority, as proceeding from the consent of their own bishops: how ready soever he were to assume all to himself, pretending those decrees as precepts of the apostolical see.

Whence all the acts of modern popes are invalid, and do not oblige, seeing they do not act in synod; but only of their own head, or with the advice of a few partisans about them, men linked in com-

* Ἄπανα κατὰ θεῖον σύνδοσις.—Conc. Eph. P. 332. Σύνοδοι ἀνήκανσαι τῇ συνόδῳ ἀποστολικῇ.—Syn. VI. Act. iv. p. 60. N. The pope did in those councils ask the placets.—P. Hil. in Conc. R. (p. 578.)

^a P. Hil. Ep. 2; N. B. P. Innoc. I. Ep. ii. 12; P. Hil. Ep. 4; P. Gelas. I. Ep. ix. p. 34; xiii. 639; De Anath. p. 645.

^b P. Zos. I Ep. 7. (ad Episc. Vienn. et Narb.) Caus. xxv. qu. i. cap. 7.

^c P. Siric. Ep. i.

^d Leo M. Ep. 1, cap. 5; P. Gelas. Ep. 9.

^e P. Siric. Ep. 4.

mon interest with them to domineer over the church.

12. Yet even in the western countries, in later times, their decrees have been contested, when they did seem plainly to clash with the old canons, or much to derogate from the liberties of churches; nor have there wanted learned persons in most times, who, so far as they durst, have expressed their dislike of this usurpation.

"For although the bishop of Rome be more venerable than the rest that are in the world, upon account of the dignity of the apostolical see, yet it is not lawful for him in any case to transgress the order of canonical governance: for as every bishop who is of the orthodox church, and the spouse of his own See, doth entirely represent the person of our Saviour; so generally no bishop ought pragmatically to act any thing in another's diocese."*

13. In the time of Pope Nicholas I., the Greeks did not admit the Roman decrees; so that pope in an Epistle to Photius complains,† "that he did not receive the decrees of the popes, whenas yet he ordained nothing but what the natural, what the Mosaical, and what the law of grace required."‡ And in another Epistle he expostulates with him for saying, that "they neither had nor did observe the decrees made by the holy popes of the prime See of the Roman church."‡

14. That which greatly did advance the papal jurisdiction, and introduced his usurpation of obtruding new decrees on the church, was the venting of the forged Decretal Epistles under the name of old

popes; which when the pope did allege for authorizing his practices, the French bishops, endeavouring to assert their privileges, did allege that "they were not contained in the whole body of their canons."*

15. The power of enacting and dispensing with ecclesiastical laws touching exterior discipline, did of old belong to the emperor. And it was reasonable that it should; because old laws might not conveniently suit with the present state of things and the public welfare; because new laws might conduce to the good of church and state, the care of which is incumbent on him; because the prince is bound to use his power and authority to promote God's service, the best way of doing which may be, by framing orders conducive thereto.

Accordingly the emperors did enact divers laws concerning ecclesiastical matters, which we see extant in the codes of Theodosius and Justinian.

"These things" (saith the council of Arles) "we have decreed to be presented to our lord the emperor, desiring his clemency, that if any be defective, it may be supplied by his prudence; if any thing be unreasonable, it may be corrected by his judgment; if any thing be reasonably ordered, it may by his help, the divine grace assisting, be perfected."

We may observe, that popes did allow the validity of imperial laws. Pope Gregory I. doth allege divers laws of divers emperors concerning ecclesiastical affairs, as authentic and obligatory rules of practice.^b

16. Divers churches had particular rights of independency upon all power without themselves.

Such as the church of Cyprus in the Ephesine synod did claim and obtain the confirmation of.

* Quanquam quidam vestrum scripserint haud illa decretalia priscorum pontificum in toto codicis canonum corpore contineri descripta, &c.—*P. Nich. I. Ep. 42. (ad Gallia Episc.)*

† Hæc—domino Imperatori præsentanda decrevimus, poscentes ejus clementiam ut siquid hic minus est, ejus prudentia suppleatur, si quid secus quam se ratio habet, ejus judicio emendetur; si quid rationabiliter taxatum est, ejus adjutorio divina opulante clementia perficiatur.—*Conc. Arl. iv. cap. 26, ann. 813. (sub Carolo M.)*

‡ *Vide Hinom.*

^b *P. Greg. I. Ep. xi. 56.*

* Licet namque pontifex Romanæ ecclesiæ ob dignitatem apostolicæ sedis cæteris in orbe constitutis reverentior habeatur; non tamen ei licet transgredi in aliquo canonici moderaminis tenorem; sicut enim unusquisque orthodoxæ ecclesiæ pontifex ac sponsus propriæ sedis uniformiter speciem gerit Salvatoris, ita generaliter nulli convenit quippiam in alterius procaciter temptare episcopi diocesi.—*Glab. Rod. 2, 4; vide Baron. ann. 996, § 22, 23.*

† Noli quia decreta ipsorum non susceperis amplius asseverare, cum ipsi nihil nisi quod naturalis, quod Mosaica, necnon et gratiæ lex assit, instituant.—*P. Nic. I. Ep. 11, (ad Phot.)*

‡ Decretalia autem, quæ a sanctis pontificibus primæ sedis Romanæ ecclesiæ sunt instituta,—cur vos non habere vel observare dicitis?—*Id. Ep. 6. (ad Phot.)*

^c Circa. an. 860.

Such was the ancient church of Britain before Austin came into England.

"The Welsh bishops are consecrated by the bishop of St. David's and he himself in like manner is ordained by others, who are, as it were, his suffragans, professing no manner of subjection to any other church."*

V. Sovereign power, immediately by itself, when it pleaseth, doth exercise all parts of jurisdiction, setting itself in the tribunal; or mediately doth execute it by others, as its officers or commissioners,

Wherefore now the pope doth claim and exercise universal jurisdiction over all the clergy;† requiring of them engagements of strict submission and obedience to him; demanding that all causes of weight be referred to him; citing them to his bar, examining and deciding their causes; condemning, suspending, deposing, censuring them, or acquitting, absolving, restoring them, as he seeth cause, or findeth in his heart;‡ he doth encourage people to accuse their pastors to him, in case any doth infringe his laws and orders.

But (in general) that originally or anciently the pope had no such right appropriate to him may appear by arguments, by cross instances, by the insufficiency of all pleas and examples alleged in favour of this claim. For,

1. Originally there was not at all among Christians any jurisdiction like to that which is exercised in civil governments, and which now the papal court doth execute. For this our Saviour did prohibit, and St. Peter forbade the presbyters *κατακυριεύειν τῶν κλήρων*. And St. Chrysostom affirmeth the episcopal power not to be *αἰθευιτα*, or *ἀρχή*. And ecclesiastical history doth inform us, that such a jurisdiction was lately introduced in the church, as by other great bishops,

* Episcopo Walliæ a Menevensi antistite sunt consecrati, et ipse similiter ab aliis tanquam suffraganeis est constitutus, nulla penitus alii, ecclesiæ facta professione vel subjectione.—*Girald. Camb. Itin.* ii. 1.

† Per hoc illam de tota ecclesia judicare.—*P. Gelas. 1. Ep. 4.* Cunctos ipse judicaturus a nemine est judicandus.—*Dist. xl. cap. 6; Caus. 2, qu. 7, cap. 45, &c.* Sacra statuta et veneranda decreta episcoporum causas, utpote majora negotia nostræ definiendas censuræ mandarunt.—*P. Nic. 1. Ep. 38.*

‡ Bell. ii. 18, 26.

so especially by the bishop of Rome "For" (saith Socrates) "from that the episcopacy of Alexandria, bey the sacerdotal order, did assume a domineering power in affairs."*

The which kind of power the Roman bishops had long before assumed; (saith he) "the episcopacy of Rome like manner as that of Alexandria, already a great while ago gone be in a domineering power beyond that the priesthood."†

At first the episcopal power did consist in paternal admonition, and reparation of offenders, exhorting and suading them to amendment; and in case they contumaciously did perse disorderly behaviour, bringing them before the congregation;‡ and the cause being there heard and proved, with consent in imposing such penance or correction on them as seemed needful for the public good, or their particular benefit: "All things" (saith St. Cyprian) "shall be examined, you being present and judging;"‡ and (elsewhere), "according to your divine suffrages; according to your pleasure."||

2. Originally no one bishop had jurisdiction over another, or authority to judge his actions; as St. Cyprian (who well knew the current judgment and practice of his age) in many places doth affirm; who particularly doth reflect on the Roman bishop for presuming to censure his brethren, who dissented from him: "Let us all" (saith he) "examine the judgment of our Lord Jesus Christ, who only hath power to prefer us to government of his church, and to judge of what we do."§

* Καὶ γὰρ ἐκ ἐκείνου ἡ ἐπισκοπὴ Ἀλεξανδρῶν πέρα τῆς ἱερατικῆς τάξεως κατὰ δυναστείαν τῶν ἡμετέρων ἔλαβε τὴν ἀρχήν.—*Socr. vii. 7.*

† — τῆς Ῥωμαίων ἐπισκοπῆς δημοίως τῆ Ἀλεξανδρείων πέρα τῆς ἱερωσύνης ἐπὶ δυναστείαν ἕως ἐπὶ προελθούσης.—*Socr. vii. 11.*

‡ Examinabuntur singulae presentibus judicantibus vobis.—*Cypr. Ep. 12. (fratris plebe.)*

|| Secundum vestra divina suffragia.—*Id. Ep. 40. Secundum arbitrium quoque arbitrium.—Id. (Ep. 46) Tertull. Apol. 39. dem —.*

§ Expectemus universi judicium Domini nostri Jesu Christi, qui unus et solus habet

† 1 Pet. v.; Chrys. in 1 Tim. iii. 1, in 1 Orat. II; Hier. Ep. 3, 62; Isid. Pelus. Ep. 125; iv. 219.

* 1 Cor. v. 4, 12; 2 Cor. ii. 6.

3. Even the community of bishops did not otherwise take notice of, or intermeddle with, the proceedings of any bishop in his precinct and charge; except when his demeanour did concern the general state of the church, intrenching upon the common faith, or public order and peace.

In other cases, for one or more bishops to meddle with the proceedings of their brother, was taken for an *ἀλλοτριοεπισκοπία*, a pragmatistical intrusion upon another's business; and an invasion of that liberty which did belong to each bishop by the grant of our Lord, and the nature of his office.

As by those passages of St. Cyprian, and the declaration of the synod with him, doth appear.

4. In cases needing decision for the public good of the church, the law and custom of the church, confirmed by the Nicene synod, did order, that jurisdiction should be exercised, and all causes finally determined in each province; so that no regard is had to the pope, no exception in favour of him being expressed or implied.¹

The which constitution, if we believe Pope Leo himself, cannot in any case by any power be revoked or infringed.*

That is most expressly confirmed by the synod of Antioch, in the code of the universal church: "If any bishop accused of certain crimes shall be condemned by all the bishops in the province, and all shall unanimously vote against him, he shall not be judged again by others; but the unanimous sentence of the bishops of the province shall remain valid."[†]

Here is no consideration or exception of the pope.

5. Accordingly in practice, synods, without regard or recourse to the pope,

testatem et præponendi nos in ecclesiam suam subernatione et de actu nostro judicandi.—*Cypr. in Conc. Carth.*

* In venerabilis concilii Niceni contumelia sæpe versatus, alienarum tibi provinciarum jura temerarie rapuisti.—*P. Felix Acacio apud Baron. an. 484, § 17.*

† Εἰ τις ἐπίσκοπος ἐπὶ τισὶν ἐγκλήμασι κατηγορηθεὶς κριθεὶ ὑπὸ πάντων τῶν ἐν τῇ ἐπαρχίᾳ ἐπισκόπων, πάντες τε σύμφωνοι μίαν κατ' αὐτοῦ ἐξενέγκοιεν ψήφον, τοῦτον μηκέτι παρ' ἑτέροις δικάζεσθαι· ἀλλὰ μένειν βεβαίαν τὴν σύμφωνον τῶν ἐπὶ τῆς ἐπαρχίας ἐπισκόπων ἀπόφασιν.—*Syn. Ant. Can. 16.*

¹ Can. 5.

did judge bishops upon offences charged against them.

6. The execution of those judgments was intrusted to metropolitan bishops; or had effect by the people's consent; for it being declared that any bishop had incurred condemnation, the people did presently desert him.

Every bishop was obliged to confer his part to the execution; as Pope Gelasius affirmeth.*

7. If the pope had such judicial power, seeing there were from the beginning so many occasions of exercising it, there would have been extant in history many clear instances of it; but few can be alleged, and those (as we shall see) impertinent or insufficient.

8. Divers synods (great and smaller) did make sanctions contrary to this pretence of the pope; appointing the decision of causes to be terminated in each diocese, and prohibiting appeals to him: which they would not have done, if the pope had originally, or according to common law and custom, a supreme judicial power.

9. The most favourable of ancient synods to papal interest, that of Sardica, did confer on the pope a power, qualified in matter and manner, of causing episcopal causes to be revised; which sheweth that before he had no right in such cases, nor then had an absolute power.

10. The pope's power of judging bishops hath been of old disclaimed as an illegal and upstart encroachment.

When the pope first nibbled at this bait of ambition, St. Cyprian and his bishops did reprehend him for it.

The bishop of Constantinople denied that Pope Gelasius alone might condemn him; according to the canons—the pope ranteth at it, and reasoneth against it;† but hath no material argument or example for it (concerning the papal authority peculiarly), beside the Sardican canon.

11. The popes themselves have been

* Quod non solum præsuli apostolico facere licet, sed cuicumque pontifici, ut quoslibet et quemlibet locum, secundum regulam hæreseos ipsius ante damnatæ, a catholica communione discernant.—*P. Gelas. I. Ep. 4.*

† Euphemium vero miror, si ignorantiam suam ipse non perspicit, qui dicit Acacium ab uno non posse damnari — *P. Gelas. I. Ep.*

4. Nobis opponunt canones — *Id. ibid.*

judged for misdemeanour, heresy, schism; as hereafter we shall shew.

12. The popes did execute some judgments, only by a right common to all bishops, as executors of synodical decrees.*

13. Other bishops did pretend to jurisdiction, by privilege: as Juvenalis, bishop of Jerusalem, did pretend that to him did belong the judgment of the bishop of Antioch.†

14. The popes were subject to the emperors; who, when they pleased, did interpose to direct or qualify all jurisdiction;‡ commanding the popes themselves—wherefore the popes were not judges sovereign, but subordinate.

Pope Gregory I. did refer the great question about the title of *œcumencial bishop* to the judgment of the Emperor Mauricius.‡

These things will more fully appear in the discussion of the particulars concerning the chief branches of jurisdiction; more especially under the tenth branch of sovereignty.

They allege that passage of Valentinian, in his Epistle to Theodoius, "That the most blessed bishop of Rome, to whom antiquity hath given a priesthood over all, hath a see and power to judge both of faith and priests."||

This was suggested by Pope Leo and his adherents to the young emperor; but it signifieth no more, but that in the judgment of priests (as of faith) he was to have his share, or at most to be a leading person therein.

Theodosius (a mature, grave, pious

prince) did not regard that pretence Leo, nor the appeal of Flavianus.*

VI. To the sovereign of any state longeth the choice, constitution, confirmation, commissioning of all inferior magistrates;† that none incapable, worthy, or unfit for offices, or disaffection to the state, be intrusted with the management of affairs.

Wherefore the pope doth claim exercise these prerogatives so far as he can; pretending at least that no bishop can be constituted without his designation, or his licence, and his confirmation of the nomination, collation, or election.

And these privileges by the great vocates are upon highest terms ascribed to him.‡

In this matter may be distinguished

1. The designation of the person elected, or otherwise.

2. The confirmation of that.

3. The ordination or consecration of him to his office; the which confers upon him his character and authority.

4. The authority by which he acts. Into all these the pope hath intrusted himself, and he will have a finger in them.

1. He gladly would have drawn himself the collation and disposal of benefices, challenging a general right to dispose of all at his pleasure;‡ but having been able wholly to deprive princes and patrons of their nomination and corporations of their election: he hath by reservations, provisions, conditions of vacancies *apud sedem*, resignations, devolutions, and other such tricks extremely encroached on the right of all, to the infinite vexation, damage, and mischief of Christendom.°

* Quod non solum præsulì apostolico facere licet, &c.—*P. Gelas. I. Ep. 4. (Supr. in Arg. 6), vide Ep. 13.*

† Ἐχρῆν Ἰωάννην — τῷ ἀποστολικῷ τῆς Ἱεροσολύμων ἀγίας τοῦ Θεοῦ ἐκκλησίας ὑπακοῦσαι, καὶ τιμῆσαι· παρ' ἧς μάλιστα ἔθος αὐτῶν τῶν Ἀντιοχείων θρόνον ἐξ ἀποστολικῆς ἀκολουθίας καὶ παραδ' ὅσως ἰθύνεσθαι, καὶ παρ' αὐτῶν δικάζεσθαι.—*Syn. Eph. Act. iv. (p. 400.)*

‡ — utpiissinus dominus Mauritius ipsum illud negotium judicare dignaretur.—*Greg. Ep. iv. 22.*

|| Ἰνα μακαριώτατος ἐπίσκοπος τῆς Ῥωμαίων πόλεως, ἧς τὴν Ἱερουσόλην κατὰ πάντων ἡ ἀρχαίτης, παρ' ἑσχε, χώρον καὶ εὐπορίαν ἔχειν περὶ τῆς πίστεως καὶ ἱερῶν κρίνειν —. *Act. Syn. Chalc. p. 25.*

° Justin. Nov. cxxiii. cap. 2; Jubemus *Episc. Rom.*

* Ἰνα ὁ προλεχθεὶς συναχθέντων ἐκ πίστεως;

κουμένης καὶ τῶν λοιπῶν ἱερῶν —. *Ibid. 1*
† Upon a sovereign all inferior magistrates depend.

‡ Licit ecclesiarum, personatum, dignitatum, aliorumque beneficiorum ad Romanum ecclesiasticum plenaria dispositio ad Romanum ecclesiasticum noster officium pertinere, &c.—*Clem. IV. in Sexto iii tit. 4, cap. 2; vide ibid. cap. iv. 10; & Although the plenary disposal of all church personages, dignities, and other ecclesiastic benefices be known to belong to the Pope of Rome, &c.*

° Bell. iv. 24.

° Clem. IV. in Sexto, lib. iii. tit. 4. ca &c.

he pretendeth that no bishop shall be ordained without his licence.

he obligeth the person ordained to obedience to him.

he pretendeth that all bishops are assistants and deputies.

no such privileges have any foundation in holy scripture, in ancient doctrine, or in primitive usage: these are all encroachments upon the rights and liberties of the church, arising from ambition and avarice; supported upon usurpation, upheld by violence.

will appear from a survey of ancient laws and practices concerning this

first constitution after our Lord's death of an ecclesiastical person was

Matthias into the vacant apostolic bishopric of Judas;* wherein (by St. Peter's motion) *all the disciples* did by consent *present two*; † *whom God himself did elect one*, ‡ determining the lot to fall upon Matthias, so that this designation being partly human, partly divine, so far as it man, it went by free election of equal fraternity; and St. Peter, generally suggesting the matter, did assume nothing peculiar to himself.

in the next constitution we meet with of deacons to assist the apostles in discharge of inferior offices, wherein the apostles did commit designation of the persons to the *de of the disciples*, who *elect*ed and *presented* them to the apostles, *by prayer and laying on of hands, confirm them.*|| Nor had St. Peter in his constitution any particular stroke.

in the constitution of bishops in apostolical times the course was the same as in the apostles, and apostolical persons who were authorized by the apostles with their power, and in their churches founded by them, as in the bishops, such as divine inspiration, their grace of discretion did

ισκοπήν αὐτοῦ λάβοι ἕτερος.—Act. i. 20.
ἔστησαν δύο.—Ver. 23.

ἰδεῖξον ἐκ τούτων τῶν δύο ἕνα δὲν ἐξελέξω.—

s vi. 2, 5.—Τὸ πλῆθος τῶν μαθητῶν καὶ οὐκ ἴσταντο.—Act. i. 15.

guide them to;* so did St. John in Asia, "setting those apart for the clergy whom the Spirit had marked out."†

This was not done without the consent of the Christian people, as Clemens Romanus telleth us in his excellent Epistle to the Corinthians: ‡ but he doth not acquaint us (although he were himself bishop of Rome) that the pope had any thing to do in such constitutions, or in confirmations of them; "the whole church" (saith he) "consenting:" why doth he not add, for his own sake, "and the pope confirming?"

In the next times, when those extraordinary persons and faculties had expired, when usually the churches planted were in situation somewhat incoherent and remote from each other, upon a vacancy the clergy and people of each church did elect its bishop; in which action commonly the clergy did propound and recommend a person or persons, and the people by their consent approve, or by their suffrages elect one;|| a strict examination of his life and doctrine intervening: the which order Tertullian briefly doth intimate in those words: "The presidents of the church are certain elders well approved, who have obtained that honour, not by price, but by proof."§

It may be inquired, how a bishop then was ordained, in case his city was very remote from any other churches?

Did they send for bishops from distant places to ordain him?—or did the presbyters of the place lay their hands on him?—or did he receive no other ordination than that he had before of presbyter?—or did he abide no bishop till opportunity did yield bishops to ordain him?—or did Providence order, that there should be no such solitary churches? The ancient commentator, contemporary

* Καὶ καταστήσεις κατὰ πόλιν πρεσβυτέρους, ὡς ἐγὼ σοὶ διατάξω.—Tit. i. 5. Διακρίσεις πνευματικῶν.—1 Cor. xii. 10.

† Κλήρω ἕνα γὰρ κληρώσαν τῶν ὑπὸ τοῦ πνεύματος σημειωμένων.—Eus. iii. 23.

‡ Τὸς οὖν κατασταθέντας ὑπ' ἐκείνων, ἢ μεταξὺ ὑφ' ἑτέρων ἐλλογιμῶν ἀνδρῶν, συνειδοκασίας ἐκκλησίας πάσης.—Clem. Epist. p. 57.

|| Καὶ οὗτοι δοκιμαζέσθωσαν πρότον, εἴτα διακορεύσων, ἀνέγκλητοι ὄντες.—1 Tim. iii. 10.

§ Præsident probati quique seniores, honorem istum non pretio, sed testimonio adepti.—Tertull. Apol. 39. Plena diligentia, explorati one sincere.—Cypri. Ep. 68.

to St. Ambrose, and bearing his name, did conceive,* that upon decease of a bishop the elder of the presbyters did succeed into his place. Whence had he this? out of his invention and conjecture, or from some tradition and history?

Afterward, when the faith was diffused through many provinces, that churches grew thick and close, the general practice was this: the neighbour bishops (being advertised of a vacancy, or want of a bishop) did convene at the place; then in the congregation the clergy of the place did propound a person, yielding their attestation to his fitness for the charge; which the people hearing, did give their suffrages accepting him, if no weighty cause was objected against him; or refusing him, if such cause did appear: then, upon such recommendation and acceptance, the bishops present did adjoin their approbation and consent; then by their devotions, and solemn laying on of their hands, they did ordain or consecrate him to the function.

Of this course most commonly practised in his time we have divers plain testimonies in St. Cyprian, the best author extant concerning these matters of ancient discipline: "For which reason," saith he, "that from divine tradition and apostolical observation is to be observed and held, which also is with us, and almost through all provinces, kept; that for duly celebrating ordinations unto that people, for whom a bishop is ordained, all the neighbour bishops of the same" (province or people) "should resort; and a bishop should be chosen, the people being present, which most fully knoweth the life of each one, and hath from his conversation a thorough insight into his practice; the which we see done with you in the ordination of our colleague Sabinus, that by the suffrage of all the fraternity, and by the judgment of all the bishops, which had assembled in the presence, and had sent letters to you about

him, the bishopric should be deferred to him."*

Again, "A people obedient to the Lord's commands, and fearing God, ought to separate itself from a wicked bishop" (such a notoriously wicked bishop as those were of whom he treateth, who had renounced the faith), "and not to mingle itself with the sacrifices of a sacrilegious priest; seeing especially that it hath a power either to choose worthy priests, or to refuse those who are unworthy; the which also we see to descend from divine authority, that a bishop should be chosen, the people being present, before the eyes of all; and that he who is worthy and fit, should be approved by public judgment and testimony."†

Again,‡ when (saith he concerning himself) "a bishop is substituted in the place of one deceased, when he is peaceably chosen by the suffrage of all the people;"—and, "whom, if according to the divine instructions, the whole fraternity would obey, no man would move any thing against the college of priests: none after the divine judgment, after the suffrage of the people, after the consent of the fellow-bishop, would make himself judge, not indeed of the bishop, but of God."||

* Propter quod diligenter de traditione divina et apostolica observatione observandum est et tenendum, quod apud nos quoque et ferper provincias universas tenetur; ut ad ordinationes rite celebrandas, ad eam plebem præpositus ordinatur, episcopi ejusdem proximi quique convenient, et episcopus deligatur plebe præsentè, quæ singulorum vitam plensime novit, et uniuscujusque actum de eius conversatione perspexit; quod et apud vos factum videmus in Sabini collegæ nostri ordinatione, ut de universæ fraternitatis suffragia et de episcoporum, qui in præsentia convenerant, quique de eo ad vos literas fecerant, iudicio episcopatus ei deferretur.—*Cypr. Ep. 65.*

† Plebs obsequens præceptis Dominicis, et Deum metuens, a peccatore præposito separare se debet, nec se ad sacrilegi sacerdotis sacrificia miscere; quando ipsa maxime habeat potestatem vel eligendi dignos sacerdotes, vel indignos recusandi; quod et ipsum videmus de divina auctoritate descendere; ut sacerdos plebe præsentè sub omnium oculis deligatur, et dignus atque idoneus publico iudicio ac testimonio comprobetur.—*Cypr. Ep.*

‡ Suffragio totius populi Cyprianus eligatur.—*Optat. 1.*

|| Cæterum quando episcopus in locum de-

* Primum presbyteri episcopi appellabantur ut recedente uno sequens ei succederet, &c.—*Vide Dist. lxxv. cap. 2.* At first presbyters were called bishops, that one departing, the next might succeed him.

† In Eph. iv 11.

Again, "Cornelius was made bishop by the judgment of God and his Christ, by the testimony of almost all the clergy, by the suffrage of the people being then present, and by the college of priests, ancient and good men :"* and, "Cornelius being in the catholic church ordained by the judgment of God, and by the suffrage of the clergy and people."†

Again, "When a bishop is once made, and is approved by the testimony and the judgment of his colleagues, and of the people"——.‡

The author of the Apostolical Constitutions thus in the person of St. Peter very fully and clearly describeth the manner of ordination of bishops in his times :—"After one of the chief bishops present has thus prayed, the rest of the priests with all the people shall say Amen; and after the prayer, one of the bishops shall deliver the eucharist into the hands of the person ordained, and that morning he shall be placed by the rest of the bishops in his throne, all of them saluting him with a kiss in the Lord. After the reading of the Law and Prophets, of our Epistles, the Acts and Gospel, he who is ordained shall salute the church with these words,—The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ, and the love of God the Father, and the fellowship of the Holy Ghost, be with you all, Amen. And let all answer, And with thy spirit. After which words let him exhort the people."||

Thus it was then, in a practice so obvious and observable, that a pagan em-

perer took good notice of it, and chose to imitate it in constituting the governors of provinces, and other officers : "When" (saith Lampridius of Alexander Severus) "he would either give rulers to provinces, or make presidents, or ordain procurators, he set up their names, exhorting the people, if they had any thing against them, to prove it by manifest evidence; if they could not make their accusation good, they were to die for it: and he said it would be hard not to do that in the choice of governors of provinces, to whom the lives and fortunes of men were intrusted, which the Christians and Jews did in setting up those who were to be ordained priests."*

Afterward, in process of time, when (the gaps of distance being filled up, and Christendom becoming one continued body) ecclesiastical discipline was improved into a more complete shape; for constitution of a bishop, all the *bishops* of a *province* did convene (or such as could with convenience, the others signifying their mind by writing), and having approved him who was recommended by the clergy, and allowed by the people, they did ordain him; the *metropolitan* of the *province*, ratifying what was done.†

So the Nicene synod, regarding the practice which had commonly obtained, did appoint, with a qualification to be generally observed : "It is most fit" (say they) "that a bishop be constituted by all bishops in the province; but if this be hard, either because of urgent necessity, or for the length of the way, then three of the body being gathered together (those also who are absent conspiring in opinion, and yielding their consent in writing), let the ordination be performed, but let the ratification of what is done be

functi substituitur, quando populi universi suffragio in pace deligitur—cui si secundum misteria divina obtemperaret fraternitas universa, nemo adversum sacerdotum collegium quidquam moveret; nemo post divinum iudicium, post populi suffragium, post coepiscoporum consensum, iudicem se jam non episcopi sed Dei faceret —. *Cypr. Ep. 55.*

* Factus est autem Cornelius episcopus de Dei et Christi ejus iudicio, de clericorum pene omnium testimonio, de plebis, quæ tunc affuit, suffragio, et de sacerdotum antiquorum et bonorum virorum collegio —. *Cypr. Ep. 52.*

† Cornelio in catholica ecclesia de Dei iudicio, et cleri ac plebis suffragio ordinato —. *Cypr. Ep. 67.*

‡ Episcopo semel facto, et collegiarum ac plebis testimonio et iudicio comprobato —. *Ep. 41. (ad Cornel.)*

|| Const. Apost. viii. 4.—Postquam hæc erit præcatus, &c.

* Ubi aliquos voluisset vel rectores provinciarum dare, vel præpositos facere, vel procuratores id est rationales ordinare, nomina eorum proponere, hortans populum, ut siquid haberet criminis, probaret manifestis rebus; si non probasset, subiret, pœnam capitis; dicebatque grave esse, quum id Christiani et Judæi facerent in prædicandis sacerdotibus qui ordinandi sunt, non fieri in provinciarum rectoribus, quibus et fortunæ hominum committerentur et capita.—*Lamprid. in Alex. Sev. cap. 45.*

† Παλαίος θεομός.—Syn. Constantinop. Theod. v. 9.

assigned to the metropolitane in each province."**

In this canon (the which is followed by divers canons of other synods) there is no express mention concerning the interest of the clergy and people in election of the bishops; but these things are only passed over, as precedaneous to the constitution or ordination, about which only the Fathers did intend to prescribe; supposing the election to proceed according to former usual practice.

That we ought thus to interpret the canon, so that the Fathers did not intend to exclude the people from their choice, doth appear from their synodical epistle; wherein they decree concerning bishops constituted by Meletius, who, returning to communion with the church, did live in any city, that, "If any Catholic bishop should happen to die, then should those who were already received ascend into the honour of him deceased; in case they should appear worthy, and the people should choose, the bishop of Alexandria withal adding his suffrage to him, and his confirmation;"† the which words with sufficient evidence do interpret the canon not to concern the election, but the ordination of bishops.

Thus the Fathers of the second general synod plainly did interpret this canon by their proceeding; for they, in their synodical epistle to Pope Damasus and the western bishops, did assure him, that they, in the constitution of bishops for the principal eastern Sees, had followed this order of the synod of Nice, together with "the ancient law of the church;"‡ in agreement whereto they had ordained Nectarius bishop of Constantinople, "with common consent, under the eyes of the most religious Emperor Theodosius, and of all the clergy, the whole city adjoin-

* Ἐπίσκοπον προσήκει μάλιστα μὲν ὑπὸ πάντων τῶν ἐν τῇ ἐπαρχίᾳ καθίστασθαι—τὸ δὲ κῆρος τῶν γινομένων δίδοσθαι καὶ ἑκάστην ἐπαρχίαν τῷ μητροπολίτῃ —. Conc. Nic. Can. 4.

† Εἰ δὲ τις συμβαίῃ ἀναπαύσασθαι τῶν ἐν τῇ ἐκκλησίᾳ, τῆνικαὶτα προσαναβαίνειν εἰς τὴν τιμὴν τοῦ τετελευτηκότος τοῦ ἄρι προσηφθέντος, μόνον εἰ ἄξιοι φαίνονται, καὶ ὁ λαὸς αἰροῖτο. συνεπιψηφίζοντος αὐτῶν, καὶ ἐπισφραγίζοντος τοῦ τῆς Ἀλεξανδρείας ἐπισκόπου. —Soer. i. 9; Theod. i. 9.

‡ Παλαιὸς τε θεσπὸς κερκρίτηκε, καὶ τῶν ἁγίων ἐν Νικαίᾳ πατέρων ἔως—(Ὡς ἀπολοῖθως —.

* Vide Can. Apost. 1; Conc. Antioch. Can. 19; Conc. Laod. Can. 12—; Conc. Afr. Can. 13.

† Theod. v. 9.

ing also its suffrage;"* and that for tiorch, "the bishops of the province, of the eastern diocese concurring, canonically ordained Flavianus by the whole church consenting, as one voice, to honour the person."†

Indeed, the practice generally confirm this, the people everywhere tinueing to elect their bishop. So di people of Alexandria demand Athu us for their bishop."‡ So Pope Julii complain, that Gregory was intruder the place of Athanasius, "not being quired by the presbyters, not by bishops, not by the people."‡ So Gr Nazianzen describeth the electior bishops in his times, to be carried b power of wealthy men, and impet ness of the people.‡ So Austin int eth the same in his speech about detion of a successor to himself: know" (says he) "that after the cease of bishops the churches are to be disturbed by ambitious and tentious men."§ So the tumults at tiorch, in choosing a bishop after F thus; at Rome, after Liberius; at stantinople, after Alexander; at B when St. Ambrose was chosen.

So Stephanus, bishop of Ephesu justification of himself saith, "Me bishops of Asia, by the suffrage o most noble and of the substantial cit and of all the most reverend clergy of all the rest of the whole city, d dain;"¶ and his competitor, Bassi "Me, with great constraint and viol

* —μετὰ κοινῆς δημοσίας, ἕν' ὄψει καὶ λεοτάτου βασιλέως Θεοδοσίου, παντὸς τε τοῦ καὶ πάσης ἐπιψηφίζομένης τῆς πόλεως.

† —ἐπίσκοπον Φλαβιανὸν οἱ τε τῆς ἐκκλ. καὶ τῆς Ἀνατολικῆς διοικήσεως συνδραμόντες κῶς ἐχειροτόνησαν, πάσης συμφήσου τῆς ἐκκλ. ὡςπερ διὰ μιᾶς φωνῆς τὸν ἄνδρα τιμησάσης.

‡ Μὴ αἰτηθέντα τοῖς πρεσβυτέροις, μὴ παρ' ἑαυτῶν, μὴ παρὰ λαῶν.—Ath. ibid. p. 719.

§ Euseb. de Vit. Const. iii. 59, 60; Socr. i. 24.—Μερισθέντος τοῦ πληθους.—Sozom. i. Marcell. lib. 27.—Διχῶν διεκρινθὲν τὸ πλῆθ. Socr. i. 24; Soz. iii. 4; Theod. iv. 6.

¶ Scio post obitus episcoporum per an sos aut contentiosos solere ecclesias pert —. Aug. Ep. 110.

¶ Ἐμὲ τεσσαράκοντα ἐπίσκοποι τῆς Ἀσίας καὶ τῶν λαμπροτάτων, καὶ τῶν λογιώδων, καὶ τοῦ θεοτάτου παντὸς κλήρου, καὶ τῶν λοιπῶν πάντῃ πόλεως πάσης ἐχειροτόνησαν.—Conc. Chal. xi. p. 404.

* Ath. Apol. ii. p. 726.

† Orat. xix. 310. Epist. 21.

the people and the clergy, and the bishops did install.”*

In the synod of Chalcedon, Eusebius, bishop of Ancyra, saith, that “the whole city of Gangra did come to him, bringing their suffrages:† Posidius telleth us of St. Austin, that “in ordaining priests and clergymen he deemed the greater consent of Christians, and the custom of the church, was to be followed.”‡

So Celestine the first, “Let no bishop be given them against their wills; let the consent and request of the clergy, the people, and the order, be expected;”|| and Pope Leo the first: “When there shall be an election of a bishop, let him be preferred who has the unanimous consent of the clergy and people; so that if the votes be divided, and part for another person, let him, by the judgment of the metropolitan, be preferred, whose merits and interest are greatest; only that none may be ordained against their wills, or without their desire, lest the unwilling people contemn or hate a bishop whom they never desired, and become less religious than they ought, because they could not have such a bishop as they would.”§ And in another of his Epistles, “There is no reason that they should be accounted bishops, who were neither chosen by the clergy, nor desired by the people, nor with the metropolitan’s order consecrated by the provincial bishops——.”¶

* Ἐμὲ δὲ μετὰ πολλῆς ἀνάγκης καὶ βίας ἐνθρονίσθησαν εἰς τὴν αὐτὴν πόλιν Ἐφῆσον ὁ λαὸς, καὶ ὁ κληρὸς, καὶ οἱ ἐπίσκοποι.—Ibid.

† Ἀπασα γὰρ ἡ πόλις ἦλθε πρὸς ἐμὲ εἰς Ἀγκύραν καὶ ἐκόμισαν τὰ ψηφίσματα.—Syn. Chalc. Act. xvi. p. 462.

‡ In ordinandis vero sacerdotibus et clericis consensum majorem Christianorum, et consuetudinem ecclesiæ sequendam esse arbitrabatur. Posid. in Aug. Vit. cap. 20.

|| Nullus in vitis detur episcopus; cleri, plebis, et ordinis consensum ac desiderium requiratur —. Celest. I. Ep. 2.

§ Cum ergo de summi sacerdotis electione tractabitur, ille omnibus præponatur, quem cleri plebisque consensus concorditer postulaverint; ita ut si in aliam forte personam partium se vota diviserint, metropolitani judicio is alteri præferatur, qui majoribus et studiis juvatur et meritis, tantum ut nullus in vitis et non petentibus ordinetur; ne civitas episcopum non optatum aut contemnatum aut oderit, et fiat minus religiosa quam convenit, cui non licuit habere quem voluit.—P. Leo I. Ep. 84, ad Anastas.

¶ Nulla ratio sinit, ut inter episcopos habeantur, qui nec a clericis sunt electi, nec a plebibus

“Certainly the desires of the citizens, and the testimonies of the people should have been expected with the judgment of the honourable, and the choice of the clergy, which in the ordinations of priests used to be observed by those who knew the rules of the Fathers.”*—“When peaceably, and with such concord as God loves, he who is to be a teacher of peace is ordained by the agreement of all.”†—“Let priests who are to be ordained be required peaceably and quietly; let the subscription of the clergy, the testimony of the honourable, the consent of the order and people, be observed; let him who is to preside over all be chosen by all.”‡ And Pope Nicholas I., “Because we know the custom of your royal city, that none can arrive at the top of the highest priestly power without the assent of the ecclesiastical people and the emperor’s suffrage.”||

Now in all these proceedings it is most apparent that there was no regard had to the pope, or any thought of him, out of his particular territory; which he had as metropolitan (or afterwards as primate in some parts of the west.) Nowhere else had he the least finger in the constitution of a bishop anywhere through the whole church; no, not of the least clergyman.

When by St. Cyprian so largely and punctually the manner of constituting bishops is declared; when the Nicene canons and those of other synods do so carefully prescribe about the ordination of them; when so many reports concern-

expetiti, nec a provincialibus episcopis cum metropolitani judicio consecrati.—P. Leo I. Ep. 92.

* Expectarentur certe vota civium, testimonia populorum, quæreretur honoratorum arbitrium, electio clericorum, quæ in sacerdotum solent ordinationibus ab his qui norunt patrum regulas custodiri.—P. Leo Ep. 89, Dist. lxxiii. cap. 27.

† Quum per pacem, et Deo placitam concordiam consonis omnium studiis qui doctor pacis futurus est ordinatur.—Ibid.

‡ Per pacem et quietem sacerdotes qui præfuturi sunt postulentur; teneatur subscriptio clericorum, honoratorum testimonium, ordinis consensus et plebis; qui præfuturus est omnibus, ab omnibus eligatur.—Ibid.

|| P. Nich. I. Ep. 5.—Quia consuetudinem vestram novimus in regia urbe, minimo apicem archieraticæ potestatis aliquem posse habere sine ecclesiasticæ plebis assensu atque imperiali suffragio —. P. Joh. VIII. Ep. lxx. Dist. 62.

* Vide P. Leo Ep. 84, 101, 107.

ing the election of bishops do occur in history; why is there not a tittle of mention concerning any special interest of the Roman bishops about them?

So true is that of Alb. Crantzius: "There was no need then of apostolical confirmation; it was sufficient if the election were approved by the archbishop: now the church of Rome has assumed to herself the rights of all churches."*

We may by the way observe, that in the first times they had not so much as an absolute power of ordaining a presbyter in the church of his own city without leave of the clergy and people; as may be inferred from that passage in Eusebius, where Pope Cornelius relateth that the bishop who ordained Novatus, "being hindered from doing it by all the clergy, and by many of the laity, did request that it might be granted to him to ordain that one person;"† and he that so hardly could ordain one priest in his own church, what authority could he have to constitute bishops in all other churches?

To all these evidences of fact^t our adversaries do oppose some instances of popes meddling in the constitution of bishops; as, Pope Leo I. saith, that Anatolius did, "by the favour of his assent, obtain the bishopric of Constantinople."‡ The same pope is alleged as having confirmed Maximus of Antioch. The same doth write to the bishop of Thessalonica (his vicar), that he should "confirm the elections of bishops by his authority."|| He also confirmed Donatus, an African bishop: "We will that Donatus preside over the Lord's flock, upon condition that he remember to send us an account of

* Nihil tum opus erat apostolica confirmatione; satis erat electionem ab archiepiscopo comprobari: nunc ad se omnium ecclesiarum jura traxit Romana ecclesia.—Crantz. *Metrop.* vii. 45.

† Διακωλυόμενος ὑπὸ παντὸς τοῦ κλήρου, ἀλλὰ καὶ λαϊκῶν πολλῶν, ἤξιώσε συγχωρηθῆναι αὐτῷ τοῦτον μόνον χειροτονῆσαι.—P. Cornel. apud Euseb. vi. 43.

‡ Satis est quod vestræ pietatis auxilio, et mei favoris assensu episcopatum tantæ urbis obtinuit.—P. Leo Ep. 51; De Marc. iii. 14, § 1.

|| Ut ordinationem rite celebrandam tua quoque firmet auctoritas.—P. Leo Ep. 84 (*ad Anastas.*)

* Bell. ii. 18, 20.

his faith."* Also Gregory I. doth complain of it, as of an inordinate act, that a bishop of Salonæ was "ordained without his knowledge."† Pope Damasus did confirm the ordination of Peter Alexandrinus: "The Alexandrians" (saith Sozomen) "did render the churches to Peter, being returned from Rome, with the letters of Damasus, which confirmed both the Nicene decrees, and his ordination:"‡ but what, I pray, doth confirmation here signify, but approbation? for did he otherwise confirm the Nicene decrees? did they need other confirmation?

To the former instances we answer, that, being well considered, they do much strengthen our argument; in that they are so few, so late, so lame, so impertinent: for if the pope had enjoyed a power of constituting bishops, more instances of its exercise would have been producible; indeed it could not be but that history would have been full of them; the constitution of bishops being a matter of continual use, and very remarkable. At least they might have found one instance or other to allege before the times of that busy Pope Leo; in whose time, and by whose means, papal authority began to overflow its banks. And those which they produce do likewise reach home to the point: Anatolius did obtain the bishopric of Constantinople "by the help of the emperor, and by the assent of the pope's favour:"‡ what then? Anatolius being put into that See in the room of Flavianus, by the influence of Dioscorus (whose response he had been), and having favoured the Eutychian faction, Pope Leo might thence have had a fair colour to disavow him as incapable of that function and

* Donatum—ita Dominico volumus grati præsidere, ut libellum fidei suæ ad nos mernerit dirigendum.—P. Leo Ep. 87.

† Solonitanæ civitatis episcopus ne ac responsali meo nesciente ordinatus est, et facta res est, quæ sub nullis anterioribus principibus evenit.—Greg. Ep. iv. 34.

‡ Ἀλεξανδρεῖς ἐνανθῶντι δὲ τότε Πέτρου ἐκ τῆς Ῥώμης μετὰ γραμμάτων Δαμάσου τότε ἐν Νικαίᾳ ἐδξάντα, καὶ τὴν αὐτοῦ χειροτονίαν κερύοντων, παρέδωκαν τὰς ἐκκλησίας.—Sozom. vi. 39.

|| Nos enim vestræ fidei et interventionis habentes intuitum, cum secundum suæ consecrationis auctores ejus initia titubarent, benigniores erga ipsam quam justiores esse volumus.—P. Leo Ep. 55. (*ad Martinum*)

dignity, he being so obnoxious;* both having such a flaw in his ordination, and having been guilty of great faults, adherence to the party of Dioscorus, and irregularly ordaining the bishop of Antioch; but he, "out of regard to the emperor's intervention," did acknowledge Anatolius for bishop: this was the "favourable assent" with which he upbraided Anatolius, having displeased him: and what doth this signify?

Again, Pope Leo did not reject Maximus, bishop of Antioch, from communion, nor disclaimed his ordination, although liable to exception: † what then? Is this a confirmation of him? No such matter: it was only, which in such a vixenly pope was a great favour, a forbearance to quarrel with him, as not duly ordained; which any other bishop might have done. If a pope had a flaw in his ordination, another bishop might refuse him.

Again, Pope Leo did enjoin the bishop of Thessalonica to confirm ordinations: what is that to the purpose? It belonged to that bishop, as a *metropolitan*, by the canons, to confirm those in his *province*, or, as a *primate*, to confirm those in his *diocese*; it belonged to him, as the pope's vicar in those territories to which he pope had stretched his jurisdiction, to execute the pope's orders: but what is this to universal authority? It is certain that Illyricum was then in a more special manner subjected to the pope's jurisdiction than any of the other eastern churches; what therefore he did there, cannot be drawn into consequence as to other places.

The same may be said in answer to the complaint of Pope Gregory, and to any the like instances.

Moreover, surreptitious, presumptuous, pragmatical intrusions, or usurpations of power, do not suffice to found a right in his or any other case; to which purpose, and wholly to invalidate any such pleas, these observations may be considered.

1. There do occur divers instances of

* *Decessore enim tuo B. memorie Flaviano propter defensionem catholicæ veritatis ejecto, non immerito credebatur quod ordinatorum tui contra sanctorum canonum constituta viderentur sui similem consecrasset. — Post illa ita ut ordinationis tue non inculcata principia. — P. Leo Ep. 53. ad anatol. Liber. cap. 12.*

† *Quod nos amore reparandæ fidei, et pacis studio retractare cessavimus. — P. Leo Ep. 54 ad Marcian.*) Conc. Chal. Act. 10.

bishops, who did meddle in ordinations of other bishops, so as to bear great stroke in constituting them, who did not thereby pretend to universal jurisdiction; and it would be extremely ridiculous thence to infer they had any reasonable claim thereto.

Thus it was objected to Athanasius, "that he presumed to ordain in cities which did not belong to him."* Eusebius of Constantinople did obtrude Eusebius Emissenus to be bishop of Alexandria. † Eustathius of Antioch did ordain Evagrius bishop of Constantinople. ‡ Euzoius delivered unto Lucius the bishopric of Alexandria. § Lucifer, a Sardinian bishop, did ordain Paulinus bishop of Antioch. || They for a *salve* say, as the pope's legate: but upon what ground or testimony? Why did not historians tell us so much? The pope had then been hissed at, if he had sent legates about such errands; it was indeed out of presumption and pragmatical zeal to serve a party, then ordinary in persons addicted to all parties, right and wrong; it not being then so expressly forbidden by the canons as afterward.

Theognis and Theodorus did make Macedonius bishop of Constantinople. ¶ Theophilus of Alexandria did ordain St. Chrysostom. § The Egyptian bishops surreptitiously did constitute Maximus, the Cynic philosopher, bishop of Constantinople. || Acacius (who had as little to do there as the pope) did thrust Edoxius into the throne of Constantinople. ** Meletius, of Antioch, did constitute St. Gregory Nazianzen to the charge of Constantinople. †† Acacius and Patrophilus, extruding Maximus "did in his

* *'Αμέλει τοι καὶ τοῦτο ἐγκλημα αὐτῷ ἐπῆγον, ὡς ἐν πόλεσι μὴδὲν αὐτῷ προσηκούσαις χειροτονεῖν ἐτόλμησεν. — Soz. iii. 21.*

† *Ἐπὶ τῶν Ἀλεξανδρείας προεβήθη θρόνον ἐπὶ Εὐσεβίου τοῦ Κωνσταντινουπόλεως ἐπισκόπου. — Soz. ii. 5.*

‡ *Ἐπὶ τῷ παραδοῦναι Λουκίῳ τῷ Ἀρειανῷ τὰς ἐκεῖ ἐκκλησίας. — Socr. iv. 21.*

§ *Ἐχειροτόνησε τὸν Παυλίνον ἐπίσκοπον. — Socr. iii. 6; vi. 2.*

|| *Θεόφιλος Ἰωάννην ἐχειροτόνησε. — Socr. vi. 2.*
¶ *Τούτου κλιψάντες τὴν χειροτονίαν ἐπίσκοπον Κωνσταντινουπόλεως κατέστησαν οἱ τότε ἐξ Αἰγύπτου συνεληλυθότες. — Soz. vii. 9.*

** *Τῶν περὶ Ἀκάκιον ἐνθρονισάντων αὐτῶν, — Socr. ii. 13.*

†† *Ἦδη πρῶην εἰς Κωνσταντινοῦπολιν διὰ τῆν Γρηγορίου κατέστησαν ἀφικόμενος. — Soz. vii. 2, 3.*
‡ *Socr. iv. 14.* § *Soz. ii. 6.*

room constitute Cyril" bishop of Jerusalem.* Pope Leo doth complain of Anatolius, that "against the canonical rule he had assumed to himself the ordination of the bishop of Antioch."†

2. To obviate these irregular and inconvenient proceedings, having crept in upon the dissensions in faith, and especially upon occasion of Gregory Nazianzen being constituted bishop of Constantinople by Meletius, and Maximus being thrust into the same See by the Egyptians (whose party for a time the Roman church did countenance), the second general synod did ordain, that no bishop should intermeddle about ordinations without the bounds of his own diocese.

3. In pursuance of this law, or upon the ground of it, the pope was sometimes checked, when he presumed to make a sally beyond his bounds in this or the like cases.

As when Pope Innocent I. did send some bishops to Constantinople for procuring a synod to examine the cause of St. Chrysostom; "those of Constantinople—did cause them to be dismissed with disgrace, as molesting a government beyond their bounds."‡

4. Even in the western parts, after that the pope had wriggled himself into most countries there, so as to obtain sway in their transactions, yet he in divers places did not meddle in ordinations: "We do not" (says Pope Leo I.) "arrogate to ourselves a power of ordaining in your provinces."||

Even in some parts of Italy itself the pope did not confirm bishops till the times of Pope Nicholas I., as may be collected from the submission then of the bishop of Ravenna to that condition, "that he should have no power to consecrate bishops canonically elected in the regio Flaminia, unless it were granted him by letters from the apostolical see."§

* 'Ακάοις μὲν γὰρ καὶ Πατρῷλος Μάξιμον τὸν Ἱεροσολύμων ἐξωθήσαντες Κύριλλον ἀντικατήσθησαν.—Soer. ii. 238.

† Post consecrationem Antiocheni episcopi, quam tibimet contra canonicam regulam vendicasti — P. Leo I. Ep. 53. (ad Anatol.)

‡ Τοὺς μὲν ὑπερορίαν ἀρχὴν ἐνοχλήσαντας ἀτίμως ἐκπεμπθῆναι παρεσκεύασαν.—Sozom. viii. 28.

|| Non enim nobis ordinationes vestrarum provinciarum defendimus.—P. Leo. Ep. 89.

§ — et ne electos etiam canonicè in Fla-

And it was not without great opposition and struggling that he got that power elsewhere than in his original precincts, or where the juncture of things did afford him special advantage.

5. If examples would avail to determine right, there are more, and more clear instances of emperors interposing in the constitution of bishops than of popes; as they had ground in reason, and authority in holy scripture: *And Zadock the priest did the king put in the room of Abiathar.*^a Constantine did interpose at the designation of a bishop at Antioch in the room of Eustathius.^b Upon Gregory Nazianzen's recess from Constantinople, Theodosius (that excellent emperor, who would not have infringed right) "did command the bishops present to write in paper the names of those whom each did approve worthy to be ordained, and reserved to himself the choice of one;" and accordingly they obeying, he, out of all that were nominated, "did elect Nectarius."^c "Constantine did deliver the see of Constantinople to Eusebius Nicomediensis."^d Constantine was angry with Macedonius, because he was ordained "without his licence."^e He "rejecting Eleusius and Sylvanus did order others to be substituted in their places."^f When, before St. Ambrose, the See of Milain was vacant, a synod of bishops "there did entreat the emperor to declare one."^g Flavianus said to the Emperor Theodosius, "Give forsooth, O king, the See of Antioch to whom you shall think good."^h The emperor did call Nestorius from Antioch to the See of

Flaminia episcopos consecrandi facultatem haberet, nisi id sibi a sede apostolica literis concederetur.—Plat. in P. Nichol. I.

* Προστάξαντος τοῦ βασιλέως τοῖς ἱερεῶσιν ἡγῆσθαι χάριτι τὰς προσηγορίας ὧν ἕκαστοι ἐκαμύσσαν εἰς τὴν χειροτονίαν ἀξίον, αὐτῷ δὲ φυλάξαντι τὸ ἔνος τὴν αἵρεσιν — καὶ Νεκτάριον αἰρεῖται.—Sozom. vii. 8.

† Εὐσεβίου τὸν Κωνσταντινουπόλεως θρόνον κατέδωκεν.—Id. iii. 4.

‡ Ὅτι πρὶν αὐτὸν ἐπιτίθειν, ἐχειροτονήθη.—Id. iii. 6.

|| Τοὺς μὲν ἐξήλασε τῶν ἐκκλησιῶν, ἐτίθει δὲ ἐν αὐτῶν κατασθῆναι προσέταξε.—Theodor. ii. 27.

§ Αὐτὸν ἡ σύνοδος ἤξιον ψηφίσασθαι — Id. iv. 7.

¶ Τοὶ γὰρ τοὶ δὲς ἢ βούλει τὸν Ἀντιοχείων ἐπίσκοπον, ὃ Βασίλειον — Id. v. 23.

^a 1 Kings ii. 35.

^b Euseb. de Vit. Const. iii. 59, 60.

Constantinople;* and he was, saith Vincentius Lir., "elected by the emperor's judgment."† The favour of Justinian did advance Menas to the See of Constantinople;‡ and the same did prefer Eutychius thereto.|| He did put in Pope Vigilius —.

In Spain the kings had the election of bishops by the decrees of the council of Toledo.^c

That the Emperor Charles did use to confirm bishops, Pope John VIII. doth testify, reproving the archbishop of Verdun for rejecting a bishop "whom the clergy and people of the city had chosen, and the Emperor Charles had confirmed by his consent."§

When Macarius, bishop of Antioch,|| for monothelism was deposed in the sixth synod, the bishops under that throne did request the presidents of the synod to suggest another to the emperor to be substituted in his room.

In Gratian there are divers passages wherein popes declared, that they could not ordain bishops to churches, even in Italy, without the emperor's leave and licence. As indeed there are also in later times other decrees (made by popes of another kidney, or in other junctures of affairs), which forbid princes to meddle in the election of bishops; as in the seventh synod, and in the eight synod as they call it, upon occasion of Photius being placed in the See of Constantinople by the power of the court.^d And that of

* Visum est imperatoribus nullum ordinare de Constantinopolitana ecclesia pontificem—. Nestorium quasi utilem ad docendum Constantinopolin principes evocaverunt.—*Lib. Brev. 6; Socr. vii. 29.*

† Quem tanto imperii judicio electum, tanto sacerdotum studio prosecutum—. *Vinc. Lir. p. 330.*

‡ Tunc papa principis favore Menam pro eo (Anthimo) ordinavit antisitem.—*Lib. cap. 21.*

|| — ἀνεβίθασε τὸν Εὐρύχιον.—*Evag. iv. 38.*
§ Quem clerus et populus civitatis eligerat, etque memorie Carolus imperator suo consensu firmaverat—. *P. Joh. VII. Ep. 70.*

¶ Αἰροῦμεν τὴν ἡμετέραν ἐνδοξότητα τοῦ ἀναγάρτου τοῦ εὐσεβεστάτου καὶ — ἡμῶν δεσπότη καὶ μεγάλου βασιλέως Ἐρεπον ἀντὶ Μακαρίου—διὰ τὸ μὴ χηρεῦσθαι τὸν τοιοῦτον θρόνον.—*Syn. VI. Act. xii. (p. 208.)*

^c Conc. Tolet. xii. cap. 6; apud Gr. *Dist. lxiii. cap. 25.*

^d *Dist. lxiii. cap. 9; Greg. I. Ep. iv. 15, cap. 15-18; P. Leo. IV. et. Steph.; Dist. lxiii. cap. 6, 7; Ibid. cap. 1, 2.*

Pope Nicholas I., by which discordance in practice we may see the consistence and stability of doctrine and practice in the Roman church.*

The emperors for a long time did enjoy the privilege of constituting or confirming the popes; for (says Platina, in the *Life of Pelagius II.*) "nothing was then done by the clergy in electing a pope, unless the emperor approved the election."† He did confirm Pope Gregory I. and Pope Agatho.

"Pope Adrian, with his whole synod, did deliver to Charles the Great the right and power of electing the pope and ordaining the apostolic see. He, moreover, defined that archbishops and bishops in every province should receive investiture from him; and that if a bishop were not commended and invested by the king, he should be consecrated by none; and whoever should act against this decree, him he did noose in the band of anathema."‡

The like privilege did Pope Leo VIII. attribute to the Emperor Otho I. "We give him" (says he) "for ever power to ordain a successor and bishop of the chief apostolic see, and change archbishops,"|| &c. And Platina, in his *Life*, says, "That being weary of the inconstancy of the Romans, he transferred all authority to choose a pope from the clergy and people of Rome to the emperor."§

* *Ibid. cap. 4.*—[It is a notorious thing, that most princes in the west, in Germany, France, England, did invest bishops till the time of Pope Gregory VII. when that boisterous man did raise so much stir in Christendom to dispossess them of that right; which they enjoyed, not only as princes, but as founders, patrons, benefactors, protectors of churches.]

† Nihil a clero in eligendo pontifice actum erat, nisi ejus electionem imperator approbasset.—*Plat in Pelagio II. (p. 154;)* *Dist. 63; Plat. p. 155; vide Joh. Diac. et Anastas. Dist. lxiii. cap. 21.*

‡ Hadrianus autem papa cum universa synodo tradiderunt jus et potestatem eligendi pontificem, et ordinandi apostolicam sedem—insuper archiepiscopos et episcopos per singulas provincias ab eo investituram accipere definivit; et nisi a rege laudetur et investitur episcopus, a nemine consecratur: et quicumque contra hoc decretum ageret, anathematis vinculo eum innodavit.—*Dist. lxiii. cap. 22.*

|| Largimur in perpetuum facultatem successorem, atque summæ sedis apostolicæ pontificem ordinandi, ac per hoc archiepiscopos seu episcopos, &c.—*Ibid. cap. 23.*

§ Qui statim Romanorum inconstantiæ per-

Now, I pray, if this power of confirming bishops do by divine institution belong to the pope, how could he part with it, or transfer it on others? is not this a plain renunciation in popes of their divine pretence?

6. General synods, by an authority paramount, have assumed to themselves the constitution and confirmation of bishops.* So the second general synod did confirm the ordination of Nectarius, bishop of Constantinople, and of Flavianus, bishop of Antioch: "This ordination" (say they) "the synod generally have admitted,"* although the Roman church did not approve the ordination of Nectarius, and for a time after did oppose that of Flavianus. So the fifth synod, it seemeth, did confirm the ordination of Theophanius, bishop of Antioch. So the synod of Pisa did constitute Pope Alexander V.; that of Constance, Pope Martin V.; that of Basil, Pope Felix V.

7. All Catholic bishops in old times might, and commonly did, confirm the elections and ordinations of bishops, to the same effect as popes may be pretended to have done; that is, by signifying their approbation or satisfaction concerning the orthodoxy of their faith, the attestation to their manners, the legality of their ordination, no canonical impediment; and consequently by admitting them to communion of peace and charity, and correspondence in all good offices, which they express by returning *κοινωνικαὶ ἐπιστολαὶ* in answer to their synodical-communicatory letters.

Thus did St. Cyprian and all the bishops of that age confirm the ordination of Pope Cornelius, being contested by Novatian; as St. Cyprian in terms doth affirm: "When the see of St. Peter, the sacerdotal chair, was vacant, which by the will of God being occupied, and by all our consents confirmed," &c.†—

tæsus auctoritatem omnem eligendi pontificis a clero populoque Romano ad imperatorem transulit —. *Plat in Leo VIII.* p. 291.

* Πνευρ ἔνθεσμον χειροτονίαν εἰδέξατο τὸ τῆς συνόδου κοινὸν.—*Theol.* v. 9.

† Cum locus Petri et gradus cathedræ sacerdotalis vacaret, quo occupato de Dei voluntate, atque omnium nostrum consensione firmato.—*Cypr. Ep.* 52 (*ad Anton.*)

* Conc. Const. sess. 40; Conc. Bas. sess. xxxvii. (p. 98.)

"to confirm thy ordination with a greater authority."*

To which purpose, each bishop did write epistles to other bishops (or at least to those of highest rank), acquainting them with his ordination and instalment, making a profession of his faith, so as to satisfy them of his capacity of the function.

8. But bishops were complete bishops before they did give such an account of themselves; so that it was not in the power of the pope, or of any other, to reverse their ordination, or dispossess them of their places. There was no confirmation importing any such matter: this is plain; and one instance will serve to shew it;—that of Pope Honorius, and of Sergius, bishop of Constantinople, who speak of Sophronius, patriarch of Jerusalem; that he was constituted bishop before their knowledge, and receipt of his synodical letters.†

9. If the designation of any bishop should belong to the pope, then especially that of metropolitans, who are the chief princes of the church; but this anciently did not belong to him. In Afric the most ancient bishop of the province (without election) did succeed into that dignity. Where the metropolises were fixed, all the bishops of the province did convene, and with the consent of the clergy, persons of quality, and the commonalty, did elect him.‡ So was St. Cyprian, bishop of Carthage, elected. So Nectarius of Constantinople, Flavianus of Antioch, and Cyril of

* Ad comprobendam ordinationem rram factam auctoritate majore — *Ep.* 45, *ad Corn.*

† Ὡς ἐξ ἀκοῆς καὶ μόνης μεμαθήκαμεν τῆς Ἱεροσολυμιτῶν χειροτονηθείς πρόεδρος: οὕτω γὰρ τὰ ἐξ ἑαυτοῦ συνδικὰ μέχρι τοῦ νῦν εἰδεξάμεθα.—*Syn.* VI. Act. xii. 198. Νυνὶ δὲ ἀκούομεν ἐπισκόπου καθ' ἑαυτοῦ τῆς Ἱεροσολυμιτῶν —. *P. Honor.* ib. p. 198.

‡ Metropolitano defuncto, cum in locum eius alius fuerit subrogandus, provinciales episcopi ad civitatem metropolitanam convenire debent, ut omnium clericorum atque omnium civium voluntate discussa ex presbyteris ejusdem ecclesie, vel ex diaconibus optimus eligatur — *P. Leo Ep.* 88. The metropolitan being dead, when another is to be put in his place, the provincial bishops ought to meet in the metropolitan city, that by votes of the whole clergy and citizens, out of the priests or deacons of the same church, the fittest person may be chosen.

Jerusalem, as the Fathers of Constantinople tell us. So Stephanus and Bassianus, rival bishop of Ephesus, did pretend to have been chosen, as we saw before.

And for confirmation, there did not need any, there is no mention of any; except that confirmation of which we spake, a consequent approbation of them from all their fellow bishops, as having no exception against them, rendering them unworthy of communion. In the synod of Chalcedon it was defined, that the bishop of Constantinople should have equal privileges with the bishop of Rome; yet it is expressly cautioned there, that he shall not meddle in ordination of bishops in any province, that being left to the metropolitan: for a good time, even in the western parts, the pope did not meddle with the constitution of metropolitans; leaving the churches to enjoy their liberties.* Afterwards, with all other rights, he snatched the *collation, confirmation, &c.* of metropolitans.

VII. Sovereigns have a power to censure and correct all inferior magistrates in proportion to their offences; and in case of great misdemeanour, or of incapacity, they can wholly discharge and remove them from their office.

This prerogative, therefore, he of Rome doth claim, as most proper to himself, by divine sanction.*

"God Almighty alone can dissolve the spiritual marriage between a bishop and his church. Therefore those three things premised" (the confirmation, translation, and deposition of bishops) "are reserved to the Roman bishop, not so much by canoninal constitution, as by divine institution."†

This power the convention of Trent doth allow him; thwarting the ancient laws, and betraying the liberties of the church thereby, and endangering the Christian doctrine to be inflected and cor-

* Μηδὲν ἐπικουιόντος ταῖς ἐκείνων χειροτονίας τοῦ διοικῶντος ἀρχιεπισκόπου τῆς βασιλείδος.—Act. xvi. p. 464.

† Et ideo tria hæc quæ præmisimus non tam constitutione canonica, quam institutione divina soli sunt Romano pontifici reservata.—P. Innoc. III. in Gregor. Decret. lib. i. tit. 7, cap. 2.

‡ Vide Concil. Aur. can. 7. apud de Marc.

iv. § 8.

* Vide Gelas. Ep. xiii. (p. 640.)

rupted to the advantage of papal interest.*

But such a power anciently did not, by any rule or custom, in a peculiar manner belong to the Roman bishop.†

Premising what was generally touched about jurisdiction; in reference to this branch we remark,

1. The exercising of judgment and censure upon bishops (when it was needful for general good) was prescribed to be done by synods, provincial or patriarchal (diocesan.) In them causes were to be discussed, and sentence pronounced against those who had deviated from faith, or committed misdemeanours. So it was appointed in the synod of Nice;‡ as the African synod (wherein St. Austin was one bishop) did observe, and urge in their Epistle to Pope Celestine, in those notable words: "Whether they be clergy of an inferior degree, or whether they be bishops, the Nicene decrees have most plainly committed them to the metropolitan's charge: for they have most prudently and justly discerned, that all matters whatsoever ought to be determined in the places where they do first begin; and that the grace of the Holy Spirit would not be wanting to every particular province."§ The same law was enacted by the synod of Antioch, by the synods of Constantinople, Chalcedon, &c.¶

Thus was Paulus Samosatenus, for his error against the divinity of our Lord, and for his scandalous demeanour, deposed by the synod of Antioch.¶ Thus was Eustathius, bishop of Antioch (being ac-

* Causæ criminales graviore contra episcopos, etiam hæresis quod absit, quæ depositione aut privatione dignæ sunt, ab ipso tantum summo Romano pontifice cognoscantur, et terminentur.—Conc. Trid. sess. xxiv. cap. 5.

† 'Επίσκοπος καθαιρεῖ πάντα κληρικὸν ἄξιον ὄντα καθαιρέσεως, πλὴν ἐπισκόπου, μόνος γὰρ οὐχ οἶός τε.—Const. Ap. viii. 28. A bishop may depose any clerk who deserves it, except he be a bishop; whom to deprive, one bishop alone is not sufficient.

‡ Decreta Nicena sive inferioris gradus clericos, sive ipsos episcopos suis metropolitans apertissime commiserunt: prudentissime enim justissimeque viderunt quæcunque negotia in suis locis ubi orta sunt finienda; nec unicuique provincię gratiam S. Spiritus defuturam.—Syn. Afr. Ep. ad P. Celest. I.

§ Syn. Nic. can. 5.

¶ Syn. Ant. can. 15.

(An. 269.) Euseb. vii. 30.

cused of Sabellianism and of other faults), removed by a synod of the same place; the which sentence he quietly did bear.* Thus another Eustathius, bishop of Sebastia (for his uncouth garb and fond conceits against marriage), was discarded by the synod of Gangra. Thus did a synod of Constantinople abdicate Marcellus, bishop of Ancyra, for heterodoxy in the point concerning our Lord's divinity. For the like cause was Photinus, bishop of Sirmium, deposed by a synod there, "gathered by the emperor's command." So was Athanasius tried and condemned (although unjustly as to the matter and cause) by the synod of Tyre.^k So was St. Chrysostom (although most injuriously) deposed by a synod at Constantinople. So the bishops at Antioch (according to the emperor's order) deposed Stephanus, bishop of that place, for a wicked contrivance against the fame of Euphratas and Vincentius.^l

In all these condemnations, censures, and depositions of bishops (whereof each was of high rank and great interest in the church), the bishop of Rome had no hand, nor so much as a little finger. All the proceedings did go on supposition of the rule and laws, that such judgments were to be passed by synods.

St. Chrysostom δεκαπέντε επισκόπους καθέλειν—"deposed fifteen bishops."^m

2. In some case a kind of deposing of bishops was assumed by particular bishops, as defenders of the faith, and executors of canons; their deposition consisting in not allowing those to be bishops, whom for erroneous doctrine or disorderly behaviour (notoriously incurred), they deemed incapable of the office, presuming their places, *ipso facto*, void.[†]

This Pope Gelasius I. proposed for a rule, "That not only a metropolitan, but every other bishop, hath a right to separate any persons or any place from the catholic communion, according to the rule by which his heresy is already con-

* Ἦσυχῆ τὴν συκοφαντίαν ἤνεγκε.—Soz. ii. 9.

† Γίνωσκε ἀπὸ πάσης καθολικῆς ἐκκλησίας ἀκοινωνήτων εἶναι στανόν, καὶ ἀμνέουγον ποδὸς πᾶν ὄντων τῶν ἐξ ἀθεντίας ἱερατικῆς.—P. Celest. in Nest. Sent. Eph. Act. p. 195.

^k Socr. i. 24; ii. 43; Soz. iii. 14; Socr. i. 36; ii. 29; i. 28.

^l Theod. ii. 10.

^m Act. xi. Syn. Chal. p. 411; Ἰἱεὶς §, cum 4, jungenda.

demned."^{**} And upon this account did the popes for so long time quarrel with the See of Constantinople, because they did not expunge Acasius from the roll of bishops, who had communicated with heretics.[†] So did St. Cyprian reject Marcianus, bishop of Arles, for adhering to the Novatians. So Athanasius was said to have deposed Arian bishops, and substituted others in their places. So Acasius and his complices deposed Macedonius and divers others bishops.^k And the bishops of those times καθέλιον ἀλλήλους; factiously applying a rule taken for granted then, "deposed one another;"[†] so Maximus, bishop of Jerusalem, deposed Athanasius. So Eusebius of Nicomedia threatened to depose Alexander of Constantinople, if he would not admit Arius to communion.|| Acasius and his complices did extrude Maximus, bishop of Jerusalem. He also deposed and expelled Cyril of Jerusalem; and deposed many other bishops at Constantinople.[•] Cyril deposed Nestorius, and Nestorius deposed Cyril and Memnon. Cyril and Juvenalis deposed John of Antioch.[§] John of Antioch, with his bishops, deposed Cyril and Memnon.|| Yea, after the synod of Ephesus, John of Antioch, "gathering together many bishops, did depose Cyril."^{**} Stephanus, concerning Bassianus: "Because he had entered into the church with swords—therefore he was expelled out of it again by the holy Fathers, both by Leo of Rome, the imperial city, and by Flavianus; by

* Quod non solum præsulī apostolico facere licet, sed cuicumque pontifici, ut quoslibet æquemlibet locum secundum regulam hæreseos ipsius ante damnatæ, a catholica communione discernant.—Ep. 4.

† Ἐπεὶ οὖν ἔχρην τὸν ἐπὶ κακοδοξίᾳ φωραθέντα μητ' ἑτέρας ἄρχειν ἐκκλησίας, ἢ διδασκάλου ὄνομα περιφέρειν.—Conc. sub Men. (p. 10.)

‡ Πρῶτερον καθελών.—Socr. ii. 24.

|| Εὐσέβιος πολλὰ διηγεῖται αὐτῶν, λέγων ὅσα ἐδέστω καθαιροῖσιν αὐτὸν, εἰ νῦν εἰς κοινωνίαν εἰζήτηται τὸν Ἀρειον.—Id. i. 37.

§ Κύριλλος δὲ ἅμα καὶ Ἰουδηνάλειον, ἀμνέουγον τὸν Ἰωάννην καθαιρεῖ καὶ αὐτὸν.—Id. vii. 34.

¶ Ἡ ἅγια σύνοδος — τοῦτον μὲν καθαιρεῖ διὰ τὰ προσηγμένα πάντα, Μέμνονα δὲ ὡς σπυριγθὸν αἰσῶν.—Act. Syn. Eph. p. 380. Ὡς τῶν κατῶν ἡγέρνας καθελὲν ἠναγκάσθημεν.—Ibid. p. 320.

** Ἰωάννης δὲ καταβῶν τὴν Ἀντιόχειαν εἰς πολλοὺς συναγαγὼν ἐπισκόπους καθαιρεῖ Κύριλλον, ἧδη κατελιθῶτα τὴν Ἀλεξάνδρειαν.—Socr. vii. 34.

^k Cypr. Ep. 67; Soz. iii. 21; Socr. ii. 42.

[•] Ἐξωθήσαντες.—Socr. ii. 38; Theod. ii. 25; Sozom. iv. 24.

the bishop of Alexandria, and also by the bishop of Antioch."* Anatolius of Constantinople did reject Timotheus of Alexandria. Acacius, bishop of Constantinople, did reject Petrus Fullo.

3. St. Cyprian doth assert the power of censuring bisops, upon needful and just occasion, to belong to all bishops for maintenance of common faith, discipline, and peace.

"Therefore" (saith he, writing to Pope Stephanus himself), "dear brother, the body of bishops is copious, being coupled by the glue of concord, and the band of unity, that if any of our college shall attempt to frame a heresy, or to tear and spoil the flock of Christ, the rest may succour, and like useful and merciful shepherds, may gather together the sheep of our Lord into the flock."†

The like doctrine is that of Pope Celestine I. in his Epistle to the Ephesine synod.‡

In matter of faith any bishop might interpose judgment; Theophilus did proceed to condemn the Origenists without regard to the pope.¶

Epiphanius did demand satisfaction of John of Jerusalem.

4. This common right of bishops in some cases is confirmed by the nature of such censures, which consisted in disclaiming persons notoriously guilty of heresy, schism, or scandal; and in refusing to entertain communion with them :

* Ἐπειδὴν αὐτὸς ἐπισήλαθε τῇ ἀγιωτάτῃ ἐκκλησίᾳ μετὰ ἱφθόν — ἐξώσθη διὰ τοῦτο παρὰ τῶν ἁγίων Πατέρων παρὰ τε τοῦ διοικητοῦ τῆς βασιλευούσης Ῥώμης Διόντος, καὶ τοῦ μακαριστοῦ Φλαβιανοῦ — καὶ παρὰ τοῦ ἐν Ἀλεξανδρίᾳ, καὶ παρὰ τοῦ ἐν Ἀντιοχείᾳ. — Syn. Chalc. Act. xi. p. 405. Ὁ μακαριὸς ἐν ἁγίοις Φλαβιανὸς ἐξέωσατο αὐτὸν. — Ibid. p. 406; Baron. ann. 457, § 34; P. Felix. III. Ep. 4.

† Idcirco enim, frater charissime, copiosum corpus est sacerdotum, concordiaē mutuæ glutino atque unitatis vinculo copulatum, ut si quis ex collegio nostro hæresin facere, et gregem Christi lacere, et vastare tentaverit, subveniant cæteri, et quasi pastores utiles et misericordes oves Dom inicas in gregem colligant. — Cypr. Ep. 67. (ad Steph.)

‡ Ἀκούσθω ταῦτα παρὰ πάντων εἰς τὸ κοινὸν, κύριοι ἀδελφοί — ἐν ταύτῃ τῇ φροντίδι σφισσὶν οἱ πανταχοῦ καὶ ἀπὸ πᾶσαν οἰκουμένην τῇ ἐκείνων διαδοχῇ τὸ ὄνομα κυρίου κηρύττοντες — &c. Conc. Eph. Act. ii. p. 324. Τοιγαροῦν περισπούδαστὸν ἐστὶ, καὶ πρακτέον ὅπως καμᾶτω κοινῶς τὰ ἐμπιστευθέντα, καὶ διὰ τῆς ἀποστολικῆς διαδοχῆς ἕως τοῦ νῦν συσχεθέντα φυλάξωμεν. — Ibid. p. 325.

¶ Vide Hier. 67 et 78.

which every bishop, as entitled to the common interests of faith and peace, might do.*

5. Indeed in such a case every Christian had a right (yea an obligation) to desert his own bishop.† So John of Jerusalem having given suspicion of error in faith, St. Epiphanius did write letters to the monks of Palestine not to "communicate with him till they were satisfied of his orthodoxy."‡ Upon which account St. Jerome, living in Palestine, did decline communication with the patriarch thereof; asking him, if it "were any where said to him, or commanded, that without satisfaction concerning his faith, they were bound to maintain communion with him."|| So every bishop, yea every Christian, hath a kind of universal jurisdiction.

6. If any pope did assume more than was allowed in this case by the canons, or was common to other bishops of his rank, it was an irregularity and an usurpation. Nor would examples, if any were producible, serve to justify him, or to ground a right thereto, any more than the extravagant proceedings of other pragmatial and factious bishops, in the same kind (whereof so many instances can be alleged), can assert such a power to any bishop.§

7. When the pope hath attempted in this kind, his power hath been disavowed, as an illegal, upstart pretence.¶

8. Other bishops have taken upon them, when they apprehended cause, to

* Cypr. Ep. 67. — Ὅσοι παρὰ τοὺς ἐπὶ τῇ πίστει τῶν πατέρων τύπους διαπράττονται, ἑαυτοὺς ἐπάγουσι τὰ ἐκ τῶν κανόνων ἐπιτίμια. — Thalass. in Syn. Chalc. Act. i. p. 191. Ἐχρῆν γὰρ τὴν ὑμετέραν ἀγάπην μεμνημένην τῶν πατρικῶν παραδόσεων μηδένα συγχωρεῖν τὰ κεκωλυμένα ποιεῖν, ἀλλὰ καὶ εἴ τις τολμηρὸς φανείη πάσῃ δυνάμει ἐναντιοῦσθαι. — P. Agapet. ad Petr. Hier. (p. 24.)

† Εἰκότως ἡμεῖς ἐπιστάμενοι τὴν τῶν θεῶν κανόνων ἐκδίκησιν ἀρχιερεῶν μόνον ἀρμόρτειν, τῆς δὲ ἀρθῆς πίστεως οὐ μόνον ἱερωμένοις, ἀλλὰ καὶ παντὶ ὀρθοδόξῳ Χριστιανῷ. — Menas. (tom. iv. p. 10.) Plebs, &c. Deum metuens. — Cypr. Ep. 68; vide P. Nich. I. Ep. 8. (p. 506.)

‡ Cunctis monarchis ab eodem Epiphanio scripta venerunt, ut absque satisfactione fidei nullus ei temere communicaret. — Hier. Ep. 61. (ad Pammach.) cap. 15.

|| Alicubine dictum, aut tibi alicubi mandatum est, quod sine satisfactione fidei communionem tuam subiremus? — Ibid. Quod tibi non communicemus, fidei est. — Ibid. cap. 16.

§ Theophilus, John of Antioch, Dioscorus.

¶ Novam legem, &c. — Vide de Conc. Sard.

discard and depose popes. So did the oriental faction at Sardica depose Pope Julius for transgressing, as they supposed, the laws of the church, in fostering heretics and criminal persons condemned by synods. So did the synod of Antioch threaten deposition to the same pope. So did the patriarch Dioscorus make show to reject Pope Leo from communion. So did St. Hilary anathematize Pope Liberius.⁴

9. Popes, when there was great occasion, and they had a great mind to exert their utmost power, have not yet presumed by themselves, "without joint authority of synods," to condemn bishops.* So Pope Julius did not presume to depose Eusebius of Nicomedia, his great adversary, and so much obnoxious by his patronising Arianism. Pope Innocent did not censure Theophilus and his complices, who so irregularly and wrongfully had extruded St. Chrysostom, although much displeased with them; but endeavoured to get a general synod to do the business. Pope Leo I. (though a man of spirit and animosity sufficient) would not, without assistance of a synod, attempt to judge Dioscorus, who had so highly provoked him and given so much advantage against him, by favouring Eutyches, and persecuting the orthodox.

Indeed often we may presume that popes would have deposed bishops, if they had thought it regular, or if others commonly had received that opinion, so that they could have expected success in their attempting it. But they many times were angry when their horns were short, and shewed their teeth when they could not bite.

10. What has been done in this kind by popes jointly with others, or in synods (especially upon advantage, when the cause was just and plausible), is not to be ascribed to the authority of popes as such. It might be done with their influence, not by their authority: so the synod of Sardica (not Pope Julius) cashiered the enemies of Athanasius; so the synod of Chalcedon (not Pope Leo) deposed Dioscorus; so the Roman synod (not Pope Celestine) checked Nestorius;

* An qui in hominem imperatorem peccasse dicebatur, nulla interveniente synodo deici debuerunt?—*P. Gelas. I Ep. 13.*

⁴ Soz. iii. 11, 8; Evag. ii. 4; Hilar. fragm.

and that of Ephesus deposed him. The whole western synod (whereof he was president) had a great sway.*

11. If instances were arguments of right, there would be other pretenders to the deposing power. Particular bishops would have it, as we before shewed.

12. The people would have the power; for they have sometimes deposed popes themselves, with effect.

So of Pope Constantine, Platina telleth us, "at length he is deposed by the people of Rome, being very much provoked by the indignity of the matter.†

13. There are many instances of bishops being removed or deposed by the imperial authority. This power was indeed necessarily annexed to the imperial dignity; for all bishops being subjects of the emperor, he could dispose of their persons, so as not to suffer them to continue in a place, or to put them from it as they demeaned themselves, to his satisfaction or otherwise, in reference to public utility. It is reasonable, if they were disloyal or disobedient to him, that he should not suffer them to be in places of such influence, whereby they might pervert the people to disaffection. It is fit that he should deprive them of temporalities.

The example of Solomon deposing Abiathar.†

Constantine M. "commanded Eusebius and Theogonius to depart out of the cities over which they presided as bishops."‡

* Ἡ ἅγια Ῥωμαίων σὺνδοδος φανερὰ τετέλεται.—Cyril. ad Joh. Ant. Conc. Eph.—p. 197, 332; Syn. p. 11, 60. Ἀποστολικὸς θρόνος, καὶ ἡ σὺνδοξὸς αὐτοῦ.—Const. Sacr. in Syn. VI. p. 11. Ἀγάθων ἐπίσκοπος σὺν πάσαις ταῖς συνόδοις ταῖς ἀγκύραις τῆ συνόδου τοῦ ἀποστολικοῦ θρόνου.—*ibid.* p. 60. Ἀπάσης κατὰ δύσιν συνόδου.—Act. Eph. p. 332. Sit hæc in te fixa damnatio a me. et ab his qui sub me constituti episcopales sedes gubernare noscuntur.—*P. Felix ad Patres Antiochi. apud Baron. ann. 483, § 68.*

† Tandem a sede dejicitur a populo Romano ira et indignitate rei percito. *Plat. p. 223. P. Leo. VII. p. 291. Anastasius. Plat. p. 131.*

‡ Εὐσεβίου δὲ καὶ Θεογόνοιον φεβγείν προετίθει ὡς ἐπισκόπουσιν πόλεις.—Soz. i. 21. Τότε μὲν οὖν καθήρθσαν, καὶ τῶν πόλεων ἐξηλάθησαν.—Theodor. i. 20. He threatened Athanasius to depose him.—*ἐὰν γὰρ γνώ ὡς κεκώλυκας τινὰς αἰσῶν τῆ ἐκκλησίας μεταποιουμένους, ἢ ἀπειρξας τῆς αἰσῶν ἀποστολῶ παραχρῆμα τὸν καθαιρήσοντά σε ἐξ ἰσθῆσ λεύσεως, καὶ τῶν τόπων πεταστήσονται.*—*Socr. i. 27; Athanas. Apol. ii. p. 778.*

† 1 Kings ii. 35.

Constantius deposed Paulus of Constantinople.*

Constantius ejected all that would not subscribe to the creed of Ariminum.†

The Emperor Leo deposed Timotheus Elurus, for which Pope Leo did highly commend and thank him.‡

The emperors discarded divers popes. Constantius banished Pope Liberius, and caused another to be put in his room.

Oho put out John the Twelfth.

Justinian deposed Pope Silverius, and banished Pope Vigilius.‡

Justinian banished Anastasius, bishop of Antioch; extruded Anthimus of Constantinople, and Theodosius of Alexandria.‡

Neither indeed was any great patriarch effectually deposed without their power or leave.

Falvianus was supported by Theodosius against the pope.

Dioscorus subsisted by the power of Theodosius Junior.

The deposition of Dioscorus, in the synod of Chalcedon, was voted with a reserve of, "If it shall please our most sacred and pious lord."‡

In effect, the emperors deposed all bishops which were ordained beside their general laws; as Justinian, having prescribed conditions and qualifications concerning the ordinations of bishops, subjoineth, "But if any bishop be ordained without using our formentioned constitution, we command you that by all means he be removed from his bishopric."||

14. The instances alleged to prove the pope's authority in this case are inconcludent and invalid.

They allege the case of Marcianus, bishop of Arles; concerning whom

* Τὸν Παῦλον σχολάζειν ἐποίησεν.—Socr. ii. 7.

† Τὸν δὲ ἐκδοσιν τῆς ἀναγνωστικῆς ἐν Ἀρμίνω πίστεως ἐκέλευσεν εἰς τὰς περὶ Ἰταλίαν ἐκκλησίας ἐκπερῆσαι, προστάξας τοὺς μὴ βουλομένους ὑπογράψαι αὐτῇ, ἐξεῖσθαι τῶν ἐκκλησιῶν, καὶ εἰς τοὺς τόπους αὐτῶν ἑτέρους ἀντικαθίστασθαι.—Id. ii. 37.

‡ Εἰ παρασταίη τῷ θειοτάτῳ, καὶ ἐπιθεσάτω ἡμῶν δεσπότη. —Act. ii. p. 202.

|| Si quis autem citra memoratam observationem episcopus ordinetur, jubemus hunc omnibus modis episcopatu depelli.—Justin. Novell. cxiii. cap. 1.

* Evag. ii. 11; Lib. cap. 15; P. Leo I. Epist. 99.

† Lib. cap. 22.

‡ Evag. iv. 41, 11.

(for abetting Novatianism) St. Cyprian doth exhort Pope Stephanus, that he would direct letters to the bishops of Gaul and the people of Arles, that he being for his schismatical behaviour removed from communion, another should be substituted in his room.*

The Epistle grounding this argument is questioned by a great critic; but I willingly admit it to be genuine, seeing it hath the style and spirit of St. Cyprian, and suiteth his age, and I see no cause why it should be forged: wherefore, omitting that defence, I answer, that the whole matter, being seriously weighed, doth make rather against the pope's cause than for it; for if the pope had the sole or sovereign authority of rejecting bishops, why did the Gaulish bishops refer the matter to St. Cyprian?—why had Marcianus himself a recourse to him?

St. Cyprian doth not ascribe to the pope any peculiar authority of judgment or censure, but a common one, which himself could exercise, which all bishops might exercise: "It is" (saith he) "our part to provide and succour in such a case;" for "therefore is the body of priests so numerous," that—"by joint endeavour they may suppress heresies and schisms."‡

The case being such, St. Cyprian earnestly doth move Pope Stephanus to concur in exercise of discipline on that schismatic, and to prosecute effectually the business by his letters; persuading his fellow bishops in France, "that they would not suffer Marcianus to insult over the college of bishops"‡ (for to them it seemeth the transaction did immediately belong.)

To do thus St. Cyprian implieth and prescribeth to be the pope's special duty, not only out of regard to the common interest, but for his particular concernment

* Cypr. Ep. 67. Dirigantur in provinciam et ad plebem Arelate consistentem literæ, quibus abstento Marciano alius in ejus locum substituat —

† Cui rei nostrum est consulere, et subvenire —. Idcirco copiosum est corpus sacerdotum —. Quando ipse est ab universis sacerdotibus judicatus —.

‡ Facere te oportet plenissimas literas ad episcopos nostros in Galliis constitutos, ne ultra Marcianum collegio nostro insultare patiantur —.

in the case;* that schism having been first advanced against his predecessors.

St. Cyprian also (if we mark it) covertly doth tax the pope of negligence, in not having soon enough joined with himself and the community of bishops in censuring that delinquent.†

We may add, that the church of Arles and Gaul, being near Italy, the pope may be allowed to have some greater sway there, than elsewhere in more distant places; so that St. Cyprian thought his letters to quicken discipline there, might be proper and particularly effectual.

These things being duly considered, what advantage can they draw from this instance?—doth it not rather prejudice their cause, and afford a considerable objection against it?

We may observe that the strength of their argumentation mainly consisteth in the words *quibus abstento*; the which (as the drift of the whole Epistle, and parallel expressions therein do shew) do signify no more than *quibus efficiatur ut abstento*, which may procure him to be excommunicated; not *quæ contineant abstentionem*, which “contain excommunication,” as P. de Marca glosseth: although admitting that sense, it would not import much, seeing only thereby the pope would have signified his consent with other bishops: wherefore De Marca hath no great cause to blame us, than we do “not reprehend any magnificent thing in this place for the dignity of the papal see:” indeed he hath, I must confess, better eyes than I, who can see any such mighty things there for that purpose.

As for the substitution of another in the room of Marcianus, that was a consequent of the excommunication; and was to be the work of the clergy and people of the place; for when by common judgment of catholic bishops any bishop was rejected, the people did apply themselves to choose another.

I adjoin the resolution of a very learned writer of their communion, in these words:

“In this case of Marcianus, bishop of Arles, if the right of excommunication

* Multo magis tu —.

† Quod nedom videatur a nobis abstentus.

‡ Marc. vii. 1, 6.

did belong solely to the bishop of Rome, wherefore did Faustinus, bishop of Lyons, advertise Cyprian, bishop of Carthage, who was so far distant, concerning those very things touching Marcianus, which both Faustinus himself, and other bishops of the same province, had before sent word of to Stephen, bishop of Rome, who lived nearest, being moreover of all bishops the chief? It must either be said, that this was done because of Stephen's negligence; or, what is more probable, according to the discipline then used in the church, that all bishops of neighbouring places, but especially those presiding over the most eminent cities, should join their counsels for the welfare of the church, and that Christian religion might not receive the least damage in any of its affairs whatsoever: hence it was, that in the case of Marcianus, bishop of Arles, the bishop of Lyons writ letters to the bishop of Rome and Carthage; and again, that the bishop of Carthage, as being most remote, did write to the bishop of Rome, as being his brother and colleague, who by reason of his propinquity might more easily know and judge of the whole matter.”*

The other instances are of a later date (after the synod of Nice), and therefore of not so great weight; yea, their having none more ancient to produce, doth strongly make against the antiquity of this right; it being strange, that no memory should be of any deposed thereby for above three hundred years: but how-

* In hac Marciani episcopi Arelatensis causa si jus abstinendi sive excommunicandi competeat soli episcopo Romano, cur Faustinus episcopus Lugdunensis Cypriano episcopo Carthaginiensi longe dissito semel atque iterum significat ea de Marciano, quæ jam utique ipse Faustinus et alii ejusdem provincie episcopi nunciaverant Stephano proximiori, et omnium episcoporum principi? Dicendum igitur factum id fuisse aut per negligentiam Stephani; aut quod magis videtur, per disciplinam quæ tunc in ecclesia vigeat, ut omnes quidem in circumpositis locis, sed præsertim urbium clarissimarum episcopi in commune consulere ecclesiam viderentque ne quid detrimenti res Christiana catholica caperet. Itaque super isto Marcium Arelatensis facinore, Lugdunensem episcopum ad Romanum et Carthaginiensem dedisse literas, istum vero ut remotissimum dedisse vicissim suas ad Romanum, ut fratrem et collegam, qui in propinquo facilius posset de negotio et cognoscere et statuere.—*Rigalt. in Cypri.—Ep. 67.*

ever, such as they are, they do not reach home to the purpose.

They allege Flavianus, bishop of Antioch, deposed by Pope Damasus, as they affirm.* But it is wonderful they should have the face to mention that instance; the story in short being this: "The great Flavianus" (a most worthy and orthodox prelate, whom St. Chrysostom in his Statuary Orations doth so highly commend and celebrate) being substituted in the place of "Meletius by the quire of bishops,"* a party did adhere to Paulinus; and after his decease they set up Evagrius, ordaining him (as Theodoret, who was best acquainted with passages on that side of Christendom, reporteth) against many canons of the church.†

Yet with this party, the Roman bishops, "not willing to know any of these things" (three of them in order, Damasus, Siricius, Anastasius), did conspire, instigating the emperor against Flavianus, and reproaching him as "supporter of a tyrant against the laws of Christ."‡

But the emperor having called Flavianus to him, and received much satisfaction in his demeanour and discourse, did remand and settle him in his place: "The emperor," saith Theodoret, "wondering at his courage and his wisdom, did command him to return home, and to feed the church committed to him;"‡ at which proceeding, when the Romans afterward did grumble, the emperor gave them such reasons and advices, that they complied, and did entertain communion with Flavianus.

It is true, that upon their suggestions and clamours the emperor was moved at first to order that Flavianus should go to Rome, and give the western bishops satisfaction; but after that he understood the quality of his plea, he freed him of that trouble, and without their allowance settled him in his See.

Here is nothing of the pope's depos-

* Τῷ μεγάλῳ Φλαβιανῷ χαλεπαίνοντες — Theod.

† Ἄλλ' ὁμῶς τούτων οὐδὲν εἶδέναι θέλοντες τὴν Εὐαγγελίου μὲν κοινωνίαν ἠσπάζοντο, κατὰ Φλαβιανοῦ τῆς βασιλικῆς ἐκίνησαν ἀκοάς.—Theod. ib.

‡ Αὐτοῦ καὶ τὴν ἀνδρείαν καὶ τὴν σοφίαν θαυμάσας ὁ βασιλεὺς, τὴν ἐνεγκοῦσαν καταλαθεῖν, καὶ τὴν ἐγχειροθεῖσαν ποιμαίνειν ἐκκλησίαν ἐκέλευσεν.—Theod. ib.

* Bell. de Pont. R. ii. 18.

† Theod. 23; Socr. v. 15; Soz. viii. 3.

ing Flavianus; but of his embracing in a schism the side of a competitor, it being in such a case needful that the pope or any other bishop should choose with whom he must communicate, and consequently must disclaim the other; in which choice the pope had no good success, not deposing Flavianus, but vainly opposing him; wherefore this allegation is strangely impertinent, and well may be turned against them.

Indeed in this instance we may see how fallible that See was in their judgment of things, how rash in taking parties and fomenting discords, how pertinacious in a bad cause, how peevish against the common sense of their brethren (especially considering, that before this opposition of Flavianus, the Fathers of Constantinople had, in their letter to Pope Damasus and the occidental bishops, approved and commended him to them; highly asserting the legitimacy of his ordination;) in fine, how little their authority did avail with wise and considerate persons, such as Theodosius M. was.*

De Merca representeth the matter somewhat otherwise out of Socrates;† but take the matter as Socrates hath it, and it signifieth no more, than that both Theophilus and Damasus would not entertain communion with Flavianus, as being incapable of the episcopal order, for having violated his oath, and caused a division in the church of Antioch: what is this to judicial deposition? and how did Damasus more depose him than Theophilus, who upon the same dissatisfaction did in like manner forbear communion? whenas indeed a wiser and better man than either of them, St. Chrysostom, did hold communion with him, and did at length (saith Socrates, not agreeing with Theodoret) reconcile him to them both.

They allege the deposition of Nestorius. But who knoweth not, that he was for heretical doctrine deposed in and by a general synod? Pope Celestine did indeed threaten to withdraw his communion, if he did not renounce his error.‡

* Theod. v. 9. — οἷτε τῆς ἐπαρχίας, καὶ τῆς ἀνατολικῆς διοικήσεως συνδραμόντες κανονικῶς ἐχειροτόνησαν — ἦν περ ἔνθεσμον χειροτονίαν ἰδέξασα καὶ τὸ τῆς συνόδου κοινόν.

† Γινώσκω, ὅτι κῆτος τὴν ἡμετέραν κοινωνίαν ἔχειν οὐ δυνήσεται, ἢν μὴ — P. Celest. ad Cyril. in Conc. Eph. Act. p. 281. Παντελῶς ἀπὸ † Socr. v. 15; Marc. iii. 14, & 1.

But had not any other bishop sufficient authority to desert a perverter of the faith? Did not his clergy do the same, being commended by Pope Celestine for it? Did not Cyril in writing to Pope Celestine himself affirm, that he might before have declared that he could not communicate with him? Did Nestorius admit the pope's judgment? No; as the papal legates did complain, "he did not admit the constitution of the apostolical chair." Did the pope's sentence obtain effect? No, not any; for, notwithstanding his threats, Nestorius did hold his place till the synod; the emperor did severely rebuke Cyril for his fierceness (and implicitly the pope), and did order that no change should be made, till the synod should determine in the case; not regarding the pope's judgment: so that this instance may well be retorted, or used to prove the insignificance of papal authority then.

They allege also Dioscorus of Alexandria, deposed by Pope Leo: but the case is very like to that of Nestorius, and argueth the contrary to what they intend: he was, for his misdemeanours, and violent countenancing of heresy, solemnly in a general synod accused, tried, condemned, and deposed; the which had long before been done, if in the pope, his professed and provoked adversary, there had been sufficient power to effect it.

Bellarmino also allegeth Pope Sixtus III. deposing Polycronius, bishop of Jerusalem: but no such Polycronius is to be found in the registers of bishops then, or in the histories of that busy time, between the two great synods of Ephesus and Chalcedon; and the acts of Sixtus, upon which this allegation is grounded, have so many inconsistencies, and smell

τοῦ συνεδρίου ἡμῶν, καὶ τῆς τῶν Χριστιανῶν συνόδου ἀπεκλείσθη, ἂν μὴ εὐθὺς τὰ κακῶς εἰρημένα ὑπὸ σοῦ διορθωθῆ.—Ibid. Epist. ad Nest. p. 186. Ἀπὸ τῆς ἡμετέρας κοινωνίας ἀποχωρίζομεν.—(ad Joh. Ant. p. 196.)

* Μακαρία δὲ ὅμως ἡ ἀγάπη, ἢ παρῶσθεν ὁ κύριος κρίνειν περὶ τῆς ἰδίας νομῆς.—P. Celest. ad Clerum, &c. Const. Act. Eph. p. 190.

† Εγὼ δὲ ἠμολογῶ καὶ τοὶ βουλευθεῖς συνοδικῶ γράμματι φανερὸν αὐτῷ καταστήσαι, ὅτι ταῦτα λέγοντι καὶ φρονοῦντι κοινωνεῖν οὐ δυνάμεθα.—Cyril. Ep. ad Celest. Act. Eph. p. 177.

‡ Τὸν τύπον τῆς ἀποστολικῆς καθέδρας οὐκ ἰδέατο.—Conc. Eph. Act. iii. p. 331; vide Theod. 2, Epist. in Conc. Eph. p. 224, 226.

so rank of forgery, that no conscionable nose could endure them; and any "prudent man," as Binius himself confesseth, would assert them to be spurious." Wherefore Baronius himself doth reject and despise them; who gladly would lose no advantage for his master.* Yet Pope Nicholas I. doth precede Bellarmine in citing this trash; no wonder, that being the pope who did avouch the wares of Isidore Mercator.

They allege Timotheus, the usurper of Alexandria, deposed by Pope Damasus; and they have indeed the sound of words attesting to them: "These are heads upon which the B. Damasus deposed the heretics Apolinarius, Vitalius, and Timotheus."*

The truth is, that Apolinarius, with divers of his disciples, in a great synod at Rome, at which Petrus, bishop of Alexandria, together with Damasus, was present, was condemned and disavowed for heretical doctrine; whence Sozomensai th, that "the Apolinarian heresy was by Damasus and Peter, at a synod at Rome, voted to be excluded from the Catholic church."†

On which account, if we conclude that the pope had an authority to depose bishops, we may by like reason infer that every patriarch and metropolitan had a power to do the like; there being so many instances of their having condemned and disclaimed bishops supposedly guilty of heresy; as particularly John of Antioch, with his convention of oriental bishops, did pretend to depose Cyril and Memnon, as guilty of the same Apolinarian heresy;—alleging that to† "exscind them was the same thing as to settle orthodoxy." The which deposition was at first admitted by the emperor.

* Ταῦτά ἐστι τὰ κεφάλαια ἐφ' οἷς ὁ τρικακᾶριος Δάμασος καθεῖλεν Ἀπολιναρίου, καὶ Βιτάλιου, καὶ Τιμόθεον τοὺς αἰρετικούς.—Orient. Act. ad Rufum. apud Bin. p. 396.

† Μαθῶν οὖν ταύτην τὴν αἴρεσιν εἰς πολλοὺς ἔπειν πρῶτος Δάμασος ὁ Ῥωμαίων ἐπίσκοπος, καὶ Πέτρος ὁ Ἀλεξανδρείας, συνόδου γενομένης ἐν Ῥώμῃ ἀλλοτρίαν τῆς καθόλου ἐκκλησίας ἐψηφίσαντο.—Soz. vi. 25.

‡ Τὸ γὰρ τοῦτους ἐκφέρειν οὐδὲν ἕτερον ἐστὶν ἢ ἠεροδοξίαν στήσαι.—Relat. Orient. ad Imp. in Act. Eph. p. 380. "Ὅθεν καὶ νῦν τὴν γνωρισθεῖσαν παρὰ Εὐσεβείας ἡμῶν Νεστορίου, καὶ Κυρίλλου, καὶ Μιμόνονος καθαίρεσιν ἰδεξάμεθα.—Act. p. 385.

* Baron. ann. 433. § 38, 39; P. Nich. I. Epist. 8. (ad Mich.)

* Fac. Herm. p. 150.

The next instance is of Pope Agapetus (in Justinian's time, for so deep into time is Bellarmine fain to dive for it) deposing Anthimus, bishop of Constantinople.^a But this instance being scanned, will also prove slender and lame. The case was this: Anthimus having deserted his charge at Trabisonde, did creep into the see of Constantinople (a course then held irregular and repugnant to the canons), and withal he had imbibed the Eutychian heresy. Yet for his support he had wound himself into the favour of the Empress Theodora, a countenancer of the Eutychian sect.—Things standing thus, Pope Agapetus (as an agent from Rome to crave succour against the Goths, pressing and menacing the city) did arrive at Constantinople. Whereupon the empress desired of him to salute and consort with Anthimus.* But he, by petitions of the monks, &c., understanding how things stood, did refuse to do so, except Anthimus “would return to his own charge, and profess the orthodox doctrine.” Thereupon the emperor joined with him to extrude Anthimus from Constantinople, and to substitute Menas. “He” (say the monks in their libel of request to the emperor) “did justly thrust this Anthimus from the episcopal chair of this city; your grace affording aid and force both to the Catholic faith and the divine canons.”† The act of Agapetus was (according to his share in the common interest) to declare Anthimus, in his judgment, incapable of Catholic communion and of episcopal function by reason of his heretical opinions, and his transgression of ecclesiastical orders;‡ which moved Justinian effectually to depose and extrude him: “You” (say they) “fulfilling that which he justly and canon-

* Denique petentibus principibus, ut Anthimum papa in salutatione et communicatione susciperet; ille fieri inquit posse, si se libello Probaret orthodoxum, et ad cathedram suam reverteretur.—*Lib.* cap. 21. Τὰ κατὰ τῆς ἐκκλησίας ἀθέτητος τομώμενα λαθῶν —. *Libell. Monach.* p. 7.

† Ἄλλὰ τοῦτον δικαίως ἐξωθήσας τοῦ τῆς δὲ τῆς πόλεως ἱερατικοῦ θρόνου, συνεπαρμυνοῦσης, καὶ συνεπισχούσης τῆς καθολικῆς πίστεως καὶ τοῖς θεοῖς κανόσι τῆς ἡμετέρας εὐσεβείας —. *Ibid.* Et Syn. Decr. p. 43; Imper. Sanct. p. 128.

‡ Ἀποφηνάμενος — μήτε καθολικοῦ μήτε ἱερέως αὐτὸν εἶχειν τὸ ὄνομα.—Synod. Dec. p. 43.

^a Ann. 536. Vict. Tun.

^b Evag. iv. 10.

ically did judge, and by your general edict confirming it; and forbidding that hereafter such things should be attempted—.”* And Agapetus himself saith, that it was done by “the apostolical authority, and the assistance of the most faithful emperors.”† The which proceeding was completed by decree of the synod under Menas, and that again was confirmed by the imperial sanction. Whence Evagrius, reporting the story, doth say, concerning Anthimus and Theodosius of Alexandria, that “because they did cross the emperor's commands, and did not admit the decrees of Chalcedon, they both were expelled from their sees.”‡

It seemeth by some passages in the Acts, that before Agapetus's intermeddling, the monks^d and orthodox bishops^e had condemned and rejected Anthimus; according to the common interest, which they assert all Christians to have in regard to the common faith.

As for the substitution of Menas, it was performed “by the choice and suffrage of the emperor, the clergy, nobles, and people conspiring;”|| the pope only (which another bishop might have done) ordaining or consecrating him: “Then” (saith Liberatus) “the pope by the emperor's favour did ordain Menas bishop, consecrating him with his hand.”§

And Agapetus did glory in this,¶ as being the first ordination made of an eastern bishop by the hands of a pope: “And this” (said the pope) “we conceive doth add to his dignity, because the eastern church, never since the time of the Apostle Peter, did receive any bishop be-

* Τὰ οὖν παρ' ἐκείνου δικαίως καὶ κανονικῶς κεκριμένα πληροῦντες, καὶ διὰ γενικῆς ὁμῶν νομοθεσίας κυροῦντες, καὶ τὰ τοιαῦτα τοῦ λοιποῦ τολμᾶσθαι ἀπαγορεύοντες —.

† Τῆς δὲ ἐν Κωνσταντινουπόλει λαθέρως τὴν ἔθριν βοηθούτος τοῦ Θεοῦ, τῆ ἀποστολικῆ αὐθεντίας, καὶ τῶν πιστοτάτων βασιλέων τῇ βοήθειᾳ διορθώσαμεν.—p. 24.

‡ Ὅμως δ' οὖν ὡς ἀντικρὸ τῶν (1. ἀντὶ κῶν τοῦ) βασιλέως κελουμάτων ἰόντες, καὶ μὴ δεχόμενοι τὰ ἐν Χαλκηδόνι συνθετεμένα ἀμφὶ τῶν οἰκείων ἐξελαθῆνθαι θρόνων.—Evag. iv. 11.

|| Κατ' ἐκλογὴν καὶ ψήφον τῶν εὐσεβεστάτων ἡμῶν βασιλέων, καὶ τοῦ εὐαγοῦς τῆσδε τῆς ἀγιωτάτης ἐκκλησίας κλήρου —.

§ Tunc papa principis favore Menam pro eo ordinavit antistitem, consecrans eum manu sua —. *Lib.* cap. 21.

¶ Ὡς τινι τῶν γαληνοτάτων βασιλέων ἐπεγέλασεν ἢ ἐπιλογῆ — Act. p. 24.

^d P. 10.

^e P. 16.

side him, by the imposition of hands of those who sat in this our chair.”*

If we compare the proceedings of Agapetus against Anthimus, with those of Theophilus against St. Chrysostom, they are (except the cause and qualities of persons) in all main respects and circumstances so like, that the same reason, which would ground a pretence of universal jurisdiction to one, would infer the same to the other.

Baronius allegeth Acacius, bishop of Constantinople, deposed by Pope Felix III.† But Pope Gelasius asserteth, that any bishop might, in execution of the canons, have disclaimed Acacius as a favourer of heretics. And Acacius did not only refuse to submit to the pope's jurisdiction, but slighted it.‡ And the pope's act was but an attempt, not effectual; for Acacius died in possession of his See.

VIII. If popes were sovereigns of the church, they could effectually, whenever they should see it just and fit, absolve; § restore any bishop excommunicated from the church, or deposed from his office by ecclesiastical censure: for relief of the oppressed, or clemency to the distressed, are noble flowers in every sovereign crown.

Wherefore the pope doth assume this power, and reserveth it to himself as his special prerogative: “It is” (says Baronius) “a privilege of the church of Rome only that a bishop deposed by a synod may, without another synod of a greater number, be restored by the pope;”|| and Pope Gelasius I. says,

* Καὶ τοῦτο δὲ πιστέομεν τῇ αὐτοῦ ἀξίᾳ προσηλθῆναι, ὅτι περὶ ἐκ τῶν χρόνων τοῦ ἀποστόλου Πέτρου σὺδὲνα ἄλλον ὁλοκλήρως ἐκκλησία ἀνατολικὴ ἐδέξατο ἐπίσκοπον ταῖς χερσὶ τῆς ἡμετέρας καθέδρας χειροτονηθέντα. — Ibid.

† Ad cujus præcipue vocatus examen vel venire vel mittere non curavit.—*Gelas. Ep. 13.*

‡ When a bishop was unjustly censured upon malice or mistake — when he did repent of his error or miscarriage — when the case would upon any account bear favour or pity

|| Privilegium quidem solius ecclesiæ Romanæ esse reperitur, ut depositus a synodo episcopus absque alia synodo majoris numeri restitui possit per Romanum pontificem.—*Baron. ann. 449, § 127.*

† Baron. ann. 484, § 19; vide P. Felic. III. Ep. 6; P. Gelas. Ep. 4.

“That the See of St. Peter the apostle has a right of loosing whatever the sentences of other bishops have bound.*

—That the apostolic see, according to frequent ancient custom, had a power, no synod preceding, to absolve those whom a synod had unjustly condemned, and without a council to condemn those who deserved it.”†

It was an old pretence of popes, that bishops were not condemned, except the pope did consent, renouncing communion with them. So Pope Vigilus saith of St. Chrysostom and Flavianus, that “although they were violently excluded, yet were they not looked upon as condemned, because the bishops of Rome always inviolably kept communion with them.”‡

And before him Pope Gelasius saith, that “the pope, by not consenting to the condemnation of Athanasius, Chrysostom, Flavianus, did absolve them.”||

But such a power of old did not belong to him. For,

1. There is not extant any ancient canon of the church, nor apparent footsteps of custom, allowing such a power to him.

2. Decrees of synods (*provincial* in the former times, and *diocesan* afterwards) were inconsistent with, or repugnant to such a power; for judgments concerning episcopal causes were deemed irrevocable, and appointed to be so by decrees of divers synods; and consequently no power was reserved to the pope of thwarting them by restitution of any bishop condemned in them.

3. The apostolical canons (which at least serve to prove or illustrate ancient custom), and divers synodical decrees, did prohibit entertaining communion with any person condemned or rejected by

* Quorumlibet sententiis ligata pontificum sedis B. Petri apostoli jus habet resolvendi.—*P. Gel. I. Ep. 13.*

† Sedes apostolica frequenter more majorum, etiam sine ulla synodo præcedente et absolvendi quos synodus inique damnaverat, et dammandi nulla existente synodo quos oportuit habuit facultatem. — *P. Gelas. I. Ep. 13.*

‡ Qui licet violenter exclusi sunt, non tamen pro damnatis sunt habiti, eo quod semper inviolatam eorum communionem Rom. pontifices servaverant.—*P. Vigilus in Constit. Athan. &c.*

|| Quem (Johannem Chrys.) sedes apostolica etiam sola, quia non consensit, absolvit.—*P. Gelas. Ep. 3.*

canonical judgment, without exception or reservation of power of infringing or relaxing that prohibition; and Pope Gelasius himself says, "That he who had polluted himself by holding communion with a condemned person, did partake of his condemnation."*

4. Whence in elder times popes were opposed and checked when they offered to receive bishops rejected in particular synods. So St. Cyprian declared the restitution of Basilides by Pope Stephanus to be null.^f So the Fathers of the Antiochene synod did reprehend Pope Julius for admitting Athanasius and Marcellus to communion, or avowing them for bishops, after their condemnation by synods. And the oriental bishops of Sardica did excommunicate the same pope for communicating with the same persons. Which instances do shew, that the pope was not then, undoubtedly, or according to common opinion, endowed with such a power.

But whereas they do allege some instances of such a power, I shall premise some general considerations apt to clear the business, and then apply answers to the particular allegations.

1. Restitution commonly doth signify no more than acknowledging a person (although rejected by undue sentence) to be *de jure* worthy of communion and capable of the episcopal office; upon which may be consequent an obligation to communicate with him, and to allow him his due character: according to the precept of St. Paul, *Follow righteousness, faith, charity, peace, with them that call upon the Lord with a pure heart.*^g

This may be done when any man notoriously is persecuted for the truth and righteousness. Or when the iniquity and malice of pretended judges are apparent, to the oppression of innocence. Or when the process is extremely irregular: as in the cases of Athanasius, of St. Chrysostom—And this is not an

act of jurisdiction, but of equity and charity, incumbent on all bishops: and there are promiscuous instances of bishops practising it. Thus Socrates saith, that Maximus, bishop of Jerusalem, "did restore communion and dignity to Athanasius."* And so Cyril of Alexandria, and John of Antioch, being reconciled and reduced to a good understanding of each other, "did restore to each other their Sees,"† rescinding the censures, which in heat they had denounced each on other. Which sheweth that restitution is not always taken for an act of jurisdiction, wherein one is superior to another; for those persons were in rank and power co-ordinate.

2. Restitution sometime doth import no more than a considerable influence toward the effects of restoring a person to communion or office; no judicial act being exercised about the case: "The emperor writing that Paulus and Athanasius should be restored to their Sees, availed nothing."‡ That was a restitution without effect.

Thus a pope's avowing the orthodoxy, or innocence, or worth of a person, after a due information about them (by reason of the pope's eminent rank in the church, and the regard duly had to him), might sometimes much conduce to restore a person; and might obtain the name of restitution by an ordinary scheme of speech.

3. Sometimes persons said to be restored by popes are also said to be restored by synods, with regard to such instance or testimony of popes in their behalf. In which case the judicial restitution, giving right of recovery and completion thereto, was the act of the synod.||

4. When cases were driven to a legal debate, popes could not effectually resolve without a synod, their single acts not being held sufficiently valid. So, not-

* 'Αποδίδοσι καὶ αὐτοὺς τὴν κοινωνίαν Ἀθανασίῳ καὶ τὴν ἀξίαν.—Socr. ii. 24.

† Ἀλλήλοις τοὺς θρόνους ἀπέδοσαν.—Socr. vii. 33.

‡ Γράψαντος τοῦ βασιλέως, ὥστε ἀποδοθῆναι Παύλῳ καὶ Ἀθανασίῳ τοὺς οἰκείους θρόνους, οὐδὲν πλέον ἠνέβη.—Ibid. ii. 20.

|| Note.—It is an ordinary style of votes in synods for the restitution of a bishop, *I restore*.—Vide *Conc. Chalced.* Act. i. p. 165. That is, I give my vote for his restitution.

* *Damnati hominis communione pollutus, damnationis ejus factus est particeps.—P. Gelas. Ep. 13. (p. 640.)*

^f *Can. Apost. 10, 11, 12, 13; Conc. Nic. Can. 5; Sard. 16, 17; Cod. Afr. 9; Conc. Antioch. 6, 15; Evag. ii. 4.*

^g *Cyp. Ep. 68.*

^h *2 Tim. ii. 22.*

withstanding the declarations of Pope Julius in favour of Athanasius, for the effectual resolution of his case, the great synod of Sardica was convened. So whatever Pope Innocent I. did endeavour, he could not restore St. Chrysostom without a general synod.

Nor could Pope Leo restore Flavianus, deposed in the second Ephesine synod, without convocation of a general synod, the which he did so often sue for to the Emperor Theodosius, for that purpose. Pope Simplicius affirmed, that Petrus Moggus, "having been by a common decree condemned as an adulterer" (or usurper of the Alexandrian See), "could not, without a common council, be freed from condemnation."*

5. Particular instances do not ascertain right to the person who assumeth any power; for busybodies often will exceed their bounds.

6. Emperors did sometimes restore bishops. Constantine, as he did banish Eusebius of Nicomedia and others, so he did revoke and restore them;^b so says Socrates, "They were recalled from banishment by the emperor's command, and received their churches."[†] Theodosius did assert to Flavianus his right, whereof the popes did pretend to deprive him; which did amount to a restitution (at least to the Romanists, who do assert Flavianus to be deposed by the popes.) Instantius and Priscillianus were, by the rescript of the Emperor Gratianus, restored to their churches."[‡] Justinian did order Pope Silverius to be restored, in case he could prove his innocence.

7. Commonly restitution was not effectual without the emperor's consent; whence Theodoret, although allowed by the great synod, did acknowledge his re-

* Oportebat communi decreto damnatum tanquam adulterum communi concilio damnatione liberari.—*Lib.* cap. 18.

[†] Ἀνεκλήθησαν τε τῆς ἐξορίας ἐκ βασιλικῆς προτάγματος, καὶ τὰς ἐκκλησίας ἑαυτῶν ἀπέλαβον.—*Soc.* i. 14.

[‡] Rescriptum eliciunt, quo calcatis quæ prius decreta erant, restitui ecclesiis jubebantur: hoc freti Instantius et Priscillianus repetivere Hispanias.—*Sulp. Sev.* ii. 63. Revocari Romanam Silverium jussit, et de literis illis judicium fieri, ut—si falsæ fuissent probatæ, restituere-tur sedi suæ.—*Liberat. Breviar.* cap. 22.

^b *Theod.* v. 23.

stitution especially due to the emperor — as we shall see in reflecting on his case —

Now, to the particular instances produced for the pope, we answer :

1. They pretend that Pope Stephanus did restore Basilides and Martialis, Spanish bishops, who had been deposed; for which they quote St. Cyprian's Epistle, where he says, "Basilides going to Rome imposed upon our colleague, Stephen, who lived a great way off, and was ignorant of the truth of the matter; seeking unjustly to be restored to his bishopric, from which he had justly been deposed."*

But we answer : the pope did attempt such a restitution by way of influence and testimony, not of jurisdiction; wherefore the result of his act, in St. Cyprian's judgment, was null and blameable; which could not be so deemed if he had acted as a judge; for a favourable sentence, passed by just authority, is valid, and hardly liable to censure.[†] The clergy of those places, notwithstanding that pretended restitution, did conceive those bishops incapable; and did request the judgment of St. Cyprian about it; which argueth the pope's judgment not to have been peremptory and prevalent then in such cases. St. Cyprian denieth the pope, or any other person, to have power of restoring in such a case; and exhorteth the clergy to persist "in declining the communion of those bishops."[‡] Well doth Rigaltius ask, why they should write to St. Cyprian, if the judgment of Stephanus was decisive;|| and he addeth,

* Romam pergens Stephanum collegam nostrum longe positum, et gestæ rei ac tacitæ veritatis ignarum fefellit, ut exambiret reponi se injuste in episcopatum, de quo fuerat juste depositus.—*Cypr. Ep.* 68.

[†] — quare esti aliquid de collegis nostris extiterunt, qui deificam disciplinam negligendam putant —. (Nec censuræ congruit sacerdotum mobilis atque inconstantis animi levitate reprehendi.—*Id.* Ep. 55.) episcopatum gerere, et sacerdotium Dei administrare non oportere. Desiderastis solitudinem vestram vel solatio vel auxilio sententiæ nostræ sublevari. Nec personam in ejusmodi rebus accipere, aut aliquid cuiquam largiri potest humana indulgentia; ubi intercedit et legem tribuit divina præscriptio.

[‡] — quantum possumus adhortamur, ne vos cum profanis et maculatis sacerdotibus communicatione sacrilega misceatis.

|| Sed cur ad Cyprianum si potestas infinita penes Romanum?—*Rigalt.* *ibid.*

that indeed "the Spaniards did appeal from the Roman bishop to him of Carthage."* No wonder, seeing the pope had no greater authority, and probably St. Cyprian had the fairer reputation for wisdom and goodness. Considering which things, what can they gain by this instance? which indeed doth considerably make against them.

2. They allege the restitution of Athanasius, and of others linked in cause with him, by Pope Julius. "He," says Sozomen, "as having the care of all by reason of the dignity of his See, restored to each his own church."†

I answer, the pope did not restore them judicially, but declaratively; that is, declaring his approbation of their right and innocence, did admit them to communion. Julius in his own defence did allege, that Athanasius was not legally rejected;‡ so that, without any prejudice to the canons, he might receive him; and the doing it upon this account, plainly did not require any act of judgment.

Nay, it was necessary to avow those bishops as suffering in the cause of the common faith. Besides, the pope's proceeding was taxed, and protested against as irregular; nor did he defend it by virtue of a general power that he had judicially to rescind the acts of synods. And, lastly, the restitution of Athanasius and the other bishops had no complete effect, till it was confirmed by the synod of Sardica, backed by the imperial authority; which in effect did restore them. This instance, therefore, is in many respects deficient as to their purpose.

3. They produce Marcellus being restored by the same Pope Julius.†

But that instance, beside the forementioned defects, hath this, that the pope was grievously mistaken in the case; whence St. Basil much blameth him for his proceeding therein.‡

4. They cite the restitution of Eusta-

* — datus ad Cyprianum literis appellaverit Carthaginiensem adversus Romanum.—*Bigalt.*

† Όλα δὲ πάντων κηδεμονίας αὐτῷ προσηκούσης διὰ τὴν ἀξίαν τοῦ θρόνου, ἐκάστω τὴν ἰδίαν ἐκκλησίαν ἀπέδωκε.—*Soz.* iii. 8.

‡ Ὡς ἁποδόξους αὐτοὺς εἰς κοινωνίαν προσήγατο.—*Soz.* iii. 8; *Julii Epist. apud Ath. in Apol.* 2. *Soer.* i. 36. *Bas. Ep.* 10.

thius (bishop of Sebastia) by Pope Liberius, out of an Epistle of St. Basil, where he says, "What the most blessed bishop Liberius proposed to him, and to what he consented, we know not; only that he brought a letter to be restored, and upon shewing it to the synod at Tyana, was restored to his See."*†

I answer, that restitution was only from an invalid deposition by a synod of Arians at Melitine;‡ importing only an acknowledgment of him, upon approbation of his faith professed by him at Rome; the which had such influence to the satisfaction of the diocesan synod at Tyana, that he was restored. Although indeed the Romans were abused by him, he not being sound in faith; for "he now" (saith St. Basil) "doth destroy that faith for which he was received."——†

5. They adjoin, that Theodoret was restored by Pope Leo I.; for in the Acts of the synod of Chalcedon it is said, that‡ "he did receive his place from the bishop of Rome."

I answer, the act of Leo did consist in an approbation of the faith, which Theodoret did profess to hold; and a reception of him to communion thereupon;|| which he might well do, seeing the ground of Theodoret's being disclaimed was a misprision, that he (having opposed Cyril's writings, judged orthodox) did err in faith, consenting with Nestorius.

Theodoret's state before the second Ephesine synod is thus represented in the words of the emperor: "Theodoret, bishop of Cyrus, whom we have before commanded to mind only his own church, we charge not to come to the holy synod, before the whole synod being met, it shall seem good to them that he come and bear his part in it."§

* Τίνα μὲν ἐστὶν ἡ προεβλήθη αὐτῷ παρὰ τοῦ μακαριωτάτου ἐπισκόπου Λιβερίου, τίνα δὲ αὐτὸς συνέθετο ἀγνοοῦμεν· πλὴν ὅτι ἐπιστολὴν ἐπέμισεν ἀποκαθιστῶσαν αὐτὸν, ἣν ἀποδείξας τῇ κατὰ Τύανα συνόδῳ ἀποκατέστη τῷ τόπῳ.— *Bas. Ep.* 74.

† Οὗτος νῦν πορθεῖ τὴν πίστιν, ἐφ' ἣ ἐδέχθη.—*Id.*

‡ Τὸν οἰκτεῖον ἀπολαθῶν τόπον παρὰ τοῦ ἀγιωτάτου ἀρχιεπισκόπου τῆς μεγαλωνύμου Ἐφέμης.— *Act.* i. p. 53.

|| Εἰς κοινωνίαν ἐδέξατο.— *Syn. Chalc. Act.* viii. p. 368.

§ Θεοδώρητον μὲν τοι τὸν ἐπίσκοπον τῆς Κύρου πάλαι, ὃν ἤδη ἐκελεύσαμεν τῇ ἰδίᾳ αὐτοῦ μόνῃ ἐκκλησίᾳ σχολάζειν, θεσπίζομεν μὴ πρότερον ἐλθεῖν εἰς τὴν
* *Soz.* iv. 24.

He was not perfectly deposed, as others were, who had others substituted in their places. He was deposed by the Ephesine synod.*

The pope was indeed ready enough to assume the patronage of so very learned and worthy a man, who in so very suppliant and respectful a way had addressed to him for succour; for whom doth not courtship mollify? And the majority of the synod (being inflamed against Dioscorus and the Etychian party) was ready enough to allow what the pope did in favour of him. Yet a good part of the synod (the bishop of Egypt, of Palestine, of Illyricum), notwithstanding the pope's restitution (that is, his approbation in order thereto), did stickle against his admission into the synod; "Crying out, Have pity on us; the faith is destroyed; the canons proscribe this man, cast him out, cast out Nestorius's master."† So that the imperial agents were fain to compromise the business, permitting him to sit in the synod, as one whose case was dependent, but not in the notion of one absolutely restored. "Theodoret's presence shall prejudice no man, each one's right of impleading being reserved both to you and him."‡

He therefore was not entirely restored, till upon a clear and satisfactory profession of his faith he was acquitted by the judgment of the synod. The effectual restitution of him proceeded from the emperor, who repealed the proceedings against him; as himself doth acknowledge: "All these things" (says he) "has the most just emperor evacuated||—to these things he premised the redressing my injuries;,"§ and the impe-

ἀγίαν σύνοδον, ἐὰν μὴ πάση ἀγίᾳ συνόδῳ συνελθοῦσα δέξῃ καὶ αὐτὸν παραγενεσθαι, καὶ κοινῶν γενέσθαι τῆς αὐτῆς ἀγίας συνόδου.—Imp. Theod. Epist. ad Diosc. in Syn. Chalc. Act. i. p. 53.

* Pro Theodoretō autem et Eusebio nullus ordinatus est.—*Liberat.* 12; *vide* Conc. Chalc. part. iii. p. 490. Excludi vero ab episcopatu, &c. in imperatoris.—*Theod. rescript.*

† Ἐξεῖς ἦσαν, ἐλεήσατε, ἢ πίστις ἀπόλλυται, οἱ κανόνες τοῦτον ἐκβάλλουσιν, τοῦτον ἐξω βάλε, τὸν διδάσκον Νεστορίου ἐξω βάλε.—*Id.* p. 54.

‡ Πρόκριμα ἀπὸ τοῦ παρεῖναι Θεοδώρητον οὐδὲν γενήσεται, φυλαττομένου δηλονότι μετὰ ταῦτα παντὸς λόγου καὶ ἡμῖν, καὶ ἐκείνῳ.—*Ibid.*

|| Ἄλλὰ ταῦτα πάντα λελυκεν ὁ δικαιοτάτος βασιλεὺς.—*Id.* Ep. 139. (ad Asperam.)

§ Προτέθηκε τοῦτοις τῆς ἡμετέρας ἀδικίας τὴν ἴασην.—*Ep.* 138. (ad Anatol.)

rial judges in the synod of Chalcedon join the emperor in the restitution—"Let the most reverend Theodoret enter, and bear his part in the synod; since the most holy archbishop Leo and sacred emperor have restored his bishopric to him."* Hence it may appear that the pope's restitution of Theodoretus was only opinative, dough baked, incomplete; so that it is but a slim advantage which their pretence can receive from it.

IX. It belongeth to sovereigns to receive *appeals* from all lower judicatures, for the final determination of causes; so that no part of his subjects can obstruct resort to him, or prohibit his revision of any judgment.

This power, therefore, the pope doth most stiffly assert to himself. At the synod of Florence, this was the first and great branch of authority, which he did demand of the Greeks explicitly to avow:—"He will" (said his three cardinals to the emperor) "have all the privileges of his church, and that appeals be made to him."† When Pope Alexander III. was advised not to receive an appeal in Becket's case, he replied in that profane allusion: "This is my glory, which I will not give to another."‡ He hath been wont to encourage all people, even upon the slightest occasions, *iter arripere* (as the phrase is obvious in their canon law), to run with all haste to his audience; "Concerning appeals for the smallest causes we would have you hold, that the same defence is to be given them for how slight a matter soever they be made, as if they were for a greater."|| See, if you please, in Gratian's Decree, Caus. ii. quæst 6, where many papal decrees (most indeed drawn out of the spurious epistles of ancient popes, but ratified by their successors, and obtaining for

* Εἰσίτω καὶ ὁ εὐλαβεστάτος Θεοδώρητος κοινῶσιν τῇ συνόδῳ, ἐπειδὴν καὶ ἀπεκατέστησεν αὐτῷ τὴν ἐπισκοπὴν ὁ ἀγιώτατος ἀρχιεπίσκοπος Λέων, καὶ θεοῦ βασιλεὺς.—*Act.* i. p. 53.

† Θέλει τὰ προνόμια πάντα τῆς ἐκκλησίας αὐτοῦ, καὶ θέλει ἔχειν τὴν ἐκκλησίαν.—*Syn. Flor. sess.* xxv. p. 846.

‡ Hæc est gloria mea, quam alteri non dabo.

|| De appellationibus pro minimis causis volumus te tenere, quod eis pro quacunque levi causa fiant, non minus est, quam si pro majoribus fierent, deferendum. *Alex. III. Ep. ad Vigorn. Episc. in Decret. Greg. lib. ii. tit. 28, cap. 11.*

current law) are made for appeals to the See of Rome.¹

It was indeed one of the most ancient encroachments, and that which did serve most to introduce the rest; inferring hence a title to an universal jurisdiction: "They are the canons," says Pope Nicholas I., "which will that all appeals of the whole church be brought to the examination of this See, and have decreed that no appeal be made from it, and that thus she judge of the whole church; but herself goes to be judged by none other;"* and the same pope, in another of his Epistles, says, "The holy statutes and venerable decrees have committed the causes of bishops, as being weighty matters, to be determined by us—."† "As the synod has appointed and usage requires, let greater and difficult cases be always referred to the apostolic see," says Pope Pelagius II.‡ "They are the canons which will have the appeals of the whole church tried by this See," saith Pope Gelasius I.||

But this power is upon various accounts unreasonable, grievous, and vexatious to the church; as hath been deemed, and upon divers occasions declared, by the ancient Fathers, and grave persons in all times; upon accounts not only blaming the horrible abuse of appeals, but implying the great mischiefs inseparably adherent to them.

The synod of Basil thus excellently declared concerning them: § "Hitherto

* *Ipsi sunt canones, qui appellationes totius ecclesiæ ad hujus sedis examen voluere deferri; ab ipsa vero nusquam prorsus appellari debere sanxerunt, ac per hoc illam de tota ecclesia judicare ipsam ad nullius commere iudicium.*—*P. Nich. I. Ep. 8.*

† *Sacra statuta, et veneranda decreta episcoporum causas, utpote majora negotia nostræ definiendas censuræ mandarunt.*—*P. Nich. I. Ep. 38.*

‡ *Majores vero et difficiles quæstiones (ut sancta synodus statuit, et beata consuetudo exigit) ad sedem apostolicam semper referantur.*—*P. Pelag. II. Ep. 8.*

|| *Ipsi sunt canones, qui appellationes totius ecclesiæ ad hujus sedis examen voluere deferri.*—*P. Gelas. I. Ep. 4.*

§ *Concil. Basil. sess. xxxi. (p. 86.) Inoleverunt autem hactenus intolerabilium vexationum abusus permulti, dum nimium frequenter a remotissimis etiam partibus ad Romanam curiam, et interdum pro parvis et minutis rebus ac negotiis quamplurimi citari, et evocari consueverunt, atque ita expensis et laboribus*

¹ *Caus. ii. qu. 6; iii. 6; ix. 3, cap. 16.*

many abuses of Intolerable vexations have prevailed, whilst many have too often been called and cited from the most remote parts to the court of Rome, and that sometime for small and trifling matters, and with charges and trouble to be so wearied, that they sometime think it their best way, to recede from their right, or buy off their trouble with great loss, rather than be at the cost of suing in so remote a country."

St. Bernard complaineth of the mischiefs of appeals in his times, in these words: "How long will you be deaf to the complaints of the whole world, or make as if you were so? Why sleep you? When will the consideration of so great confusion and abuse in appeals awake in you? They are made without right or equity, without due order, and against custom. Neither place, nor manner, nor time, nor cause, nor person, are considered: they are every where made lightly, and, for the most part, unjustly,"* with much more passionate language to the same purpose.

But in the primitive church the pope had no such power.

1. Whereas in the first times many causes and differences did arise, wherein they who were condemned and worsted would readily have resorted thither, where they might have hoped for remedy, if Rome had been such a place of refuge, it would have been very famous for it; and we should find history full of such examples; whereas it is very silent about them.

2. The most ancient customs and canons of the church are flatly repugnant to such a power; for they did order causes finally to be decided in each province.

So the synod of Nice did decree; as the African Fathers did allege, in defence of their refusal to allow appeals to the pope: "The Nicene decrees" (said they) "most evidently did commit both clergymen of inferior degrees and bishops to their metropolitans."†

fatigari, ut nunquam commodius arbitrentur juri suo cedere, aut vexationem suam gravi damno redimere, quam in tam longinqua regione litium subire dispendia, &c.—*Vide Opt.*

* *Bern. de Consid. lib. iii. cap. 2.*—*Quousque murmur universæ terræ aut dissimulas, aut non advertis?—&c.*

† *Decreta Nicæna sive inferioris gradus clericos, sive episcopos suis metropolitanis apertis-*

So Theophilus in his Epistle: "I suppose you are not ignorant what the canons of the Nicene council command, ordaining that a bishop should judge no cause out of his own district."*

3. Afterward, when the *diocesan* administration was introduced, the last resort was decreed to the synods of them (or to the *primates* in them), all other appeals being prohibited,† "as dishonourable to the bishops of the diocese; reproaching the canons, and subverting ecclesiastical order;" to which canon the Emperor Justinian referred: "For it is decreed by our ancestors, that against the sentence of these prelates there should be no appeal."‡ So Constantius told Pope Liberius: "that those things which had a form of judgment passed on them could not be rescinded."|| This was the practice (at least in the eastern parts of the church) in the time of Justinian; as is evident by the Constitutions extant in the Code and in the Novels."

4. In derogation to this pretence, divers provincial synods expressly did prohibit all appeals from their decisions."

That of Milevis: "Let them appeal only to African councils or the primates of provinces; and he who shall think of appealing beyond sea, let him be admitted into communion by none in Afric."§

"For if the Nicene council took this care of the inferior clergy, how much

sime commiserant.—*Syn. Afr. in Ep. ad P. Celest.*

* Arbitror te non ignorare quid præcipiant Niceni concilii canones, sancientes episcopum non judicare causam citra terminos suos—nam. *Pallad.* cap. 7.

† Note. That the Synod of Constantinople (Can. 6), mentioning appeals to the Emperor, secular judicatories, a general synod, saith, 'Ἀριμάσας τοῦς τῆς διαίκεσίας ἐπισκόπους, &c.—*Syn. Const.* Can. 6; *Concil. Constantinop.* can. ii. 6; *Concil. Chalc.* Can. 9. 17.

‡ Nam contra horum antistitum sententias non esse locum appellationi a majoribus nostris constitutum est.—*Cod. Lib.* i. tit. 4, cap. 29.

|| Τὰ ἤδη γέγον ἐσχηκῆτα ἀναλίσσεται οὐ δύναται.—*Theod.* xi. 16.

§ Non provocent nisi ad Africana concilia, vel ad primates provinciarum; ad transmarina autem qui putaverit appellandum, a nullo infra Africam in communionem suscipiatur.—*Conc. Milev.* cap. 22; *Conc. Afr.* Can. 72.

¶ Nov. cxxiii. cap. 22; *Cod. Lib.* i. tit. 4. § 29; vide Græc.

• Can. 12; *Conc. Ant. Can.* 15; *Con. Carth. Can.* 31.

more did they intend it should relate to bishops also?*"

5. All persons were forbidden to entertain communion with bishops condemned by any one church; which is inconsistent with their being allowed relief at Rome.

6. This is evident in the case of Marcion, by the assertion of the Roman church at that time.

7. When the pope hath offered to receive appeals, or to meddle in cases before decided, he hath found opposition and reproof. Thus when Felicissimus and Fortunatus, having been censured and rejected from communion in Afric, did apply themselves to Pope Cornelius, with supplication to be admitted by him; St. Cyprian maintaineth that fact to be irregular and unjust, and not to be countenanced, for divers reasons.¶ Likewise, when Basilides and Martialis, being for their crimes deposed in Spain, had recourse to Pope Stephanus for restitution, the clergy and people there had no regard to the judgment of the pope; the which their resolution St. Cyprian did commend and encourage.

When Athanasius, Marcellus, Paulus, &c., having been condemned by synods, did apply themselves for relief to Pope Julius, the oriental bishops did highly tax this course as irregular; disclaiming any power in him to receive them, or meddle in their cause. Nor could Pope Julius by any law or instance disprove their plea; nor did the pope assert to himself any particular authority to revise the cause, or otherwise justify his proceeding, than by right common to all bishops of vindicating right and innocence, which were oppressed, and of asserting the faith for which they were persecuted. Indeed at first the oriental bishops were contented to refer the cause to Pope Julius as arbitrator; which signifieth that he had no ordinary right; but afterward, either fearing their cause or his prejudice, they started, and stood to the canonicalness of the former decision.

'The contest of the African church with Pope Celestine, in the cause of Apiarius,

* Nam si de inferioribus clericis in concilio Niceno hoc præcaverunt; quanto magis de episcopis voluit observari?—*Conc. Afr. Can.* 115. (*vel Epist.*)

• Cypr. Ep. 55. (*ad Cornelium.*)

¶ Cypr. Ep. 68.

is famous; and the reasons which they assign for repelling that appeal are very notable and preeminent.

8. Divers of the Fathers allege like reasons against appeals. St. Cyprian allegeth these :—*

1. Because there was an ecclesiastical law against them.

2. Because they contain iniquity; as prejudicing the right of each bishop granted by Christ, in governing his flock.

3. Because the clergy and people should not be engaged to run gadding about.

4. Because causes might better be decided there, where witnesses of fact might easily be had.

5. Because there is everywhere a competent authority, equal to any that might be had elsewhere.

6. Because it did derogate from the gravity of bishops to alter their censure —.

7. Pope Liberius desired of Constantius that the judgment of Athanasius might be made in Alexandria for such reasons, "because there the accused, the accusers, and their defender were."†

8. St. Chrysostom's argument against Theophilus meddling in his case may be set against Rome as well as Alexandria.

9. St. Austin, in matter of appeal, or rather of reference to candid arbitration (more proper for ecclesiastical causes), doth conjoin other apostolical churches with that of Rome; "For the business" (says he) "was not about priests and deacons, or the inferior clergy, but the colleagues [bishops] who may reserve their cause entire for the judgment of their colleagues, especially those of the apostolical churches."** He would not have said so, if he had apprehended that the

pope had a peculiar right of revising judgments.

10. Pope Damasus (or rather Pope Siricius) doth affirm himself incompetent to judge in a case which had been before determined by the synod of Capua: "but" (says he) "since the synod of Capua has thus determined it, we perceive we cannot judge it."*

11. Anciently there were no appeals (properly so called, or jurisdictional) in the church; they were, as Socrates telleth us, introduced by Cyril of Jerusalem; who "first did appeal to a greater judicature, against ecclesiastical rule and custom."† This is an argument, that about that time (a little before the great synod of Constantinople) greater judicatories, or *diocesan* synods, were established; whenas before *provincial* synods were the last resorts.

12. Upon many occasions appeals were not made to the pope, as in all likelihood they would have been, if it had been supposed that a power of receiving them did belong to him. Paulus Samosatenus did appeal to the emperor. The Donatists did not appeal to the pope, but to the emperor.‡ Their cause was by the emperor referred not to the pope singly (as it ought to have been, and would have been by so just a prince, if it had been his right), but to him and other judges as the emperor's commissioners.|| Athanasius did first appeal to the emperor. St. Chrysostom did request the pope's succour, but he did not appeal to him as judge; although he knew him favourably disposed, and the cause sure in his hand; but he appealed to a general council: the which Innocent himself did con-

* Sed cum hujusmodi fuerit concilii Capuensis judicium — advertimus quod a nobis judicandi forma competere non possit.

† Τοῦτο μὲν οὖν μόνος καὶ πρῶτος παρὰ τὸ σῆνηθες τῷ ἐκκλησιαστικῷ κανόνι Κύριλλος ἐποίησεν, ἐκκλησίαις ὡς ἐν δημοσίῳ δικαστηρίῳ χρησάμενος.—SOCT. ii. 40. Καθαίρεθεις δ' οὖν ἄνω ἐκκλησίᾳ βεβλήον τοῖς καθελούσι διυπεψάμενος μείζον ἐπικαλέσατο δικαστήριον.—Ibid. Being deposed, he sent a libel of appeal to them who deposed him, appealing to a greater judicature.

‡ Illos vero ab ecclesiastico judicio provocasse, &c.—Aug. Ep. 162. Ad imperatorem appellaverunt.—Aug. de Unit. Eccl. cap. 16.

|| Quid quod nec ipse usurpavit; rogatus imperator judices misit episcopos qui cum ipso sederent, et de tota illa causa quod justum videretur statuerent.—Aug. Ep. 162.

* Refer. ad § 7; vide supr.—Oportet utique eos quibus præsumus non circumcursare, nec episcoporum concordiam coherentem sua subdola et fallaci temeritate collidere, sed agere illic causam suam, ubi et accusatores habere, et testes sui criminis possint.—Cypr. Ep. 55.

† — ἔνθα ὁ ἐγκαλούμενος, καὶ οἱ ἐγκαλοῦντές εἰσι, καὶ ὁ ἀντιποιοῦμενος αὐτῶν.—Theod. xi. 16.

‡ Nexue enim de presbyteris aut diaconis, aut inferioris ordinis clericis, sed de collegis agebatur qui possunt aliorum collegarum judicio, præsertim apostolicarum ecclesiarum, causam suam integram reservare.—Aug. Ep. 162.

ceive "necessary" for decision of that cause.*

[There are in history innumerable instances of bishops being condemned and expelled from their Sees, but few of appeals; which is a sign that was no approved remedy in common opinion.]

Eutyches did appeal (*infra*) to all the patriarchs. Theodoret did intend to appeal (*infra*) to all the western bishops.

13. Those very canons of Sardica (the most unhappy that every were made to the church) which did introduce appeals to the pope, do yet upon divers accounts prejudice his claim to an original right, and do upon no account favour that use of them, to which (to the overthrow of all ecclesiastical liberty and good discipline) they have been perverted. For,

1. They do pretend to confer a privilege on the pope; which argueth that he before had no claim thereto.

2. They do qualify and restrain that privilege to certain cases and forms; which is a sign, that he had no power therein flowing from absolute sovereignty; for it is strange, that they who did pretend and intend so much to favour him should clip his power.

3. It is not really a power which they grant of receiving appeals in all causes; but a power of constituting judges, qualified according to certain conditions, to revise a special sort of causes concerning the judgment and deposition of bishops. Which considerations do subvert his pretence to original and universal jurisdiction upon appeals.

14. Some popes did challenge jurisdiction upon appeals, as given them by the Nicene canons, meaning thereby those of Sardica; which showeth they had no better plea, and therefore no original right. And elsewhere we shall consider what validity those canons may be allowed to have.

15. The general synod of Chalcedon (of higher authority than that of Sardica) derived appeals, at least in the eastern churches, into another channel; namely to the *primale* of each *diocese*, or to the patriarch of Constantinople.¹ That this was the last resort doth appear, from

* Ἀναγκαία ἵστί διάγνωσις συνοδική.—Soz. viii. 26.

¹ Can. 9, 17.

that otherwise they would have mentioned the pope.

16. Appeals in cases of faith or general discipline were indeed sometimes made to the consideration of the pope; but not only to him, but to all other patriarchs and primates, as concerned in the common maintenance of the common faith or discipline. So did Eutyches appeal to the patriarchs.

17. The pope, even in later times, even in the western parts, hath found rubs in his trade of appeals. Consider the scuffle between Pope Nicholas I. and Hincmarus, bishop of Rhemes.^r

18. Christian states,^s to prevent the intolerable vexations and mischiefs arising from this practice, have been constrained to make laws against them.* Particularly England.

In the twelfth age Pope Paschal II. complained of King Henry I. "that he deprived the oppressed of the benefit of appealing to the apostolical see."[†] It was one of King Henry I.'s laws,— "none is permitted to cry from thence, no judgment is thence brought to the apostolic see."[‡] "Foreign judgments we utterly remove,"^{||}—"there let the cause be tried where the crime was committed."[§] It was one of the grievances sent to Pope Innocent IV., "that Englishmen were drawn out of the kingdom by the pope's authority, to have their causes heard."[¶]

Nor in after-times were appeals by law in any case permitted without the king's leave; although sometimes by the facility of princes, or difficulty of times, the Roman court (ever importunate and vigilant for its profits) did obtain a relaxation or neglect of laws inhibiting appeals.

19. There were appeals from popes^t

* Statutes of provisors, premunire, &c.

[†] Vos oppressis apostolicæ sedis appellatio nem subtrahitis.—*Eadm.* p. 113.

[‡] Nullus inde clamor, nullum inde judicium ad sedem apostolicam destinantur.—*Ibid.*

^{||} Peregrina judicicia modis omnibus subtrahemus.—*Hen. I. Leg.* cap. 31.

[§] Ibi semper causa agatur, ubi crimen amittitur.—*Ibid.*

[¶] Quod Anglici extra regnum in causis auctoritate apostolica trahuntur.—*Matt. Paris* - 699, 10.

^r Baron. ann. 865—; P. Nic. I. Ep. 37, &c.

^s Vide *Matt. Paris*, ann. 1094.

general councils very frequently. *Vide* The senate of Paris after the concordates between Lewis XI. and Pope Leo X.

20. By many laws and instances it appeareth, that appellations have been made to the emperors in the greatest causes; and that without pope's reclaiming or taking it in bad part. St. Paul did *appeal to Cæsar*.* Paulus Samosatenus did appeal to Aurelianus.† So the Domatists did appeal to Constantine. Athanasius to Constantine.‡ The Egyptian bishops to Constantine.⁴ Priscillianus to Maximus.‡ Idacius to Gratian.‡ So that canons were made to restrain bishops from recourse *ad comitatum*.

21. Whereas they do allege instances for appeal, those well considered do prejudice their cause; for they are few, in comparison to the occasions of them, that ever did arise; they are near all of them late, when papal encroachments had grown; some of them are very impertinent to the cause; some of them may strongly be retorted against them; all of them are invalid.

If the pope originally had such a right (known, unquestionable, prevalent), there might have been producible many ancient, clear, proper, concluding instances.

All that Bellarmine^v (after his own search, and that of his predecessors in controversy) could muster, are these following; upon which we shall briefly reflect (adding a few others, which may be alleged by them.)

He allegeth Marcion, as appealing to the pope. (An. 142.)^v

The truth was, that Marcion, for having corrupted a maid, was by his own father, bishop of Sinope, "driven from the church;"|| whereupon he did thence "fly to Rome," there "begging admittance to communion, but none did grant it;"‡ at which he expostulating, they re-

* Πᾶσα ψυχὴ.—Rom. xiii. 1; Acts xxv. 15.

† Ad imperatorem appellaverunt.—*Aug. de Unit. Eccl.* cap. 16.

‡ Ad principem provocavit.—*Sulp. Sev.* ii. 64; *Id.* ii. 63; *Conc. Ant. Can. P. de Marca.* iv. 4 —.

|| Eriph. *Aær.* 42.—'Εξεοῦνται τῆς ἐκκλησίας.

§ 'Αποδιδράσκει καὶ ἀνεισιν εἰς τὴν 'Ρώμην.

⁴ *Apol.* ii. p. 804.

⁵ *Ath. Apol.* ii. p. 797, 798.

⁶ *Bell.* ii. 21.

plied, "We cannot, without the permission of thy honourable father, do this; for there is one faith, and one concord; and we cannot cross thy father our good fellow-minister."* This was the cause and issue; and is it not strange this should be produced for an appeal, which was only a supplication of a fugitive criminal to be admitted to communion; and wherein is utterly disclaimed any power to thwart the judgment of a particular bishop or judge, upon account of unity in common faith and peace? Should the pope return the same answer to every appellant, what would become of his privilege? So that they must give us leave to retort this as a pregnant instance against their pretence.

He allegeth the forementioned address of Felicissimus and Fortunatus to Pope Cornelius (An. 252);^v the which was but a factious circumcursion of desperate wretches; the which, or any like it, St. Cyprian argueth the pope in law and equity obliged not to regard; because a definitive sentence was already passed on them by their proper judges in Afric, from whom in conscience and reason there could be no appeal. So Bellarmine would filch from us one of our invincible arguments against him.

He also allegeth the case of Basilides;^x which also we before did shew to make against him; his application to the pope being disavowed by St. Cyprian, and proving ineffectual.

These are all the instances which the first three hundred years did afford; so that all that time this great privilege lay dormant.

He allegeth the recourse of Athanasius to pope Julius (An. 350); but this was not properly to him as to a judge, but as to a fellow bishop, a friend of truth and right, for his succour and countenance against persecutors of him, chiefly for his orthodoxy.† The pope did undertake to examine his plea, partly as arbitrator upon reference of both parties; partly for his own concern, to sat-

§ Οὐ δυνάμεθα ἀνευ τῆς ἐπιτροπῆς τοῦ τιμίον πατρὸς σου τοῦτο ποιῆσαι· μία γὰρ ἐστὶ πίστις, καὶ μία ὁμολογία, καὶ οὐ δύναμεθα ἐναντιωθῆναι τῷ καλῷ συλλειτουργῷ πατρὶ τῷ σῷ.

* Διδάσκοντες ἐπὶ καταλύσεως τῆς πίστεως τὰς καθαιρίσεις γενέσθαι.—*Socr.* ii. 20.

^v *Cypr. Ep.* 55.

^x *Cypr. Ep.* 68.

isfy himself whether he might admit him to communion. And having heard and weighed things, the pope denied that he was condemned in a legal way by competent judges; and that therefore the pretended sentence was null; and consequently he did not undertake the cause as upon appeal. But whereas his proceeding did look like an exercise of jurisdiction, derogatory to a synodical resolution of the case, he was opposed by the oriental bishops, as usurping an undue power. Unto which charge he doth not answer directly, by asserting to himself any such authority by law or custom; but otherwise excusing himself. In the issue, the pope's sentence was not peremptory; until, upon examining the merits of the cause, it was approved for just, as to matter, by the synod of Sardica.* These things otherwise we have largely shewed; and consequently this instance is deficient.

He allegeth St. Chrysostom, as appealing to Pope Innocent I.; but if you read his Epistles to that pope, you will find no such matter; † he doth only complain, and declare to him the iniquity of the process against him, not as to a judge, but as to a friend and fellow bishop concerned, that such injurious and mischievous dealings should be stopped; ‡ requesting from him, not judgment of his cause, but success in procuring it by a general synod; to which, indeed, he did appeal, as Sozomen expressly telleth us; and as indeed he doth himself affirm. || Accordingly Pope Innocent did not assume to himself the judgment of his cause, but did endeavour to procure a synod for it, affirming it to be *needful*: why so, if his own judgment, according to his privilege, did suffice? Why, indeed, did not Pope Innocent (being well satisfied in the case, yea, passionately

touched with it) presently summon Theophilus and his adherents, undertaking the trial? Did Pope Nicholas I. proceed so in the case of Rhotaldus? Why was he content only "to write consolatory letters to him, and to his people;"* not pretending to undertake the decision of his cause? If the pope had been endowed with such a privilege, it is morally impossible that it should not have been shown forth clearly upon this occasion; it could hardly be that St. Chrysostom himself should not in plain terms avow it; that he should not formerly apply to it, as the most certain and easy way of finding relief; that he should not earnestly mind and urge the pope to use his privilege: why should he speak of that tedious and difficult way of a *general synod*, when so short and easy a way was at hand? But the truth is, he did not know any such power the pope, had by himself. St. Chrysostom rather did conceive all such foreign Judicatures to be unreasonable and unjust; for the argument which he darteth at Theophilus doth as well reach the papal jurisdiction upon appeals; for, "It was" (saith he) "not congruous, that an Egyptian should judge those in Thrace:" † why not an Egyptian as well as an Italian? And, ‡ "If" (saith he) "this custom should prevail, and it become lawful for those who will to go into the parishes of others, even from such distances, and to cast out whom any one pleaseth, doing by their own authority what they please, know that all things will go to wreck—" Why may not this be said of a Roman as well as of an Alexandrian? St. Chrysostom also (we may observe) did not only apply himself to the pope, but to other western bishops; || particularly to the bishops of Milain and Aquileia, whom he

* Ὡστε (Athanasius et Paulus) τὰ κατ' αὐτοῦς καὶ τὰ τῆς πίστεως ἐπὶ οἰκουμένης συνόδου τέλος λαβεῖν.—Ib.

† Tom. vii. Epist. 122, 123.—Πρὸς τὴν ἡμετέραν ἀναδραμεῖν ἀγίῃην.

‡ Παρακαλῶ τὴν ἡμετέραν ἀγάπην διανυσθῆναι, καὶ συναλγεῖσθαι, καὶ πάντα ποιῆσαι, ὥστε στήναι ταῦτα τὰ κακὰ.

|| Οἰκουμένην ἀπεκαλεῖ τὸ σῶνδον.—Soz. viii. 17. Ἄλλ' ἀπόντων ἡμῶν καὶ σῶνδον ἐπικαλουμένων.—Theod. v. 34. Οἰκουμένην δὲ σῶνδον συναγεῖραι σπουδάξω.—Soz. viii. 26. Ἀναγκαῖα ἐστὶ διάγνωσις συνοδική.—Ibid.

† Socr. ii. 20.

* Ἰννοκέντιος δὲ ὁ Ῥώμης, καὶ Φαβιανὸς Ἀντιοχείας οὐκ ἐκοινώνησαν τῇ ἐκβολῇ Ἰωάννου, ἀλλὰ διὰ γραμμάτων τῆς πόλεως τὸν κλῆρον παρεμβόησαν, καὶ ἰδυσχέραινον τοῖς τοιλήμασι.—Theoph. Soz. viii. 26.

† Οὐ γὰρ ἀκόλουθον ἦν τὸν ἐξ Αἰγύπτου τοῖς ἐν Θράκῃ διάζειν.

‡ Εἰ γὰρ τοῦτο κρατήσῃε τὸ ἔθος καὶ ἐξ ἄν γένοντο τοῖς βουλομένοις εἰς ἀλλοτρίας ἀπιέναι παροικίας, καὶ ἐκ τοσούτων διαστημάτων, καὶ ἐκβάλλειν οὐδ' ἂν ἐθέλοις, κατ' ἐξουσίαν ἰδίαν πράττοντας ἄπερ ἂν ἐθέλωσι, ἴστε ὅτι πάντα οἰχῆσεται.— Epist. 122.

|| Scripsimus ista et ad Venerium Mediolanensem, et ad Chromatium Aquilegiensem episcopum.—Pallad. cap. 2.

called *Beatissimi Domini*: did he appeal to them?

He allegeth Flavianus, bishop of Constantinople, appealing to Pope Leo;* but let us consider the story. Flavianus, for his orthodoxy (or upon other accounts), very injuriously treated and oppressed by Dioscorus, who was supported by the favour of the imperial court, having in his case no other remedy, did appeal to the pope; who alone among the patriarchs had dissented from those proceedings. The pope was himself involved in the cause, being of the same persuasion; having been no less affronted and hardly treated (considering their power, and that he was out of their reach) and condemned by the same adversaries.

To him, therefore, as to the leading bishop of Christendom, in the first place interested in defence of the common faith, together with a synod, not to him as sole judge, did Flavianus appeal. "He" (saith Placidia, in her letter to Theodosius) "did appeal to the apostolic see, and to all the bishops of these parts;"† that is, to the rest of Christendom, which were not engaged in the party of Dioscorus: and to whom else could he have appealed?

Valentinian, in his Epistle to Theodosius, in behalf of Pope Leo, saith, that he did appeal "according to the manner of synods;"‡ and whatever those words signify, that could not be to the pope, as a single judge: for before that time, in whatever synod was such an appeal made? what custom could there be favourable to such a pretence?

But what his appeal did import is best interpretable by the proceeding consequent; which was not the pope's assuming to himself the judicature, either immediately or by delegation of judges, but

endeavouring to procure a general synod for it; the which endeavour doth appear in many Epistles to Theodosius and to his sister Pulcheria, soliciting that such a synod might be indicted by his order: "All the bishops," saith Pope Leo, "with sighs and tears do supplicate your grace, that because our agents did faithfully reclaim, and bishop Flavianus did present them a libel of appeal, you would command a general synod to be celebrated in Italy."*

Dioscorus and his party would scarce have been so silly as to condemn Flavianus, if they had known (which, if it had been a case clear in law, or obvious in practice, they could not but have known) that the pope, who was deeply engaged in the same cause, had a power to reverse (and revenge) their proceedings. Nor would the good Emperor Theodosius so pertinaciously have maintained the proceedings of that Ephesine synod, if he had deemed the pope duly sovereign governor and judge; or that a right of ultimate decision upon appeal did appertain to him. Nor had the pope needed to have taken so much pains in procuring a synod, if he could have judged without it. Nor would Pope Leo (a man of so much spirit and zeal for the dignity of his See) have been so wanting to the maintenance of his right, as not immediately to have proceeded unto trial of the cause, without precarious attendance for a synod, if he thought his pretence for such appeals as we now speak of, to have been good or plausible in the world at that time.

The next case is that of Theodoret. His words, indeed, framed according to his condition, needing the patronage of Pope Leo, being then high in reputation, do sound favourably; but we, abstracting from the sound of words, must regard the reason of things. His words are these: "I expect the suffrage of your apostolic see, and beseech and earnestly entreat your holiness to succour me, who

* Flavianus autem contra se prolata sententia per ejus legatos sedem apostolicam appellavit libello.—*Liber*. cap. 12. Necessitate coactus fuit ita agere, eo quod reliqui patriarchæ ad essent —. *Marc*. vii. 7.

† Ως προηγούμενον —. Placidia. Πρὸς τὸν ἀποστολικὸν θρόνον καὶ πρὸς πάντας ἐπισκόπους τῶν μερῶν τούτων.—*Syn. Chalc. Act.* i. p. 26.

‡ Κατὰ τὸ εἶδος τῶν συνόδων.—p. 25.

* Omnes mansuetudini vestræ cum gemitibus et lachrymis supplicant sacerdotes, ut quia et nostri fideliter reclamarunt, et eisdem libellum appellationis Flavianus episcopus dedit, generalem synodum jubeatis intra Italiam celebrari —. *P. Leo. Epist.* 25.

appeal to your right and just judicature."*

He never had been particularly or personally judged, and therefore did not need to appeal, as to a judge; nor, therefore, is his application to the pope to be interpreted for such; but rather as to a charitable succourer of him in his distress,† by his countenance and endeavour to relieve him.‡

He only was supposed erroneous in faith, a perilous abettor of Nestorianism, because he had smartly contradicted Cyril; which prejudice did cause him to be prohibited from coming to the synod of Ephesus; and there in his absence to be denounced heterodox.‡

His appeal, then, to the pope (having no other recourse, in whom he did confide, finding him to concur with himself in opinion against Eutychnianism) was no other than (as the word is often used in common speech, when we say, I appeal to your judgment in this or that case) a referring it to the pope's consideration, whether his faith was sound and orthodox;|| capacitating him to retain his office: the which, upon his explication and profession thereof, (presented in terms of extraordinary respect and deference), the pope did approve; thereby (as a good divine, rather than as a formal judge) acquitting him of heterodoxy: the which approbation (in regard to the great opinion then had of the pope's skill in those points, and to the favour he had obtained by contesting against the Eutychnians) did

* Έγώ δὲ τοῦ ἀποστολικοῦ ἡμῶν θρόνου περιμένω τὴν ψήφον, καὶ ἱκετεύω καὶ ἀντιβολῶ τὴν σὴν ἀγιότητα ἐπαμύναί μοι τὸ ὄρθον ἡμῶν καὶ δίκαιον ἐπικαλουμένω κριτήριον.—Theod. Ep. 113. (ad P. Leonem.)

† Vide Ep. 112, ad Domnum.—'Αλλὰ κἀμὲ τὸν ἀπόντα ἁμοίως καλῶμυ κατέσφαξεν, οὔτε καλέσας εἰς δικαστήριον, οὔτε παρόντα κρίνας — μετὰ τοσούτους ἰδρωτάς καὶ πόνους μὴ δικασάμενος κατεκρίθη. Οἱ δὲ δικαιοτάτοι δικασταὶ τὸν ἀπόντα κατέκριναν οὐ δικάσαντες, μάλλον δὲ καὶ λταν ἐπαινεύσαντες τὰ δῆθεν εἰς κατηγορίαν ἡμῶν ἐπιδοθέντα συγγράμματα.—Epist. 138.

‡ Βασιλικοὶς γὰρ ἡμᾶς τῇ Κύρκω προσῆσαντες γράμμασι — Epist. 145; vide Theod. Epist. sup. et Ep. 127, 129. Καὶ με νόμος ἐνθάδε καθίργει βασιλικός. Βασιλικοὶς γράμμασι κωλυθέντες καταλαθεῖν τὴν Ἐφεσον — Ep. 138, 139. Μαθεῖν ἀντιβολῶ παρ' ἡμῶν εἴτε χρῆ με στέρξει τὴν ἀδικον ταύτην καθαίρειν, ἢ μὴ. Ep. 113. Ὡστε καὶ τὰς τῆς ἀνατολῆς ἐκκλησίας τῆς ἡμετέρας ὀπολαύσαι κηδεμονίας.—Ep. 118.

|| Τὰ γὰρ παρ' ἡμῶν κριθομένα στέρξόμενα ἑποῖα

bear great sway in the synod; so the (although not without opposition to many, and not upon absolute terms) he was permitted to sit among the Father of Chalcedon.

Observations.

1. We do not read of any formal trial the pope made of Theodoret's case: that he was cited, that his accusers did appear, that his cause was discussed; but only a simple approbation of him.

2. We may observe, that Theodoret did write to Flavianus in like terms: "We entreat your holiness to fight in behalf of the faith which is assaulted, and to defend the canons which are trampled under foot."*

3. We may observe, that Theodoret, expecting this favour of Pope Leo, and thence being moved to commend the Roman see to the height, and to reckon its special advantages, doth not yet mention his supremacy of power, or universality of jurisdiction: for those words, "it becometh you to be prime in all things,"† are only general words relating to the advantages which he subjoineth; of which he saith, "For your throne is adorned with many advantages,"‡ in a florid enumeration whereof he passeth over that of peculiar jurisdiction; he nameth the magnitude, splendour, majesty, and populousness of the city; the early faith praised by St. Paul, the sepulchres of the two great apostles, and their decease there; but the pope's being universal sovereign and judge (which was the main advantage whereof the See could be capable) he doth not mention: why? because he was not aware thereof, else surely he would not have passed it in silence.||

* Τὴν σὴν ἀγιωσύνην παρακαλοῦμεν τῆς πολυμύνης πίστεως ὑπεραχῆσαι, καὶ τῶν παθηθέντων ἡμῶν ραγωνίσασθαι κανόνων.—Theod. Epist. 86.

† Διὰ πάντα γὰρ ἡμῖν πρωτεύειν ἀρμόττει —
‡ Πολλοῖς γὰρ ὁ ἡμετέρος θρόνος κοσμεῖται πλεονεκτήμασι. Ἐχει γὰρ ὁ πανάγιος θρόνος ἐκεῖνος τὰ κατὰ τὴν οἰκουμένην ἐκκλησιῶν τὴν ἡγεμονίαν, καὶ πολλὰ, καὶ πρὸ τῶν ἄλλων πάντων, ὅτι αἰρετικὴς μὲν ἔμελλε δυσωδίας ἀμύητος, καὶ οὐδεὶς τῶναντία φρονεῖ εἰς ἐκεῖνον ἐκάθισεν, ἀλλὰ τὴν ἀποστολικὴν χάριν ἐπ' ἡρατον διεφύλαξε.—Theod. Ep. 116. (ad Romanum. Presb.)

|| That holy See has the principality over the churches in all the world, for many reasons

4. We may also observe, that whatever the opinion of Theodoret was now concerning the pope's power, he not long before did hardly take him for such a judge, when he did oppose Pope Celestine, concurring with Cyril, at the first Ephesine synod. He then indeed, looking on Pope Celestine as a prejudiced adversary, did not write to him, but to the other bishops of the west, as we see by those words in his Epistle to Domnus: "And we have written to the bishops of the west about these things, to him of Milain, I say, to him of Aquileia, and him of Ravenna, testifying,"* &c.

5. Yea, we may observe, that Theodoret did intend, with the emperor's leave, to appeal, or refer his cause, to the whole body of western bishops, as himself doth express in those words to Anatolius: "I do pray your magnificence, that you would request this favour of our dread sovereign, that I may have recourse to the west, and may be judged by the most religious and holy bishops there."†

Bellarmino further doth allege the appeal of Hadrianus, bishop of Thebes, to Pope Gregory I.‡ the which he received and asserted by excommunicating the archbishop of Justiniana Prima, for deposing Hadrianus, without regard to that appeal. I answer,

1. The example is late, when the popes had extended their power beyond the ancient and due limits: those maxims had got in before the time of that worthy pope; who thought he might use the power of which he found himself possessed.

2. It is impertinent, because the bishop of Justiniana had then a special dependence upon the Roman See; from whence an universal jurisdiction upon appeal cannot be inferred.

but especially because she continued free from the taint of heresy, and none otherwise minded ever sat in her, she having kept the apostolic state always unmixed.

* Καὶ τοὺς θεοφιλοτάτοις δὲ τῆς ὁμοῦς ἐπισκόποις, τῷ Μεδιολάνῳ φημι, καὶ τῷ Ἀκυιλείας καὶ τῷ Ραβέννης περὶ τούτων ἐγράψαμεν, διαμαρτυρούμενοι ὡς τῆς Ἀπολιναρίου ταῦτα καινοτομίας πεπλήρωται.—Theod. Epist. 112.

† Ἀντιβολῶ τὴν ἡμετέραν μεγαλοπρέπειαν, ταύτην αἰτῆσαι τὴν χάριν τὴν καλλινοκον κοροφὴν, ὥστε μὴ τὴν ἑσπέρην καταλαβεῖν, καὶ παρὰ τοῖς ἐν ἐκείνῃ θεοφιλοτάτοις καὶ ἀγιωτάτοις ἐπικρίσις δικάσασθαι.—Theod. Ep. 119. (ad Anatol.)

‡ Greg. lib. ii; Indict. 11, Ep. 6.

3. It might be an usurpation; nor doth the opinion or practice of Pope Gregory suffice to determine a question of right; for good men are liable to prejudice, and its consequences.

To these instances produced by Bellarmine, some add the appeal of Eutyches to Pope Leo; to which it may be excepted, that if he did appeal, it was not to the pope solely, but to him with the other patriarchs; so it is expressly said in the Acts of the Chalcedon synod, "His deposition being read, he did appeal to the holy synod of the most holy bishop of Rome, and of Alexandria, and of Jerusalem, and of Thessalonica:"* the which it is an argument that he did not apprehend the right of receiving appeals did solely or peculiarly belong to him of Rome.

Liberatus saith, that "Johannes Talaida went to Calendion, patriarch of Antioch, and taking of him intercessory synodical letters, appealed to Simplicius, Bishop of Rome, as St. Athanasius had done, and persuaded him to write in his behalf to Acacius, bishop of Constantinople."†

In regard to any more instances of this kind we might generally propose these following considerations:—

1. It is no wonder, that any bishop being condemned, especially in causes relating to faith or common interest, should have recourse to the Roman bishop, or to any other bishop of great authority, for refuge or for relief; which they may hope to be procured by them by the influence of their reputation, and their power among their dependents.

2. Bad men, being deservedly corrected, will absurdly resort any whither with mouths full of clamour and calumny, if not with hope of relief, yet with design of revenge; as did Marcion, as did Felicissimus, as did Apiarius to the pope.

3. Good men being abused will express some resentment, and complain of

* Ἀναγιγνωσκόμενης τῆς καθαιρέσεως, ἐπεκαίεσαο τὴν ἁγίαν σύνοδον τοῦ ἀγιωτάτου ἐπισκόπου Ῥώμης, καὶ Ἀλεξανδρείας, καὶ Ἱεροσολύμων, καὶ Θεσσαλονίκης.—Syn. Chalc. Act. 1.

† Ingressus est ad Calendionem Antiochenum patriarcham, et sumptis ab eo intercessionis synodicalis literis Romanum pontificem Simplicium appellavit, sicut B. fecerat Athanasius, et suasit scribere pro se Acacio Constantinopolitano episcopo —. *Liber. cap. 18; Baron. ann. 483, § 1.*

their wrongs, where they may presume of a fair and favourable hearing: so did Athanasius, Flavianus, St. Chrysostom, Theodoret, apply themselves to the same bishops, flourishing in so great reputation and wealth.

So did the monks of Egypt (Ammonius and Isidorus), from the persecutions of Theophilus, fly to the protection and succour of St. Chrysostom; which gave occasion to the troubles of that incomparable personage; the which is so illustrious an instance, that the words of the historian relating it deserve setting down.

"They jointly did endeavour, that the trains against them might be examined by the emperor as judge, and by the bishop John; for they conceived that he, having conscience of using a just freedom, would be able to succour them according to right; but he did receive the men applying to him courteously, and treated them respectfully, and did not hinder them from praying in the church.—He also writ to Theophilus to render communion to them, as being orthodox; and if there were need of judging their case by law, that he would send whom they thought good to prosecute the cause."*

If this had been to the pope, it would have been alleged for an appeal; and it would have had as much colour as any instance which they can produce.

4. And when men, either good or bad, do resort in this manner to great friends, it is no wonder if they accost them in highest terms of respect and with exaggerations of their eminent advantages; so inducing them to regard and favour their cause.

5. Neither is it strange that great persons favourably should entertain those who make such addresses to them, they always coming crouching in a suppliant posture, and with fair pretences; it being also natural to men to delight in seeing their power acknowledged; and it

* Κοινή τε ἰσπουδαζον παρὰ βασιλεῖ κριτῆ καὶ Ἰωάννη τῷ ἐπισκόπῳ ἐλέγχεσθαι τὰς κατ' αὐτῶν ἐπιβουλὰς· ὄντο γὰρ ἐνδίκου παρρησίας αὐτὸν ἐπιμελούμενον δυνάσθαι τὰ δίκαια βοηθεῖν αὐτοῖς· ὃ δὲ προσελθόντας αὐτῷ τοὺς ἀνδρας φιλοφρόνως ἰδέξαστο, καὶ ἐν τιμῇ εἶχε, καὶ εὐχεσθαι ἐπὶ ἐκκλησίας οὐκ ἐκώλυσε — Ἐγραψε δὲ Θεοφίλῳ κοινωνίαν αὐτοῖς ἀποδοῦναι, ὡς ὀρθῶς περὶ Θεοῦ δοξάζουσιν· εἰ δὲ δίκη ὀλοὶ κριτέσθαι τὰ κατ' αὐτοῦ, ἀποστέλλειν ὃν αὐτῷ δοκεῖ δικασόμενον.—Soz. viii. 13.

being a glorious thing to relieve the afflicted: for "eminence is wont to incline toward infirmity, and with a ready goodwill to take part with those who are under."* So when Basilides, when Marcellus, when Eustathius Sebastenus, when Maximus the Cynic, when Apiarius, were condemned, the pope was hasty to engage for them; more liking their application to him than weighing their cause.

6. And when any person doth continue long in a flourishing estate, so that such addresses are frequently made to him, no wonder that an opinion of lawful power to receive them doth arise both in him and in others; so that of a voluntary friend he become an authorized protector, a patron, a judge of such persons in such cases.

X. The sovereign is fountain of all jurisdiction; and all inferior magistrates derive their authority from his warrant and commission, acting as his deputies or ministers, according to that intimation in St. Peter,—*whether to the king as supreme, or to governors as sent by him.*"

Accordingly the pope doth challenge this advantage to himself, that he is the fountain of ecclesiastical jurisdiction; pretending all episcopal power to be derived from him.

"The rule of the church" (saith Bel-larmine) "is monarchical; therefore all authority is in one, and from him is derived to others;"† the which aphorism he well proveth from the form of creating bishops, as they call it: "We provide such a church with such a son: and we do prefer him to be and pastor and bishop of the said church, committing to him the administration of temporals and spirituals, in the name of the Father, Son, and Holy Ghost."

Pope Pius II., in his Bull of the Milanese See, thus expresseth the same: "In the militant"

* Φιλί μάλιστα ἐκδοθέντες, καὶ δὲ τῶν αἰσθητικῶν

† R

go

alio

†

et

ne

i

i

sembleth the triumphant, there is one moderator and judge of all, the vicar of Jesus Christ,* from whom, as from the head, all power and authority is derived to the subject members; the which doth immediately flow into it from the Lord Christ."

A congregation of cardinals, appointed by Pope Paulus III., speaking after the style and sentiments of that See, did say to him, "Your holiness doth so bear the care of Christ's church, that you have very many ministers, by which you manage that care; these are all the clergy, on whom the service of God is charged; especially priests, and more especially curates, and above all, bishops."†

Durandus, bishop of Mande, according to the sense of his age, saith, "The pope is head of all bishops, from whom they as members from an head descend, and of whose fulness all receive; whom he calls to a participation of his care, but admits not into the fulness of his power."‡

This pretence is seen in the ordinary titles of bishops, who style themselves bishops of such a place, "by the grace of God and of the apostolic see."|| O shame!

The men of the Tridentine convention (those great betrayers of the church to perpetual slavery, and Christian truth to the prevalency of falsehood, till God pleaseth) do, upon divers occasions, pretend to qualify and empower bishops to perform important matters, originally be-

* In ecclesia militanti, quæ instar triumphantis habet, unus est omnium moderator et arbiter Jesu Christi vicarius, a quo tanquam capite omnis in subjecta membra potestas et autoritas derivatur, quæ a Christo Domino sine medio in ipsum infuit.—*P. Pius II. in Bull. Retract.*

† Sanctitas vestra ita gerit curam ecclesiæ Christi, ut ministros plurimos habeat, per quos curam exerceat; hi autem sunt clerici omnes, quibus mandatus est cultus Dei; presbyteri præsertim, et maxime curati, et præ omnibus episcopi.—*Apud Cham. de Pont. Æcum. 10, 13.*

‡ Summus pontifex caput est omnium pontificum, a quo illi tanquam a capite membra descendunt, et de cujus plenitudine omnes accipiunt quos ipse vocat in partem solitudinis, non in plenitudinem potestatis.—*Durant. Minut. Offic. ii. 1, 17.*

|| N. Dei et apostolicæ sedis gratia episcopus Colon —.

longing to the episcopal function, as the pope's delegates.*

But contrariwise, according to the doctrine of holy scripture, and the sense of the primitive church, the bishops and pastors of the church do immediately receive their authority and commission from God; being only his ministers.

The scripture calleth them *the ministers of God*, and of Christ (so Epaphras, so Timothy, in regard to their ecclesiastical function are named), *the stewards of God, the servants of God, fellow-servants of the apostles.*†

The scripture saith that *the Holy Ghost had made them bishops to feed the church of God;*‡ that *God had given them, and constituted them in the church; for the perfecting of the saints, for the work of the ministry, for the edifying of the body of Christ;*§ that is, to all effects and purposes concerning their office; for *the work of the ministry* compriseth all the duty charged on them, whether in way of order or of governance;† as they now do precariously and groundlessly in reference to this case distinguish; and *edifying the body* doth import all the designed effects of their office; particularly those which are consequent on the use of jurisdiction; the which St. Paul doth affirm was appointed for edification; *according (saith he) to the authority which God hath given me for edification, and not for destruction.*¶ They do *preside in the Lord.* They allow no other head but our Lord, *from whom all the body,*‡ &c.

The Fathers clearly do express their sentiments to be the same.

St. Ignatius saith, that the bishop "doth preside in the place of God;"|| and that "we must look upon him as our Lord himself," (or as our Lord's representative;) that therefore "we must be subject to him as unto Jesus Christ."§

* This was an expedient.—*Vide Concil.*

† Ordo confertur a Deo immediate, jurisdictiono mediate.—*Bell. iv. 25.*

‡ Προϊστάμενοι ἐν Κυρίῳ.—1 Thess. v. 12; Eph. iv. 16.

|| Προκαθήμενον τοῦ ἐπισκόπου ἐν τῷ ὄνομα Θεοῦ.—Ign. ad Magnes.

§ Τὸν οὖν ἐπίσκοπον ἄλλοι ὄτι ὡς αὐτὸν τὸν Κύριον.—Col. i. 7; iv. 7; 1 Thess. iii. 2; 1 Tim. iv. 6; Tit. i. 7; 2 Tim. ii. 24.

• Acts xx. 28; Naz. Or. 30.

• Eph. iv. 11; 1 Cor. xii. 29.

• 2 Cor. x. 8; xiii. 10.

St. Cyprian affirmeth "each bishop to be constituted by the judgment of God and of Christ;" and "that in his church he is for the present a judge in the place of Christ;"—and "that our Lord Jesus Christ, one and alone, hath a power both to prefer us to the government of his church, and to judge of our acting."*

St. Basil: "A prelate is nothing else but one that sustaineth the person of Christ."†

St. Chrysostom: "We have received the commission of ambassadors, and come from God; for this is the dignity of the episcopal office."‡

"It behoveth us all, who by divine authority are constituted in the priesthood, to prevent,"|| &c.

Wherefore the ancient bishops did all of them take themselves to be vicars of Christ, not of the pope, and no less than the proudest pope of them all; whence it was ordinary for them in their addresses and compellations to the bishop of Rome, and in their speech about him, to call him their *brother*, their *colleague*, their *fellow-minister*; which had not been modest or just, if they had been his ministers or shadows. Yea, the popes themselves, even the highest and haughtiest of them, who of any in old times did most stand on their presumed pre-eminence, did yet vouchsafe to call other bishops their fellow-bishops and fellow-ministers.

Those bishops of France with good reason did complain of Pope Nicholas I. "for calling them his clerks; whereas, if his pride had suffered him, he

should have acknowledged them for his brethren, and fellow-bishops.*

In fine, the ancient bishops did not allege any commission from the pope to warrant their jurisdiction, but from God: "If Moses's chair were so venerable, that what was said out of that ought therefore to be heard, how much more is Christ's throne so?† We succeed him, from that we speak, since Christ has committed to us the ministry of reconciliation."‡

"That which is committed to the priest, it is only in God's power to give."||

"Since we also, by the mercy of Christ our King and God, were made ministers of the gospel."§

This is a modern dream, born out of ambition and flattery, which never came into the head of any ancient divine.

It is a ridiculous thing to imagine that Cyprian, Athanasius, Basil, Chrysostom, Austin, &c., did take themselves for the vicegerents or ministers of the popes; if they did, why did they not, so frequent occasion being given them in all their volumes, ever acknowledge it? why cannot Bellarmine and his complices, after all their prolling, shew any passage in them importing any such acknowledgment; but are fain to infer it by far-fetched sophisms, from allegations plainly impertinent or frivolous?

The popes, indeed, in the fourth century, began to practise a fine trick, very serviceable to the enlargement of their power; which was to confer on certain bishops, as occasion served, or for continuance, the title of their vicar or lieutenant; thereby pretending to impart authority to them: whereby they were enabled for performance of divers things, which otherwise by their own episcopal

ριον δεῖ προσβλέπειν.—Ign. ad Ep. Ὅταν ἐπισκόπος ἐποτάσασθε ὡς Ἰησοῦ Χριστοῦ.—Ign. ad Trall.

* De Dei et Christi ejus judicio.—Cyprr. Ep. 52, et alibi sæpe. Tempus in ecclesia ad tempus sacerdos, et ad tempus judex, vice Christi.—Id. Ep. 55. Sed expec temus universi judicium Domini nostri Jesu Christi, qui unus et solus habet potestatem et præponendi nos in ecclesiæ suæ gubernatione, et de actu nostro judicandi.—Id. in Conc. Carthag.

† Ὁ γὰρ καθηγούμενος οὐδὲν ἑτερόν ἐστιν, ἢ ὁ τοῦ σωτήρος ἐπέχων πρόσωπον.—Bas. Const. Mon. Cap. 22.

‡ Ἡμεῖς τοῖνυν πρεσβείας ἀνεδξάμεθα λόγων καὶ ἤκουεν παρὰ τοῦ Θεοῦ, τοῦτο γὰρ ἐστὶ τὸ τῆς ἐπισκοπῆς δέξιωμα.—Chrys. in Coloss. Orat. 3.

|| Oportere nos omnes, qui Deo auctore sumus in sacerdotio constituti illius certaminibus obviare, &c.—Anatol. in Syn. Chalch. p. 512.

† Leo Ep. 84.

* Sciesque nos non tuos esse ut te jactas et extollis clericos, quos ut fratres et coepiscopos recognoscere si elatio permetteret, debueras.—Ann. Pith.

† Ἡμεῖς τοῖνυν — S. Chrys. sup.

‡ Εἰ ὁ Μωσῆος θρόνος οὐτως ἦν αἰδέσιμος, ὡς δι' ἐκεῖνον ἀκούεσθαι, πολλῷ μᾶλλον ὁ Χριστοῦ θρόνος; ἐκεῖνον ἡμεῖς διεδξάμεθα, ἀπὸ τούτου φθεγγόμεθα, ἀφ' οὗ καὶ ὁ Χριστὸς ἔθετο ἐν ἡμῖν τὴν διακονίαν τῆς καταλλαγῆς.—Chrys. in Coloss. Orat. 3.

|| Ἄ γὰρ ἐγκεχειρίσται ὁ ἱερεὺς, Θεοῦ μόνου ἐστὶ δωρεῖσθαι, &c.—Chrys. in Job. Orat. 83.

§ Ἐπεὶ οὖν καὶ ἡμεῖς ἔλεει τοῦ σουμβασιλέως (i. παμβασιλέως) ἡμῶν Χριστοῦ τοῦ Θεοῦ ἱεροουργοῦ τοῦ εὐαγγελίου ἐκπρώθημεν — Flavian. in Chalch. Act. i. p. 4.

or metropolitical power they could not perform. By which device they did engage such bishops to such a dependence on them, whereby they did promote the papal authority in provinces, to the oppression of the ancient rights and liberties of bishops and synods, doing what they pleased under pretence of this vast power communicated to them; and for fear of being displaced, or out of affection to their favourer, doing what might serve to advance the papacy.

Thus did Pope Celestine constitute Cyril in his room.⁵

Pope Leo appointed Anatolius of Constantinople.

Pope Felix, Acacius of Constantinople.^h

Pope Hormisdas, Epiphanius of Constantinople.

Pope Simplicius, to Zeno, bishop of Seville—"We thought it convenient that you should be held up by the vicariat authority of our See."^{*}

So did Siricius and his successors constitute the bishops of Thessalonica to be their vicars in the diocese of Illyricum, wherein being then a member of the western empire they had caught a special jurisdiction; to which Pope Leo did refer in those words, which sometimes are impertinently alleged with reference to all bishops, but concern only Anastatius, bishop of Thessalonica: "We have intrusted thy charity to be in our stead, so that thou art called into part of the solicitude, not into plenitude of the authority."[†]

So did Pope Zozimus bestow a like pretence of vicarious power upon the bishop of Arles, which city was the seat of the temporal exarch in Gaul.¹

So to the bishop of Justiniani Prima in Bulgaria (or Dardania Europæa), the like privilege was granted [by procurement of the Emperor Justinian, native of that place.]

Afterwards temporary or occasional vicars were appointed (such as Austin in

England, Boniface in Germany), who in virtue of that concession did usurp a paramount authority; and by the exercise thereof did advance the papal interest; depressing the authority of metropolitans and provincial synods.

So at length legates, upon occasion despatched into all countries of the west, came to do there what they pleased, using that pretence to oppress and abuse both clergy and people very intolerably.

Whence divers countries were forced to make legal provisions for excluding such legates,[‡] finding by much experience that their business was to rant and domineer in the pope's name, to suck money from the people, and to maintain luxurious pomp upon expense of the countries where they came.

Of this, John XXII. doth sorely complain; * and decrees that all people should admit his legates, under pain of interdicts.

In England, Pope Paschal finds the same fault in his letter to King Henry I. "Nuncios, or letters from the apostolic see, unless by your majesty's command, are not thought worthy any admittance or reception within your jurisdiction: none complains thence, none appeals thence for judgment to the apostolic see."[†]

The pope observing what authority and reverence the archbishops of Canterbury had in this nation, whereby they might be able to check his attempts, did think good to constitute those archbishops his legates of course (*legatos natos*), that so they might seem to exercise their jurisdiction by authority derived from him; and owing to him that mark of favour, or honour, with enlargement of power, might pay him more devotion, and serve his interests.

Bellarmino doth from this practice prove the pope's sovereign power;[‡] but he might from thence better have de-

* Extrav. commun. i. 1 (p. 310.) *Oculi inimici regni.*—*Matt. Par.* p. 524.

† *Sedis apostolicæ nuncii vel literæ præter jussum regis majestatis nullam in potestate tua susceptionem aut aditum promerentur, nullus inde clamor, nullum judicium ad sedem apostolicam destinantur.*—*P. Pasch. II. Eadm.* p. 113.

‡ *P. Pasch. II. Epist. apud Eadm. p. 113, &c.*

^h *Bell. ii. 10.*

* *Congruum duximus vicaria sedis nostræ te auctoritate fulciri.*—*Baron. ann. 482, § 46.*

† *Vices enim nostras ita tuæ credidimus charitati, ut in patrem sis vocatus sollicitudinis, non in plenitudinem potestatis.*—*P. Leo. Ep. 84 (ad Anastas. Thess.)*

^h *Evagr. Act. Eph. p. 134.*

^h *Act. Conc. sub. Menna. p. 70.*

¹ *P. Joh. VIII. Ep. 93.*

monstrated their great cunning. It might, from such extraordinary designation of vicegerents, with far more reason be inferred, that ordinarily bishops are not his ministers.

XI. It is the privilege of a sovereign, that he cannot be called to account, or judged, or deposed, or debarred communion, or anywise censured and punished; for this implieth a contradiction or confusion in degrees, subjecting the superior to inferiors; this were making a river run backwards; this were to dam up the fountain of justice; to behead the state; to expose majesty to contempt.

Wherefore the pope doth pretend to this privilege, according to those maxims in the canon law, drawn from the sayings of popes (either forged or genuine, but all alike) obtaining authority in their court.¹

And according to what Pope Adrian let the eighth synod know, "because" (says he) "the apostolic church of Rome stoops not to the judgment of lesser churches."² They cite also three old synods (of Sinuessa, of Rome under Pope Silvester, of Rome under Sextus III.); but they are palpably spurious, and the learned amongst them confess it.

But antiquity was not of this mind; for it did suppose him no less obnoxious to judgment and correction than other bishops, if he should notoriously deviate from the faith, or violate canonical discipline.

The canons generally do oblige bishops, without exception to duty, and (upon default) to correction: why is not he excepted, if to be excused or exempted?

It was not questioned of old, but that a pope, in case he should notoriously depart from the faith, or notably infringe discipline, might be excommunicated: the attempting it upon divers occasions doth shew their opinion, although it often

* Διὰ τὸ τὴν ἀποστολικὴν ἐκκλησίαν τῆς Ῥώμης τῇ τῶν ἐλαττόνων μὴ ὑποκύπτειν κρίσει.—P. Adrian. in Syn. VIII. Act. vii. p. 963.

¹ Bell. ii. 26; de Conc. ii. 17; Grat. Dist. xl. cap. 6; xxi. 7; Caus. ix. qu. 3, cap. 10—; Extrav. comm. lib. i. tit. 8, cap. 1; P. Leo IX. Ep. i. cap. 10—17; P. Nich. I. Ep. 8. (p. 504;) P. Joh. VIII. Ep. 75. (p. 31;) P. Gelas. Ep. 4. (p. 625, 626;) Ep. 13. (p. 640;) P. Greg. VII. Ep. 8, 21.

had not effect, because the cause was not just and plausible; the truth and equity of the case appearing to be on the pope's side.

St. Isidore Pelusiota denieth of any bishop's office, that it is ἀρχὴ ἀνυπεύθυνος, "an uncontrollable government."

In the times of Polycrates and Pope Victor, the whole eastern church did forbear communion with the pope.* Firmilian told Pope Stephanus, that by conceiting he might excommunicate all other bishops, he had excommunicated himself. The Fathers of the Antiochene synod did threaten to excommunicate and depose Pope Julius. "They did promise to Julius peace and communion, if he did admit the deposition of those whom they had expelled, and the constitution of those whom they had ordained; but if he did resist their decrees, they denounce the contrary."† The oriental bishops at Sardica did excommunicate and depose him.‡ St. Hilary did anathematize Pope Liberius, upon his defection to the Arians.‡ Dioscorus did attempt to excommunicate Pope Leo. || Acacius of Constantinople renounced the communion of Pope Felix.° Timotheus Ælurus cursed the Pope.° The "African bishops" did "synodically excommunicate Pope Vigilius."§ Pope Anastasius was rejected by his own clergy.¶ Pope Constantine, by the people;¶ and so was Pope Leo VIII.† Diverse bishops of Italy and

* Ἐν τε χρόνις Πολυκράτους καὶ Βίκτωρος ὡς ἡ ἀνατολὴ πρὸς τὴν ὄσσην διαφερομένη εἰρημικὰ παρ' ἀλλήλων οὐκ ἐδέχοντο.—Eriph. Hæc. 70. Audianorum. Dum enim putas omnes abs te abstinere posse, solum te ab omnibus abstinuisti.—Firm. apud Cypr. Ep.

† Δεχομένη μὲν Ἰουλίῳ τὴν καθαίρειν τῶν πρὸς αὐτῶν ἐληλυθόντων, καὶ τὴν κατάστασιν τῶν ἀπ' αὐτῶν χειροτονηθέντων, εἰρήνην καὶ κοινωνίαν ἐπηγγέλλοντο· ἀνθισταμένη δὲ τοῖς δεδογμένοις τάναντία προηγήρευσαν.—Soz. iii. 8.

‡ Anathema tibi, papa Liberi.—Hil. fragm.

|| Ἐτόλμησε δὲ καὶ ἀκοινωνήσαν ὑπαγορεύσαι κατὰ τοῦ ἀρχιεπισκόπου τῆς μεγάλης Ῥώμης Λέοντος.—Evag. ii. 4.

§ Africani antistites Vigilium Rom, episc. damnatorem capitulorum synodaliter a catholica communione, reservato ei pœnitentiæ loco, recludunt (l. excludunt).—Vict. Tun. post. Cons. Basilii V. C. an. 10.

¶ Soz. iii. 11.

° Niceph. xvi. 17; Baron. ann. 484, § 35.

• Baron. ann. 457, § 25.

¶ Plat. p. 131, et Dist. xix. cap. 21, 22.

¶ Plat. p. 223.

† Id. p. 291.

Illyricum did abstain from the pope's communion for a long time, because they did admit the fifth synod.* Photius did excommunicate and depose Pope Nicholas I.* Maurus, bishop of Ravenna, did anathematize Pope Vitalianus.† The emperor Otho II. having with good advice laboured to reclaim Pope John XII. without effect,‡ did “indict a council, calling together the bishops of Italy, by the judgment of whom the life of that wicked man should be judged;”‡ and the issue was, that he was deposed. Pope Nicholas I. desired to be judged by the emperor.¶ The fifth synod did in general terms condemn Pope Vigilius; and the Emperor Justinian did banish him for not complying with the decrees of it. The sixth and seventh general synods did anathematize Honorius by name, when he was dead, because his heresy was not before confuted; and they would have served him so if he had been alive. Divers synods (that of Worms, of Pavia, of Brescia, of Mentz, of Rome, &c.), did reject Pope Gregory VII.‡ Pope Adrian himself, in the eighth synod (so called), did confess, that a pope being found deviating from the faith might be judged, as Honorius was. Gerbertus (afterwards Pope Sylvester II.) did maintain, that popes might be held as ethnics and publicans, if they “did not hear the church.”‡ The synod of Constantine did judge and depose three popes.

The synod of Basil did depose Pope Eugenius; affirming, that “the Catholic church hath often corrected and judged popes, when they either erred from the faith, or by their ill manners became notoriously scandalous to the church.”||

* Καθαρίσειν ὡς ἐνόμισε καὶ ἀναθεματισθῆν ἐν' οὐδὲν λόγῳ ποιεῖται Νικολαῦ.—Vit. Ignatii. Patr. apud Bin. p. 892; Baron. ann. 863.

† — Communi totius sancti concilii consensu depositus.—Luitprand. vi. 6.

‡ — Concilium indicit, convocatis episcopis Italise, quorum iudicio vita sceleratissimi hominis dijudicaretur.—Plat. in Joh. XIII. (pro XII.) Vide Baron. ann. 960, et Binium.

|| Ecclesia catholica sæpenumero summos pontifices sive a fide delirantes, sive pravis moribus notorie ecclesiam scandalizantes corripit, et judicavit — Conc. Bass. sess. 12.

¶ P. Pelag. II. Ep. iii. 13.

‡ Baron. ann. 669, §. 2.

¶ Grat. Caus. ii. qu. 7, cap. 11.

¶ Ann. 1076; vide Baron. ann. 1033, §. 3.

¶ Baron. an. 992, §. 44 —; Conc. Bas. sess. xxxviii. p. 101.

The practice of popes, to give an account of their faith (when they entered upon their office) to the other patriarchs and chief bishops, approving themselves thereby worthy and capable of communion, doth imply them liable to judgment.* Of the neglect of which practice Euphemius, bishop of Constantino-ple, did complain.‡

Of this we have for example the Synodical Epistles of Pope Gregory I.

XII. To the sovereign in ecclesiastical affairs it would belong to define and decide controversies in faith, discipline, moral practice; so that all were bound to admit his definitions, decisions, interpretations. He would be the supreme interpreter of the divine law, and judge of controversies. No point or question of moment should be decided without his cognizance. This he therefore doth pretend to; taking upon him to define points, and requiring from all submissions to his determinations. Nor doth he allow any synods to decide questions.

But the ancients did know no such thing. In case of contentions, they had no recourse to his judgment; they did not stand to his opinion, his authority did not avail to quash disputes. They had recourse to the holy scriptures, to Catholic tradition, to reason; they disputed and discussed points by dint of argument.

Irenæus, Tertullian, Vincentius, Lirinensis and others, discoursing of the methods to resolve points of controversy, did not reckon the pope's authority for one. Divers of the Fathers did not scruple openly to dissent from the opinions of popes; nor were they wondered at, or condemned for it.

So St. Paul did withstand St. Peter.‡ So Polycarpus dissented from Pope Elutherius. So Polycrates from Pope Victor. So St. Cyrian from Pope Stephen. So Dionysius Alex. from Pope Stephen. All which persons were renowned for wisdom and piety in their times.

Highest controversies were appeased

* Mos est Romanæ ecclesiæ sacerdoti noviter constituto formam fidei suæ ad sanctas ecclesias prærogare.—P. Gelas. I. Ep. 1, ad Laur.

‡ Gelas. Ep. 9; Baron. ann. 492, §. 10; vide Tract. de. Unit. Eccl.

‡ Gal. ii. 11, ἀντιτάξαι.

by synods out of the holy scripture, Catholic tradition, the analogy of faith, and common reason, without regard to the pope. Divers synods in Afric and Asia defined the point about *rebaptization* without the pope's leave, and against his opinion. The synod of Antioch condemned the doctrine of Paulus Samosatenus, without intervention of the pope, before they gave him notice. In the synod of Nice, the pope had very small stroke. The general synod of Constantinople declared the point of the *divinity* of the Holy Ghost against Macedonius, without the pope; who did no more than afterward consent: this the synod of Chalcedon, in their compellation to the Emperor Marcian, did observe: "The Fathers, met in Sardica to suppress the relics of Arianism, communicated their decrees to the eastern bishops; and they who here discovered the pestilence of Apolinarius, made known theirs to the western."^{*}

The synod of Afric defined against Pelagius, before their informing Pope Innocentius thereof; not seeking his judgment, but desiring his consent to that which they were assured to be truth.

Divers popes have been incapable of deciding controversies, themselves having been erroneous in the questions controverted; as Pope Stephanus (in part), Pope Liberius, Pope Felix, Pope Vigilius, Pope Honorius, &c. And in our opinion, all popes for many ages.

It is observable how the synod of Chalcedon, in their allocation to the Emperor Marcian, do excuse Pope Leo for expounding the faith, in his Epistle (the which it seems some did reprehend as a novel method disagreeable to the canons:) "Let not them" (say they) "object to us the Epistle of the marvellous prelate of Rome, as obnoxious to imputation of

novelty; but if it be not consonant scriptures, let them confute it; or be not consentaneous to the Father have preceded; or if it be not confute the irreligious," &c.

It was not his judicial authority they did insist upon to maintain Epistle, but the orthodoxy and in usefulness of it to confute errors; which account they did embrace confirm it by their suffrage.

XIII. If the pope were a soverer the church, as they make him, it at least expedient that he should fallible; for why otherwise should undertake confidently to pronounce all cases, to define high and difficult points, to impose his dictates, and receive assent from all? If he be fallible, very probable that often he doth of errors upon us for matters of faith and practice.

Wherefore the true friends of the public interest do assert him to be infallible when he dictateth as pope, and send himself into his chair doth thence to instruct the whole Church.* An pope therefore himself, who counteth them, may be presumed to that mind.

Pighius said bouncingly, "The consent of the apostolic see, with the consent of domestic priests, is far more credible than the judgment of an universal council of the whole earth without pope."^{**}

This is the syllogism we propose
The supreme judge must be infallible.
The pope is not infallible: therefore
The major, the Jesuits, canonist courtiers are obliged to prove, it their assertion; and they do prove wisely and strongly.

The *minor* is asserted by the Fathers and doctors; and they do with clear evidence maintain it.

The *conclusion* we leave them to who are concerned.

It is in effect Pope Gregory's argumentation: *no* bishop can be universal (or universal pastor and judge of

* Καὶ οἱ μὲν ἐκ Σαρδικῆς κατὰ τῶν Ἀρείου λεγόντων ἀγωνισάμενοι τοῖς ἐν ἀνατολῇ τὴν κρίσιν ἐξεπέμψον, οἱ δὲ ἐνταῦθα τὴν Ἀπολιναρίου λύμην φερόσαντες τοῖς ἐν δύσει τὴν ψήφον ἐννῶρίζον.—Conc. Chalced. ad Marc. Orat. p. 468.

† Ὡς ξένην τιὰ καὶ τοῖς κανόσιν οὐ νομιμμένην τῆς ἐπιστολῆς διαβάλλῃ τὴν σύνταξιν.—Act. Syn. Chalced. p. 465. Μὴ τοίνυν ἡμῖν τοῦ θανατοῦ τῆς Ρώμης προέδρου τὴν ἐπιστολὴν, ὡς καινοτομίας ἔγκλημα, προσφέρέτωσαν· ἀλλὰ εἰ μὴ σύμφωνοι ταῖς γραφαῖς, ἐλεγχέτωσαν· εἰ μὴ τοῖς προλαβοῦσι πατρῶσιν ὑπόδοξος· εἰ μὴ πρὸς δύσεσθῶν κατηγορίαν γυγύνηται —.

* Longe certius est unius apostolice cum concilio domesticorum sacerdotum, quam sine pontifice iudicium unius concilii totius orbis terrarum.—Pighius lib. 6.

^{*} Bell. lib. iv.

church), because no bishop can be infallible; for that the lapse of such a pastor would throw down the church into ruin, by error and impiety. "Therefore the universal church (which God forbid!) falls, when he falls who is called universal.*—The state and order of our Lord's family will decay, when that which is required in the body is not to be found in the head."

But that he is not infallible, much experience and history do abundantly shew.

The ancients knew no such pretender to infallibility; otherwise they would have left disputing, and run to his oracular dictates for information. They would have only asserted this point against heretics. We should have had testimonies of it innumerable. It had been the most famous point of all.†

I will not mention Pope Stephanus universally approving the baptism of heretics against the decrees of the synod of Nice and other synods. Nor pope Liberius complying with Arianism. Nor Pope Innocent I. and his followers, at least till Pope Gelasius, first asserting the "Communion of infants" for needful.‡ Nor Pope Vigilus dodging with the fifth synod. Nor Pope Honorius condemned by so many councils and popes for monothelism. But surely Pope Leo and Pope Gelasius were strangely deceived when they condemned "partaking in one kind."§ Pope Gregory was foully out when he condemned "the worship of images;" and when he so declaimeth against the title of "universal bishop;" and when he avowed himself a subject to the Emperor Mauritius; and when he denied the books of Maccabees to be "canonical;" and when he asserted the perfection of holy scripture.¶ Pope Leo II. was mistaken, when he did charge his

* *Universa ergo ecclesia, quod absit, a statu suo corrui, quando is qui vocatur universalis cadit.—Greg. M. Epist. iv. 32. Totius familiæ Domini status et ordo nutabit, si quod requiritur in corpore, non inveniatur in capite.—P. Leo. Ep. 87.*

† In nullo aliter sapere quam res se habet angelica perfectio est.—*Aug. de Bapt. Contr. Don. ii. 5.* Not to think of a thing otherwise than it is, is an angelical perfection.

‡ P. Gelas. i. Ep. ix. p. 636.

§ De Consecr. Dist. ii. cap. 12.

¶ Greg. Ep. vii. 110; ii. 62; iv. 32, 36, 38; vi. 30; In Joh. lib. xix. cap. 13; xviii. 14.

infallible predecessor Honorius of monothelism; Pope Nicholas was a little deceived, when he determined the "attrition of Christ's body."* Pope Urban II. was out, when he allowed it lawful for good catholics to commit murder on persons excommunicate.‡ Pope Innocent IV. erred, when he called kings "the pope's slaves."†

Surely those popes did err, who confirmed the synods of Constance and Basil; not excepting the determinations in favour of general councils being superior to popes.¶ All those popes have devilishly erred, who have pretended to dispose of kingdoms; to depose princes; to absolve subjects of their oaths. Pope Adrian II. did not take the pope to be infallible, when he said he might not be judged, excepting in case of heresy; and thereby excuseth the orientals for anathematizing Honorius, he being accused of heresy.

There is one heresy, of which, if all histories do not lie grievously, divers popes have been guilty; a heresy defined by divers popes; the "heresy of simony."‡ How many such heretics have sat in that chair! of which how many popes are proclaimed guilty with a loud voice in history! "The hand" (says St. Bernard) "does all the papal business: shew me a man in all this greatest city who would admit thee to be pope without the mediation of a bribe!"|| Yea, how few for some ages have been guiltless of this heresy! It may be answered, they were no popes, because their election was null; but then the

* If many popes had been writers, we should have had more errors to charge them with.

† Mancipia papæ.—*Matt. Paris. ann. 1253.*

‡ P. Greg. VII. Ep. lib. iii. 7.—Simoniaca hæresis. P. Jul. II. Conc. Lat. Sess. 5. (p. 57.)—Idem electus non apostolicus, sed apostaticus, et tanquam hæresiarcha, &c. *Ibid. Tract. iv. § 12, 16.*—Decernimus, quod—sed etiam contra dictum sic electum vel assumptum a simoniaca labe opponi et excipi possit sicut de vera et indubitata hæresi—

|| Omne papale negotium manus agunt; quem dabis mihi de tota maxima urbe, qui te in papam receperit pretio non intercedente?—*Bern. de Consid. iv. 2.*

¶ Gratt. de Consecr. ii. Dist. ii. cap. 42; Grat. Caus. xxiii. qu. 5, cap. 47.

* Joh. XXII. Gerson. Sermon. in Pasch. Occam. Celestinus —; Alph. a Castro. Hær. i. 4; Bin. tom. vii. p. 994.

church hath often and long been without a *head*. Then numberless acts have been void; and creations of cardinals have been null; and consequently there hath not probably been any true pope for a long time.

In the judgment of so many great divines, which did constitute the synod of Basil, many popes (near all surely) have been heretics; who have followed or countenanced the opinion that popes are superior to general councils; the which there is flatly declared heresy. Pope Eugenius by name was there declared "a pertinacious heretic, deviating from the faith."*

It often happeneth that the pope is not skilled in divinity, as Pope Innocent X. was wont to profess concerning himself (to wave discourse about theological points;) he therefore cannot pronounce, in use of ordinary means, but only by miracle, as Balaam's ass. So pope Innocent X. said, that "the vicar of Jesus Christ was not obliged to examine all things by dispute; for that the truth of his decrees depended only on divine inspiration."† What is this but downright *quakerism, enthusiasm, imposture*?

Pope Clemens V. did not take himself to be infallible, when in his great synod of Vienna, the question, whether, beside remission of sin, also virtue were conferred to infants, he resolved thus very honestly,—“The second opinion, which says, that informing grace and virtues are in baptism conferred both upon infants and adult persons, we think fit, with the consent of the holy council, to be chosen; as being more probable, and more consonant and agreeable to the divinity of the modern doctors.”‡

Which of the *two* popes was in the right,—Pope Nicholas IV., who decided that our Lord was so poor that he had

* A fide devius, pertinax hæreticus —. *Concil. Basil.* sess. xxxiv. p. 96, 107.

† Le pape répondit, que le vicaire de J. C. n'estoit point obligé d'examiner toutes choses par la dispute; que la verité de ses decrets dependoit seulement de l'inspiration divine.—*Memor. Hist. de 5, Propos.*

‡ — Opinionem secundam, quæ dicit tam parvulis quam adultis conferri in baptismo informantem gratiam et virtutes, tanquam probabiliorem ac doctorum modernorum theologiæ magis consonam et concordem sacro approbante concilio duximus eligendam.—*Clem. in Tit. 1.*

right to nothing—or Pope John XXII., who declared this to be a heresy, charging our Lord with injustice?†

XIV. A sovereign is in dignity and authority superior to any number of subjects, however conjoined or congregated; as a head is above all the members, however compacted: he is not supreme, who is anywise subject or inferior to a senate, or any assembly in his territory.

Therefore the pope doth claim a superiority over all councils;‡ pretending that their determinations are invalid without his consent and confirmation; that he can rescind or make void their decrees; that he can suspend their consultations, and translate or dissolve them.

And Baronius reckons this as one error in Hincmarus, bishop of Rheims, "that he held as if the canons of councils were of greater authority in the church of God than the decrees of popes, which," says he, "how absurd and unreasonable an opinion it is," &c.*

"That the authority of the apostolic see, in all Christian ages, has been preferred before the universal church, both the canons of our predecessors and manifold tradition do confirm."†

This is a question stiffly debated among Romanists: but the most (as Æneas Sylvius, afterward Pope Pius II did acutely observe), with good reason do adhere to the pope's side, because the *pope* disposeth of *benefices*, but *councils* give none.

But in truth, anciently the pope was not understood superior to councils; for "greater is the authority of the world that of one city,"‡ says St. Jerome. He was but one bishop, that had nothing to do out of his precinct. He had but his

* Plane significat majoris esse auctoritatis in ecclesia Dei canones conciliorum decreti pontificum: hæc quam sint absurda et ab omni ratione penitus aliena, &c.—*Baron.* ad ann. 992, § 56; *Conc. Later.* V. sess. 11, p. 152 *Th. Cajet. Orat. in Conc. Lat.* p. 36.

† Apostolicæ vero sedis auctoritas, quæ cunctis seculis Christianis ecclesiæ prælata si universæ, et canonum serie paternorum, e multiplici traditione firmatur.—*P. Gelas. Ep. 8.* (o impudentiam!)

‡ Major est auctoritas orbis quam urbis.—*Hier. et Evag.*

† *Bell. iv. 14.* (p. 1318;) Confer *Sext. lib. v. tit. 12; cap. 3; Extrav. Joh. XXII. tit. xiv. cap. 3-5.*

‡ *Bellarmin. de Concil. ii. 17.*

vote in them; he had the first vote, as the patriarch of Alexandria the second, of Antioch the third—but that order neither gave to him or them any advantage, as to decision; but common consent, or the suffrages of the majority, did prevail. He was conceived subject to the canons no less than other bishops. Councils did examine matters decreed by him, so as to follow or forsake them as they saw cause. The popes themselves did profess great veneration and observance of conciliar decrees. Pope Leo I. did oppose a canon of the synod of Chalcedon (not pretending his superiority to councils, but the inviolability of the Nicene canons), but it, notwithstanding that opposition, did prevail.

Even in the dregs of times, when the pope had clambered so high to the top of power, this question in great numerous synods of bishops was agitated, and positively decided against him, both in doctrine and practice.^a

The synod of Basil affirmeth the matter of these decrees to be a "verity of the Christian faith, which whoever doth pertinaciously resist, is to be deemed a heretic."*—Those Fathers say, that "none of the skilful did ever doubt of this truth, that the pope, in things belonging to faith, was subject to the judgment of the same general councils—that the council has an authority immediately from Christ, which the pope is bound to obey."† Those synods were confirmed by popes, without exception of those determinations.

Great churches, most famous universities, a mighty store of learned doctors of the Roman communion, have revered those councils, and adhered to their doctrine. Insomuch that the cardinal of Lorrain did affirm him to be an heretic in France, who did hold the contrary.

* Veritas catholicæ fidei, cui pertinaciter repugnans est censendus hæreticus.—*Concil. Bas. sess. 33.*

† Nec unquam aliquis peritorum dubitavit unum pontificem in his quæ fidem concernunt iudicio eorundem conciliorum universalium esse subjectum.—*Conc. Basil. Decret. p. 117.* Concilium habet potestatem immediate a Christo, cui papa obedire tenetur.—*Conc. Bas. sess. 38, p. 101.*

^a Concil. Const. sess. iv. (p. 1003;) Conc. sess. 2, 33.

These things sufficiently demonstrate that the pope cannot pretend to supremacy by universal tradition; and if he cannot prove it by that, how can he prove it? Not surely by scripture, nor by decrees of ancient synods, nor by any clear and convincing reason.

XV. The sovereign of the church is by all Christians to be acknowledged the chief person in the world, inferior and subject to none; above all commands; the greatest emperor being his *sheep* and *subject*.

He therefore now doth pretend to be above all princes.* Divers popes have affirmed this superiority. They are allowed, and most favoured by him, who teach this doctrine. In their Missal he is preferred above all kings, being prayed for before them.

But in the primitive times this was not held; for St. Paul requires *every soul to be subject to the higher powers*.¹ Then the emperor was avowed the first person, next to God: "To whom" (says Tertullian), "they are second, after whom they are first, before all and above all gods. Why? &c.—we worship the emperor as a man next to God, and less only than God."† And Optatus,—"Since there is none above the emperor but God who made him."—"While Donatus extolleth himself above the emperor, he raises himself as it were above humanity, and thinks himself to be God, and not man. For the king is the top and head of all things on earth."‡ Then even "apostles, evangelists, prophets, all men whoever, were subject to the emperor."² The emperors did command them, "even the blessed bishops

* As in Israel, Saul was the head.—1 Sam. xv. 17.

† — a quo sunt secundi, post quem primi ante omnes, et super omnes deos; quidni? cum super omnes homines, qui utique vivunt.—*Tertul. Apol. cap. 30.* Colimus imperatorem ut hominem a Deo secundum, et solo Deo minorem.—*Tertul. ad Scap. cap. 2.*

‡ Cum super imperatorem non sit nisi solus Deus, qui fecit imperatorem.—*Opt. 3;* vide *Tr. v. § 14.* Dum se Donatus super imperatorem extollit, jam quasi hominum excesserat modum, ut se ut Deum non hominem æstimaret.—*Id. ibid.* Βασιλεὺς γὰρ κορυφὴ καὶ κεφαλὴ τῶν ἐπὶ τῆς γῆς ἐστιν πάντων.—*Chrys. 'Aπόρ. β'. p. 463.*

¹ Rom. xiii. 1.

² Chrys. in Rom. xiii. 1.

and patriarchs of old Rome, Constantino-ple, Alexandria, Theopolis, and Jerusalem."* Divers popes did avow themselves subject to the emperor.

XVI. The confirmation of magistrates, elected by others, is a *branch of supremacy* which the pope doth assume.^k

Baronius saith that this was the ancient custom; and that Pope Simplicius did confirm the election of Calendion, bishop of Antioch.

"Meletius confirmed the most holy Gregory in the bishopric of Constantino-ple."[†]

But the truth is, that anciently bishops being elected did only give an account of their choice unto all other bishops; especially to those of highest rank, desiring their approbation and friendship, for preservation of due communion, correspondence, and peace. So the synod of Antioch gave account to the bishops of Rome and Alexandria, "and all their fellow ministers throughout the world,"[‡] &c. of the election of Domnus after Paulus Samosatenus. So the Fathers of Constantinople acquainted Pope Damasus and the western bishops with the constitution of Nectarius, Flavianus, &c.

This was not to request confirmation, as if the pope or other bishops could reject the election, if regular, but rather to assure whom they were to communicate with. "We have" (say the Fathers of the synod against Paulus Samosatenus) "signified this (our choosing of Domnus into Paulus's room), that you may write to him, and receive letters of communion from him."||—And St. Cyprian, "That you and our colleagues may know to

whom they may write, and from whom they may receive letters."*

Thus the bishops of Rome themselves did acquaint other bishops with their election, their faith, &c.^m So did Cornelius; whom therefore St. Cyprian asserteth as established by the consent and approbation of his colleagues: "When the place of Peter and the sacerdotal chair was void, which by God's will being occupied, and with all our consents confirmed,"[†] &c.—"and the testimony of our fellow bishops, the whole number of which all over the world unanimously consented."[‡]

The emperor did confirm bishops, as we see by that notable passage in the synod of Chalcedon; where Bassianus, bishop of Ephesus, pleading for himself saith,—“Our most religious emperor knowing these things, presently ratified it, and by a memorial published it, confirming the bishopric; afterwards he sent his rescript by Eustathius, the silentiary again confirming it.”||

XVII. It is a prerogative of sovereigns to grant *privileges, exemptions, dispensations*.

This he claimeth; but against the laws of God and rights of bishops; against the decrees of synods—against the sense of good men in all times.

XVIII. It is a prerogative of sovereign power, to erect, translate spiritual presidences.

Wherefore this the pope claimeth. *Cum ex illo, &c.*^o

But at first he had nothing to do there-

* Ut scires tu, et collegæ nostri quibus scribere, et literas mutuo a quibus vos accipere oporteret —. *Cypr. Ep. 55. (ad Cornel.)*

† Cum locus Petri, et gradus cathedræ sacerdotalis vacaret, quo occupato de Dei voluntate, atque omnium nostrum consensione firmato —. *Cypr. Ep. 52.*

‡ — et coepiscoporum testimonio, quorum numerus universonum per totum mundum concordî unanimitate consensit.—*Ibid.*

|| Γνωὸς δὲ ταῦτα ὁ εὐσεβέστατος ἡμῶν βασιλεὺς, εὐθὺς τοῦτο αὐτὸ ἐβεβαίωσε, καὶ εὐθὺς διὰ ἑκομητικῆς ἰδέλλωσεν ἐν φανερῷ, βεβαιῶν τὴν ἐπισκοπὴν μετὰ ταῦτα ἀπέστειλε σάκραν πάλιν διὰ Εὐσταθίου τοῦ Σιλεντιαρίου βεβαιῶσαν τὴν ἐπισκοπὴν.—*Conc. Chalc. Act. xi. (p. 404.)*

^m Vide P. Greg. Tract. de Unit. Eccl.

ⁿ Vide Bern.

^o P. Innoc. III. in Greg. Decr. lib. i. tit. 7. cap. 1.—&c.

* Jubemus igitur beatissimos episcopos et patriarchas, hoc est senioris Romæ, et Constantinopoleos, et Alexandriæ, et Theopoleos, et Hierosolymorum.—*Justinian. Novel. cxxiii. cap. 3; P. Greg. M. Ep. ii. 62, supra in præf. § iv. Tract. 5, § 14.*

† 'Εβεβαίωσε τῷ θεοτάτῳ Γρηγορίῳ τὴν τῆς Κωνσταντινουπόλεως προεδρίαν.—*Theod. v. 8.*

‡ Καὶ τοῖς κατὰ τὴν οἰκουμένην πᾶσι συλλειτουργοῖς —. *Euseb. vii. 30.*

|| 'Εδηλώσαμεν τε ἑμῖν ὅπως τοῦτο γράφητε, καὶ τὰ παρὰ τούτου κοινωτικὰ δέχθησθε γράμματα —. *Euseb. ibid.*

^k Vide § 5, Dist. lxiii. cap. 4; P. Nic. I. Ep.

^l Ann. 482, § 1.

in, except in his own province or diocese.

As Christianity did grow and enter into cities, so the neighbour bishops did ordain bishops there.

Princes often, as they did endow, so they did erect episcopal sees, and did, as was suitable, change places.

Pope Paschal II. doth by complaining attest to this, writing to the archbishop of Poland, "What shall I say of the translations of bishops, which among you are presumed to be made, not by apostolic authority, but the king's command?"*

XIX. It is a great prerogative of sovereignty to impose taxes on the clergy or people.

Wherefore the pope doth assume this; as for instance that decree of Pope Innocent IV. in the first synod of Lyons: "By the common consent of the council we ordain that all the clergy, as well those who are under the authority as the prelates, pay for three years a twentieth part of their ecclesiastical revenues towards the assistance of the Holy Land, into the hands of those who shall be thereto appointed by the prudence of the apostolic see.—And let all know, this they are bound faithfully to do under pain of excommunication."†

But antiquity knew no such impositions: when the church, the clergy, the poor, were maintained and relieved by voluntary offerings, or obventions.

Even the invidious splendour of the Roman bishop was supported by the "oblations of matrons," as Marcellinus observeth.‡

* Quid super episcoporum translationibus loquar, quæ apud vos non auctoritate apostolica, sed nutu regis præsumuntur?—*P. Pasch. II. Ep. 6.* Præter auctoritatem nostram episcoporum translationes præsumitis —. *Eadm. p. 115.*

† Cæterum ex communi concilii approbatione statuimus, ut omnes omnino clerici, tam subditi quam prælati, vigesimam ecclesiarum proventuum usque ad triennium conferant in subsidium terræ sanctæ, per manus eorum, qui ad hoc apostolica fuerint providentia ordinati. — sciantque se omnes ad hoc fideliter observandum per excommunicationis sententiam obligatos.—*Lugdun. Concil. 1.* (anno 1245.)

‡ Ut ditentur oblationibus matronarum.—*M. Carcel. 27*; vide *Const. Apost. ii. 25.* Nam qui constituerunt vel fundarunt sanctissimas ecclesias pro sua salute et communis reipublicæ,

This is an encroachment upon the right of princes, unto whom clergymen are subjects, and bound to *render tribute to whom tribute belongeth.*‡

SUPPOSITION VII.

A farther grand assertion of the Roman party is this, "That the papal supremacy is indefectible and unalterable."

BUT good reasons may be assigned, why, even supposing that the pope had an universal sovereignty in virtue of his succession to St. Peter conferred on him, it is not assuredly consequent, that it must always, or doth now belong to him. For it might be settled on him, not absolutely, but upon conditions, the which failing, his authority may expire. It might be God's will that it should only continue for a time. And there are divers ways whereby, according to common rules of justice, he might be dis seized thereof.

1. If God had positively declared his will concerning this point, that such a sovereignty was by him granted irrevocably and immutably, so that in no case it might be removed or altered, then indeed it must be admitted for such; but if no such declaration doth appear, then to assert it for such is to derogate from his power and providence, by exemption of this case from it. It is the ordinary course of providence so to confer power of any kind or nature on men, as to reserve to himself the liberty of transferring it, qualifying it, extending or contracting it, abolishing it, according to his pleasure, in due seasons and exigencies of things. Whence no human power can be supposed absolutely stable, or immoveably fixed in one person or place.

2. No power can have a higher source, or firmer ground, than that of the civil government hath; for *all such power is from heaven*: and in relation to that it is said, *There is no power but from God; the powers that are, are ordained*

reliquerunt illis substantias, ut per eas debeant sacræ liturgiæ fieri, et ut illis a ministrantibus piis clericis Deus colatur.—*Cod. Lib. i. tit. 3, § 42.*

‡ Rom. xiii. 7.

by God:^a but yet such power is liable to various alterations, and is like the sea, having ebbs and flows, and ever changing its bounds, either personal or local.

Any temporal jurisdiction may be lost by those revolutions and vicissitudes of things, to which all human constitutions are subject; and which are ordered by the will and providence of the Most High, who ruleth in the kingdom of men, appointing over it whom he pleaseth; putting down one, and setting up another.^b

Adam, by God's appointment, was sovereign of the world; and his first-born successors derived the same power from him: yet in course of time that order hath been interrupted, and divers independent sovereignties do take place.

Every prince hath his authority from God, or by virtue of divine ordination, within his own territory; and according to God's ordinance the lawful successor hath a right to the same authority; yet by accidents such authority doth often fail totally, or in part, changing its extent.

Why then may not any spiritual power be liable to the same vicissitudes? Why may not a prelate be degraded as well as a prince? Why may not the pope, as well as the emperor, lose all, or part of his kingdom?

Why may not the successor of Peter, no less than the heir of Adam, suffer a defaulture of jurisdiction?

That spiritual corporations, persons, and places, are subject to the same contingencies with others, as there is like reason to suppose, so there are examples to prove:—God removed his sanctuary from Shiloh; *Go ye now unto my place, which was in Shiloh, where I set my name at first,*^c &c. He deserted Jerusalem. He removeth the candlesticks.^d He placed Eli (of the family of Ithamar) in the high priesthood, and displaced his race from it; *I said indeed* (saith God) *that thy house and the house of thy father, should walk before me forever: but now the Lord saith, Be it far from me,*^e &c.

^a John. xix. 11; Rom. xiii. 1.—

^b Dan. v. 21; Psal. lxxv. 7.

^c Jer. vii. 12, 14. ^d Rev. ii. 5.

^e 1 Sam. ii. 30; 1 Kings ii. 27.

3. The reason and exigency of things might be sufficient ground for altering an universal jurisdiction; for when it should prove very inconvenient or hurtful, God might order such an alteration to happen, and men be obliged to allow it.

As God first did institute one universal monarchy, but that form (upon the multiplication of mankind, and peopling of the earth) proving incommodious, Providence gave way for its change, and the setting up of particular governments; to which men are bound to submit:^f so God might institute a singular presidency of the church; but when the church grew vastly extended, so that such a government would not conveniently serve the whole, he might order a division, in which we should acquiesce.

4. It hath ever been deemed reasonable, and accordingly been practised, that the church, in its exterior form and political administrations, should be suited to the state of the world, and constitution of worldly governments, that there might be no clashing or disturbance from each to other.

Wherefore, seeing the world is now settled under so many civil sovereignties, it is expedient that ecclesiastical discipline should be so modelled, as to comply with each of them.

And it is reasonable, that any pretence of jurisdiction should vail to the public good of the church and the world.

That it should be necessary for the church to retain the same form of policy, or measure of power affixed to persons or places, can nowise be demonstrated by sufficient proof, and it is not consistent with experience; which sheweth the church to have subsisted with variations of that kind.

There hath in all times been found much reason or necessity to make alterations, as well in the places and bounds of ecclesiastical jurisdiction, as of secular empire.

Wherefore St. Peter's monarchy, reason requiring, might be cantonized into divers spiritual supremacies; and as other ecclesiastical jurisdiction have been chopped and changed, enlarged or diminished, removed and extinguished, so might that of the Roman bishop. The pope cannot retain power in any state against the will of the prince: he is not bound

to suffer correspondence with foreigners, especially such who apparently have interests contrary to his honour and the good of his people.

5. Especially that might be done, if the continuance of such a jurisdiction should prove abominably corrupt, or intolerably grievous to the church.

6. That power is defectible, which according to the nature and course of things doth sometime fail.

But the papal succession hath often been interrupted by contingencies (of *sedition, schism, intrusion, simoniacal election, deposition, &c.*, as before shewed), and is often interrupted by vacancies from the death of the incumbents.

7. If, leaving their dubious and false suppositions (concerning divine institution, succession to St. Peter, &c.), we consider the truth of the case, and indeed the more grounded plea of the pope, that papal pre-eminence was obtained by the wealth and dignity of the Roman city, and by the collation or countenance of the imperial authority; then by the defect of such advantages it may cease or be taken away; for when Rome hath ceased to be the capital city, the pope may cease to be head of the church. When the civil powers, which have succeeded the imperial, each in its respective territory, are no less absolute than it, they may take it away, if they judge it fit; for whatever power was granted by human authority, by the same may be revoked; and what the emperor could have done, each sovereign power now may do for itself.

An indefectible power cannot be settled by man; because there is no power ever extant at one time greater than there is at another; so that whatever power one may raise, the other may demolish; their being no bounds whereby the present time may bind all posterity.

However, no human law can exempt any constitution from the providence of God; which at pleasure can dissolve whatever man hath framed. And if the pope were divested of all adventitious power, obtained by human means, he would be left very bare; and hardly would take it worth his while to contend for jurisdiction.

8. However or whencesover the pope had his authority, yet it may be forfeited by defects and defaults incurred by him.

If the pope doth encroach on the rights and liberties of others, usurping a lawless domination, beyond reason and measure, they may in their own defence be forced to reject him, and shake off his yoke.

If he will not be content to govern otherwise than by infringing the sacred laws, and trampling down the inviolable privileges of the churches, either granted by Christ, or established by the sanctions of general synods; he thereby depriveth himself of all authority; because it cannot be admitted upon tolerable terms, without greater wrong of many others (whose right outweigheth his), and without great mischief to the church, the good of which is to be preferred before his private advantage.

This was the maxim of a great pope, a great stickler for his own dignity; for when the bishop of Constantinople was advanced by a general synod above his ancient pitch of dignity, that pope opposing him did say, that "whoever doth affect more than his due, doth lose that which properly belongeth to him;"* the which rule, if true in regard to another's case, may be applied to the pope; *For with what judgment ye judge, ye shall be judged; and with what measure ye mete, it shall be measured to you again.*†

On such a supposition of the papal encroachment, we may return his words upon him: "It is too proud and immoderate a thing to stretch beyond one's bounds, and, in contempt of antiquity, to be willing to invade other men's right, and to oppose the primacies of so many metropolitans, on purpose to advance the dignity of one."†

"For the privileges of churches, being instituted by the canons of the holy Fathers, and fixed by the decrees of the venerable synod of Nice, cannot be plucked

* *Propria perdit, qui indebita concupiscit.— P. Leo I. Ep. 54.*

† *Superbum nimis est et immoderatum ultra fines proprios tendere, et antiquitate calcata alienum jus vellet præripere; utque unius crescat dignitas, tot metropolitānorum impugnare primatus — P. Leo I. Ep. 55.*

‡ *Matt. vii. 2.*

up by any wicked attempt, nor altered by any innovation."*

"Far be it from me, that I should in any church infringe the decrees of our ancestors made in favour of my fellow priests; for I do myself injury, if I disturb the rights of my brethren."†

The pope surely (according to any ground of scripture, or tradition, or ancient law) hath no title to greater principality in the church, than the duke of Venice hath in that state: now if the duke of Venice, in prejudice to the public right and liberty, should attempt to stretch his power to an absoluteness of command, or much beyond the bounds allowed him by the constitution of that commonwealth, he would thereby surely forfeit his supremacy (such as it is), and afford cause to the state of rejecting him; the like occasion would the pope give to the church by the like demeanour.

9. The pope, by departing from the doctrine and practice of St. Peter, would forfeit his title of successor to him; for in such a case no succession in place or in name could preserve it; "The popes themselves had swerved and degenerated from the example of Peter."‡

"They are not the sons of the saints, who hold the places of the saints, but they that do their works."|| Which place is raised out of St. Jerome.)

"They have not the inheritance of Peter, who have not the faith of Peter, which they tear asunder by ungodly division."§

So Gregory Nazianzen saith of Athanasius, that "he was successor of Mark no less in piety than presidency: the which we must suppose to be properly succession:"¶ otherwise the mufti of

* Privilegia enim ecclesiarum, sanctorum patrum canonibus instituta, et venerabilis Nicenæ synodi fixa decretis, nulla possunt improbitate convelli, nulla novitate mutari.—*Ibid.*

† Absit hoc a me, ut statuta majorum consacerdotibus meis in qualibet ecclesia infringam, quia mihi injuriam facio, si fratrum meorum jura perturbabo.—*Greg. I. Epist. ii. 37.*

‡ Pontifices ipsi a Petri vestigiis disceserant.—*Plat. in Joh. x. (p. 275.)*

|| Non sanctorum filii sunt, qui tenent loca sanctorum, sed qui exercent opera eorum.—*Hieron. ad Heliod. apud Grat. Dist. xl. cap. 2.*

§ Non habent Petri hæreditatem qui Petri fidem non habent, quam impia divisione disceptant.—*Ambros. de Pæn. i. 6.*

¶ Οὐχ' ἴσταν τῆς εὐσεβείας, ἢ τῆς προσέβειας δια-

Constantinople is successor to St. Andrew, of St. Chrysostom, &c.; the mufti of Jerusalem to St. James.

If then the bishop of Rome, instead of teaching Christian doctrine, doth propagate errors contrary to it; if, instead of guiding into truth and godliness, he seduceth into falsehood and impiety; if, instead of declaring and pressing the laws of God, he delivereth and imposeth precepts opposite, prejudicial, destructive of God's laws; if, instead of promoting genuine piety, he doth (in some instances) violently oppose it; if, instead of maintaining true religion, he doth pervert and corrupt it by bold defalcations, by superstitious additions, by foul mixtures and alloys; if he coineth new creeds, articles of faith, new scriptures, new sacraments, new rules of life, obtruding them on the consciences of Christians; if he conformeth the doctrines of Christianity to the interests of his pomp and profit, *making gain godliness*; if he prescribe vain, profane, superstitious ways of worship, turning devotion into foppery and pagantry; if, instead of preserving order and peace, he fomenteth discords and factions in the church, being a make-bait and incendiary among Christians; if he claimeth exorbitant power, and exerciseth oppression and tyrannical domination over his brethren, cursing and damning all that will not submit to his dictates and commands; if, instead of being a shepherd, he is a wolf, worrying and tearing the flock by cruel persecution: he, by such behaviour, *ipso facto* depriveth himself of authority and office; he becometh thence no guide or pastor to any Christian; there doth in such case rest no obligation to hear or obey him; but rather to decline him, to disceot from him, to reject and disclaim him.*

This is the reason of the case; this the holy scripture doth prescribe; this is according to the primitive doctrine, tradition, and practice of the church. For,

δοχος — ἦν δὲ καὶ κυρίως ἐποληπτεῖον διαδοχῆν τὸ μὲν γὰρ ἐμβόνημον καὶ ἐμβόνημον τὸ δὲ ἀντιδοξὸν καὶ ἀντιβόνημον — *Greg. Naz. Or. 21.*

* Non facit ecclesiastica dignitas Christianum.—*Hier.* Ecclesiastical dignity makes not a Christian. Non omnes episcopi episcopi sunt.—*Id.* All bishops are not bishops. Οἱ παρ' αὐτοῖς κατάσκοποι, οὐ γὰρ ἐπίσκοποι.—*Athan. Const. Ap. viii. 2.* They with them are scouts or spies, not overseers or bishops.

10. In reason, the nature of any spiritual office consisting in instruction in truth and guidance in virtue toward attainment of salvation ; if any man doth lead into pernicious error or impiety, he thereby ceaseth to be capable of such office : as a blind man, by being so, doth cease to be a guide ; and much more he that declareth a will to seduce ; for, *Who so blind as he that will not see ?**

No man can be bound to follow any one into the ditch ;[†] or to obey any one in prejudice to his own salvation ; to die in his iniquity. Seeing God saith in such a case, *μάτην σέβονται με, In vain do they worship me, teaching for doctrines the precepts of men.*[‡]

They themselves do acknowledge, that heretics cease to be bishops ; and so to be popes. Indeed they cease to be Christians ; for, *ἔξέστραπται ὁ τοιοῦτος,* “ such a one is subverted.”[‡]

11. According to their principles, the pope hath the same relation to other bishops and pastors of the church, which they have to their people ; he being pastor of pastors : but if any pastor should teach bad doctrine, or prescribe bad practice, his people may reject and disobey him ; therefore, in proportion, the pastors may desert the pope misguiding or misgoverning them. In such cases any inferior is exempted from obligation to comply with his superior, either truly or pretendedly such.

12. The case may be, that we may not hold communion with the pope, but may be obliged to shun him ; in which case his authority doth fail, and no man is subject to him.

13. This is the doctrine of the scripture. The high priest and his fellows, under the Jewish economy, had no less authority than any pope can now pretend unto ; they did sit in the chair of Moses,[‡] and therefore all their true doctrines and lawful directions the people were obliged to learn and observe ; but their false doctrines and impious precepts they were bound to shun ;[†] and consequently

to disclaim their authority, so far as employed in urging such doctrines and precepts : *Ἀγετε αὐτοῦς, Let them alone, saith our Saviour, they are blind leaders of the blind.*^a Under the Christian dispensation the matter is no less clear : our Lord commandeth us to beware of false prophets ; and to see that no man deceive us ;^b although he wear the clothing of a sheep, or come under the name of a shepherd (coming in his mane.^c) St. Paul informeth us, that if an apostle, if an angel from heaven, doth preach beside the old apostolical doctrine (introducing any new gospel, or a divinity devised by himself), he is to be held accursed by us.^d He affirmeth, that even the apostles themselves were not lords of our faith, nor might challenge any power inconsistent with the maintenance of Christian truth and piety : *We (saith he) can do nothing against the truth, but for the truth :*^e the which an ancient writer doth well apply to the pope, saying, that he “ could do nothing against the truth more than any of his fellow priests could do ; ”[‡] which St. Paul did in practice shew, when he resisted St. Peter, declining from the truth of the gospel. He chargeth, that if any one doth *ἑτεροδιδασκαλεῖν, teach heterodoxies, we should stand off from him ;*[†] that if any brother walketh disorderly, and not according to apostolical tradition, we should withdraw from him ;[‡] that if any one doth raise divisions and scandals beside the doctrines received from the apostles, we should decline from him ;^{||} that we are to refuse any heretical person.[†] He telleth us, that grievous wolves should come into the church, not sparing the flock ;[§] that from among Christians there should arise men speaking perverse things, to draw disciples after them :[‡]

ζύμης — ἀπὸ τῆς διδαχῆς. Vers. 12. Beware and take heed of the leaven — of the doctrine.

* Nec aliquid contra veritatem, sed pro veritate, plus suis consacerdotibus potest.—*Fac. Hermian.* ii. 6. Gal. ii. 11, 14, “Οτι οὐκ ὀρθοποδοῦσι πρὸς τὴν ἀλήθειαν τοῦ εὐαγγελίου.

† 1 Tim. vi. 3, 5.—Εἰ τις ἑτεροδιδασκαλεῖ — ἀφίστασο ἀπὸ τῶν τοιοῦτων.

‡ 2 Thess. iii. 6.—Στελλεσθαι ἀπὸ παντὸς ἀδελφοῦ —

|| Rom. xvi. 17.—Ἐκκλίθειν ἀπὸ αὐτῶν.

§ Acts xx. 29.—Εἰσελεύσονται εἰς ὑμᾶς.

^a Matt. xv. 14. ^b Matt. vii. 15.

^c Matt. xxiv. 4. ^d Gal. i. 8, 9.

^e 2 Cor. i. 24 ; xiii. 7, 8. ^f Tit. iii. 10.

[‡] Acts xx. 30.

* Luke vi. 39.—Μήτι δύναιται τυφλὸς τυφλὸν δάσκειν ;

† Matt. xvi. 6.—Ὁρᾶτε καὶ προσέχετε ἀπὸ τῆς

‡ Matt. xv. 14.

§ Ezek. iii. 18 ; Matt. xv. 9.

|| Bell. de P. R. 2, 30. (p. 1083.)

‡ Matt. xxii 2 ; xv. 6.

but no man surely ought to follow, but to shun them.

These precepts and admonitions are general, without any respect or exception of persons great or small, pastor or layman: nay, they may in some respect more concern bishops than others; for that they declining from truth, are more dangerous and contagious.

14. The Fathers (in reference to this case) do clearly accord, both in their doctrine and practice. St. Cyprian telleth us, that "a people obedient to the Lord's commandments, and fearing God, ought to separate itself from a sinful bishop;"* that is, from one guilty of such sins which unqualify him for Christian communion, or pastoral charge; and, "Let not" (addeth he) "the common people flatter itself, as if it could be free from the contagion of guilt, if it communicate with a sinful bishop;"† whose irreligious doctrine or practice doth render him incapable of communion; for, "How" (saith he elsewhere) "can they preside over integrity and continence, if corruptions and the teaching of vices do begin to proceed from them?"‡

"They who reject the commandment of God, and labour to establish their own tradition, let them be strongly and stoutly refused and rejected by you."||

St. Chrysostom, commenting on St. Paul's words, *If I, or an angel*—saith, that St. Paul "meaneth to shew, that dignity of persons is not to be regarded where truth is concerned;"§ that "if one of the chief angels from heaven should corrupt the gospel, he were to be accursed;"¶ that "not only, if they

* Plebs obsequens præceptis Dominicis et Deum metuens a peccatore præposito separare se debet.—*Cypr.* Ep. 68.

† Nec sibi plebs blandiatur, quasi immunis esse a contagio delicti possit cum sacerdote peccatore communicans.—*Cypr.* Ep. 68.

‡ Quomodo enim possunt integritati et continentia præesse, si ex ipsis incipiant corruptelæ et vitiorum magisteria procedere?—*Cypr.* Ep. 62.

|| Qui mandatam Dei rejiciunt, et traditionem suam statuere conantur, fortiter a vobis et firmiter respuantur.—*Cypr.* Ep. 40. (p. 73.)

§ Ἀλλὰ δεῖξαι βουλόμενος, ὅτι ἀξίωμα προσώπων οὐ προσίεται, ἔταν περί ἀληθείας ὁ λόγος ᾗ.—*Chrys.* in Gal. i. 9.

¶ Καὶ γὰρ τῶν πρώτων ἀγγέλων ἢ τις τῶν ἐξ οὐρανοῦ, διαφθεῖρων τὸ κήρυγμα, ἀνάθεμα ἔστω.—*Ibid.* i. 8.

shall speak things contrary, or overturn all, but if they preach any small matter beside the apostolical doctrine, altering the least point whatever, they are liable to an anathema."*

And otherwhere, very earnestly persuading his audience to render due respect and obedience to their bishop, he yet interposeth this exception: "If he hath a perverse opinion, although he be an angel, do not obey him: but if he teacheth right things, regard not his life, but his words."†

"Ecclesiastical judges, as men, are for the most part deceived."‡

"For neither are catholic bishops to be assented to, if peradventure in any case they are mistaken, so as to hold anything contrary to the canonical scriptures of God."||

"If there be any church which rejects the faith, and does not hold the fundamentals of the apostolical doctrine, it ought to be forsaken, lest it infect others with its heterodoxy."§

If in such a case we must desert any church, then the Roman; if any church, then much more any bishop, particularly him of Rome.

This hath been the doctrine of divers popes.

"Which not only the apostolical prelate, but any other bishop may do, viz. discriminate and sever any men, and any place, from the catholic communion, according to the rule of that fore-condemned heresy."¶

* Καὶ οὐκ εἶπεν, ἐὰν ἐναντία καταγγέλωσιν, ἢ ἀνατρέπωσιν τὸ πᾶν, ἀλλὰ καὶ μικρὸν τι εὐαγγελίζωσιν, παρ' ὃ εὐαγγελιστάμεθα, καὶ τὸ τυχεῖν παρακινήσωσι, ἀνάθεμα ἔστωσαν.—*Ibid.*

† Εἰ μὲν γὰρ δόγμα ἔχει διεστραμμένον, καὶ ἀγγελος ἢ, μὴ πείθου· εἰ δὲ ὀρθὰ διδάσκει, μὴ τῷ βίῳ προσεχε, ἀλλὰ τοῖς ῥήμασι.—*Chrys.* in 2 Tim. Orat. 2.

‡ Ecclesiastici judices ut homines plerunque falluntur.—*Aug. Contr. Cresc.* ii. 21.

|| Quia nec catholicis episcopis consentiendum est, sicubi forte falluntur, ut contra canonicas Dei scripturas aliquid sentiant.—*Aug. de Unit. Eccl.* cap. 10.

§ Si qua est ecclesia, quæ fidem respuat nec apostolicæ prædicationis fundamenta possideat, ne quam labem perditia possit aspergeri deserenda est.—*Ambr. in Luc.* ix. (p. 85.)

¶ Quod non solum præsulī apostolico fieri licet, sed cuicumque, pontifici, ut quoslibet e quemlibet locum, secundum regulam hæretico ipsius ante damnatæ, a catholica communione discernant.—*P. Gelas. I. Ep.* 4.

"Faith is universal, common to all, and belongs, not only to clergymen, but also to laics, and even to all Christians."*

"Therefore the sheep which are committed to the cure of their pastor ought not to reprehend him, unless he swerve and go astray from the right faith."†

15. That this was the current opinion, common practice doth shew, there being so many instances of those who rejected their superiors, and withdrew from their communion, in case of their maintaining errors, or of their disorderly behaviour; such practice having been approved, by general and great synods, as also by divers popes.

When Nestorius, bishop of Constantinople, did introduce new and strange doctrine,‡ "divers of his presbyters did rebuke him, and withdraw communion from him;" which proceeding is approved in the Ephesine synod.

Particularly Charisius did assert this proceeding in those remarkable words presented to that same synod: "It is the wish and desire of all well-affected persons, to give always all due honour and reverence especially to their spiritual fathers and teachers: but if it should so happen, that they, who ought to teach, should instil unto those who are set under them such things concerning the faith, as are offensive to the ears and hearts of all men, then of necessity the order must be inverted, and they who teach wrong doctrine must be rebuked of those who are their inferiors."||

Pope Celestine I. in that case did commend the people of Constantinople deserting their pastor: "Happy flock,"

* *Fides universalis est, omnium communis est, non solum ad clericos, verum etiam ad laicos, et ad omnes omnino pertinet Christianos.* P. Nich. I. Ep. viii. p. 506.

† *Oves ergo quæ pastori suo commissæ fuerint, eum nec reprehendere, nisi a recta fide exorbitaverit, debent.* — P. Joh. I. Ep. 1. (*Opud Bin.* tom. iii. p. 812.)

‡ *Ἐν τῷ συνεδρίῳ πολλάκις τινὲς τῶν εὐλαβεστάτων πρεσβυτέρων ἠλεγξαν αὐτόν, καὶ διὰ τὴν ἀπειθειαν αὐτοῦ τῆς αὐτοῦ κοινῆς αὐτοῦ ἐξέβαλον.* — Conc. Eph. part. i. p. 220.

|| *Ἐσχὴ μὲν ἅπασιν τοῖς εὐφρονοῦσι, τιμὴν δεῖ καὶ πρέπεισαν αἰδῶ πνευματικοῖς μάλιστα παρῶσι καὶ διδασκάλους ἀπονέμειν· εἰ δὲ ποὺ συμβῆ τοὺς διδάσκειν ἄφελοντας τοιαῦτα τοῖς ὑπηκόοις ἐνηγεῖν περὶ τῆς πίστεως, ὅλα τὰς ἀπάντων ἀκοὰς καὶ καρδίας καταλάβει, ἀνάγκη τὴν τάξιν ἀναλλάττειν, καὶ τοὺς κακῶς διδάσκειν ἰσομένους ὑπὸ τῶν ἡσθόνων διελέγχεσθαι.* — Charis. in Conc. Eph. Act. vi. p. 358.

said he, "to whom the Lord did afford to judge about its own pasture."*

St. Jerome did presume to write very briskly and smartly in reproof of John, bishop of Jerusalem, in whose province he a simple presbyter did reside.

"Who makes a schism in the church? we whose whole house in Bethlehem communicate with the church, or thou, who either believest aright, and proudly concealest the truth, or art of a wrong belief, and really makest a breach in the church? Art thou only the church? and is he who offendeth thee excluded from Christ?"†

Malchion, presbyter of Antioch, disputed against Paulus Samosatenus, his bishop.‡

Beatus, presbyter, confuted his bishop Elipandus of Toledo.

"But if the rector swerve from the faith, he is to be reproved by those who are under him."||

16. The case is the same of the pope; for if other bishops, who are reckoned successors of the apostles, and vicars of Christ within their precinct; if other patriarchs, who sit in apostolical sees, and partake of a like extensive jurisdiction, by incurring heresy or schism, or committing notorious disorder and injustice, may be deprived of their authority, so that their subjects may be obliged to forsake them, then may the pope lose his: for truth and piety are not affixed to the chair of Rome more than to any other; there is no ground of asserting any such privilege, either in holy scripture or in old tradition; there can no promise be alleged for it, having any probable show (that of *Oravi pro te* being a

* *Μακάριος δὲ ἄλλος ἢ ἀγέλη ἢ παρῶσιν ὁ Κύριος κρίνειν περὶ τῆς ἰδίας νομῆς.* — Celest. I. in Conc. Eph. p. 190.

† *Quis scindit ecclesiam? nos quorum omnis domus in Bethlehem in ecclesia communicat; an tu qui aut bene credis, et superbe de fide taces, aut male et vere scindis ecclesiam? — An tu solus ecclesia es; et qui te offenderit a Christo excluditur?* — Hier. Ep. lxi. cap. 16, Ep. lxi.

‡ *Malchion disertissimus Antiochenæ ecclesiæ presbyter, adversus Paulum Samosatenum, qui Antiochenæ ecclesiæ episcopus dogma Artemonias instaurarat, disputavit.* — Hieron. in Catal.

|| *Quod si a fide exorbitaverit rector, tunc arguendus erit a subditis.* — *Isid. Hisp. de Offic.* iii. 39; *vide Thomam. Aq. in 4, Dist. xix. Art. 2.*

ridiculous pretence), it cannot stand without a perpetual miracle; there is in fact no appearance of any such miracle; from the ordinary causes of great error and impiety (that is, ambition, avarice, sloth, luxury) the papal state is not exempt; yea, apparently, it is more subject to them than any other; all ages have testified and complained thereof.

17. Most eminent persons have in such cases withdrawn communion from the popes; as elsewhere we have shewed by divers instances.

18. The canon law itself doth admit the pope may be judged if he be a heretic:—"Because he that is to judge all persons is to be judged of none, except he be found to be gone astray from the faith."*

The supposition doth imply the possibility; and therefore the case may be put that he is such, and then he doth (according to the more current doctrine ancient and modern) cease to be a bishop, yea a Christian; hence no obedience is due to him; yea no communion is to be held with him.

19. This in fact was acknowledged by a great pope, allowing the condemnation of Pope Honorius for good, because he was erroneous in point of faith: "For" (saith he, in that which is called the eighth synod) "although Honorius was anathematized after his death by the oriental bishops, it is yet well known that he was accused for heresy; for which alone it is lawful for inferiors to rise up against superiors."†

Now that the pope (or papal succession) doth pervert the truth of Christian doctrine, in contradiction to the holy scripture, and primitive tradition; that he doth subvert the practice of christian piety, in opposition to the divine commands; that he teacheth falsehoods, and maintaineth impieties, is notorious in many particulars, some whereof we shall touch.

We justly might charge him with all

* Quia cunctos ipse judicaturus a nemine est judicandus, nisi deprehendatur a fide devius.—*Grat.* Dist. xl. cap. 6; *vide* P. Innoc. III. apud Laun. contra Baron —.

† Καὶ γὰρ εἰ καὶ τῷ Ὀνορίῳ ὑπὸ τῶν ἀνατολικῶν μετὰ θάνατον ἀνάθεμα ἐβλήθη, ὅμως γνωστὸν ἔστιν, ὅτι ἐπὶ αἰρέσει κατηγορήθη, δι' ἣν καὶ μόνον ἔξῃσι τοῦς ὑποδεστέρους τῶν μειζύων καταξάντασθαι.—*Syn.* VIII. Act. vii. p. 963.

those extravagant doctrines and practices which the highflying doctors do teach, and which the fierce zealots upon occasion do act; for the whole succession of popes of a long time hath most cherished and encouraged such folks, looking squintly on others, as not well affected to them; but we shall only touch those new and noxious or dangerous positions, which great synods, managed and confirmed by their authority, have defined, or which they themselves have magisterially decreed; or which are generally practised by their influence or countenance.

It is manifest, that the pope doth support and cherish as his special favourites, the ventors of wicked errors; such as those who teach the *pope's infallibility*, his *power over temporal princes*, to cashier and depose them, to *absolve subjects from their allegiance*—the doctrine of *equivocation*, *breach of faith*, with *heretics*, &c.; the which doctrines are heretical, as inducing pernicious practice; whence whoever doth so much as communicate with the maintainers of them, according to the principles of ancient Christianity, are guilty of the same crimes.

The holy scripture and catholic antiquity do teach and enjoin us to *worship and serve God alone*, our Creator; forbidding us to worship any creature, or *fellow-servant*;‡ even not *angels*: "For I who am a creature will not endure to worship one like to me."**

But the pope and his clients do teach and charge us to worship angels and dead men; yea even to venerate "the relics and dead bodies of the saints."†

The holy scripture teacheth us to *judge nothing* (about the present or future state of men, absolutely) *before the time, until the Lord come, who will bring to light the hidden things of darkness, and will make manifest the counsels of hearts, and*

* Κρίσιμα γὰρ ὧν οὐκ ἀνέξομαι τὸν ὅμοιον προσκυνεῖν.—Bas. apud Sozom. vi. 16.

† Similiter et sanctos una cum Christo regnantes venerandos atque invocandos esse:—atque horum reliquias esse venerandas.—*Pii IV. Profess. Fid.* Bonum atque utile esse eos invocare—sanctorum quoque corpora — a fidelibus veneranda esse. *Conc. Trid.*

** Matt. iv. 10; Rev. xix. 10; xxii. 9; Col. ii. 18; Rom. i. 25.

then each man shall have praise of God."¹

But the pope notoriously (in repugnance to those precepts, anticipating God's judgment, and arrogating to himself a knowledge requisite thereto) doth presume to determine the state of men, canonizing them, declaring them to be saints, and proposing them to be worshipped; and on the other side, he dameth, curseth, and censureth his fellow-servants.

God in his law doth command us not to bow down ourselves unto any image, or worship the likeness of any thing in heaven, or earth, or under the earth;* the which law (whether moral or positive) the gospel doth ratify and confirm, charging us to keep ourselves from idols, and to fly worshipping of idols;† that is, to observe the Second Commandment; the validity whereof the Fathers most expressly assert; and divers of them were so strict in their opinion about it, that they deemed it unlawful so much as to make any image.

But the pope and his adherents (in point blank opposition to divine law and primitive doctrine) require us to fall down before and to worship images. "Moreover we decree, that the images of saints be especially had and retained in churches, and that due honour and veneration be imparted to them—so that by those images which we kiss, and before which we uncover the head and fall down, we adore Christ, and venerate the saints whose likeness they bear."[†]

Neither is he satisfied to recommend and decree these unwarrantable venerationes, but (with a horrible strange kind of uncharitableness and ferity) doth he "anathematize those who teach" or think "any thing opposite to his decrees

* Exod. xx. 4.—Ὁὐ ποιήσεις σταντῶ εἰδωλον, οὐδὲ παντὸς ὁμοίωμα —.

† Imagines porro — sanctorum in templis præsertim habendas, et retinendas; eisque debitum honorem et venerationem impertendam — ita ut per imagines, quas osculamur, et coram quibus caput aperimus, et procumbimus, Christum adoremus, et sanctos quorum illæ similitudinem gerunt, veneremur.—*Conc. Trid.* sess. 25.

¹ 1 Cor. iv. 5; Rom. xiv. 4.

[†] 1 John v. 21; 1 Cor. x. 14, 7; Clem. Alex. Tertul.

concerning them;"* so that if the ancient Fathers should live now, they would live under this curse.

The holy scripture, under condition of repentance and amendment of life, upon recourse to God and trust in his mercy, through Jesus Christ our Saviour, doth offer and promise remission of sins, acceptance with God, justification and salvation;* this is the tenor of the evangelical covenant; nor did the primitive church know other terms.

But the pope doth preach another doctrine, and requireth other terms, as necessary for remission of sins and salvation; for he hath decreed the confession of all and each mortal sin, which a man of recollection can remember, to a priest, to be necessary thereto; anathematizing all who shall say the contrary; although the Fathers (particularly St. Chrysostom frequently) have affirmed the contrary.†

The which is plainly preaching another gospel (forged by himself and his abettors), as offering remission upon other terms than God hath prescribed; and denying it upon those which Christianity proposeth.

He teacheth that no sin is pardoned without absolution of a priest.

He requireth satisfaction imposed by a priest, besides repentance and new obedience, as necessary. Which is also another gospel.‡

He dispenseth pardon of sin upon condition of performances unnecessary and insufficient; such as undertaking "pilgrimages to the shrines of saints, visiting churches," making "war upon

* Siquis autem his decretis contraria docuerit, aut senserit, anathema sit.—*Ibid.*

† Si quis dixerit in sacramento pœnitentiæ ad remissionem peccatorum necessarium non esse jure divino confiteri omnia et singula peccata mortalia, quorum memoria cum debita et diligenti præmeditatione habeatur — anathema sit.—*Sess. xiv. de Pœn. Can. 7.* If any one shall say, that in the sacrament of penance it is not necessary by divine right to confess all and singular mortal sins, the remembrance whereof may be had by due and diligent premeditation, let him be anathema.

‡ Si quis negoverit ad integram et perfectam peccatorum remissionem requiri—contritionem, confessionem, et satisfactionem.—*Sess. xiv. Can. 4.* If any shall deny that contrition, confession, and satisfaction, is required, to the entire and perfect remission of sin.

* Ezek. xviii.; Luke xv.; Rom. x. 9; Mark i. 15.

infidels or heretics, contributing money, repeating prayers," undergoing "corporal penances," &c.* which is likewise to frame and publish another gospel.

These doctrines are highly presumptuous and well may be reputed heretical.

God hath commanded that *every soul should be subject to the higher powers* temporal, as to *God's ministers*;† so as to obey their laws, to submit to their judgments, to pay tribute to them. And the Fathers expound this law to the utmost extent and advantage: "If every soul, then yours; if any attempt to except you, he goes about to deceive you."‡

But the pope countermandeth, and exempteth all clergymen from those duties, by his canon law; excommunicating lay judges, who shall perform their office in regard to them. "Because indeed some lay persons constrain ecclesiastics, yea and bishops themselves, to appear before them, and to stand to their judgment, those that henceforth shall presume to do so, we decree that they shall be separate from the communion of the faithful."‡

The scriptures do represent the king (or temporal sovereign) as supreme over his subjects, to whom all are obliged to yield special respect and obedience: the Fathers yield him the same place, above all, next to God; and subject to God alone: the ancient good popes did acknowledge themselves servants and subjects to the emperor.™

But later popes, like *the man of sin* in St. Paul, have advanced themselves

* Et qui Hierosolyman proficiscuntur, et ad Christianam gentem defendendam, et tyrannidem infidelium debellandum efficaciter auxilium præbuerint, quorum peccatorum remissionem concedimus. — *Conc. Lat. I. Can. 11.* And whoever go to Jerusalem, and powerfully afford help to defend Christian people, and to subdue the tyranny of infidels, to them we grant forgiveness of their sins —.

† Si omnis et vestra — si quis tentat excipere, conatur decipere. — *Bern. Ep. 42.*

‡ Lex canonica simpliciter eos eximit. — *Bell. de Cler. cap. 1.* Sane quia laici quidam ecclesiasticas personas et ipsos etiam episcopos suo judicio stare compellunt, eos quide cætero id præsumserint, a communione fidelium decernimus segregandos. — *Conc. Lat. III. Can. 14; Ibid. II. 15; Steph. VI. Ep. 1.* (tom. i. p. 130;) *Nich. I. Ep. 8.* (tom. vi. p. 513.)

™ Rom. xiii. 1—; Tit. iii. 1; 1 Pet. κβν ἀπόστολος —. Chrys.

▪ Tertul. Opt. Cyril. &c. alibi; Greg. Ep. ii. 62; Agatho, &c. ▪ 2 Thess. ii. 4.

above all civil power; claiming to themselves a supereminency, not only of rank, but of power, over all Christian princes; even to depose them. "Christ hath committed the rights both of terrestrial and celestial government to that blessed man who bears the keys of eternal life."*

"If the secular power be believers, God would have them subject to the priests of the church—Christian emperors ought to submit, and not prefer the execution of their laws to the rulers of the church."†

God by indispensable law hath obliged us to retain our obedience to the king, even pagan; charging us under pain of damnation to be subject to him, and not to resist him—.

But the pope is ready upon occasion to discharge subjects from that obligation, to absolve them from their solemn oaths of allegiance, to encourage insurrection against him, to prohibit obedience—.‡ "We observing the decrees of our holy predecessors, by our apostolical authority absolve those from their oath who were bound by their fealty and oath to excommunicated persons: and we forbid them by all means that they yield them no allegiance, till they come and make satisfaction."

Thus doth he teach and prescribe *rebellion, perjury*—together with all the *murders* and *rapines* consequent on them: which is a far greater heresy, then if he should teach *adultery, murder, or theft* to be lawful. "For they are enjoined by no authority to perform the allegiance which they have sworn to a Christian prince, who is an adversary to God and

* Christus beato. æternæ vitæ clavigero terreni simul et cœlestis imperii jura commisit. — *P. Nich. II. apud Grat. Dist. xxii. cap. 1; Greg. VII. Ep. viii. 21; Caus. xv. qu. 6. cap. 3.*

† Beculi potestates si fideles sunt, Deus, ecclesiæ sacerdotibus voluit esse subjectas—imperatores Christiani subdere debent executiones suas ecclesiasticis præsulibus, non præferre. — *P. Joh. VIII. apud Grat. Dist. xxvi. cap. 11.*

‡ Nos sanctorum prædecessorum nostrorum statua tenentes, eos qui excommunicatis fidelitate aut sacramento constricti sunt, apostolica auctoritate a sacramento absolvimus; et ne eis fidelitatem observent omnibus modis prohibemus, quousque ipsi ad satisfactionem veniant. — *Greg. VII. in Syn. Rom. Grat. Caus. xv. qu. 6, cap. 4.*

his saints, and contemns their commands."*

Not only the holy scripture,^o but common sense doth shew it to be an enormous presumption to obtrude for the inspirations, oracles, and dictates of God, any writings or propositions which are not really such.

This the pope doth notoriously, charging us to admit divers writings (which the greatest part of learned men in all ages have refused for such) as sacred and canonical; anathematizing all those who do not hold each of them for such;—† even as they are extant in a translation, not very exact, and framed partly out of Hebrew, partly out of Greek, upon divers accounts liable to mistake; as its author St. Jerome doth avow.

According to which decree, all who consent with St. Jerome, St. Austin, St. Athanasius, &c., with common sense, with the author of the Second of Maccabees himself, must incur a curse. What can be more uncharitable, more unjust, more silly, than such a definition?

He pretendeth to infallibility, or encourage them who attribute it to him; which is a continual enthusiasm, and profane bold imposture.

The scripture doth avow a singular reverence due to itself, as containing the oracles of God—

But the pope doth obtrude the *oral traditions* of his church (divers of which evidently are new, dubious, vain—) to be worshipped with equal reverence as the holy scripture.‡ “And also receives and venerates, with the like pious re-

spect and reverence, the traditions themselves—which have been preserved by continual succession in the catholic church.”

Among which traditions they reckon all the tricks and trumpery of their mass service; together with all their new notions about purgatory, extreme unction, &c.—“He also used several ceremonies, as mystical benediction, lights, incensings, garments, and many other such things, from apostolical discipline and tradition.”*

The scriptures affirm themselves to be written for common instruction, comfort, edification in all piety; they do therefore recommend themselves to be studied and searched by all people; as the best and surest means of attaining knowledge and finding truth. The Fathers also do much exhort all people (even women and girls) constantly to read, and diligently to study the scriptures.^p

But the pope doth keep them from the people, locked up in languages not understood by them; prohibiting translations of them to be made, or used.† The scripture teacheth, and common sense sheweth, and the Fathers do assert (nothing indeed more frequently or more plainly), that all necessary points of faith and good morality are with sufficient evidence couched in holy scripture, so that *a man of God*, or pious men, may thence *be perfectly furnished to every work*;^q but they contrariwise blaspheme the scriptures, as obscure, dangerous, &c.

Common sense dictateth, that devotions should be performed with understanding and affection; and that consequently

* Fidelitatem enim quam Christiano principi jurarunt, Deo ejusque sanctis adversanti, eorum præcepta calcanti, nulla cohibentur auctoritate persolvere—. *P. Urb. II. apud Grat. Caus. xv. qu. 6, cap. 5.*

† Si quis autem libros ipsos integros cum suis partibus, prout in ecclesia catholica legi consueverunt, et in veteri vulgata Latina editione habentur, pro sacris et canonicis non susceperit — anathema sit.—*Conc. Trid. sess. 4.* But if any shall not receive for sacred and canonical those whole books, with the parts of them, according as they have been wont to be read in the catholic church, and are had in the old vulgar Latin edition; let him be anathema.

‡ — nec non traditiones ipsas — continua successione in ecclesia catholica conservatas pari pietatis affectu ac reverentia suscipit, et veneratur.—*Syn. Trid. sess. 4.*

• Ezek. xiii. 3, &c.

* Ceremonias item adhibuit, ut mysticas benedictiones, lumina, thymiamata, vestes, aliaque id genus multa ex apostolica disciplina et traditione—. *Conc. Trid. sess. xxii. cap. 5, 11, de Sacrif. Miss.*

† N. P. Pius IV. did authorize certain rules for prohibition and permission of books; in which it is permitted to bishops to grant a faculty of reading the scriptures translated— but to this rule there is added an observation, that *this power was taken from bishops by command of the Roman universal inquisition.*—*Ind. Lib. Prohib. a Clem VIII.*

^p 2 Tim. iii. 15; Rom. xv. 4; 1 Cor. ix. 10; x. 11; 2 Pet. i. 20; ἐκβολήφους, John v. 39; Acts xvii. 11; Psal. cxix.—; Hier. ad Læt. Epitaph. Paul. Vit. Hilar.—Chrys. in Colos. Or. 9; Aug. Serm. 55, de temp.

^q 2 Tim. iii. 17.

they should be in a known tongue : and St. Paul expressly teacheth, that it is requisite for private and public edification : “ From this doctrine of Paul it appears, that it is better for the edification of the church, that public prayers, which are said in the audience of the people, should be said in a tongue common to the clergy and the people, than that they should be said in Latin.”*

All ancient churches did accordingly practise ; and most others do so, beside those which the pope doth ride.

But the pope will not have it so, requiring the public liturgy to be celebrated in an unknown tongue ; and that most Christians shall say their devotions like parrots. He anathematizeth those who “ think the mass should be celebrated in a vulgar tongue ;”† that is, all those who are in their right wits, and think it fit to follow the practice of the ancient church.

The holy scripture teacheth us that there is but one head of the church ; and the Fathers do avow no other (as we have elsewhere shewed.)

But the pope assumeth to himself the headship of the church, affirming all “ power and authority to be derived from him into the subject members of the church.”‡

“ We decree that the Roman pontiff is the true vicar of Christ, and the head of the whole church.”||

The scripture declareth, that God did institute marriage for remedy of incontinency and prevention of sin ;* forbidding the use of it to none, who should think it needful or convenient for them ;§ reckoning the *prohibition of it* among heretical doctrines ;¶ implying it to be *imposing a snare upon men.***

* 1 Cor. xiv. 14.—Ex hac Pauli doctrina habetur quod melius est ad ecclesie ædificationem orationes publicas, quæ audiente populo dicuntur, dici lingua communi clericis et populo, quam dici Latine.—*Cajet. in 1 Cor. xiv.*

† — aut lingua tantum vulgari missam celebrari debere—anathema sit.—*Sess. xxii. Can. 9.*

‡ A quo tanquam capite omnis in subjecta membra potestas et authoritas derivetur.—*P. Pius II. in Bull. Retract.*

|| Definimus Romanum pontificem—verum Christi vicarium totiusque ecclesie caput.

— *Defin. Syn. Flor.*

§ Μη οὐκ ἔχομεν ἐξουσίαν ;—1 Cor. ix. 5.

¶ Καλοῦντων γαμήϊον—1 Tim. iv. 3.

** Βρόχον ἐπιβάλλειν—1 Cor. vii. 35.

† *Matt. xix. 11.*

But the pope and his complices do prohibit it to whole orders of men (*priests, &c.*) engaging them into dangerous vows.”*

Our Lord forbiddeth any marriage lawfully contracted to be dissolved, otherwise than in case of adultery.†

But the pope commandeth priests married to be divorced. “ And that marriages contracted by such persons should be dissolved.”**

He dissolveth matrimony agreed, by the profession of monkery of one of the espoused.† “ If any shall say, that matrimony confirmed, not consummate, is not dissolved by the solemn profession of religion of either party, let him be anathema.”

Our Saviour did institute and enjoin us (under pain of damnation, if we should wilfully transgress his order) to eat of his body, and drink of his blood, in participation of the holy supper.‡

The Fathers did accordingly practise, with the whole church, till late times.

But “ notwithstanding Christ’s institution”|| (as they express it), papal synods do prohibit all laymen, and priests not celebrating, to partake of Christ’s blood ; so maiming and perverting our Lord’s institution : “ and yet they decline to drink the blood of our redemption.”§

In defence of which practice, they confound body and blood ; and under a curse would oblige us to believe that one kind doth contain the other ; or that a part doth contain the whole.¶

* Contracta quoque matrimonia ab hujusmodi personis disjungi.—*Conc. Lat. I. cap. 21, Lat. II. Trid. Sess. xxiv. Can. 9.* —

† Si quis dixerit matrimonium ratum non consummatum, per solennem religionis professionem alterius conjugum non dirimi, anathema sit.—*Sess. xxiv. Can. 6.*

‡ *Πίετε ἐξ αὐτοῦ πάντες.*—*Matt. xxvi. 27. Ἐὰν μὴ—πίετε αὐτοῦ τὸ αἷμα, οὐκ ἔχετε ζωὴν.*—*Joh. vi. 53.*

|| Non obstante.—*Conc. Const. Sess. xiii; Conc. Trid. Sess. xiii. cap. 8, Can. 3; Sess. xxi. cap. 4, Can. 3.*

§ This Pope Leo I. condemneth. *De Quadr. Serm. iv. (p. 38.)*—Sanguinem redemptionis nostræ haurire declinant — P. Gelasius calleth the division of the sacrament a grand sacrilege.—*Gratian. in De Consecr. Dist. ii. cap. 12.*

* *Vide Tom. vii. Conc. p. 465; Syn. Trid. sess. xxiv. de Matr. Can. 9.*

† *Matt. v. 32; xix. 7; 1 Cor. vii. 10.*

¶ *Conc. Trid. Sess. xxi. Can. 3; Sess. xiii. Can. 3.*

Whereas our Lord saith, that *whoso eateth his flesh and drinketh his blood hath eternal life;** and consequently supposeth, that bad men do not partake of his body and blood; yet they condemn this assertion under a curse.*

The holy scripture, and the Fathers after it, commonly do call the elements of the eucharist, after consecration, bread and wine; affirming them to retain their nature.†

But the popish Cabal anathematizeth those who say, "that bread and wine do then remain."‡

"If any shall say, that in the holy sacrament of the eucharist the substance of bread and wine remain—let him be anathema."‡

The nature of the Lord's supper doth imply communion and company; but they forbid any man to say, that a priest "may not communicate alone;" so establishing the belief of nonsense and contradiction.

The holy scripture teacheth us, that our Lord hath departed, and is absent from us in body; until that he shall come to judge, which is called his *presence*; that heaven, whither he ascended, and where he sitteth at God's right hand, must hold him till the times of the restitution of all things.||

But the pope, with his Lateran and Tridentine complices, draw him down from heaven, and make him corporally present every day, in numberless places here.

The scripture teacheth us, that our Lord is a man, *perfectly like to us in all things.*§

But the pope and his adherents make him extremely different from us, as hav-

ing a body at once present in innumerable places; insensible, &c. divested of the properties of our body; thereby destroying his human nature, and in effect agreeing with Eutyches, Appollinarius, and other such pestilent heretics.

The scripture representeth him born once for us; but they affirm him every day made by a priest, uttering the words of consecration; as if that which before did exist, could be made; as if a man could make his Maker.

The scripture teacheth, that our Lord was *once offered for expiation of our sins;** but they pretended every day to offer him up as a *propitiatory sacrifice.*

These devices, without other foundation than a figurative expression (which they resolve to expound in a proper sense, although even in that very matter divers figurative expressions are used, as they cannot but acknowledge), they with all violence and fierceness obtrude upon the belief, as one of the most necessary and fundamental articles of the Christian religion.

The scripture teacheth us humbly to acknowledge the rewards assigned by God to be gratuitous and free; and that we, *after we have done all, must acknowledge ourselves unprofitable servants.*‡

But the papists curse those who, although out of humility and modesty, will not acknowledge the good works of justified persons to be truly meritorious;‡ "deserving the increase of grace, eternal life, and augmentation of glory:"‡ so forcing us to use saucy words and phrases, if not impious in their sense.

The scripture teacheth one church diffused over the whole world; whereof each part is bound to maintain charity, peace, and communion with the rest, upon brotherly terms.

But the Romanists arrogate to themselves the name and privilege of the only church; condemning all other churches besides their own, and censuring all for apostatical who do not adhere to them, or submit to their yoke; just like

* Si quis dixerit tantum in usu, &c.—*Trid. Conc. Sess. xiii. cap. 8, Can. 4.*—

† Ἄφρον τοῦτον.—1 Cor. xi. 26; Theod. Ge-las.—

‡ Si quis dixerit in sacrosancto eucharistiæ sacramento remanere substantiam panis et vini—*anathema sit.*—*Trid. Conc. de Euch. Sess. xiii. Can. 2.* Si quis dixerit missas in quibus sacerdos solus sacramentaliter communicat, illicitas esse, *anathema sit.*—*Sess. xxii. de Sac. Miss. Can. 8; Sess. xiii. Can. 8.*

|| 2 Cor. v. 6—; Act. ii. 33; Col. iii. 1. Εἰς τὸ διηνεκὲς ἐκάθισα.—Heb. x. 12. Ὁὐ δὲ οὐρανὸν ἔχουσαι.—Acts iii. 21.

§ Ὁφείλει κατὰ πάντα τοῖς ἀδελφοῖς βρωσιθῆναι.—*1*

John vi. 54.

* Heb. ix. 26; x. 10, 12, 14.—ἐφάπαξ. μιᾷ προσφορᾷ.

‡ Eph. ii. 8, 9; Tit. iii. 5; Rom. iii. 24; Luke xvii. 10.

‡ Sess. vi. de Justif. Can. 32.

the Donatists, who said that "the world had apostatized," excepting those who upon their own terms did communicate with them; "only the communion of Donatus remained" the true church.*

The holy scripture biddeth us take care of persons pretending to extraordinary inspirations; charging on the Holy Spirit their own conceits and devices.†

Such have been their synods, boldly fathering their decrees on God's Spirit.—

And their pope is infallible, by virtue of inspiration communicated to him, when he pleaseth to set himself right in his chair.— Whence we may take them for bodies of enthusiasts and fanatics: the difference only is, that other enthusiasts pretend singly, they conjunctly and by conspiracy. Others pretend it in their own direction and defence, these impose their dreams on the whole church.

If they say that God hath promised his Spirit to his church, it is true; but he hath no less plainly and frequently promised it to single Christians, who should seek it earnestly of him.‡

The ancient Fathers could in the scriptures hardly discern more than two sacraments, or mysterious rites of our religion, by positive law and institution of our Saviour to be practised.‡

But the popes have devised others, and under uncharitable curses propound them to be professed for such;‡ affirming them to confer grace by the bare performance of them.

Every clergyman and monk is bound by Pius IV. to profess "there are just seven of them;"‡ and the Tridentine synod "anathematizeth all those who do say there are more or fewer;"‡ although the ancients did never hit on that number.

* Orbis terrarum apostatavit, et sola remansit Donati communio.—*Aug. de Unit.* 12.—

† Si sacramenta essent pauciora, magna impietas fuisset, et superstitio, &c.—*Bell. de Sacram.* ii. 25. If the sacraments were fewer, there would have been great impiety and superstition, &c.

‡ Profiteor quoque septem esse proprie et vere sacramenta.—*Bulla Pii IV.*

|| Si quis dixerit — esse plura vel pauciora quam septem — anathema sit.—*Syn. Trid.* sess. vii. Can. 1.

* 1 John. iv. 1; Jer. xxix. 8.—

† Luke xi. 13; James i. 5; 1 John ii. 27; Heb. viii. 11; Rom. viii. 9.

‡ *Acts v. 32; Aug. Doctr. Christ. Ep. ad Jen.*

"But these our sacraments both contain grace, and also confer it upon those who worthily receive them."*

They require men to believe under a curse that each of those were instituted of Christ, and confer grace by the bare performance.

Particularly, they curse those who do not hold "matrimony for a sacrament instituted by Christ, and conferring grace."† What can be more ridiculous than to say, that marriage was instituted by Christ, or that it doth confer grace?

Yet with another anathema they prefer virginity before it:‡ and why, forsooth, is not that another sacrament? And then they must be comparing the worth of these sacraments, condemning those heavily who may conceive them equal, as being divine institutions.

"If any shall say that these seven sacraments are so equal one to another that one is in no respect of more worth than another, let him be anathema."‡

The first, as it seemeth, who reckoned the sacraments to be seven, was Peter Lombard; whom the schoolmen did follow; and Pope Eugenius IV. followed them; and afterward the Trent men formed it into an article backed with an anathema.||

Upon which rash and peremptory sentence touching all ancient divines, we may note:—

1. Is it not strange, that an article of faith should be performed upon an ambiguous word, or a term of art, used with great variety?

2. Is it not strange to define a point, whereof it is most plain that the Fathers

* Hæc vero nostra et continent gratiam, et ipsam digne suscipientibus conferunt.—*P. Eug. in Instr. Arm.* Si quis dixerit per ipsa novæ legis sacramenta ex opere operato, non conferri gratiam — anathema sit.—*Ibid.* Can. 8.

† Si quis dixerit matrimonium non esse vere ac proprie unum ex septem legis evangelicæ sacramentis, a Christo Domino institutum — neque gratiam conferre, anathema sit.—*Sess. xxiv. Can. 1.*

‡ Si quis dixerit hæc septem sacramenta ita esse inter se paria, ut nulla ratione aliud sit alio dignius, anathema sit.—*Sess. vii. Can. 3.*

|| Novæ legis septem sunt sacramenta, &c.—*P. Eug. in Instr. Arm.* Bellarmine could find none before him.—*Vide de Sacram. ii. 25.*

* *Sess. xxiv. Can. 10.*

were ignorant, wherein they never did agree or resolve anything?

3. Yea, whereof they speak variously.

4. Is it not odd and extravagant to damn or curse people for a point of so little consideration or certainty?

5. Is it not intolerable arrogance and presumption to define, nay, indeed, to make an article of faith, without any manner of ground or colour of authority either from scripture or the tradition of the ancient Fathers?*

The holy scripture forbiddeth us to call any man master upon earth, or absolutely to subject our faith to the dictates of any man; it teacheth us that the apostles themselves are not lords of our faith, so as to oblige us to believe their own inventions;† it forbiddeth us to swallow whole the doctrines and precepts of men without examination of them. It forbiddeth us to admit "various and strange doctrines."‡

But the pope and Roman church exact from us a submission to their dictates, admitting them for true, without any further inquiry or discussion, barely upon his authority. "They who are provided of any benefices whatever, having cure of souls, let them promise and swear obedience to the Roman church."‡

They require of us without doubt to believe, to profess, to assert innumerable propositions, divers of them new and strange, nowise deducible from scripture or apostolical tradition, the very terms of them being certainly unknown to the primitive church, devised by human subtilly, curiosity, contentiousness—divers of them being (in all appearance, to the judgment of common sense), uncertain, obscure, and intricate; divers of them bold and fierce; divers of them frivolous and vain; divers of them palpably false:

* Multa dicuntur a veteribus sacramenta præter ista septem.—*Bell de Sacr.* ii. 24. Many things are by the ancients called sacraments besides these seven.

† Διδαχαῖς ποικίλαις, καὶ ξένοις ἢ περιφέρεισθε.—*Heb.* xiii. 9.

‡ Provisi de beneficiis quibuscunque curam animarum habentibus—in Romanæ ecclesiæ obedientiam spondeant ac jurent.—*Conc. Trid.* Sess. xxiv. cap. 12, *de Ref.*—nec non veram obedientiam summo pontifici spondeant et profiteantur.—*Sess.* xxv. cap. 2, *de Ref.*

• *Matt.* xxiii. 8; *2 Cor.* i. 24; *1 Thess.* v. 21; *Col.* ii. 8; *Matt.* xv. 9.

namely, all such propositions, as have been taught by their great juntos allowed by the pope, especially that of Trent.

* "Moreover, all other things delivered, defined, and declared by the sacred canons and œcumenical councils, and especially by the holy synod of Trent, I undoubtedly receive and profess; and also all things contrary thereunto, and all heresies whatsoever condemned, and rejected and anathematized by the church, I in like manner do condemn, reject, and anathematize—. This is the true Catholic faith, out of which there can be no salvation."

This usurpation upon the consciences of Christians (none like whereto was ever known in the world) they prosecute with most uncharitable censures, cursing and damning all who do not in heart and profession submit to them, obliging all their consorts to join therein, against all charity and prudence.

The scripture enjoineth us to bear with those who are weak in faith, and err in doubtful or disputable matters.*

But the popes with cruel uncharitableness, not only do censure all that cannot assent to their devices, which they obtrude as articles of faith; but sorely persecute them with all sorts of punishments, even with death itself; a practice inconsistent with Christian meekness, with equity, with reason, and of which the Fathers have expressed the greatest detestation.

"They have unwoven and altered all theology from head to foot, and of divine have made it sophistical."‡

The pope, with his pack of mercenary clients at Trent, did indeed establish a scholastical or sophistical, rather than a Christian theology; framing points, devised by the idle wits of latter times, in-

* Cætera item omni a sacris canonibus et œcumenicis conciliis, ac præcipue a sacrosancta Tridentina synodo tradita, definita, et declarata, indubitanter recipio atque profiteor; simulque contraria omnia, atque hæreses quas-cunque ab ecclesia damnatas et rejectas et anathematizatas ego pariter damno, respuo, et anathematizo.—*P. Pii IV. profess.* Hanc veram catholicam fidem, extra quam nulla salus esse potest.—*Ibid.*

† Totam theologiam a capite usque ad calcem retexuerunt, et ex divina sophisticam fecerunt.—*Erasm. præf. ad Hieron.*

• *Rom.* xiv. 1; *xv.* 1, 7.

to definitions and peremptory conclusions, backed with curses and censures: concerning which conclusions it is evident,

That the apostles themselves would not be able to understand many of them.*

That the ancient Fathers did never think anything about them.†

That divers of them consist in application of artificial terms and phrases devised by human subtilty.‡

That divers of them are in their own nature disputable; were before disputed by wise men; and will ever be disputed by those who freely use their judgment.

That there was no need of defining many of them.

That they blindly lay about them, condemning and cursing they know not who, Fathers, schoolmen, divines, &c. who have expressly affirmed points so damned by them.

That many truths are uncharitably backed with curses, which disparageth them (seeing a man may err pardonably—*πολλὰ γὰρ πιατομεν ἀπικντες*), *in many things we offend all.*†

For instance, what need was there of defining, what need of cursing those, who think concupiscence to be *truly and properly sin*,[‡] upon St. Paul's authority calling it so?

That "Adam presently upon his transgression did lose the sanctity and justice in which he was constituted?"||

What need of cursing those, who say that men are justified "by the sole remission of sins," according to St. Paul's notion and use of the word *justification*?[¶]

What need of cursing those, who say the "grace of God, by which we are justified, is only the favour of God;"[§] whereas it is plain enough that *God's grace* there in St. Paul doth signify nothing else, applied to that case?

Or that faith is "nothing else but a

* Formaliter justos.—*Sess. vi. Can. 10.*

† Ex opere operato.—*Sess. vii. Can. 8.*

‡ Character.—*Sess. vii. Can. 9.*

|| Cum mandatum Dei in paradiso fuisset transgressus, statim sanctitatem et iustitiam in qua constitutus fuerat amisisse.—*Sess. v. Can. 1.*

§ *Sess. vi. Can. 11.*—Aut etiam gratiam qua justificamur esse tantum favorem Dei.

¶ James iii. 2.

§ *Sess. v. Can. 5; Rom. vii.*

¶ *Sess. vi. Can. 11.*—

reliance in God's mercy, remitting sins for Christ;"^{||} seeing it is plain that St. Paul doth by faith chiefly mean the belief of that principal point of the gospel?

Or that good works "do not cause an increase of justification:"[¶] seeing St. Paul doth exclude justification by works; and it is a free work of God—unable of degrees?

Or that after remission of sin in justification "a guilt of paying temporal pain doth abide?"[†]

Or that a man cannot "by his works merit increase of grace, and glory, and eternal life;"^{||} seeing a man is not to be blamed, who doth dislike the use of so saucy a word; the which divers good men have disclaimed?

What need of cursing those who do not take the sacraments to be "precisely seven?"[¶] or who conceive that some one of their seven may not be "truly and properly" a sacrament; seeing the word *sacrament* is ambiguous, and by the Fathers applied to divers other things, and defined generally by St. Austin, *signum rei sacræ*;[‡] and that before Peter Lombard ever did mention that number.

What need of damning those, who do conceive the sacraments equal in dignity?[¶]

What need of defining, that sacraments do confer grace *ex opere operato*?^{||} which is an obscure scholastical phrase.

What need of cursing those, who say that a "character is not impressed in the soul" of those who take "baptism, confirmation, or orders;"^{||} seeing what this character is (or "this spiritual and indelible mark;"[§]) they do not themselves well understand or agree?

What need of cursing those, who do not think that the validity of sacraments (and consequently the assurance of our

* *Sess. vi. Can. 24.*—Non autem ipsius augendæ causam —.

† Ut nullus remaneat reatus pœnæ temporalis exolvendæ —. *Sess. vi. Can. 30. Sess. xiv. de Pœnit. Can. 15.*

‡ De sacramentis. Si quis dixerit — esse plura vel pauciora quam septem.—*Sess. vii. Can. 1.*

|| Non imprimi characterem in anima.—*Sess. vii. Can. 9.*

§ Hoc est signum quoddam spirituale, et indelebile.—*Ibid.*

¶ *Sess. vi. Can. 12.* § *Sess. vi. Can. 32.*

¶ *Sess. vii. Can. 3.* ¶ *Sess. vii. Can. 8.*

being Christians) dependeth on the intention of the minister?"

What need of cursing those, who think that a pastor of the church may change the ceremonies of administering the sacrament; seeing St. Cyprian often teacheth, that every pastor hath full authority in such cases within his own precinct?

What need of defining the Second Book of Maccabees to be canonical, against the common opinion of the Fathers (most expressly of St. Austin himself), of the most learned in all ages, of Pope Gelasius himself (*in Decret.*), which the author himself (calling his work an epitome, and asking pardon for

his errors) disclaimeth, and which common sense therefore disclaimeth?*

Their new creed of Pius IV. containeth these novelties and heterodoxies:—
 1. *Seven sacraments.* 2. *Trent doctrine of justification and original sin.* 3. *Propitiatory sacrifice of the mass.* 4. *Transubstantiation.* 5. *Communicating under one kind.* 6. *Purgatory.* 7. *Invocation of saints.* 8. *Veneration of relics.* 9. *Worship of images.* 10. *The Roman church to be the mother and mistress of all churches.* 11. *Swearing obedience to the pope.* 12. *Receiving the decrees of all synods, and of Trent.*

* Fidem minutis dissecant ambagibus
 Ut quisque lingua nequior,
 Solvunt ligantque quæstionum vincula
 Per syllogismos plectiles ———.
Prudent. in Apothecos.

▪ Sess. vii. Can. 11. ▪ Sess. vii. Can. 13.
 • Sess. iv.

SYNOPSIS

OF THE

TREATISE

ON THE

POPE'S SUPREMACY.

The ensuing analysis of Barrow's disquisition on the Pope's Supremacy was compiled by Dr. Hughes; and as it includes in a condensed form the cardinal principles and arguments of the entire Treatise, it was deemed advisable to append it to the original work. The Student of this important Controversy, will find, by the use of it, his acquaintance with the topics in controversy essentially facilitated.

INTRODUCTION.

I. Boast of the Roman party in the points of unity, certainty of doctrine, decision of controversies, &c. Yet in matters of great importance it is hard to descry how they agree, or of what they are certain. Many of their laws and rites shown to have been drawn from diverse authorities. Disagreement among the Roman doctors concerning the nature and extent of papal authority; so that in the Council of Trent the agitation of that question was not permitted: reasons of this.

II. There are among them some, who ascribe to the Pope an universal, absolute empire, over all persons and in all matters, conferred on him by Divine immutable sanction. Authors quoted, who acknowledge this power.

III. The opinion of Bellarmine, given as the general opinion of Catholics, does not differ in effect from this, though veiled and disguised by words.

IV. Such an universal power hath been claimed by divers Popes, successively, for many ages. Instances quoted *at great length.*

V. This doctrine may reasonably be supposed the sentiment of all Popes continually for more than five hundred years to the present day. Reasons for this alleged.

VI. All Romanists, consistently with their principles, seem obliged to hold it: this shown.

VII. Yet so loose and slippery are the principles of the party, that many in communion with the Roman Catholic Church will not allow this doctrine of the Pope's universal and absolute power: this point enlarged on.

VIII. Neither are the adherents of the Roman Church more agreed concerning the extent of the Pope's authority, even in spiritual affairs: this shown.

IX. No wonder that their doctrine in this matter is various and uncertain, since interest is concerned in it, and principles are defective towards the resolution of it.

X. Even Popes themselves have shifted their pretences, and varied in style, according to circumstances, &c.: this shown.

XI. Hence a statement of this ques-

tion is not difficult, and the mark to which this discourse should be levelled is plain.

XII. But on account of the preceding observations, all discussion of the Pope's temporal dominion is omitted; his ecclesiastical authority alone being canvassed.

XIII. And here the doctrine contested against is that in which the cordial partisans of the Papacy, &c. do seem to consent.

XIV. This doctrine of absolute power explained, in the words of the Florentine Synod's definition, &c.

XV. It is known that many within the Roman communion contract the Papal sovereignty within narrower limits: the doctrine of many such stated.

XVI. Nevertheless, the former opinion seems to be the genuine doctrine of the Roman Church, if it has any: this enlarged on.

XVII. No distinct regard therefore will be paid to the opinion of these semi-Romanists, except in part. Discourse levelled at the Pope, as he pretends to be, absolute in authority.

XVIII. Of such vast pretences we have reason to require sufficient grounds: this shown.

XIX. Such demands they cannot wholly baulk, and therefore they call in St. Peter; which plea of theirs involves the following main suppositions;

I. That St. Peter had by our Lord's appointment a primacy over the Apostles.

II. That St. Peter's primacy, with its rights and prerogatives, was not personal, but derivable and transmitted to his successors.

III. That St. Peter was bishop of Rome.

IV. That St. Peter did continue bishop of Rome after his translation, and was so at his decease.

V. That the bishops of Rome (according to God's institution, and by original right derived thence) should have an universal supremacy and jurisdiction over the Christian Church.

VI. That in fact the Roman bishops continually from St. Peter's time have enjoyed and exercised this sovereign power.

VII. That this power is indefectible and unalterable.

TREATISE.

MATTHEW, CHAP. X. VERSE 2.

IMPORTANCE of this controversy. The suppositions on which it rests on the side of the Romanists stated.

SUPPOSITION I.

In order to the resolution of this point, we may consider that there are several kinds of primacy: these enumerated, and the title which Peter might have to each.

1. *A primacy of worth*, or personal excellency. Various personal endowments, natural and moral, enumerated, in which it may be granted that St. Peter possessed this superiority over the other disciples; though one afterwards arose who can hardly be called inferior to him.

2. *A primacy of repute*; which St. Paul means in Gal. ii. 2, 6, 9; 2 Cor. xi. 5, &c. Nor can this advantage, consequent on the preceding, be refused him.

3. *A primacy of order, or bare dignity*. This probably may have been conceded to him for use and convenience. Various reasons for this probability stated.

4. *A primacy, importing superiority in power, command, or jurisdiction*. This asserted by the Romanists: but we have great reason to deny it, from the following considerations: that such a power ought to be *conspicuously* and *clearly* instituted, &c.: there is no express mention of it; no time for its institution can be assigned: it would probably have been indicted by some *title* or *name*: there was indeed no office above that of an Apostle known to the disciples, or the primitive church: our Lord himself several times declared against such superiority: in surveying particulars we shall not find any peculiar jurisdiction, &c. conferred on St. Peter, which was not on the other Apostles—no intimation of it in the Catholic Epis-

tles of St. Peter—none in the apostolical history—none in any incidental controversies relating to doctrine or practice, where we should expect an appeal made to him: the proceedings of the Apostles in converting people, in founding churches, and in administering special affairs, exclude it; nature of the apostolical office, state of things, and manner of St. Peter's life; whence he will appear incapable, or unfit to manage such a jurisdiction: it was requisite that every Apostle should have a complete, absolute, independent authority in the affairs of his office; in particular, the discourse and behaviour of St. Paul to St. Peter shows that he acknowledged no dependence on him. If St. Peter had been appointed sovereign of the Church, it seems requisite that he should have outlived all the other Apostles. On the same grounds with St. Peter, other Apostles might have challenged a superiority over their brethren, &c. The Fathers both in express terms, and by inference, assert the co-equality of the Apostles: none of them mention the superiority of St. Peter. The last argument here used against this *primacy* is the insufficiency of those arguments and testimonies which are produced to prove it.

I. The words of our Saviour are alleged, *Thou art Peter, &c.*: where, it is said, St. Peter is declared to be the foundation, that is, the sole supreme governor of the church. Answers to this given; by which it is shown, 1. that those words are metaphorical, &c.; which sense, 2. is confirmed by the Fathers and ancient divines: 3. that the Apostles did not understand them literally: 4. that a literal interpretation does not suit our Lord's answers to the contests and inquiries of his disciples: 5. that even literally the words *a rock* do not imply government: 6. it is not said that the Apostles or apostolical office should be built on him: 7. if St. Peter himself be taken for *the rock*, then the best import of the words is, that our Lord designed him for a prime instrument in the support and propagation of the gospel: 8. St. Peter, before these words were spoken by our Lord, may seem to have had a primacy, inti-

mated by the Evangelists, &c.; and therefore it cannot be founded on this place.

II. The next words, spoken in the sequel by our Lord, are alleged; *to thee will I give the keys, &c.*; that is, supreme power over the Church.

To this divers answers are given: 1. these words are figurative: 2. they admit and have admitted various interpretations: 3. the Apostles did not so understand them: 4. they cannot be taken as excluding others: 5. the Fathers affirm that all the Apostles received the same keys: 6. whatever the phrase imports, it is shown plainly to have belonged to them all: 7. many of the Fathers suppose the words apply to St. Peter, not as a single person, but as a representative of the Church: 8. these answers confirmed by the words which immediately follow: 9. if we grant any thing peculiar to St. Peter, it can only be that he should be a prime instrument in propagating the gospel, &c.: 10. it is absurd that he should exercise this power of the keys in respect of the *Apostles*: 11. the words explained by a reference to Luke v. 10. and Matt. iv. 19.

III. Those words of our Saviour are also produced, *feed my sheep*; that is, be universal governor of my Church.

To this allegation it is answered, 1. these words might have properly been said to any Christian pastor; no peculiar privilege to St. Peter therefore can be deduced from them: 2. from indefinite words, a definite conclusion cannot be drawn: 3. by them no new power is assuredly instituted by our Lord; for the Apostles had a similar command before: 4. they seem only admonitory or exhortative: 5. the same office which they express belonged evidently to all the apostles: 6. St. Peter's charge could not be more extensive than that of the others: this shown: 7. the words are applicable to all Christian bishops and governors of the Church: opinions of the Fathers: 8. the sheep therefore were not the apostles, but the common believers or people of God, called by St. Peter *the flock of God*; 9. take *feeding* for what you please, the Apostles were not fit objects of it: 10. if St. Peter was obliged *solely* to feed

all Christ's sheep, he must have had an impossible task.

IV. The Romanists, in confirmation of this doctrine, produce a shoal of testimonies to divers prerogatives, as they are called, of St. Peter. These enumerated; for example, his change of name; his walking on the sea; his miraculous draught of fish, &c. &c. These answered by similar ones indicating the *primacy* of St. John.

V. They argue from the constant placing of St. Peter's name before the other Apostles in catalogues and narrations concerning him and them.

Answers: 1. this order is not so strict as to admit no exceptions: 2. still position of names does not imply degree, or superiority of power: 3. other sufficient causes have been assigned why St. Peter had this place.

VI. Farther and most plausibly, they allege the titles and eulogies given to St. Peter by the Fathers: such enumerated.

Answers: 1. we might say that we are not accountable for all their flourishes, &c.: 2. such are not found in the *more ancient* Fathers: 3. they are ambiguous, and applicable to any kind of supremacy: 4. and so they are sometimes explained by the writers themselves: 5. moreover, those that give these titles to St. Peter expressly declare other Apostles equal to him in power and dignity: 6. if Leo I. or any other ancient Pope, seems to mean farther, we may except against his opinion as singular, and partial towards his see: 7. the ancients, when their subject allures them, adorn other Apostles with like titles: instances quoted.

SUPPOSITION II.

That St. Peter's primacy, with its rights and prerogatives, was not personal only, but derivable to his successors.

Admitting St. Peter's *primacy*, the rest does not follow.

A rule of the Canon Law; *that a personal privilege follows the person, and is extinguished with the person*: and such is that of St. Peter: for,

1. His primacy was grounded on

personal acts, personal graces, gifts, endowments, &c.

2. All pretence of primacy granted to St. Peter is grounded on words directed to his person, characterised by most personal adjuncts, &c.

3. Particularly the grand promise of founding the church on him cannot reach beyond his person.

4. The apostolical office, as such, was personal and temporary, and therefore not successive, &c.

5. Accordingly, since the other Apostles, as such, had no successors, so any primacy of St. Peter did cease with him.

6. If some privileges of St. Peter were derived to Popes, why were not all?

7. Answer to the objection that the Fathers commonly call bishops successors of the Apostles.

8. It may be said that not one single bishop, but all bishops together do succeed St. Peter, or any other Apostle.

9. This the notion which St. Cyprian so much insists on. Also the Synod of Carthage, and St. Chrysostom; who says that *the sheep of Christ were committed to him by St. Peter, and to those after him*.

10. Such, and no other power, St. Peter might devolve on any bishop ordained by him in any church; and such did the other Apostles communicate.

11. Consequently, in those churches, whereof the Apostles were never accounted bishops, yet the bishops are called successors of the Apostles, &c.

12. The pretence, that the other Apostles had an extraordinary charge, which had no succession, but that St. Peter had a peculiar one, as pastor of the whole church which survives, is shown to be a mere figment or shift.

13. If such power had existed, we should have had some authentic record of the same.

14. It would also surely have been mentioned in the Fathers.

SUPPOSITION III.

That St. Peter was Bishop of Rome.

This may with great reason be denied: and it may be said,

1. That St. Peter's being bishop of Rome would confound the offices which God made distinct.

2. The offices of Apostle and bishop shown to be not in their nature consistent.

3. It would not have been decorous in St. Peter, the prime Apostle, to have assumed the charge of a particular bishop.

4. It was not likely that St. Peter, sensible of a superior charge belonging to him, would have undertaken an inferior one.

5. His general charge of converting and inspecting the Jews dispersed over the world, would not well agree with the other.

6. The consideration of his life will show him incapable of this office.

7. It was needless that he should be bishop, as he might, whenever he was at Rome, by virtue of his Apostleship, exercise episcopal authority.

8. Had he been such, he would have set a bad example of non-residence, &c.

9. He would also have offended against many other good ecclesiastical rules.

10. It was against rule that a bishop of one church should be bishop of another. Now St. Peter is admitted by Romanists to have been bishop of Antioch for seven years together.

11. It was anciently deemed a very irregular thing, and denounced by synods and Popes, that there should be two bishops of one place. But the same authority which makes St. Peter bishop of Rome reckons St. Paul bishop of the same: this shown.

SUPPOSITION IV.

That St. Peter did continue bishop of Rome after his translation, and did continue so to his decease.

Against which assertions the following considerations are offered.

1. Ecclesiastical writers affirm that St. Peter (either alone, or together with St. Paul) did constitute other bishops; wherefore he never was bishop, or did not continue bishop there: instances given.

2. Even on the supposition that he

was bishop, he could not well lay down his office and subrogate another, according to the ancient rules of discipline: this shown.

3. Supposing him to have been bishop once, yet by the constitution of Linus, or Clemens in his place, he ceased to be so, and divested himself of his office.

4. In fine, when St. Peter ordained others, either he did retain the episcopacy, and then there were concurrently divers bishops of Rome at the same time, or he did finally relinquish the office himself.

5. To avoid all which difficulties, it is reasonable to understand those ancient authors, who call St. Peter bishop of Rome, as meaning that he was bishop or superintendent of that Church in a large sense: this explained.

6. This notion confirmed by divers observations.

7. It is also remarkable that in the recensions of the Roman bishops, sometimes the Apostles are reckoned in, sometimes excluded: instances given.

8. Divers churches were called *Apostolical Thrones*, or *Chairs*, not because the Apostles did sit as bishops there, but for other reasons mentioned: instances given.

9. The author of the *Apostolical Constitutions*, reciting the first bishops of several churches, does not reckon any of the Apostles.

10. Again, any Apostle, wherever he resided, was qualified by his office to preside there and exercise a full authority: it was needless therefore for him to take the character of a bishop.

11. It may possibly be alleged that St. James, our Lord's near kinsman, although he was an Apostle, was made bishop of Jerusalem, &c. Answers to this objection.

SUPPOSITION V.

That by consequence, the bishops of Rome, according to God's institution, and by original right derived thence, should have an universal supremacy and jurisdiction over the Christian Church.

This assertion shown to be very un-

certain, or rather most false, by various considerations.

1. If any of the former suppositions be uncertain or false, this, standing on such ground, must partake of the same defects.

2. Even admitting all those suppositions, the inference from them is not assuredly valid. Even if St. Peter had an universal supremacy, this at his decease might be transferred to the ecclesiastical college of bishops, and of the church whilst his episcopal and inferior authority over the province of Rome was transmitted to his followers in that chair.

3. And that such was the case is the general opinion of the ancient Fathers, councils, &c.

4. The bishops of any other churches founded by the Apostles, in the Fathers' style are successors of the Apostles, just as the bishop of Rome is by them accounted successor of St. Peter; yet they never claimed jurisdiction beyond their provinces.

5. This instanced in the case of St. James, bishop of Jerusalem, and his successors.

6. St. Peter, before he came to Rome, probably founded other churches, as *Antioch was anciently his see*. Why then might not the elder bishop of Antioch pretend to succeed St. Peter in his universal supremacy?

7. It is said that the ground of this preference in the case of Rome, was St. Peter's will; but where is that will to be found?

8. Bellarmine asserts that *God did command St. Peter to fix his see at Rome*; but the proofs of this are weak and ridiculous.

9. Antioch indeed has a fair plea; for it ever held the repute of an Apostolical church; and on that score some deference was paid to it: but would this have been done if St. Peter had transferred his see and all its prerogatives to another place?

10. Other persons also might have been found, who, according to equal judgment, had a far better title to succeed Peter in his universal supremacy than the Pope; St. John, for example, or any other Apostle.

11. The bishop of Jerusalem in par-

ticular, might have put in his claim as being successor to our Lord himself, &c.

12. Equity itself would rather have required that a successor, by election of the whole church, should have been appointed, &c.

13. If God had designed this derivation of universal sovereignty, it is probable that he would have prescribed some certain, standing rule of election, &c.

14. From the premises, to conclude the Pope's title to St. Peter's authority, it is requisite to show that the power demised by him is according to God's institution and intent, immutable and indefectible.

15. That God did intend his Church to subsist perpetually united in any one political frame of government, is assumed by the Romanists, but not proved.

16. Really the sovereign power (such as is pretended) hath often failed; and for a long time there have been no Roman bishop at all; which is a sign that the Church may subsist without it: instances quoted.

Some arguments are next levelled at the main conclusion of the Romanists.

I. Their pretence is destitute of any good warrant, either from divine or human testimony: this shown from various considerations:—

1 The want of God's declared will, &c. 2. Such institution unnoticed by the Evangelists. 3. No precept relating to it in Scripture. 4. They who so carefully exhort men to honour and obey the temporal authority, why do they forget the spiritual? 5. Neglect of St. Peter in particular, who was most interested. 6. Also of St. Paul. 7. How comes it even that tradition is here so defective? 8. Also ecclesiastical history? 9. Why is it inserted in no ancient summary? 10. Why in no ancient exposition of the Creed, no catechetical discourse of Cyril, Ambrose, &c., no system of Divinity by St. Austin, Lactantius, &c.? 11. Why is this point defined by no ancient synod? 12. If it had been so, it would not have been overlooked by the negligence of Popes. 13. Whereas some persons disclaimed this authority, why are not such reckoned in the large catalogues of hereticks? 14. Is it not strange that no Pagans

should loudly exclaim against it? Reasons why it would be likely to move their indignation. 15. One would wonder that Constantine, if he had smelt such a doctrine in Christianity, should have been so ready to embrace it. 16. Absence of it in the Apostolical Canons, and the Constitutions of Clement. 17. Not mentioned by the old writer, under the name of Dionysius the Areopagite. 18. Nor by Ignatius. 19. We have many letters from and to Popes, in which it is not assumed, nor given. 20. Not mentioned in the epistle of Clemens Romanus. 21. Nor in the epistles of St. Cyprian to several Popes, or in those of many others here quoted. 22. Neither is it brought forward in disputes managed by the Fathers against hereticks. 23. And though many of those Fathers purposely treat on methods of converting hereticks, it is strange that none of them hit on this method of deciding points in question. 24. Tertulian in such cases recommends the authority of the Churches, but not this. 25. Both he and Irenæus produce the Roman Church as a principal authority; but what is this to its bishop's judicial power? 26. Even Popes themselves in elaborate tracts against hereticks content themselves with urging testimonies of Scripture and arguments thence deduced, but never their own definitive authority. 27. It is matter of wonder, if the Pope were such as he is represented, that this supreme power of his should not be noticed in so many bulky volumes of ecclesiastical writers. 28. It is monstrous that there should not be one canon, in the code of the Catholic Church, directly declaring his authority.

II. It is next shown that this pretence, on several accounts, is contrary to the doctrine of Holy Scripture.

1. It thwarts the Scripture, by assigning to another the prerogatives and peculiar titles appropriated therein to our Lord: instances given. 2. It accords not with Scripture, in that it transforms the Church from a spiritual society, as it was constituted by God, into a worldly frame of policy, &c. 3. It thwarts Scripture by destroying that brotherly co-ordination and equality which our Lord appointed among the bishops and chief pastors of his Church: 4. also by

not only trampling down the dignity of bishops, but infringing the rights granted by our Lord to his Church, and to its governors: this shown. 5. Also by robbing all Christian people of the liberties and rights with which by the divine charter of Scripture they are endowed, and which they are obliged to keep inviolate: this explained. 6. In particular it thwarts Scripture by wronging princes, and pretending to govern their subjects without their leave, &c.

III. Farther, since the Romanists little regard any allegation of Scripture against them, it must still be observed that this their pretence crosses also tradition, and the common doctrine of the Fathers. For,

1. Common usage, (which is a good interpreter of right) shows that no such right was known in the primitive church. 2. Its state indeed did not allow of such. 3. The Fathers supposed no order in the church, by original right or divine institution higher than a bishop: this shown and enlarged on.

IV. Moreover, this pretence may be impugned by many abstract arguments, showing that such an authority could not be practicable without much iniquity and injury to the interests of religion and the welfare of mankind.

I. The Christian Church (especially in the extended limits which we expect it to obtain) is far too immense and unwieldly for the inspection and guidance of one person: this fully shown. 2. Such an authority as this pretence claims, must necessarily, (if not withheld by continual miracle) throw the Church into sad bondage: this explained. 3. It would also necessarily produce a depravation of Christian doctrine, in the promotion of its worldly designs and interests. 4. Such errors in doctrine, and miscarriages in practice, would be established immovably, to the irrevocable oppression of truth and piety: there would exist no hope of reformation. 5. This authority would also produce a general depravation of manners: 6. which it would moreover perpetuate, thereby rendering the state of things incorrigible. 7. It would also spoil him in whom it was seated, corrupting his morals, and rendering him a scandal to religion. 8. This pretence on many

obvious accounts, is apt to create great mischief in the world, to the disturbance of civil societies, and to the destruction of temporal authority, which is certainly of God's ordinance: this fully shown. 9. Consequently it is apt to engage Christian princes against Christianity. 10. Whereas Christendom is now split into many parcels, subject to various civil authorities, it is expedient that there should be distinct, independent, ecclesiastical governments, which may comply with the respective civil authorities in promoting the good and peace of church and state. 11. This pretended authority is needless and useless, not serving the ends which it proposes: they being better compassed without it: this shown.

V. The ancients asserted to each bishop a free, absolute, independent authority, subject to none, in the administration of affairs concerning his particular church.

This shown from the writings of St. Cyprian; from those of St. Austin: from a document addressed by the Roman clergy to Cyprian, by acts of the synods of Antioch and Chalcedon, &c.

VI. The ancients held all bishops, as to their office, originally according to divine institution, to be equal, as being all successors of the Apostles, &c. This dilated on. Quotations from Jerome, &c. First then, common practice, a good interpreter, shows that in the primitive church the Pope was not deemed to have a right of universal sovereignty: this explained. Secondly, the state of that church did not admit such an authority: this dilated on.

VII. The ancients, when occasion required, maintained their equality of office and authority; particularly in respect to the Roman bishop, both by practice and express assertion in plain terms. Various instances of this enumerated.

VIII. The style used by the primitive bishops in their applications to him denotes such equality: this fully shown.

IX. This pretence is shaken by the very ground of that eminence which the Roman bishop did obtain in the church. This ground shown to be, not divine institution, &c. but the dignity, size, opulence, and conveniency of the city

wherein he resided, &c. Other bishops, as those of Alexandria, Antioch, Cæsarea, shown to have obtained a precedence on the same ground.

X. The truth is, all ecclesiastical presidencies and subordinations, &c. were introduced merely by human ordinance, on prudential accounts, according to the exigency of circumstances. Hence the prerogatives of other sees proceeded; and hence any dignity, privilege, or authority which the Pope with equity might claim.

This point investigated; some observations propounded concerning the ancient forms of discipline; or the origin and growth of metropolitical, primatical, and patriarchal jurisdiction.

Twelve heads of observations on the interest of the Roman bishop, in reference to these circumstances: manner in which he assumed authority, and evaded obstacles, &c. described; also the resistance made to his encroachments.

Twenty heads of observations, or corollaries, drawn from the preceding historical account of the growth of metropolitical, primatical, and patriarchal jurisdiction; showing that patriarchs are a human institution, &c.; that the patriarchate of the Pope, beyond his own diocese, subsists not on any canon of a general synod, &c.; that it is not really a patriarchal power which the Pope exercises, &c.; and that the practice of Christianity does not depend on the subsistence of such a form instituted by man.

It having been shown that this universal sovereignty over the Christian church has no foundation in Scripture or elsewhere, it becomes requisite to show by what ways and means so groundless a claim should gain credence and submission to such an extent. Reasons of this: 1. in the voluntary deference paid to eminency of any kind, which thus passes into power, &c.: 2. in the aptitude of power to grow and spread itself: 3. particularly in the case of spiritual power: 4. in the case with which power is attained and augmented on occasion of dissensions: 5. as also through the co-operation of those who are sheltered under it and enjoy its privileges: 6. in the assistance which even an idle potentate possesses from

partisans : 7. in the little scruple which persons, otherwise just and good, have to augment their power by encroachment, &c.: 8. in the commendations of men inferior in condition, which are liable to be interpreted for acknowledgments or attestations of right, &c.: 9. in the facility with which good and easy men are apt to yield to encroachments : 10. in the little power of counteraction, which a few wise men possess in such cases : 11. in the strange enchantment of words, working on the fancies of men, especially those of the weaker sort : 12. in the Pope's power being much amplified by persons who ran to it as to a place of refuge : 13. in the forwardness of all princes to heap honour on' the bishop of their imperial city : 14. in the advantage which the Popes had of being at hand to suggest what they pleased to the court, &c.: 15. in the wealth, repute, and power at court, which they thus obtained over the provincial bishops : 16. in the want of foresight in princes who favoured them : 17. in the favourable seasons and junctures for its growth, which power, once rooted, always finds : 18. in the ignorance of the times : 19. in the Pope's forwardness to support factious churchmen against princes : 20. in his engaging most able heads, tongues, and pens, in his favour, &c.: 21. in his cherishing so great a party with exorbitant liberties, &c.: 22. in his founding divers militias, or bands of spiritual Janizaries, to be combatants for his interests : 23. in the drawing to himself vast stores of riches, which are the sinews of power : method of doing this enumerated: 24. in his transforming, by help of his mercenary divines, most points of divinity to the accommodation of his interests : 25. in pretences, slender in themselves, which acquired validity by length of time, consent of authors, &c.: 26. in the histories of some ages, composed by friars and monks, and other such of his clients : 27. in his helping temporal and spiritual powers against each other from his own interest : 28. in his incessant clamour, when his will was opposed, that *St. Peter was injured* : 29. in the forgery of the Decretal Epistles, &c.: 30. in his forming grants wherein privileges

were feigned to be derived from him : 31. in the opportune convention of subservient synods : 32. in his having hampered all the clergy with strict oaths of universal obedience to him : 33. in the compositions which he made with struggling and afflicted princes : instances given : 34. in the revocation of *pragmatical sanctions* : 35. in the use of an absolving and dispensing power ; 36. in the device of indulgencies.

SUPPOSITION VI.

That in fact the Roman bishops, continually from St. Peter's time, have enjoyed and exercised this sovereign power.

This is a question of fact, which will best be decided by a particular consideration of the several branches of sovereign power ; by which we shall find that the Pope has no just title to them, in reason, law, or ancient practice : wherefore they yield arguments against him.

I. If the Pope were sovereign of the Church, he would have power to convoke its supreme councils, and would have constantly exercised it. This power consequently he claims, and did so, long before he could obtain the exercise of it.

It is shown, however, that he can claim it by no ecclesiastical law, canon, or practice.

It was always deemed the right of the emperors, and was constantly exercised by them : this shown by a multitude of examples, &c.

This power shown peculiarly to belong to princes: the same illustrated from Holy Writ. Other reasons stated why such a right should belong to them. An objection answered.

II. It inseparably belongs to sovereigns, in the general assemblies of their states, to preside and moderate affairs, &c.

This privilege therefore the Pope claims ; not allowing any council to be legitimate in which he does not preside personally, or by his legates.

It is shown that for this prerogative there is no express grant from God, no ancient canon, no certain custom or practice.

In all the first synods, the emperors presided, in person, or by deputies.

This shown by numerous instances; and the presumptuous attempts of some Popes noticed.

Reasons given why it is unfit that this privilege should be attached to the Popedom.

III. If the Pope were sovereign of the Church, the legislative power, wholly or in part, would belong to him; so far indeed, that no synod could without his consent prescribe any thing; at least he should have a negative on their proceedings, &c. This therefore is claimed by him. Papal declarations given, signifying that no decrees of synods are valid without the Pope's confirmation.

Yet this pretence not only has no ground in the divine law, old canons, and primitive customs, but it crosses the sentiments and practice of antiquity.

It is shown by various instances that in ancient synods various things were ordained without the Pope's consent, and against his pleasure.

It is also shown that the effectual confirmation of synods, which gave them the force of laws, depended on the imperial sanction. Instances cited.

It is opposed that the decrees of some synods, as that of Ariminum, have been declared invalid, for want of the Pope's confirmation. Answers given to this exception.

IV. It is proper to an absolute sovereignty, that its will, declared in way of precept or proclamation, concerning the sanction, abrogation, or dispensation of laws, should be observed.

This privilege therefore in a high strain the Pope challenges to himself, asserting to his decrees, &c. the force and obligation of laws, &c.

Aphorisms cited from Gratian concerning this privilege.

This power shown to be assured on usurpation and unwarrantably, without ground for it in original right or ancient practice.

Originally the Church had no other general Lawgiver, beside our *one Lord and one Lawgiver*.

With regard to practice, many arguments are brought to show that no such practice anciently did or could exist.

V. Sovereign power, immediately by itself, when it pleases, exercises all parts of jurisdiction, setting itself in the tribunal; or mediately executes it by others, as its officers or commissioners.

This universal jurisdiction therefore over the clergy is claimed by the Pope.

This claim shown to rest originally or anciently on no good grounds; such jurisdiction being prohibited by our Saviour; when introduced into the Church, exercised by others as well as the Pope; his superior claim to it resisted by bishops and synods; and rendered subordinate to that of the emperors.

VI. To the sovereign of any state belongs the choice, constitution, and confirmation of all inferior magistrates.

Wherefore the Pope claims and exercises these prerogatives as far as he can; and they are by great advocates on the highest terms asserted to him.

In this matter may be distinguished, 1. the designation of the person by election, &c.: 2. the confirmation of this: 3. the ordination of him to his office: 4. the authority by which he acts. Into all of which the Pope has intruded himself: this shown.

But no such privileges have any foundation in holy Scripture, in ancient doctrine, or in primitive usage.

This shown by a survey of rules and practices concerning it, from the ordination of Mathias, to the times of the synods of Nice and Chalcedon. Extracts from the works of ancient Fathers.

To all such evidences of facts the Romanists oppose some instances of Popes constituting and confirming bishops.

To the former instances it may be answered, they are so few that they strengthen our argument. With regard to the latter, presumptuous pragmatical intrusions or usurpations of power do not found a right in this or in any other case: to which purpose, and wholly to invalidate any such pleas, various observations are subjoined; showing that divers instances occur of bishops who did meddle in the ordination of others, who did not thereby pretend to universal jurisdiction; that general synods undertook to regulate this matter; that if examples determined right, such right would more properly belong to the em-

perors; that general synods by paramount authority have assumed such to themselves, &c., &c.

VII. Sovereigns have a power to censure and correct all inferior magistrates, and, if need be, to discharge them.

This prerogative therefore is claimed, as from divine sanction, by the Pope.

This power was allowed him by the Convocation of Trent, thwarting the ancient laws, and betraying the liberties of the Church thereby, &c.

But such a power did not anciently, by any rule or custom, in a peculiar manner belong to the Roman bishop.

What was generally said about jurisdiction being premised, it is here remarked, 1. that the exercising of judgment and censure on bishops, when needful, was prescribed to be done by synods, provincial or patriarchal: instances alleged. 2. In some cases a kind of deposing of bishops was assumed by bishops, as defenders of the faith, and executors of canons: instances quoted. 3. Cyprian asserts the power of censuring bishops, on needful and just occasion, to belong to all bishops, for maintenance of common faith, discipline, and peace: 4. this also is confirmed in some cases by the nature of such censures: 5. indeed in such cases every Christian had a right, or even obligation, to desert his own bishop. 6. If any Pope assumed more than was allowed in this case by the canons, or was common to other bishops of his rank, it was an usurpation: 7. when the Pope hath attempted this, his power has been disavowed. 8. Other bishops have taken on themselves, when they saw cause, to discard and depose Popes. 9. Popes, when there was great occasion, and they had a great mind to exert their utmost power, have not yet presumed by themselves, *without joint authority of synods*, to condemn bishops: 10. what has been thus done, is not to be ascribed to the authority of Popes as such. 11. If instances were arguments of right, there would be other pretenders to the deposing power: 12. the people, for instance, would have it; for they have sometimes deposed Popes. 13. There are many instances of bishops being removed or deposed by the imperial authority: instances given.

14. The instances alleged to prove the Pope's authority in this case are inconclusive and invalid: this shown in a variety of cases.

VIII. If Popes were sovereigns of the Church, they could effectually, whenever they should see it just and fit, absolve and restore any bishop excommunicated from the Church, or deposed by ecclesiastical censure.

Wherefore the Pope assumes this power, as his special prerogatives: quotations on this point.

It is shown however that such a power of old did not belong to him: 1. from no traces existing of it in any ancient canon: 2. from decrees of synods: 3. from the apostolical canons: 4. from the circumstance that hence in elder times Popes were opposed and checked when they offered to receive bishops rejected in particular synods.

But they allege some instances of such a power.

These therefore are answered, first, by some general consideration, relating chiefly to the import of *restitution*; and next by replies to the particular instances produced for the Pope.

IX. It belongs to sovereigns to receive appeals from all lower judicatures, for the final determination of causes, &c.

This power therefore the Pope stiffly asserts to himself; and this at the synod of Florence was the first and great branch of authority which he demanded of the Greeks explicitly to avow: this was one of his most ancient encroachments, which served to introduce the rest.

But this power is unreasonable and grievous to the Church: so deemed by ancient synods and Fathers: instances given.

In the primitive church the Pope had no such power. This fully shown both by negative and positive testimonies.

If the Pope had such a known and unquestionable right, there might have been produced many ancient, clear and convincing proofs of it.

Some alleged by Bellarmine. These examined and refuted; particularly those of Theodoret and Hadrianus, bishop of Thebes.

Some general observations proposed, (in regard to any other instances of this kind,) in the motives and conduct of bad

and even good men, when induced to make appeals to superiors.

X. The Sovereign is the fountain of all jurisdiction; and all inferior magistrates derive their authority from him, &c.

Accordingly the Pope challenges this advantage, &c.: instances from various documents. This pretence appears in the ordinary titles of bishops: also in the Council of Trent.

But on the contrary, according to Holy Scripture, and to the sense of the primitive church, bishops and pastors receive their commission immediately from God; being only his ministers.

This fully shown from Scripture; from the writings of the Fathers; from addresses of ancient bishops to the Pope.

This a modern invention: shown to have arisen in the fourth century, by the appointment of vicars and legates.

XI. It is the privilege of a sovereign, that he cannot be called to account, judged, deposed, &c. To this privilege also the Pope pretends, from maxims of the Canon Law; from that of Pope Adrian; and from the three old synods, which are palpably spurious.

Antiquity however was not of this mind. It is shown that the canons and ancient practice are opposed to this pretence.

XII. To the sovereign in ecclesiastical affairs it would belong to define and decide all controversies in faith, discipline, and moral practice, &c. This power therefore he claims, and allows no synods to decide questions.

But the ancients knew no such thing. They had recourse to the Scriptures, to Catholic tradition, to reason and argument.

Instances of holy Fathers passing over such authority, or openly dissenting from the opinions of Popes.

Highest controversies were appeased by synods, sometimes without the Pope's leave, and against his opinion: instances quoted.

XIII. If the Pope were such a sovereign, it were at least expedient that he should be infallible. Wherefore the true and fast friends of papal interest assert his; and the Pope, who countenances

them, may be presumed to be of their mind.

That he is however not infallible, is shown by experience and history.

XIV. A sovereign is in dignity and authority superior to any number of subjects however congregated. Therefore the Pope claims a superiority over all councils, pretending that he can rescind their decrees, or dissolve them, &c.

This is indeed a question stiffly debated among Romanists, but most adhere to the Pope's side: reason of this given. But anciently he was not thought superior to councils: this shown. Even in the very height of his power this authority was at times questioned and decided against him: instances given.

XV. The sovereign of the Church is by all Christians to be acknowledged the chief person in the world, above all commands, &c.

This pretended to: this claimed in their Missal.

But this was not so in primitive times; for St. Paul requires *every soul to be subject to the higher powers*, when the emperor was avowedly the first person next to God. Divers Popes avowed themselves subject to the emperor.

XVI. The confirmation of magistrates, elected by others, is a branch of supremacy affected by the Pope: instances quoted. This pretence shown to have arisen from the ancient custom of newly-elected bishops giving notice of their election to other bishops, especially those of highest rank: reasons for this custom. Anciently the emperors confirmed bishops.

XVII. It is a privilege of sovereigns to grant privileges, exemptions, and dispensations. This also he claims against the laws of God; the rights of bishops; the decrees of synods; and the sense of good men in all times.

XVIII. It is a prerogative of sovereignty to erect and translate spiritual presidences. This he claims, without reason. Princes often exerted such a privilege; this attested by Pope Paschal II.

XIX. It is against prerogative of sovereignty to impose taxes on the clergy or people; wherefore the Pope assumes this. But antiquity knew nothing of

such impositions; when the church, the clergy, and the poor were maintained and relieved by voluntary offerings, &c. This is an encroachment on the right of princes, unto whom the clergy are subjects, *being bound to render tribute to whom tribute belongeth.*

SUPPOSITION VII.

That the Papal Supremacy is indefectible and uncharitable.

But good reasons may be assigned, why, even supposing this supremacy conferred on the Pope in virtue of his succession to St. Peter, it is not assuredly consequent that it must always or does not belong to him. For it might have been settled on him on conditions, &c., or so that it should continue but for a time. There are also other ways, whereby, according to the common rules of justice he might be disseized thereof.

1. If God had given any positive declaration that such a power was granted irrevocably, then it must have been admitted: but this he has not done; and no human power can be supposed immoveable, &c. 2. No power can have a higher source or firmer ground than that of the civil government, for *all such power is from heaven*: yet such power is liable to alterations, and may be lost, &c. 3. The reason and exigency of things might be sufficient ground for altering an universal jurisdiction. 4. It is according to reason and practice that the church, in its exterior form and political administrations, should be suited to the state of the world, and political governments, &c.: wherefore St. Peter's monarchy might be parcelled out into divers spiritual supremacies: 5. especially if such a continued jurisdiction should prove corrupt and grievous to the Church. 6. That power is defectible which according to the course of things does sometimes fail; but the Papal succession has often been interrupted. 7. If, leaving dubious suppositions, we consider that Papal pre-eminence was obtained by the wealth and dignity of the Roman city, and countenance of the imperial authority, then by defect of such advantages it may cease, &c. 8. From

whatever source the Pope had his authority, yet it may be forfeited by his own defects and faults. 9. By departing from the doctrine and practice of St. Peter he would forfeit it. 10. By leading men into pernicious error or impiety. 11. According to Romanists the Pope has the same relation to other bishops and pastors, as they bear to their people: but if any pastor should mislead his flock by bad doctrine or practice, they may reject him. 12. The case may be that we may be obliged to hold no communion with the Pope; and then his authority ceases. 13. This shown to be the doctrine of Scripture with respect to pastors and teachers. 14. With this the Fathers accord: instances quoted. 15. This shown also to have been the current opinion: instances given. 16. This shown to apply to the Pope. 17. Most eminent persons have in such cases withdrawn communion from the Pope. 18. The Canon Law itself admits that the pope may be judged, if he be a heretick. 19. This fact was acknowledged by a great Pope, allowing the condemnation of Pope Honorius.

It is lastly shown that the Pope (or Papal succession) hath perverted the Christian doctrine in contradiction to Scripture and primitive tradition; hath subverted the practice of Christian piety; hath taught falsehoods and maintained impieties. This shown, in the encouragement of extravagant doctrines and practices of high-flying doctors and fierce zealots, &c.; in the teaching us to worship angels and dead men; in the canonising of saints, and anticipating of God's judgment, &c.; in the worship of images; in absolution and the dispensation of pardon for sin; in arrogating superiority over all civil powers, &c.; in obtruding on the Church writings, as sacred and canonical, which the greatest part of learned men have refused as such; in pretending to infallibility; in ordering oral traditions of the Roman church to be venerated like the holy Scripture, &c.; in keeping the Scriptures from the people, locked up in languages not understood by them; in celebrating the Liturgy in an unknown tongue; in assuming to himself the

headship of the Christian Church, contrary to Scripture; in forbidding marriage to the priests; in dissolving the matrimonial tie; in prohibiting the cup to the laity at the holy communion; in the doctrine of transubstantiation; in the *propitiatory* sacrifice of the mass; in the doctrine of justification; in arrogating the name and privilege of the only church; in the institution of seven sacraments, instead of the two appointed by our Saviour; in exacting submission to the *various and strange doctrines* of the Roman Church; particularly in exacting consent and obedience to those of the Council of trent; in persecuting those who do not obey the doctrines and dictates of the Roman Church; in altering the whole of theology from head to foot and rendering it sophistical instead of divine.



INDEX

OF

TEXTS OF SCRIPTURE.

CH. VER.	GENESIS.	PAGE	CH. VER.	HOSEA.	PAGE	CH. VER.	PAGE
vii.		64	i. 11.		101	xxiv.	56
	EXODUS.			AMOS.		xxiv. 4.	231
xviii. 17, 18.		110	ix. 12.		51	xxiv. 9.	40
xx. 4.		235		MATTHEW.		xxvi. 27.	238
xxviii. 1, 4.		87	i.		25	xxvi. 33, 35, 63.	24
	LEVITICUS.		iv. 10.		234	xxvi. 37.	27
xxi.		87	iv. 18.		26	xxviii. 19.	29, 34
	1 SAMUEL.		iv. 19.		54, 246	xxviii. 19, 20.	55
ii. 30.		228	iv. 21.		54	xxviii. 20.	41, 103
xv. 17.		225	v. 32.		238		
	1 KINGS.		vi. 24.		119	MARK.	
ii. 27.		228	vii. 2.		229	i. 15.	235
ii. 35.		190, 196	vii. 15.		231	i. 16.	26
	2 CHRONICLES.		ix. 36.		55	iii. 9.	72
xxix. 4, 11—15, 20, 25.		160	x.		26	iii. 17.	27, 47
xxxiv. 29.		160	x. 1.		28	iv. 5.	66, 75
	JOB.		x. 2.		27, 52	v. 32.	142
xxi.		59	x. 6.		55	ix. 6.	24
xxxiv. 18—30.		7	x. 25.		101	ix. 33.	50
	PSALMS.		xii. 25.		119	ix. 34.	31
ii. 8.		108	xiii. 31, 32.		145	ix. 34, 35.	31
xxxviii.		53	xiv. 28, 33.		24	ix. 50.	28
xlv. 16.		126	xv. 6, 14.		231	x. 35, 37.	30
lxxv. 7.		228	xv. 9.		231, 241	x. 37.	30
lxxxvi.		50	xv. 12.		231	xiv. 33.	46
cviii.		54, 56	xv. 14.		231	xvi. 15.	29, 24
cxix.		237	xvi. 1.		49		
	ISAIAH.		xvi. 6.		231	LUKE.	
ii.		50, 62	xvi. 6—12.		231	i. 1.	28
ii. 3.		62	xvi. 15, 16, 22.		24	i. 33.	100
	JEREMIAH.		xvi. 16.		27	iv. 38.	27
i. 10.		6	xvi. 17.		63	v. 3.	26
vii. 12, 14.		228	xvi. 18.		33, 48	v. 3, 7.	26
xxix. 8.		240	xvi. 19.		34	v. 7.	27
	EZEKIEL.		xvi. 22.		25	v. 10.	54, 246
iii. 18.		231	xvii. 1.		27, 46	vi. 14.	26
xiii. 3—9.		237	xvii. 1, 2.		27	vi. 39.	231
xviii.		235	xviii. 1.		50	ix.	232
xxxiv. 23.		100	xviii. 17.		104	ix. 33.	24
xxxvii. 22.		100	xviii. 18.		34, 54	ix. 46.	31
	DANIEL.		xviii. 19.		168	xi. 13.	240
v. 21.		228	xix. 7.		238	xii. 34.	24
			xix. 11.		238	xv.	235
			xix. 27.		27	xvii. 10.	239
			xx. 20, 21.		46	xx. 2.	28
			xx. 24.		50	xxi. 12.	40
			xx. 25.		30	xxii. 14.	50
			xx. 25—27.		31	xxii. 14, 24, 25, 26.	30
			xxiii. 2.		231	xxiv.	24
			xxiii. 8.		31, 241	xxiv. 47.	62, 108
			xxiii. 8, 9.		101	xxiv. 47—49.	34
						xxiv. 49.	29
						JOHN.	
						i. 42, 46, 50.	2A

INDEX.

261

CH. VER.	PAGE	CH. VER.	PAGE	CH. VER.	PAGE
i. 16, 17.	42			viii. 11.	240
i. 18.	40, 69	1 THESSALONIANS.		ix. 7, 24.	101
i. 19.	77	ii. 5.	114	ix. 26.	239
ii.	76	ii. 7, 11.	39	x. 10, 12, 14.	239
ii. 2.	39, 42	iii. 2.	217	x. 12.	239
ii. 2, 6, 9.	25, 245	iv. 8.	39	xi. 22.	102
ii. 6.	43	v. 12.	217	xiii. 9.	241
ii. 7.	45	v. 14.	104	xiii. 17.	105
ii. 8.	46, 68	v. 21.	241	xiii. 20.	100
ii. 9.	42, 44, 47				
ii. 9, 11.	69	2 THESSALONIANS.		JAMES.	
ii. 9, 12.	62	ii. 4.	236	i. 1.	76
ii. 11.	221	iii. 6.	231	i. 5.	240
ii. 11, 14.	43, 231	iii. 14.	39	iii. 2.	242
ii. 12.	43			iv. 12.	100
ii. 12—14.	43	1 TIMOTHY.			
iv. 19.	39	i. 1.	41	1 PETER.	
v. 1.	105	i. 12.	41	i. 1.	69
v. 1, 13.	114	ii. 1, 2.	119	ii. 4.	101
		ii. 2.	159	ii. 5.	34
EPHESIANS.		iii. 1.	32, 108	ii. 13.	216
i. 1.	41	iii. 5, 15.	78	ii. 13, 14.	216
i. 22.	101	iii. 10.	183	ii. 13—17.	88
ii. 8, 9.	239	iii. 15.	104	ii. 16.	114
ii. 16.	101	iv. 3.	238	ii. 25.	100
ii. 20.	33, 51, 101	iv. 6.	217	v. 1.	35
iii. 7.	41, 42	vi. 3, 5.	231	v. 2.	34, 57, 105
iii. 8.	42	vi. 5.	114	v. 2, 3.	32
iv. 4.	101	vi. 15.	100	v. 3.	32
iv. 4, 5.	103			v. 4.	100
iv. 5.	100	2 TIMOTHY.		v. 13.	69
iv. 11.	29, 34, 46, 65, 106	i. 1.	41		
iv. 11—13.	88	i. 6.	75	2 PETER.	
iv. 12.	78	ii. 1.	61	i. 20.	237
iv. 14.	114	ii. 22.	202	iii. 2.	34, 35
iv. 15.	101	ii. 24.	217	iii. 5.	39
iv. 16.	217	iii. 15.	61, 237	iii. 16.	48
v. 23.	101	iii. 17.	237		
		iv. 6, 21.	69	1 JOHN.	
PHILIPPIANS.		iv. 16.	69	ii. 27.	240
iii. 20.	102			iv. 1.	240
		TITUS.		v. 21.	235
COLOSSIANS.		i. 3.	57		
i. 1.	41	i. 5.	39, 183	REVELATION.	
i. 6, 23.	40	i. 7.	32, 105, 217	ii.	
i. 7.	217	iii. 1.	236	ii. 5.	228
i. 18.	101	iii. 5.	239	ii. 20.	104
i. 23.	108	iii. 10.	231	ii. iii.	104
ii. 8.	241			xvii. 5, 6.	81
ii. 16, 18.	105	HEBREWS.		xix. 10.	234
ii. 18.	234	ii. 17.	239	xvi. 10, 14.	33
iii. 1.	239	iii. 1.	101	xxii. 9.	234
iv. 7.	217	iii. 6.	101		
iv. 11.	69	v. 4.	22		

INDEX.

	PAGE		PAGE
ABSOLUTION, Romish	115	BISHOPS—	
“ particular	235	“ election of	82
Æneas Sylvius on the canons	224	“ equality of	125
“ Agnus Dei”	153	“ Metropolitan	106
Allegations for the Pope’s Primacy	48	“ Oath of obedience by	18, 153
Anacletus and Cletus	72	“ Ordination of	183, 185
Anathemas of the Romanists	242	“ Power of, to call Councils	161
Ancient Canons	137	“ Residence of	2, 70
Ancient Churches, independence of	137	“ Restitution of	203—207
Ancient Controversies	96	“ Rights of	2
Ancient Discipline	135	“ Successors to the Apostles	66, 125
Angels, worship of the, contrary to Scrip- ture	234	“ the highest order in the Church	106
Annats	153	“ Translation of	70
Antioch the “ See of Peter”	81	Bishops and Pastors	125
APOSTLES—		“ “ authority of in the primitive Church	180
“ authority of the	47	“ “ character of	118
“ eldest of the	26	Bishops of Rome, oath of	118
“ equality of the	30, 41	Blind obedience	241
“ manner of life of the	41	Boast of the Romanists	1
“ office of the	41, 63	Breach of Charity	241
“ privileges of the	64	Breach of faith by the Popes	234
“ successors to the	65	Bulls of Popes	4—11
“ without relative superiority	41	“ Gregory II.	9
Apostolic office, nature of the	40, 68	“ Gregory VII.	7
Apostolical constitutions	184	“ Pius V.	4
“ Apostolical thrones”	75	“ Sixtus V.	4
Appeals introduced by Cyril	209	“ Style of the	12
Appeals to the Pope	153	C.	
“ “ disclaimed	208	Call of Councils	157
Auricular Confession	115	Canon Laws, without obligation	168
Authority of Apostles	47	Canons, account of by Æneas Sylvius	224
“ of Councils	20	Canons, alteration of by Popes	168
“ of Prelates	177	“ ancient	137
Authority, Papal extent of	14, 17	“ apostolical	91, 137
B.		“ exemption from	169
Basil against the Papal Supremacy	94	“ of Popes above General Councils	172
Basle, Council of	21	“ of Sardica	210
Belief of Divine Revelation	105	“ universal	168
Bellarmin on the Pope’s Supremacy	1, 130	Carthage, Council of	66
Benefices	153	“ Catholic,” abuse of the term	149
Bernard	16	Celebration of Councils	154
“ Bishop,” meaning of	148	Censures Ecclesiastical, advantageous to the Pope	152
BISHOPS—		“ of Prelates	193
“ authority of	125	Ceremonies Roman	116
“ censure of	193	Chalcedon, Council of	156
“ “ Clavigeri”	53	Charity among Christians, want of by the Romanists	241
“ confirmation of by the Pope	153	Christ’s power ascribed to the Roman Pontiffs	2
“ constitution of	183	Chrysostom, epistles of	96, 232
“ deposition of	196		
“ difference of the, in order and privilege	104, 108		
“ discharge of their office by	32		

	PAGE		PAGE
CHURCH—		Creed of Pope Pius IV.	243
“ bondage of the	113	Cup in the Lord's Supper withheld by the Roman Priests from the Laity	115
“ discipline of the	135	Cyprian, Account by, of Peter's primacy of Order	26
“ external policy of the	123	“ epistle of, concerning Marcianus of Arles	197
“ foundations of the	51	Cyril, appeals introduced by	209
“ government of the	85	“ substituted for Celestin in the Council of Ephesus	162
“ head of the	1		
“ highest order in the	106	D.	
“ Lawgiver and Lord of the	176	Daille on the right use of the Fathers	59
“ preservation of the	122	Damasus, Epistle of, cited by Bellarmin spurious	130
“ suited to the world	228	Deacons, institution of	36
“ the primitive	123	Decrees of Popes against the canons of ancient Councils	170
Churches, independent	179	“ introduction of the	179
Church-government	135	Decretal Epistles, advantage of the, to the Court of Rome	179
Church of Rome, adherents of the	239	“ “ forgery of the	155
“ “ eminence of the	131	Deposition of Marcianus	196
Churisius, testimony of	233	“ of Popes	86
Civil magistrate, authority of	227	“ of Prelates	196
“ Clavigeri”	53	Dignity of Peter	27
Clemens, epistles of	93	Dionysius the Areopagite	92
Clement, constitutions of	91	Dioscorus of Alexandria	200
Clergy the Romish, exemption of the, from all secular jurisdiction	53	Discipline and order in the Church	179
Refer to <i>Priests</i> .		“ “ dispensation from, by law	179
Cletus and Anacletus	72	“ enactment of laws concerning by the Emperors	179
Communion with the Church	234	“ form of in the primitive churches	176
Commutation of Penance	153	“ order of among the ancient Christians	176
Compeigne, Council of	53	Dispensations, authority for	115, 226
Concordats	154	“ for marriage by the Roman Prelates	152
Confession auricular	115	“ grant of for various iniquities	152
Confirmation of prelates	153	Dispensing with laws by the Pope and his “Spiritual Janizaries”	178
Confirmation of Magistrates by the Popes	226	Dissentions among the people under the Papal Yoke; mischiefs of the	146
Conscience, Popish doctrines concerning	32	“ “ profit of to the Roman Court and Priests	151
“ Popish usurpations over	241	Divine Revelation, belief in	105
Constance, Council of	20	Doctrine of the Papists respecting the pontifical power uncertain	15
Constantine, donation of pretended by the Court of Rome	138		
Constantine, judgment of concerning Eusebius	71	E.	
Constantine, the first council held during the reign of	138	Ecclesiastical censures	152
Constantinople, Council of	156	Ecclesiastical jurisdiction	180
Costitutions of Clement	91	Ecclesiastical presidencies of human origin	135
Controversies, determination of in the ancient churches	96	Ecclesiastical traditions	415
Council of Trent	2	EMPERORS—	
“ “ character of	217	“ authority of	159
“ “ injunctions of concerning the Papal Supremacy	15	“ calling of Councils and Synods by the	155
COUNCILS—authority of	20	“ confirmation of the election of Popes by	191
“ call of	157	“ Presidents of Councils and Synods, either in person or by deputy	161
“ celebration of	154	“ testimony concerning the authority of	159
“ general	154		
“ “ of Basle	21		
“ “ of Carthage	66		
“ “ of Chalcedon	136		
“ “ of Compeigne	53		
“ “ of Constance	20		
“ “ of Constantinople	156		
“ “ of Ephesus	157		
“ “ of Florence	17		
“ “ of Lateran	17		
“ “ of Nice	157		
“ “ of Pisa	20		
“ “ of Trent	2, 217		
“ infallibility of	115		
“ occasion for	155		
“ power of	20		
“ primitive	154		

	PAGE		PAGE
Empires, increase of	146	INFALLIBILITY PAPAL—	
Enactment of laws	179	“ “ of councils	115
Ephesus, Council of	159	“ “ pretences to	222
Episcopacy, alleged design of	71	“ “ the “Mother of incor-	
Equality of the Apostles	30, 33	“ “ rigibility”	116
“ of Bishops	125	“ “ tyranny of the	114
Equivocation sanctioned by the Roman Priesthood	234	Injunctions of the Council of Trent, respecting the Pope's Supremacy	15
Errors of the Romanists	116	Inspiration divine; pretences to by Popes, Councils and Synods	240
Eusebius, character of by Constantine the Emperor	71	Irenæus	98
Excommunication of Princes	10, 152		
Exemption of the Roman Priests from all secular jurisdiction by the Popes	33	J.	
Exemptions; the Roman Pontiff not authorized to grant	115	James the Apostle, not Bishop of Jerusalem	76
F.		Janizaries of the Pope	152
FATHERS—		Jesuits, character of	152
“ Bellarmin's opinion of the	59	JESUS—a name implying that the Redeemer is “the Son of God”	24
“ character of the writings of	98, 99	Judgment of Prelates by the Roman Pontiffs	181
“ improper expressions by the	59—61	JURISDICTION—	
“ notice by the, of Peter's dignity	25	“ commencement of	180
“ views of the, respecting Peter's primacy	27	“ ecclesiastical	180
“ writings of the, censured	59	“ nature of	181
“ <i>Feed my Sheep</i> ,”—Romish interpretation of	54	“ over the Romish Priesthood	144—146
“ “ Scriptural interpretation of	55	“ presumption in the claim to	145
Flavianus	199	“ temporal asserted by the Pope	229
Florence, Council of	17	“ Universal arrogated by the Court of Rome	228
Forgery of the Decretal Epistles	153	K.	
G.		Keys, power of the	52
General Councils	154	“ “ granted to all the Apostles, equally	53
Glosses of the Romanists on the Holy Scriptures	58	KINGS—	
“ “ corruptions of the	59	“ power of to call Ecclesiastical Councils	159
“ “ partiality of the	60	“ unreasonableness of denying to, the power to call ecclesiastical councils	160
Government of the Church	135	Refer to <i>Emperors</i> —and <i>Sovereigns</i> .	
Gregorian Decretals	19	“ <i>Κῆρται δοξαί</i> ”	1
Gregory I. authority of, against the Papal titles	101—103	L.	
“ character of	101	Lateran, Council of	17
Gregory Nazianzen, denunciations by, against Ecclesiastical Councils	108, 226	Law Ecclesiastical	176
H.		“ “ Popes subject to the	178
Hadrianus	215	“ “ Power to enact the	176, 177
“ Heresy of Simony,” all the Popes guilty of the	223	Legacies, “hooking” of by the Roman Pontiff and Priests	153
Heretics, confutations of	34	Legends of Rome very profitable	153
“ denounced	14	Litrensis Vincentius	97
Humility enjoined on the Apostles and followers of Christ	31	M.	
I.		Magistrate civil, authority of the	22
Ignatius	92	“ “ not confirmed by the Popes	226
Ignorance of Popes	223	Manner of life of the Apostles	41
Ignorance of the people advantageous to the Roman Hierarchy	115	Marcianus of Arles	198
Image—worship	116	MARRIAGE—	
Immaculate conception the	2	“ abuse of by the Papists	238
Imposition of Romish vows	115	“ dispensations concerning	152
Indulgences Romish	153	“ prohibited to all Romish ecclesiastics	115
INFALLIBILITY PAPAL—		“ reasons simulated for the prohibition of to the Papal Priesthood	116
“ “ causes of the claim of	234	Mass, doctrine of the	238
“ “ corruption of manners by the	117	Matrimony, dissolution of	238

	PAGE		PAGE
Merit, Romish doctrine of	115	Peter, primacy of not derivable to any successors	63
Metropolitan Prelates	189	" qualifications of	27
Miracles, wicked pretences to, by the Romanists	116	" superiority of	46
Miraculous powers of the Apostles	64	" titles of, given by the Fathers	33, 59
Monarchy, in Church and State impolitic	108	" zeal of	30, 36
" Universal	109	Pisa, Council of	30
Monasteries, exemption of, by the Roman Pontiffs, from all secular jurisdiction	115	Pius IV. Pope, Creed of	243
Monkery	116	PONTIFF ROMAN—	
		" " appeals to the	153
		" " arbitrary power of the	32
N.		" " authority of the, in Councils and Synods, without foundation	161
Nestorius	199	" " authority of to depose secular Potentates	2—5
Nice, Council of	157	" " behaviour of, according to circumstances	151
Nicholas I. the first Pontiff of Rome who excommunicated the secular Potentate	121	" " character of the	86, 118
		" " confirmation of magistrates by	226
O.		" " confirmation of prelates by	182
Oath of Roman Prelates	18	" " departure of from the faith	230
Oaths, dispensations for violating	152	" " election of the	84
Obedience blind	241	" " gain of the, by the rejection of the diocesan primacy	141
Obedience to the Pope	18	" " heresy taught by the	20
" Opus operatum," the	115	" " ignorance of the	224
Oral tradition of Popery	237	" " imposition of taxes by the	227
Order and discipline of the primitive churches	176	" increase of the power of	149
Refer to <i>Discipline</i> .		" indulgences to sin by the	154
Ordination of Bishops	183, 185	" infallibility pretended of the	234
" " priority of	26	" insolence of the titles of the	32, 33
Oriental Churches,	143	" Janizaries of the	152
		" not a Judge of controversies	221
P.		" not infallible	223
Falls sent by the Pope	153	" perverters of the doctrine of Christ	234
Papal authority, extent of	14, 17	" policy of the, concerning the ecclesiastical Canons	168
Papal sovereignty, extent of	20	" power of the, defective	229
Papal succession totally interrupted	229	" power of the, over princes	234
Papal Supremacy, arguments against	77	" power of, to grant privileges	226
Pardons by the Pope	153	" power of, to impose taxes	3
Pastors of Churches, duty of the	230	" power of to restore prelates	202
PATRIARCHS—		" power of to summon General Councils	154
" authority of	142	" presidency of the	226
" institution of	143	" pretences of to supreme sovereignty	182
" jurisdiction of	143	" subject to the Church	20
" order of, not higher than that of Primates	143	" subjection of to the Emperor	143, 144
Paul and Peter	41—46	" subjects, wickedly absolved from their sworn allegiance by the	234
Peace among Christians; the Convocation of Councils and Synods designed to promotg	160	" supremacy of the, claimed in spiritual affairs	225
Penance, commutation of	153	" Synods called by the	152
" Perdam Babylonis nomen"	121	" titles of the	3
PETER—		" unskilled in divinity	224
" activity of	36	" usurpations of the	241
" appeals not made to	38	POPES OF ROME—	
" call of to the Apostleship	26	Adrian I.	9
" dignity of	27	Agatho	10
" eminency of	27	Boniface VIII.	5
" eulogies of by the Fathers	33, 59	Bulls of the	4—11
" faith of	27	Celestin I.	187
" first among the Apostles	26	Clement V.	5
" first in age	26	Clement VI.	5
" life of	68	Clement VIII.	18
" never at Rome	68, 69	Constantine	10
" not a Prelate	68		
" not a Priest	29		
" not Bishop of Rome	67, 72		
" Peter-pence"	153		
Peter, personal accomplishments of	27		
" prerogatives of	81		
" primacy of	23		

	PAGE		PAGE
Damasus	11	Presidencies spiritual; the erection of, be-	
Eugenius	12	longs to sovereignty	161, 226
Felix III.	9	“ translation of the, a prerogative	
Gelasius	9	of sovereign power	162, 227
Gregory I.	9, 10	Presidency of the Pope; ambiguity of	
Gregory II.	9, 10	that phrase	163
Gregory VII.	7	“ deceptions flowing from it	163
Guilty of Simony	223	“ unnecessary to General Coun-	
Honorius	234	cils	161
Innocent I.	96	Presidents in ecclesiastical Councils, ap-	
Innocent III.	6	pointment of the, by Popes, without any	
Innocent IV.	5	authority	162, 163
John VIII.	8	PRIESTS ROMISH—	
John IX.	8	“ “ exemption of the, by the	
Julius	11, 94	Pope, from all secular	
Liberius	11, 94	jurisdiction	33
Leo I.	11	“ “ marriage of the, prohib-	
Leo IX.	8	ited	115
Leo X.	3	“ “ pardon of sin by	235
Nicholas I.	8	“ “ simulated excuses for the	
Nicholas II.	141	forbidding of, to marry	116
Otho IV.	6	Primacies diocesan	142
Paschal II.	6	Primacy, allegations for the Pontifical	48
Pius II.	217	Primacy in the church; diocesan	142
Pius IV.	243	PRIMACY—	
Pius V.	4	“ kinds of	23
Pretences of	15	“ of James	58
Simplicius	11	“ of John	58
Sixtus V.	4	“ of order	25
Stephen VI.	8	“ of Peter	23, 48—59
Symmachus	11	“ of power	28
Urban II.	6	“ of repute	25
Zachary	8	“ of worth	23
Zosimus I.	112	“ personal	48
POPE'S SUPREMACY—		“ silence of the Scripture on the	67
“ arguments against	28	“ successive	63
“ causes of	144	Primitive Councils	154
“ contrary to the Scripture	100	Princes, rule of	3
“ controversies respecting the	2, 14	Private Masses	115
“ corruption of manners by	117	Privileges not granted by the Pope	226
“ disturbances from the	108, 119	Privileges of the Apostles	64
“ evils of the	116	Propitiatory sacrifice for the dead	115
“ forfeited totally	229	Provincial Synods, appeals to	209
“ growth of the	113	“ “ commencement of	208
“ imperiousness of the	114	Purgatory, invention of	115
“ jurisdiction of the	77		
“ needless	122	R.	
“ not indefectible	227	“ Regalia Petri”	17
“ termination of the	85	Relics	234
“ tradition universal against the	106	Remission of Sins, Popish	235
“ unalterable	227	Residence of Prelates	69
“ useless	122	RESTITUTION OF PRELATES—	
Popish doctrine respecting conscience	32	“ examples of	204, 205
Popish remission of sins	235	“ not an act of jurisdiction	203
Power ascribed to the Roman Pontiff	2	“ not within the papal power	207
Power of Prelates to call Councils	125	Revelation divine, the only basis of abso-	
Power of the Apostles not communicable,		lute implicit belief	105
and not successive	63	Rights of Prelates	2
Power of the Pope in temporal matters	4	“ Rock;” examination of the title	50
Power worldly; advancement by the, of		“ Peter called the	33
the Papal usurpations	146	Roman Bishop non-existent	85
“ character of	145	“ “ when elected	82
“ claimed by the Roman Pontiffs	4	Roman ceremonial mummery	116
“ description of, in connection with		ROMANISTS—	
the Papacy	147	“ Anathemas of the	242
Pragmatical sanction	154	“ belief of in the pontifical power	13
Prelates, authority of	125	“ dissent of the	14
“ oath of	18	“ errors of the	116

	PAGE		
ROMANISTS—		SYNODS—	
“ glosses of on the Holy Scriptures . . .	58	“ acts of	
“ without charity	241	“ ancient	
Rome ; pilgrimage to	153	“ compared with Fanatics	
Romish abolition	235	“ confirmation of	
Romish Anathemas	242	“ decrees of	
Royalties of Peter	17	“ doings of	
Rule of Princes	3	“ general ; the first called by Constantine	
		“ Ordinances of, without the Pope's consent	
S.		“ proceedings of, against the will of the Pope	
Sacraments ; abuse of the	240	“ provincial	
“ celebration of the, in an unknown tongue	115	“ ratification of the acts and decrees of	
“ “ Opus operatum” of the	115	“ Romish	
Saints ; Popish worship of the, contrary to the Holy Scriptures	234	“ Rules respecting, not extant, before the reign of Constantine	
Scriptures ; prohibition to read the, by the Court of Rome	115		
“ the only Rule of Faith	28	T.	
“ teaching of the, in an unknown language	237, 238	Taxes , imposition of by Popes unlawful	
Silence of the ancient Canons respecting the pontifical usurpations	100	Tertullian	
Simony , Popes guilty of	223	Titles of the Roman Pontiff	
SOVEREIGNS— privileges of	154	Traditions ; oral	
“ Absolution from penalty, and Restoration of subordinate officers	202	“ Romish	
“ Appellate jurisdiction from all inferior authorities	206	“ universal against the Papal Supremacy	
“ Censure and punishment of lower magistrates	193	Translation of Bishops	
“ Choice and investiture of inferior officers	182	Transubstantiation	
“ Confirmation of subordinate magistrates when elected to office by others	226	Treat , Council of	2,
“ Convocation of ecclesiastical and secular Councils, Synods, or Assemblies	154	Trent , Council of, Injunctions of, concerning the Pope's Supremacy	
“ Decision of all controversies and litigation	221	Tricks of the Roman Pontiffs and Priests to obtain money	
“ Erection of governments and presidencies	226	Tyranny of the Papal infallibility	
“ Exemption from all inferior jurisdiction	220		
“ Fountain of all power and rule	216	U.	
“ Grant of dispensations, exemptions, and peculiar privileges	226	Unity of the Church ; external policy of	
“ Imposition of taxes	227	“ “ government for the	
“ Infallibility—which is essential to an ecclesiastical supremacy	222	“ “ preservation of the	
“ Jurisdiction entire	180	“ “ primitive	
“ Legislative authority	167	“ Universal Bishop”	
“ Obedience to his mandates and laws	175	Universal Canons	
“ Presidency in all Assemblies	161	Universal power of the Roman Pontiffs and the Court of Rome	
“ Superiority over all his subjects	224	Usurpation over conscience	
“ Supreme headship and exaltation	225		
Sovereignty ; branches of	193	V.	
“ pretences to, by the Roman Pontiffs, vain	193	Veneration of images and relics	
Succession Papal	229	Vows , dispensations for the violation of	
Suppositions upon which the Papacy is founded, a nullity	22	Vows Romish, imposition of	
Supremacy of the Pope	154		
		W.	
		Want of charity among Romanists	
		Wealth , tricks to obtain, by the Roman Priesthood	
		Withdrawal from the Papal community	
		Words , ambiguity of	
		Worship of Angels, Images, Relics, and Saints, contrary to the Holy Scriptures	
		Writings of the Fathers	
		Z.	
		Zabarell , Cardinal	

This book is
the property of
the Library of
the University of
Cambridge
A fine of
£1.00 per week
will be charged
by retainers
if not returned
within the
stamped date.



**THE BORROWER WILL BE CHARGED
AN OVERDUE FEE IF THIS BOOK IS
NOT RETURNED TO THE LIBRARY ON
OR BEFORE THE LAST DATE STAMPED
BELOW. NON-RECEIPT OF OVERDUE
NOTICES DOES NOT EXEMPT THE
BORROWER FROM OVERDUE FEES.**

**Harvard College Widener Library
Cambridge, MA 02138 (617) 495-2413**

FEB 10 1995
FEB 13 1995
DUPLICATE
CANCELLED

